

VC IMAGINATION FACTORY PRESENTS:

THE BIALIEN TRILOGY

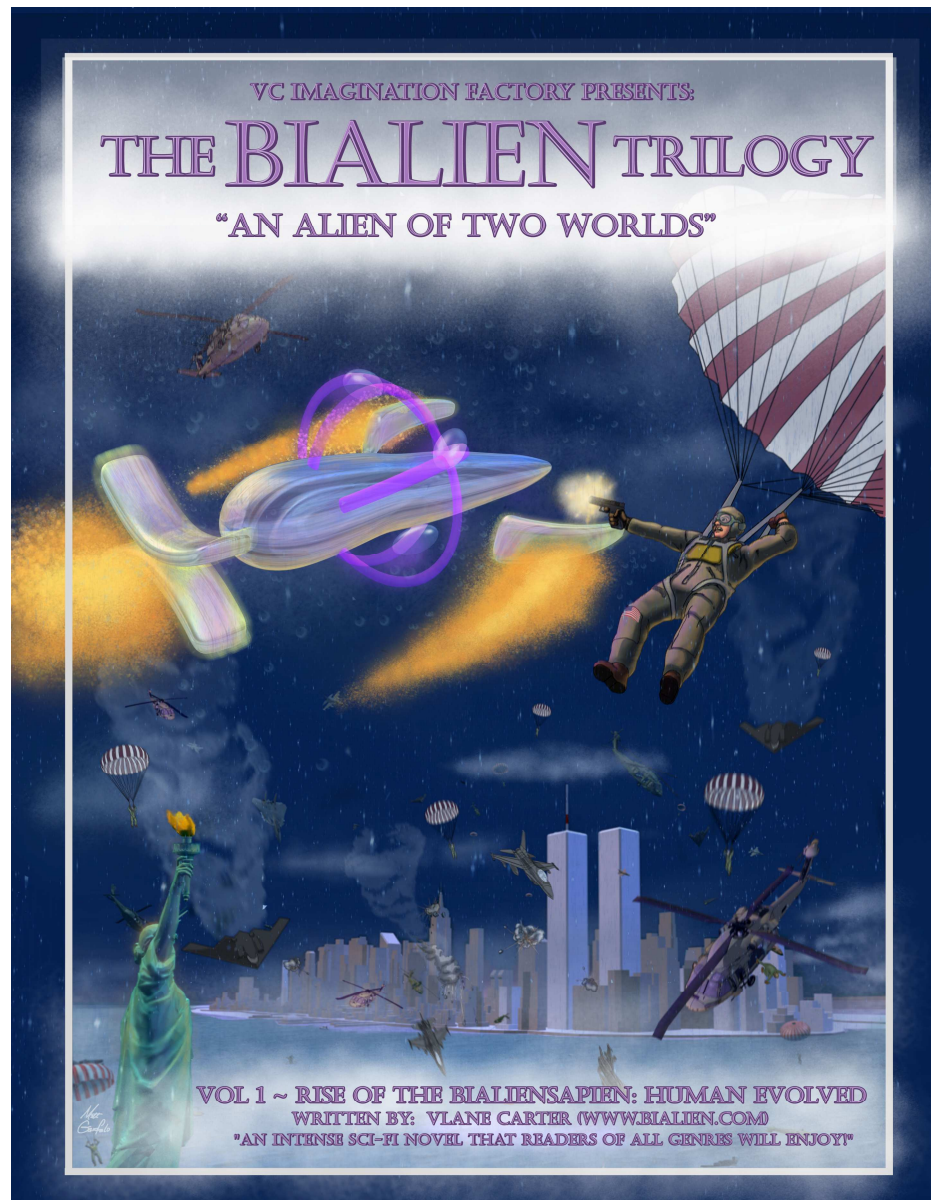
"AN ALIEN OF TWO WORLDS"



VOL. 1 - RISE OF THE BIALIENSAPIEN: HUMAN EVOLVED

WRITTEN BY: VLAKE CARTER - WWW.BIALIEN.COM

"AN INTENSE SCI-FI NOVEL THAT READERS OF ALL GENRES WILL ENJOY"



VC IMAGINATION FACTORY PRESENTS:

A SCI-FI, ACTION, ADVENTURE, ROMANCE TRILOGY: BIALIEN VOL 1

PROLOGUE

An average teenager Jaden Marino discovers a UFO landing one evening in upstate NY. The government is also looking for the mysterious UFO in the area. The government eventually follows him to it while trying to kill him. He hides inside of the advanced nanotechnology UFO while the government tries to take it away to Area 51 on a trailer. His mind goes into a comatose state and he has an out-of-the-body experience. The spaceship translates his English language from his mind into its language, enabling him to control the UFO with his mind. As he tries to fly away, the government sends all of their best and top-secret aircraft to intercept this very advanced spacecraft. Jaden quickly learns what this spaceship is capable of and goes against the best pilots in an intense chase over NY. Eventually he leaves Earth and travels 2.1 million light-years into the Andromeda Galaxy. He learns of an advanced alien species called Andromedians, who are 70,000 years ahead of humans. The Andromedians are peaceful explorers and their thinking is very far ahead of our own.

Jaden comes back to Earth eighteen years later and is aware of an alien conspiracy that is about to take place on Earth. He tries to warn people, but everyone thinks he is crazy. They lock him up in a mental ward. Society, relationships, values and technology has changed on Earth. He has a microscopic artificial intelligence alien companion in his mind helping him along the way, called AI. His body begins developing its advanced alien nanotechnology weapons system to work on Earth. After the government and citizens do not listen, he tries to help the people he cares about while the government places him on a terrorist list and uses their full military forces to kill him. He goes against the government's future weapons, Motherdrone (a super computer that controls all UAV drone crafts), super exoskeleton soldiers, SWATbots, thermobaric weapons and himself. At the same time, a bad alien race, called Darclonians, are implementing their silent planned strike on humans. An energy knight is the Darclonians new powerful weapon that can manipulate dark energy. Unbelievable movie style action sequences throughout the book and an ending you won't stop talking about. Jaden Marino's adventure of a lifetime begins.

EDITNY BOOK REVIEW

Title: Bialien: Rise of the BiAlienSapien: Human Evolved.

Theme: A roller coaster ride from Earth to the Andromeda galaxy and exploring new alien concepts (and their conspiracies)

Thesis: Good and bad aliens thrive and one man's quest to save his planet could prove to be an impossible feat

Love transcends all galactic boundaries and conspiracies run the gamut from aliens' attempt to attack Earth to the government's general cover-up of most things outlandish. A newcomer in the science fiction realm, this book will open up minds and imaginations across the spectrum, drawing readers from other genres. Modern scientific theories about other galaxies and their dwellers are furthered by the author's seemingly clever and deep imagination and woven into a complex tale of discovery, renewal, love, betrayal, jealousy, and conflict.

The author's talent for story writing first won acclaim back in high school where he was first published in a youth literary magazine. Now, years later, his talents are fully on display in the first of a three-part series.

The action-packed first part of this trilogy begins in the mid 1990s with Jaden Marino, the protagonist, running from the government. Having encountered a UFO near his home in upstate New York, the government is after Jaden, an ordinary teenager, in order to kill him as a precautionary measure. The author highlights his wide-ranging views on government cover-up and conspiracy throughout the scenes in the book.

The author further effectively takes us from chapter to chapter without losing momentum. There is hardly time to take a breather, as one moment Jaden is operating the UFO, having left his family and girlfriend behind, and eluding military aircraft that are after him. Next he is in outer space, being rescued by friendly aliens while kidnapped on a rival alien planet. There, his good alien friends find a new threat to the galaxies. A powerful new unstoppable force is discovered. No one has ever seen anything like it before.

Breakthrough scientific explanations are always on hand as are vibrant descriptions and scenes. One such scene is where Jaden discovers sea alien life in an underwater ocean on Jupiter's ice moon, Europa, unintentionally plunging into it. The impact lands him straight inside a giant alien sea monster's stomach where he tries not to get digested.

Entertaining characters, humor-filled dialogue, and refreshing, mind-opening view points are core elements of this emerging author's repertoire. We are introduced to new and viable concepts in environmental protection, especially on Planet

Xenos, where virtual reality takes on its truer meaning. Gravity games and an alien chess game are better than any video game.

The character of Jaden is well-rounded and substantial. Jaden is not like your typical super hero seen in Hollywood movies. We see Jaden emerge from his teenage years as a curious, smart ass into a responsible citizen of the world, or more appropriately, the galaxy. The many bumps along his journey only serve to make him stronger, especially once he achieves his offense and defense weapons system. Jaden must contend with an unknown force that has become a part of him and which has him struggling (or tinkering on the fence) between good and evil. Jaden's accelerated growth into manhood and subsequent inheriting of alien "parts" are vividly illustrated, as the tiniest elements take on a life of their own. The author pays tribute to the classics, such as Knight Rider's Kitt and Star Trek, as some of their well known devices are uniquely incorporated into the storyline.

The many characters in the story are appropriately allocated and developed. Jaden's girlfriend reflects the modern woman as she pursues a career and has had one broken relationship too many. In a futuristic twist that is none too far away, his girlfriend, having given up on relationships, kept a male robot around for company. Their "getting to know you" courtship lasted for a mere ten minutes, as the last 20 years of their lives were exchanged via high tech mind reading. It is politics as usual in the White House, but a conspiracy against a major political figure is both shocking and utterly betraying. Jaden's now fully developed range of super human skills comes to good use and just in time too. The bigger of the two conspiracies, however, is a pending attack on Earth by a bad alien race. In Jaden's attempt to warn the government, he is instead chased by his old enemy in one of many ways, including in a futuristic and very expensive car producing a high-energy car chase. The author takes us through each compelling and action-filled scene as though we were there alongside Jaden. Another well-crafted scene is a hair-raising jump from 35,000 feet out of a jumbo 737 without a parachute, to rescue a government official befitting a superhero, after said official attempts unsuccessfully to halt the chaos happening onboard. Jaden cannot fly, however, as a half alien, he cleverly figures out a way from exploding into the ground.

The last several chapters you will probably read while on the edge of your seat, as I did, wanting to find out what happens in the end. Oh, and the end, well, you will not see that one coming! A true shocker!

Overall, the author has crafted a fine science fiction novel complete with all the usual elements as well as some surprising twists and turns. As an average reader of historical romance fiction, I learned much about current and relevant scientific theories as relating to the body, environmentally sound strategies, the solar system and outer galaxies. One of the more interesting of such scientific concepts is alien and human nanotechnology. The author has clearly done his research and incorporates these concepts seamlessly into the storyline where they become an integral part of the whole thesis of the book. Volume two of this Bi-Alien trilogy should prove to further delve into galaxy exploration and continue to expand imaginations everywhere.

Book review 2

Vlane Carter's, *The Bialien Trilogy~ Rise of the Bialiensapien: Human Evolved*, could be described as all your favorite science-fiction books, movies or tv shows combined into one new series, that takes all those favorites and pushes their boundaries without limitation.

It begins with the main character, Jaden, a typical nineteen year old boy, being chased by the government, hiding and escaping in an alien vessel, to suddenly finding himself in an alien world, and eventually, becoming more than human by way of alien nanotechnology. We watch him grow from a young, smug boy, to a super human capable of fighting enemy alien races. It's not an easy path though, as Jaden must fight to keep control of his own body and go through many painful, but valuable, life lessons, many that occur after his long absence from earth.

The first thing readers will notice about this book is the author's manner of story telling. It's different and can take some getting use to. That said, if you adjust your thinking to the author's way of telling the story, you'll find that it works! He achieves his goal of making the story read as if you're seeing it on the big screen, as an action packed movie. Also worth mentioning, is that to complete the entire scope of the story, Vlane has placed visual images throughout, as well as a book sound track, creating an entirely new dimension to the meaning of author/story/reader interaction.

Sci-Fi readers who love detailed descriptions of technology and science will not be disappointed, but even better, neither will readers who don't really care for in depth explanations, since this author does so with a gritty rawness that make it both an enjoyable and believable read.

Outside of the book itself, this author takes great care to interact with his readers and has a website that includes free chapter plus loads of information about the series. Inside the book, he takes just as much care, and it's clear he has put his entire being into each and every word. Real knowledge can make or break a book, and this author definitely knows his technology.

Give this book a chance and you won't be disappointed by the in your face, non-stop action that leaves you on a roller coaster ride that thrusts you up and down, side to side, both thrills and chills, and then rockets you out of this world.

-New Reads Underground

Sci-Fi Book or Movie? Unconventional Writing Style that Succeeds!, August 10, 2010

By [M. Penny Harmon, Review](#)

[SIP "ReviewSIP"](#) (Salt Lake City, Utah) - [See all my reviews](#)

This review is from: The Bialien Trilogy: Rise of the Bialiensapien: Human Evolved (Volume 1) (Paperback)

The first book in this planned trilogy follows Jaden, a nineteen year old boy that not only has amazing adventures traveling off-planet, but goes through many life altering experiences... Not just mentally or spiritually, but physically and physiologically, as he is evolved into something more than human.

Author, Vlane Carter, has created a story told in a unique and unconventional writing style, keeping the action in the present tense, so as to keep the reader feeling as though they are experiencing the action as its happening. It can be akin to reading a script, or make you feel as though you're watching a movie. It is a writing style that can, at first, be jarring and difficult to understand. But if you give it a few chapters it will not only grow on you, but draw you in. And then you suddenly cannot imagine the story written any other way. And, quite possibly, it could be the first book that includes its own music recommendations (to listen to while reading).

This book crosses many topics, from government conspiracies, alien technology, nanotechnology, world domination, love, female empowerment and religion... All which take the reader into new realms of thought and possibility, allowing for outside the box thinking and discussion amongst readers.

It is clear that the author is an authority on the technology used in the story, and that he has painstakingly edited each word or description so that both detail-oriented readers and non-detail oriented readers alike will enjoy this book... it's in depth, but its not "work" to read. There's even a glossary at the end of the book including terms that a reader might not be familiar with.

Sci-fi and fiction enthusiasts will have a hard time putting this book down. Vlane Carter succeeds in his unconventional storytelling style, drawing readers into his vast creation, while the plot twists keep you riveted and guessing until the books final page. Or, make that the final word.

BiAlien is an imaginative journey by a major new author, August 8, 2010

By [Alan E. Eggleston](#) (Michigan, USA) - [See all my reviews](#)
(REAL NAME)

This review is from: The Bialien Trilogy: Rise of the Bialiensapien: Human Evolved (Volume 1) (Paperback)

Whether you're new to science fiction or an avid SF reader, there's a new book you should see:

BiAlien.[The Bialien Trilogy: Rise of the Bialiensapien: Human Evolved \(Volume 1\)](#)

If you're interested in science fiction and like science fiction art, or if you have been thinking of exploring science fiction or science fiction art, this book will intrigue you. You can easily catch a sneak peek through the author's very imaginative [website](#) and [Facebook page](#).

The author, Vlane Carter, has tried very hard to make it a space adventure readable for every kind of audience. Says Carter, "My novel was written for the

non-science fiction, fiction and sci-fi book readers. My facebook friends who don't read sci-fi, the novel is well explained and even has a glossary of definitions at the back of it." He also isn't shy about trying new techniques to engage the reader, such as using the present tense rather than the typical past tense to give you a sense of watching the action in-the-now, like watching a movie. The artwork, which Carter personally art directed, is very creative and lends to the unique flavor of the storyline. See samples on the BiAlien website, including a link to chapter 1.

In addition to the book website, Carter is very active on his Facebook page. There he frequently interacts with readers discussing the book. This is a great attribute for an author. Every author ought to be accessible to his or her readers. I know that's sometimes difficult, especially when an author's fandom reaches into the hundreds of thousands, but Carter, from New York State, currently has just over 160 members and manages the exchanges well. He's erstwhile about his creation, and readers can catch - and enjoy - his enthusiasm there.

Carter is a bright new star in the SF heavens and you should take in his universe. Give BiAlien a look. I think you'll agree, he's going places and it begins in BiAlien.

Comments from previous readers:

“The science in this novel was very accurate. The author has done his research on dark matter, neutrinos, dark energy, God particles, plasma fusion, green technologies and government weapons...”
-Paul (Brooklyn Technical College)

“As a female non sci-fi reader, I really enjoyed this novel. The science terms were well explained and the story was easy to follow. I loved the ending. The romance scenes were amazing and I’m sure females will have a lot to say about it in the blogs. Curve it! Curve it!”
-Katie (Poughkeepsie, NY)

“This entire novel was amazing. It was like watching *The Matrix*, *Star Trek*, *Star Wars*, *The Lawnmower Man* and *Independence Day* at the same time. My favorite chapters were Europa’s Moon, king me and the car chase. Jaden controlling an energy shield around the car while driving over 200+ mph was mind-boggling! The army of UAVs firing missiles and thermobaric bombs at him was the icing on the cake.” -John (Atlantic City, NJ)

“At times I couldn’t put down this 600 plus page intense novel. I loved AI, Dr. K. Chan and Bellona; she kicked ass. The author hit future relationships on the nose. Cheating and high divorce rates between men and women are getting worse and worse. Women need to stay away from B.M.S. I’ve had a similar BMS relationship... Male and female replacements made a lot of sense in the future. I wish Japan would hurry and make me a Max R.M.E.C.”
-Pam (San Jose, CA)

“At first I didn’t like the novel since the author didn’t develop the main character of the book in the first chapter. When I reached the third chapter, the flashbacks really filled in that missing void. I also grew on the present tense and single quotes. I actually googled every instrumental soundtrack mentioned in the book. I had to hear how the music sounds at each particular section. I can really see this book as a blockbuster movie.” -Jerry (USA)

“Jaden is a 21st century Jedi. His courage, sense of humor, fighting ability and strong heart really won me over. Jaden stopping and grabbing the police officer’s fired bullets and shoving them down his throat really had me laughing on the floor. AI was a cool sidekick. Bellona is an amazing character. Her millisecond fight with the blisters and skelborgs was unlike anything I’ve read before. Her spiritual past is very interesting. I would love to see what she looks like.”
-Andrew (Miami)

“I’ve read a lot of sci-fi books and the concepts of this novel were so well thought out that this book goes in my top 10 best sci-fi novels. A lot of imagination went into this book. Remote control landing a 737 through an unconscious pilot’s body by using nanoscanners and nanodrones to control him like a puppet was really out of this world. Jaden and AI are the perfect team. The author made nanotechnology and science fun to learn about.”
-Peter (Columbus, SC)

“The religious concepts were interesting and really had me thinking as a Catholic. The author looked at religion from an alien perspective and average human perspective. The author wrote it from an outside-the-box prospective. I loved the way Dr. Chan stood up to Vice President Robinson. You go girl! Stand up for women’s rights.” -Jackie (CT)

“As a non sci-fi reader, there were a lot of messages empowering women in this novel. The female President of the United States in an exoskeleton suit fighting robots was a lovely twist. The dark energy queen was the perfect evil character. Her manipulating humans through religious values and emotions was very interesting. I definitely have to read this book over when it is published.” -Erin (NYC)

Text copyright © 2009 by VC Imagination Factory
Front and back book cover illustration by Matthew Garfalo and John Moriarty copyright © 2009, 2010 by VC Imagination Factory.
Other illustrations by Kwan Wilson, John Buurman, Matthew Garofalo, John Moriarty and Vertigoprocess copyright © 2010 by VC Imagination Factory.
All illustrations and animation designs are designed and directed by Vlane Carter
ISBN: 978-0-578-04454-5

Edited by: Kevin Holland

Character BELLONA and “Evolve Your Imagination” are registered trademarks of VC Imagination Factory.

Jaden Marino, Marco, AI, Dr. Chan and other fictional book characters are copyright © 2009 by VC Imagination Factory, all rights reserved.

No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording or otherwise, without written permission of the publisher.

Library of Congress Copyright Number: TXu 1-644-495

Social Networking sites:
<http://www.facebook.com/Bialien>
<http://www.twitter.com/Bialien>
<http://www.myspace.com/Bialien>
<http://Bialien.wordpress.com>
<http://www.youtube.com/bialiensapien>
 (Visit Youtube for latest book videos)

Google search: "BiAlien" for many other book related websites.

1st & 2nd chapter read and download available at:
WWW.BIALIEN.COM
 Bialien is available for purchase at Amazon, Ebay, Smashwords, Barnes and Noble and Ebooks.
 Coming soon:

BiAlien Vol 1.5 - Over 100 pages of cut out scenes from vol 1.
 1.5 will include:

- Where the author was when he came up with his ideas.
- "New authors" section for Self-publishing.
- 1. Putting together ideas, plots and characters.
- 2. How to market your book.
- 3. Finding the proper graphic artist.
- 4. Putting together a website.
- 5. Steps V. Carter took to putting together a trilogy.
- 6. Business tips and suggestions.

- Prologue to BiAlien Vol 2.0
 - Illustrations from BiAlien 2.0

BiAlien Vol 1 and 1.5 Audiobook

- Audiobook narrated by author; Vlane Carter
 - Author talks about his favorite scenes and concepts of the BiAlien trilogy.

THE YEAR 2015 BUGATTEE SPORTS CAR - 1st GENERATION MARS SERIES

The Bugattee is a futuristic concept (green technology) sports car used in the Bialien trilogy novel chapter 21.

Illustration by: John Bauman www.scifi-artpage.com
 Creative art director and design by: Vlane Carter

Read more on this 2.4 million dollar sports car at:
WWW.BIALIEN.COM



SPECIFICATIONS:
 Four independent wheel motor by bid electric engines. Each 300 horsepower bi-cylinder hypercharged engine combines 5,319 pound-feet of total torque. Electrical color changing paint. 0-62mph in 2.31 seconds on Earth and a top speed of 301+ mph.

Four nanotube synthetic rubber nitrogen injection run flat Bad Year tires. Instant violation traffic system.

GREEN TECHNOLOGY: Hydrogen gas and electrical turbine grid system - 200 miles per gallon. Energy producing technologies: Advanced air vacuum filter system, solar cells, advanced electro-nanomaterial polymer battery system, mini air intake turbines, advanced hydraulic shocks, turbine spinning rims, kinetic energy brakes and two or four windmill turbine blades.

The Bialien movement - Blogs on social and environmental issues, technology, and book concept ideologies.

We have a booth at Comic Con
 October 8th-10th Jacob Javis NY, NY.

VC IMAGINATION FACTORY
 Presents:
 The BiAlien trilogy - A New Sci-fi, Space, Action, Adventure & Romance Novel.

Vlane Carter
 Writer/Art Director/President

"Evolve your Imagination"

Evolve Your Imagination



VLANE CARTER
 IMAGINATION FACTORY
 Evolve Your Imagination

EVOLUTION FOR HUMANITY PROTECTION - (PROBLEM SOLVING - OPEN MINDSETTED - IMAGINATION) & LOGIC

151 1st Ave.
 Suite 265
 NY, NY 10003
Vlane.Carter@gmail.com

BIALIEN ISBN NUMBER:
 978-0-578-04454-5
WWW.BIALIEN.COM

All images and artwork are copyrighted and owned by VC Imagination Factory. No reproduction may be made without express permission from Vlane Carter. All rights reserved. Copyright © 2009



Acknowledgements:

I want to thank Stefanie Manzo and Jack Cooper for being the first two people to finish the novel and filling out a questionnaire in September 2009. Thanks for your constructive criticisms, suggestions and opinions. Good job finishing the novel in less than 45 days.

Special thanks to Jack Cooper for listening and analyzing my bits and pieces of the book over the years. I saved your text message when I finished the book: "Your mind is WARPED and I love it...Really good story!" I told you the novel would be hard to put down. Thanks for helping me edit the website content and being supportive over the years.

Special thanks to Cathy Chia-Li Han for supporting me from the beginning and falling asleep in the car while listening to me talk about the entire book for hours back in August 2006. You were the only one I told the entire book to back then. Thanks for informing me and enlightening me on history of Asian culture, and also for putting up with my crazy imagination and ideas over the years.

Special thanks to my sister (Kathi Carter-Days) for believing I could finish this novel and believing I could pull off the business side as well. Thanks for the support over the years.

I would also like to thank my father (Oliver), brothers (Hans and Dominick) and sister (Kim) for their support and believing in me over the years. I would like to say hello to my nieces. Thanks to my other family and relatives.

Special thanks to my late mother (Carrie Carter), who was an excellent writer and had perfect English/vocabulary. Thank you for raising me so well and keeping me on track over the years. Your words of inspiration kept me focused over the years, "work hard and don't be lazy." I'm sure you would be proud that I stuck to this 4 1/2 year book project and didn't give up. This novel and the other 8-9 Bialien book outlines, video game design and story, seventy pages of business marketing book notes, hundreds of screenplay scenes, dozens of illustrations and animation designs was the hardest challenge I ever faced. I've used parts of my brain I didn't even know were there. Thanks for being there on the side of me while I typed 16-18 hours a day. I want to thank my old Facebook friends for responding to my wall and helping me with research on relationships and religion. I know many of you didn't like my outside the box views, but thanks for hanging in there.

I want to thank my old friends at Maimonides: Bobo, Sal, Sean, Rodney Laurel, Dennis, David A, Victoria, Jason, Shweta, Berry, Chris, Palmer, Rashied, Joe Keitt and a few others.

Shout out to Maria and Steven James, James family, Castro family, Oz, Smith family, all the Shawns, Jill, Annette Negron, EditNY, Janet and Angel Rodriguez, Alan and Jessica, Mike and Alberto from Concept 2000, Anette and Britt and my Norwegian/Swedish friends, I finally finished!

Special shout out to Robin Williams (Movie Director of True life story). I hope your first movie is successful. I remember all the long hours you were working on your screenplay and all the long hours I was working on my book. I can't believe we finally finished! We both stuck to it. Much success to you.

I want to thanks my first graphic artist Matthew Garafalo for going through dozens of hours and 40-50 drafts of the Gravhawk, and DEKs book cover. Thanks for having a passion for drawing and proving it's not always about the money. Thanks for a job well done on my first animation book intro. It took a few months, but it was worth the wait. You did magic on the EIS generation 2 in the illustration and in animation. Remember these repetition art directing words in regards to the EIS: "More space between the wings and tail." I felt like a drill sergeant. You definitely gave me my first experience with creative art directing.

I want to thank my other graphic artist Kwan Wilson and John Moriarty for putting up with my very detailed art directing. Good job fellas, thanks for not giving up on me.

I want to thank my new graphic artist John Buurman. John, I've never seen such imaginative sci-fi artwork. Your artwork designs still boggle my mind. When I first saw your artwork, I thought an alien from another galaxy took over your mind and made you draw your illustrations. Good job on the EIS (Exoskeleton Intergalactic Spaceship) generation 4, I knew we could do it.

I want to thank my editor Kevin Holland for doing such a swell job on editing the book. I know it was challenging editing my unique writing style and content. You finished it and did an amazing job with categorizing all the characters and pointing out my common mistakes.

I want to finally thank instrumental soundtrack artist: Martin O'Donnell, Hans Zimmer, Steve Jablonsky, Yann Tiersen, John Williams and many other artists, for making music that stimulated my imagination for tens of thousands of hours. Where do you people come up with these amazing sounds?

To all readers and book critics please note:

Bialien Vol 1 was written in present tense for the following reasons:

1. So the reader can read and experience the novel as if they were watching a movie.
2. Nanotime.
3. Detailed action sequences.
4. Movie soundtracks inserted into different parts of the story.
5. Telepathic communication and talking to another personality.
6. Mind reading and answering questions inside of a conversation.
7. Have the reader experience the story as if they are right with Jaden at all times.

Single quotes are used in the book when:

Main character is thinking and talking to himself.

To show main character communicating with another personality in his mind.

High-speed telepathic communications

Even though third person narrative is mainly used throughout the book, the author needed to slowly get the reader used to single quotes by having main character thinking to himself from outside his body in Chapter one and two.

PLEASE NOTE: THE GLOSSARY TO THE MAJOR TERMS AND DEFINITIONS IN THE BOOK ARE ON THE LAST FEW PAGES.

Message to EBOOK readers: This version has all the artwork illustrations and music soundtrack links implemented into the chapters. This EBook edition is priced between at \$2.99 and \$8.99. I believe 75% of sci-fi readers and 40% of fiction readers would purchase the paperback version when they finish this book. This is how confident I am you will enjoy this novel.

More book info here: www.bialien.com

Feel free to add me to your facebook page:

<http://www.facebook.com/bialien>

Thank you for purchasing my novel.

Bialien Vol 1 Chapters

Chapter 1: The Transformation

Chapter 2: The Sonicboomathon Chase

Chapter 3: Europa's Cracked Shell

Chapter 4: Questions Require Answers

Chapter 5: The Truth

Chapter 6: Alien Life

Chapter 7: Gravity Games

Chapter 8: Can I join?

Chapter 9: King Me

Chapter 10: An Alien of Two Worlds

Chapter 11: The Rebirth of a Legend

Chapter 12: Mr. John Doe

Chapter 13: Jerry, Jerry, Jerry

Chapter 14: AI Einstein
Chapter 15: 3x Terminal Velocity
Chapter 16: The Miracle Halo
Chapter 17: Shoot Me Again With That Gun and...
Chapter 18: In Contempt of America
Chapter 19: The Prison In-Break
Chapter 20: Super Lover
Chapter 21: Full Throttle 1204 hp Car Chase
Chapter 22: Manhattan's Armageddon
Chapter 23: Astrotheological Literary Hybrid
Chapter 24: Heroes Don't Die

Chapter 1: The Transformation



THURSDAY FEBRUARY 15TH, 1996 5:30 PM
UPSTATE NY – 20 MILES NORTH OF ALBANY

Jaden, a 19-year-old male, runs through a tall, dry cornfield as he tries to evade the military as well as the men in the white jumpsuits. As he cuts back and forth amongst the dead cornstalks in an attempt to lose his pursuers, he notices that he has begun to lose feeling in his hands. Acknowledging the biting effects of the cold, Jaden breathes hot white breath on his fingers before rubbing his almost numb hands together. Still running, he peers back and sees no one. Did he lose them, he wondered, but only for a second. He pauses for a moment and then listens to the distant voices behind him before continuing to dash through the field. The sound of a helicopter closing in on him unnerves him, yet pushes him to move faster.

He knows he has to find this thing. The frigid air cools his lungs and causes his chest to burn, but he can't let it stop him. He has to find what he

was looking for before the soldiers catch up with him, or worse, find it first. He scans the area and then decides to dart east and travel that direction for a few hundred feet and then like a mouse in a maze changes direction and pursues a northerly path.

Jaden, standing at 5'9" and weighing 160 lbs, is the child of bi-racial parents, which shows in his fair skin tone as well as in his blue eyes and black, slightly curly hair. He is wearing a black and blue NY Giants jacket, black winter hat that comes down to his eyebrows, blue jeans and a blue jersey, which he thought would be enough to keep him warm. He was wrong. He can feel the chill from his head to his Michael Jordan sneakers. All he can do is ignore it because he doesn't have the luxury of trying to find shelter and warming himself up. He has a mission to accomplish, one that is extremely important to him and obviously to those quickly gaining ground on him.

One mile south of where Jaden found himself, a military helicopter carrying Major K. Robinson cuts through the sky. Robinson yells into the two-way radio that he is holding close to his mouth. On the other end is Sergeant Peters, who has to pull his radio away due to the volume.

"I don't care what you have to do Sergeant. I want this kid apprehended or wounded, and I want the UFO08 found in one piece. This is the most important find, we have had in years, not to mention the strongest energy source detected in an alien aircraft. We know it is somewhere in the area."

"Okay sir, I understand," Sgt. Peters says in a raspy voice.

"We know this kid is going towards it now and he will lead us to it," Robinson says as he began to regain his calm.

"The Uf1-retrac team is with my men, we are less than 100 feet behind the subject. We will catch him or shoot to wound him. We will wound him once we locate the UFO08," Sgt. Peters says.

"I have confidence in you Sergeant," Corporal Major Robinson lowers the communication device from his face and continues to look out of the helicopter at the massive field.

Jaden picks up his pace as he continues to take deep breaths into his lungs, absorbing the cold winter air. The white breath flows past his chest and disappears. The sounds of his footsteps and cornstalks are heard swooshing around him in stereo sound. The sky is slowly getting darker like a fade in a movie camera. The leftover sunlight slowly retires over the cornfield's horizon in the west. He is pushing huge five-foot high cornstalks out of his path. Jaden finds a straight path over some grassy patches and increases his momentum. The nerves in his upper right arm send a pinching, burning sensation to his brain. A split second later his ears send a gunshot sound to his brain.

He hears the sound of a bullet echoing in all directions away from him. The force and sudden pain of the bullet causes Jaden to lose his balance and

he tumbles towards the grassy ground. He lands on his stomach and slides a few feet. The cold grass smacks against his face. The smell of corn rushes his nose and pieces of dirty hay bond with his clothes. The air is knocked out of his chest and he struggles to catch his breath. He can feel the cold burn on his lungs. The high-speed bullet hit him in the upper right arm, just missing the bone. He is lucky it is just a flesh wound as he looks at the injury to his arm.

Adrenaline releases from the adrenal glands above his kidneys and quickly enters his bloodstream.

He can't believe he is shot and begins to panic. The fear of being shot again and dying quickly crosses his mind. The torn muscle tissue and skin continue transmitting pain to his brain. His heart is beating a mile a minute and he reaches for his wounded shoulder.

His adrenaline diverts some of the pain and gives him extra energy. He takes a deep breath and presses on his wound with his left hand. He quickly stands back up while crouching and looks behind him. He hears voices from a distance but doesn't see anyone. He slowly jogs off the path and back into the bushy cornfield holding his wounded shoulder. Fear continues bubbling up and he feels a hole in his stomach, but he doesn't have time to be scared.

"We hit him Major, but he got back up and is still running. It was a difficult shot to take," Sgt. Peters says.

"We don't want him dead yet. I'm not far from your location. Make sure all your men are using their night vision and heat sensor scopes."

"Yes, sir."

Jaden approaches a small farm on the left, on his right is an elevated flat mound area. The cold winter wind is blowing through his hair and across his face. He jogs into the open area and then back into another cornfield, while crouching down. Three military men in black camouflage clothes are less than 300 feet behind him with their assault rifles drawn. They have night vision goggles protruding from over their eyes. They signal to each other with their fingers as they quickly walk ten feet away from each other. Two of them can see the cornstalks moving from a distance.

Jaden is breathing in through his nose and out through his mouth. He thanks his training on the track team for allowing him to jog for such a long distance.

Jaden's eyes are focusing in all directions. He knows it's around here somewhere. He remembers it being a little further on the right. This is where he remembers seeing it last. He hopes it didn't move or leave.

The blood drips down and soaks his blue jacket. Jaden feels drips of blood slowly moving down his arm. He increases the pressure on his blood soaked wound, while the wind blows by his face.

A military helicopter with a bright spotlight quickly approaches from behind him. He drops and rolls to the ground. He holds cornstalks with both hands to keep them from moving. He lays there motionless and breathes deeply. He listens as the helicopter quickly flies by and over him. He takes his left hand and puts pressure on his injury. The pressure increases and so does the pain. He yells to himself in pain. Blood is also dripping inside his jacket and down the side of his back. Panic and fear kicks in as his mind begins to race.

He looks up and the helicopter is heard in the distance in front of him. He continues to look up and sees the stars in the sky glowing. Jaden remembers when he was younger, when he would look through his telescope late at night and stargaze at the billions of stars above him. That was an innocent time in his life when he wanted to become an astronaut when he grew up. His mind quickly comes back to reality and struggles to push himself up with his left hand. He wishes he did more one-hand push-ups in gym instead of doing them just to impress women.

He stands up slowly and looks behind himself. He can see stalks in the cornfield moving on three sides. He continues forward while crouching lower. He's jogging up to an area to where the cornfield ends and patches of grass cover the ground. He smells the odor of animals. Jaden hears cows mooing in front of him. The cows moo in harmony as if they are singing a song. He hears different frequencies of sounds coming from behind the cows and it doesn't make any sense to him. He stops jogging and walks around the first cow. He pets the second one and it wags its tail faster. The curious cow stops eating grass and turns towards him. Jaden remembers cow tipping when he was younger and hopes these aren't the same cows. A bloodstain is left on the cow's side.

"Mooooooo, Mooooo," the cows communicate. There are about twenty cows here. Most of them are standing around something.

The grass makes a slight crunching sound as he walks by. The white breath of the cows can be seen in front of him as he crouches behind them. This is where Jaden was a few days ago when he first witnessed the silver-bodied UFO landing on the ground. He remembers how the ship felt as if it was reading his mind when he walked close to it. He approaches this same area, but only sees a large hole in the ground. The hole in the ground is about forty feet long, seven feet deep and thirteen feet wide. Jaden tries to climb down into the hole, but senses something is there. Suddenly his mind feels as if it is being read again. The sensation is making him dizzy and queasy. He doesn't know if it's the fact of him losing blood or from the feeling in his mind. He thinks that the ship has to be invisible or transparent.

Jaden feels as if something is watching him from over his shoulders. He quickly turns around and sees a blurry blue shadow of something abnormal about fifty feet in the air. His eyes focus in, but he doesn't see anything. He

turns back around to the open area and something flashes in front of his eyes. The UFO suddenly turns visible and then invisible. This repeats every half second. After a few seconds, it stays consistently visible. Jaden stands in disbelief as the UFO appears, but in a different shape than the way it did a few days ago. The silver metallic, reflective UFO now looks boxy and rectangular. He notices even though the shape has changed, the color is still the same. There is not anything aerodynamic about it. Light particles can be seen moving around inside of the body. He realizes the ship is taller than the first time he saw it. It stands about eleven feet tall now. A few cows slowly walk away. The volume of their mooing increases as they communicate with each other.

The soldiers hold position and aim their rifles. Jaden's body heat blends in with the huge cows in the night scopes.

Jaden can't believe how nice the reflective liquid in the body looks up close. He walks around the side of the ship looking for the peculiar opening he noticed the last time he was here. His breath leaves condensation on the body of the ship.

"My men have the UFO08 in sight. We also see a bunch cows surrounding the subject and the UFO08. We are waiting for your orders," Peters says in a confident voice into the radio.

"Why didn't the HCT55 (top-secret helicopter) spot the UFO08 on the ground sooner?" Major Robinson questions.

"It wasn't there before, sir. I'm sure it wasn't there. We didn't even spot it on radar, heat sensors or our night vision cameras."

His voice increases in volume over the small radio, "Listen Sergeant, we need this contained as soon as possible. I want you to take the subject into custody. Shoot him, but only wound him, we'll need to fully interrogate him later. We never encountered a ship like this and we don't know what to expect. I don't want any chances taken on this. I want the area quarantined and sealed off, no one within two miles of this site."

"Yes sir, but there is a slight problem, we can't get a clear shot on the subject from here. My closest shooter is twenty-two yards away and the cows are in the line of fire."

"I don't care! Shoot all the standing hamburger if you have to," Major Robinson yells, "I want this subject taken down. Use your silencers; he has nowhere to go. Keep your men away from the UFO08; we don't know what kind of radiation or toxins are being emitted from it. The UF1-retrac team will handle any containment."

"Yes sir."

Jaden is still nervous with butterflies in his stomach. He found the ship, but he isn't sure what his next step will be. He feels cold and the pain from his wound keeps entering his mind. Jaden walks completely around the ship,

while continuing to press on his injury. He admires its shiny, liquid metal body and boxy shape. Curiosity slowly takes over his fear of the situation.

‘I wonder if there are any aliens inside,’ he asks himself.

Jaden sees something glowing on the side of the ship in an area he already passed by before and didn’t see. A one foot by one foot area that looks like a small compartment. He looks closer and sees a blue-lit indentation on a flat surface. It looks like a possible handprint area. Curious, Jaden puts his left hand over the blue light. The blue light becomes brighter. Something pierces his hand in several locations. The nerves in his hand send the signal to his brain at 300 feet per second. He tries to pull his hand back. He feels a tingling sensation all over his body. Jaden can’t move his left hand and it feels as if some invisible force is holding it there. Blood is being drained from his hand. He has a surprised look on his face as he continues to jerk his body back to retrieve his hand.

Jaden’s hand feels as if bees are stinging it. He stops trying to move his hand and he suddenly hears two loud thumps behind him. The thumps can be felt from the ground. The thumps send shock waves of chemical messages from his feet to his brain. Two cows drop to the ground, groaning and mooing. They are lying on their sides bleeding. Panic sets in as Jaden turns around on his right side and sees these events happening about ten feet behind him. Another cow drops to the ground. He knows he is probably next. A helicopter approaches and hovers over the area. A bright light is shining down on Jaden. He looks up and squints his eyes from the bright light.

He knows they have him surrounded and not being able to move is continuing to make his heart beat faster. He continues trying to remove his stuck hand. He sees the end of the cornrows moving as if people are there. He hears the helicopter blades cutting the air over him. The wind from the helicopter is blowing in his face and moving the grass around him. Another cow falls to the ground and is laying there silent. Each thump is adding a few hundred goose bumps to his legs. The cows’ bodies are shaking and moaning. The wind and noise from the helicopter makes the remaining cows move towards the barn. Jaden’s body is still turned around half way, while his hand is still stuck over the blue light on the side of the ship. The ship has stopped draining blood from his hand, but he still can’t move. He turns his body back towards the blue light and struggles to move his hand. The surviving cows are gone. Five are dead on the ground and two are still moaning trying to move their legs. Jaden realizes that he is next and he could die at any second.

“Come on, let my hand go, you have your blood sample! I’m a sitting duck here!” Jaden yells to the ship while continuing to struggle. Suddenly it goes dead quiet around him and he doesn’t hear the cows moaning or the helicopter blades chopping the wind over him. The grass on the ground stops moving and the wind stops blowing down on him. He feels as if he is in a closet or has gone completely deaf.

‘What the hell is going on?’ He asks himself in an uncertain voice.

It is so quiet around him that he can hear his heart beating a mile a minute. He continues to take nervous and panicky deep breaths. In and out, his heavy breathing echoes around him. The quickly accelerating carbon dioxide from his mouth flows down his jacket and onto the metallic body of the ship. The white breath creates a slight fog on the UFO. Suddenly there is a very low thumping sound as if a bird hit an outside window from behind him. Jaden’s body jumps from the sudden low thumping sound.

He slowly turns back around to see what’s going on behind him. It is very quiet and he hears nothing around him. An eerie feeling passes through his body as his head turns. He looks in the distance and his vision is a little blurry. He suddenly notices a very dim, clear wall of light. Jaden’s pupils contract as he focuses on something right in front of him. He moves at an angle to get a closer look at what is sparkling in front of him. Small goose bumps go up and down his arms and legs. His heart races as he tries to figure out what he is looking at. It captivates all his attention at the moment. He temporarily ignores all of his pain and stretches his left arm from the glowing blue area.

As he gets within a few inches, he notices the red dot has a little sparkle of fire behind it, floating midair. He wants to know what the hell that is as he stares with his wide-open eyes and mouth. His head stops on a solid, invisible force. He looks closer at the sparkling fire in midair and notices it’s a long bullet. The tracer round is suspended in midair. Jaden holds his breath in disbelief as his head rests against the solid force. The red dot suddenly moves towards the center of his head. The low thumping is felt and heard throughout Jaden’s body. The vibration sends shock waves throughout his body in milliseconds. He jumps back towards the ship while bending his left arm and freaks out. His bladder slightly releases itself from the sudden shock of what he sees in front of his eyes. He is temporarily paralyzed and can’t believe what he is seeing. His breathing greatly increases and his hands shake.

His head is near his stuck left hand. Jaden crouches and bends his knees towards the ground. Jaden sees the red dot following him and it stops eighteen inches in front of his chest. He moves to the left and right, but the dot follows him. Another low thumping sound is felt in his body. The wall in front of Jaden lights up. He begins to hyperventilate from breathing so fast. His jaw shudders as his eyes stay focused on the red dot that keeps moving towards him.

He looks in disbelief as the skin around his body is overtaken by goose bumps. His mouth and eyes are wide open. The slightly lit wall turns invisible again and three bullets remain floating. The logic in his brain tells him the ship formed some kind of shield in front of him to protect him. But his eyes and ears are telling his brain to stay away from the red dots.

A drop of blood falls from the right shoulder of his jacket to the grass. He can actually hear the drops of blood splashing onto the grass. The red dot disappears. His left hand releases from the area that was holding it. He quickly turns his hand around to analyze it. He doesn't see any bleeding or damage.

The red dot reappears lower, twelve inches from his chest in front of him. Again, he hears a low thumping bass sound and he reacts by jumping backwards against the UFO hitting his head. There is sparkling fire like a bottle rocket burning behind the red dot. His eyes focus on the red and orange sparks of fire. He slowly walks to the side with his back rubbing against the ship. His jacket against the ship is making a loud rubbing sound. His eyes are wide open and the slightly lit wall becomes invisible again. The red dot follows his moving body. The low thumping sound hits again and his heart jumps. He stares at the red dot like a deer caught in headlights.

5:42 PM

"That is a negative, sir; I repeat that is a negative! Subject is still standing. It looks like something formed around the UFO08 and the subject protecting him. The bullet from my rifle seems to be sitting in midair near the subject," Private Tandy yells over the two-way radio.

Peters takes a deep breath and responds on the radio, "We need this subject taken down Private; Again, shoot to kill!"

"Yes, sir. I've never seen anything like this. It's like something right out of *Star Trek*!"

"HCT55, do you have the UFO08 and subject in sight?" Peters asks.

Peter's radio comes on with helicopter noise in the background, "We have the subject in sight and the UFO08. We are about 150 feet above the subjects and switched to silent mode. Awaiting further orders," HCT55 says.

"I need to know what your sensors are detecting, HCT55."

"We have little to no radiation being emitted. Heat sensors aren't picking up anything, except the cows near the subjects. X-ray detectors aren't picking up anything. Radar also isn't picking up anything. It's like the subjects aren't there, but I can see them with my own eyes," HCT55 unit responds.

"I need you to take down the subject, try not to hit the UFO08. Shoot to kill!"

"Yes, sir."

Sergeant Peters updates Major Robinson on the current situation.

"We need this situation contained as soon as possible Sergeant Peters. I have landed and am walking towards your position now."

Jaden slowly walks sideways across the side of the ship to get away from the bullets. The red dots are gone, but the bullets remain in midair. He starts

to feel weak from the loss of blood. His jersey and jacket are soaked. A few minutes go by and he builds up some courage. His fingers extend out like a little kid touching something he never saw before. He tries to touch the fiery bullet and stops a half-inch short by a solid, clear force. The invisible wall has very small light particles moving around on it as he investigates closer. The spot where he touches lights up with little electrical charges. Jaden feels as if he is touching a solid steel wall. He knocks on it with his knuckles and the force field sounds and feels solid. He realizes it looks like electric static, but without the charge behind it.

After a few minutes go by of Jaden staring at the bullets that could have killed him, he begins to fill dizzy and woozy. He feels as if he is in a nightmare. He wonders how he is going to get out of this. Why did this ship take his blood? Who's inside of here? What do they want with him?

He begins to walk sideways again. Numerous red dots appear and are following Jaden's body as he walks along the side of the spaceship. He feels trapped with nowhere to go. He hears another low thumping sound and he flinches with his back against the ship. He falls on the ground as several laser dots follow him. He closes his eyes and prays the bullets don't penetrate the shield in front of him. The thumping sounds continue to come from the other side of the clear wall of energy. He flinches with each impact. Jaden curls his legs up against his chest while he continues to put pressure on his arm. His hands and legs begin to shake from being scared out of his mind. He opens his eyes and sees dozens of sparkling bullets. With each thump, his eyes jump towards the direction of the sound. He also hears the low thumping sound coming from over his head. The military officer in the helicopter over Jaden fires a few rounds at him. Jaden's bladder releases a few ounces into his underwear as his nerves and adrenaline rush around his body. He feels colder and colder and shivers as his teeth chatter. He feels like a rat caught in a trap. He realizes that each bullet was meant for him.

He feels like crying, but suddenly he hears different frequencies of sounds coming from behind him from the ship. One sounds like a dial-up modem. He feels a burning sensation in his chest from breathing so hard. The cold smoke from his breath fogs in front of him on the solid energy wall. The vision in front of him becomes very misty like steamy glass in a hot shower. The red dots look like little red stoplights against the foggy energy wall. He calms himself down as he realizes the bullets can't hurt him and the ship is protecting him. He psyches himself up that the bullets cannot hurt him.

A minute passes by and the thumping sounds cease. Abruptly there is a flash of colorful light pulsing where the blue light panel area is. Sounds of hissing and buzzing can be heard as if pressure is releasing. Jaden turns his attention to his left and he hears simultaneous thumping sounds directly in front of him and over him. He quickly stands up and walks over to where the

sounds came from. He is amazed at what he sees. There is a rainbow prism in front of him. A strange, musty smell comes from the opening.

He is amazed at how it just appeared in the body of the UFO. He quickly realizes it is an entrance. He tries to see inside of the ship through the opening, but just sees bright colors. It looks similar to the way a rainbow looks after it rains. The colorful illusion and entrance quickly change to a mirror. He looks at himself in the mirror holding his wounded shoulder.

Jaden is so intrigued by the colorful and exotic entrance to the ship he forgets he was shot and was just fearing for his life. He begins to question if he should enter the alien ship.

He thinks to himself, 'I'm nervous to go inside. What if these aliens abduct me and do experiments with me? Who's inside here? What if I die? What is this ship here for? I heard about what these military people do to people who know too many secrets and how they end up disappearing. On the other hand, this could be the chance of a lifetime for me. There is a fifty percent chance these could be friendly aliens.'

Jaden thinks about the bad aliens in the television show *V*, the Borg on *Star Trek*, Sith in *Star Wars* and the *Alien* movies. He thinks about the best decision. He figures he might just have to take the chance. He believes he has better odds going in the ship than surrendering to the military. They already proved they wanted to put a bullet in his head. The positive side is that this could be his only chance to explore and see another side of the galaxy. Alternatively, they could experiment on every piece of his body and never be heard of again. On the other hand, this could be his chance to learn of a different species or see how aliens think and what they know. He could learn technologies and science that no one else knows. He thinks he could come back a hero or with special powers like a superhero. This could be his only chance to see the stars up close. The negative side is that he would be leaving his family and girlfriend. He wishes she was here with him so they could do experiments on how fast her mouth moves.

He laughs and chuckles to himself. He stands there thinking while staring into the rainbow and a tear falls from his left eye. The thumping sounds continue all around him. He loves his family and friends a lot, but realizes entering the ship wouldn't be any different from the military making him disappear. He knows way too much. Jaden realizes that this is his destiny.

He looks in the liquid mirror-reflecting doorway to the ship. He sees at least nine bullets floating in midair behind him in the reflection. He also sees red dots in the reflection behind him. He looks up and he sees a bright light shining from the helicopter hovering above, but the light doesn't shine on him through the shield. The shield around the ship is reflecting the light. He looks around a final time and sees hundreds of bullets of many sizes floating over him and behind him.

He feels so weak as if he is about to pass out. He looks forward at himself in the mirror and gains some nerve.

‘This is it, I hope these aliens have a good medic and I hope that isn’t someone’s musty breath I smell.’

Jaden extends his left hand through the liquid mirror doorway and it feels warm inside. He takes a few deep breaths, places his hand over his wounded upper arm and walks through the entrance. The bullets suspended in midair drop to the ground and sound like dozens of beans falling onto a carpet. The shield around the ship disappears along with the entrance.

6:03 PM

Major Robinson walks up to Sergeant Peters, who is huddled around four soldiers looking at a map of the area. Major Robinson is in his early fifties, stands about 5’11” and weighs about 210 lbs. He wears a standard light green military uniform adorned with many medals on his chest. He has served in the military since joining at eighteen. Major Robinson plays ball when it comes to serving his country, he follows orders and doesn't care what they are; he follows them to the fullest. Such devotion has taken its toll on him. His once full head of thick hair has now become salt and peppered and is starting to thin in the middle. Robinson's face shows the road map of his hard life. His brown eyes are set deep into the sockets. His pasty white skin is wrought with wrinkles and a trench-like scar is prominent on the side of his neck. A memento left from a would-be assassin in the Gulf War. Robinson was never much of a family man, instead focusing all of his attention on the army. This left him divorced and estranged from his wife and teenage son.

The soldiers stand up straight and salute Major Robinson.

“At ease soldiers. What’s the situation Peters?”

“The subject was being protected by some sort of energy shield from the UFO08. We fired several rounds from the sharpshooters and the HTC55 unit, but impact was a negative. The subject was holding his wounded shoulder, while moving along the side of the ship. He eventually walked into the ship and disappeared. The bullets then fell to the ground.”

“Oh my God,” Robinson pauses and then looks up into the sky, scratches his head and then continues to talk, “We need this contained as soon as possible before the media gets here and people start to see this. How did that little bastard get away? I want to strangle that little son of a bitch!” His loud voice echoes in all directions.

“Sir,” Peters interrupts, “He’s not going to live long, remember he’s been wounded. My sharpshooters took a good shot into his shoulder. He has lost a lot of blood by now.”

Major Robinson looks into the binoculars and sees the UFO08 with his own eyes.

“My God that is a beautiful ship. It is like a silver liquid smooth outer body. There is something different about this ship from the others I have seen and captured in Area 51. The material of this ship’s body looks so smooth and defined. This one has to be from another galaxy. I want the Uf1-retrac team to move in now. I want the ship tied down and an electromagnetic cover over it. I do not want this ship to get away. We also need all the oxygen removed and any gases so this ship does not try to take off. I want someone to find an entrance to the ship or an opening. We have a new experimental device called a LRSB.”

“LRSB? What’s that sir?”

“I’ll tell you about it when it gets here. That is all for now. I wanted this done yesterday Peters.”

“Yes sir,” Peters says while walking away and quickly gets on the radio. The Uf1-retrac team walks towards the UFO08. They are wearing facemasks and white protective suits. They start by using several radiation detectors all around the ship. Then they bring out computerized devices and start probing the ship. Some officers are erecting huge bright spotlights. There are loud clanging sounds as they set up. Robinson walks over to the farm to talk to the owner.

The opening behind Jaden disappears. It is very warm inside the ship. It is completely dark and misty as if he is behind a waterfall. His curiosity fades away and nervousness returns all around his body as the goose bumps return. The unknown is making his body tremble again. He slowly walks on the sticky, wet floor. He takes off his jacket because of the hot temperature and holds it between his left arm and torso. Jaden feels as if something is watching him. He puts his hands in front of him so that he does not walk into anything. He continues to take small steps forward.

“Hello! Anyone here?” He asks.

He sees something small and glowing, floating in the air like a lightning bug coming towards him. He takes some steps back to try to get away from it. It quickly moves at him and goes into his wounded shoulder. It goes pitch dark again. He falls back onto the solid, wet floor and uses his left hand to break his fall.

“What the hell?” He asks while he rubs his wrist.

His voice echoes around him. It is completely quiet around him. Jaden reaches over to touch his wound and it feels numb. Suddenly his shoulder feels a slight burning sensation as if something is eating at the germs, the way peroxide does when put on a cut. He realizes it was some sort of alien Band-Aid to help him. There is a clear seal over his wound. He continues to breath heavy and he coughs a few times. It feels as if something is in his lungs causing him to cough repeatedly.

Jaden hears watery sounds coming from all directions. It sounds like a bathtub filling up. He quickly turns around looking in all directions while he

pushes himself with his legs and arms across the wet floor. He hears a small humming sound then it goes away. Jaden feels liquid touching his sneakers, making his legs and socks wet. The warm water hits his body and sends warm sensations over his already nervous teenage body. He quickly pushes himself up and stands up straight. He walks backwards away from the liquid now hitting his feet from all directions. Suddenly his body is frozen and he cannot move. There is an unknown force around him keeping him from moving, the same kind that was around his hand in the blue area. He cannot move his arms, legs or head. His feet are firm against the floor and he quickly moves his eyes around in the darkness. The unknown warm liquid continues to rush up his body. Jaden trembles, as he fears for his life. He thinks he is about to drown and he is helpless to do anything. His body feels as if it is stuck in sand. The warm 98.7°F liquid goes up to his stomach and then past his heart. Jaden does not smell any scent from the liquid consuming him.

He starts to panic. He continues to cough and struggles to move. He briefly thinks this is some sort of test, but the irrational part of his brain takes over and he thinks the aliens on the ship are trying to kill him. The liquid reaches the bottom of his mouth. He pushes out some of the liquid in his mouth. The liquid tastes tasteless and smells odorless.

“Help! Someone help me!” Jaden takes a deep breath before being submerged in the mysterious alien liquid completely covering his body.

6:19 PM

Major Robinson slowly walks from the farmhouse. He just finished talking to the owner of the property. He has two soldiers walking near him. They both have guns hanging from their shoulders. He walks to where Peters is standing in a small command post area with television screens of the UFO08 at different angles. The small command post area is elevated on a huge mound of dirt.

“Attention!” A soldier yells.

Everyone stands up straight.

“At ease men.”

“Give me an update Sergeant.”

“We can’t detect through the UFO’s hull yet, sir. We are bringing in a stronger instrument (TC-100) that might be able to scan and penetrate the metallic body. So far, there aren’t any dangerous levels of radiation or harmful bacteria. The body is an unknown material. The body is like a bioship. It has biological components and a strong synthetic liquid type metal. Nothing we’ve seen before. It’s very strong!” Peters announces in a loud and excited voice.

Robinson continues to look at him with a serious look, “How about the titanium metal chain ropes? The UFO08 fully secured yet?”

“We almost have it fully secured, sir. The chains are being put around the object.”

“Good, Peters, very good. Let me talk to you over here for a second Peters.”

They walk to the side together.

Sergeant Peters is a career military man. He considers himself in peak condition, standing 5’7” and weighing 143 lbs. He wears a standard military light green uniform with a few medals proudly displayed on his chest. He has short black hair and a full moustache with flecks of gray coming through. His tanned skin reflects years of working with his troops. Although he has a gruff exterior, his soft hazel eyes reflect a kinder soul. Peters is married to a Japanese woman and has a newborn. He is a loving and tender father.

He has been under Robinson for the past ten years, the past four of which they have developed a friendship. They don’t always agree, but Peters is good with following orders and knows the chain of command. His keen sense of right and wrong has cost him several promotions in the past.

Robinson places his right hand on Peters’ shoulder and looks him directly in the eyes.

“Listen Sergeant, if we can get this securely back to the base without any problems this would look very good on our resumes. Promotions for everyone by the end of the month. This ship will take years for us to fully dissect and learn its technology. We also need to detect if it is sending out any kind of signal into outer space. We wouldn’t want a thousand of these ships down here attacking us next week. I also want a report of how many life forms are on the UFO08 and what happened to that bastard subject boy. He’s probably in there getting probes shoved up his ass right now as we speak,” Major Robinson chuckles.

Peters starts to laugh.

“He’s having an E.T. probe encounter of the third kind with them,” Peters says laughing. Robinson starts to laugh aloud.

“Ha ha, you going to give me a heart attack Peters; my fiftieth birthday is next month. Oh boy,” he coughs and clears his throat.

“This kid is mixed with something right. He’s half black and half white right?” Robinson asks.

“Yes sir, his mother is black and his father is white.”

“What a mixed up kid, that is surely going to confuse the aliens. When they finish with him, they’re going to call him, Junglealienfever,” Robinson says.

They both chuckle.

“No, he’s going to have Jungleborgfever. When they finish assimilating him with their alien probes, he will be a quarter black, a quarter white and half borg,” Peters says.

"I knew that kid was going to be a problem from when I first met him a few days ago. I just wish we were able to detect the ship's location without having to follow him to it," Robinson stops joking.

"What did the farmer say to you sir?"

"He didn't know much. He said his cows were looking and standing around something for the last few days, but he never saw anything out there. I told him an experimental jet landed in his field. He believed me, if he didn't it wouldn't have been hard at all to make that old fart disappear. He cared more about if his cows were okay. I told him the jet landed on a few of them and that we would reimburse him for the dead cows."

"Sir, what happens to all those witnesses who saw UFOs in the past?" Peters asks.

Robinson looks around and doesn't see anyone nearby them.

"There is a team called M1. They work out of Area 51 with us, but in different sectors. They specialize in covering up these types of situations. Every state has a secret base where they take these people. We destroy any evidence and we get all the information out of them. Then they are debriefed and or drugged. We confuse them and get them to believe it was only a dream. Some come back with memory problems, some don't come back at all, and we make them disappear. Standard military protocol."

"Some of these people have families and kids, isn't there another way?"

"It's not up to me Sergeant; there are some other people above me, including the Department of Defense and the secretary of defense. They all decide who lives and who dies to protect the interest of this country. If we can get harness technology from these alien ships, we could upgrade our defense systems and have more advanced spaceships going into space. We could also have more advanced technologies over our enemies. The Russians are doing the same thing when they find a UFO. They are much worse than us to people; they make anyone who has seen or say they saw a UFO completely disappear. At least we return people back to their families on drugs and confused. From our intelligence, they only have one or two little UFO crafts, similar to what we found in the past. According to Project Blue Book, we found five since the beginning of this century that landed in USA. We also uncovered two others buried near the Pyramids in Egypt. We did a successful job keeping it from the media and citizens. This UFO08 surpasses our previous finds from what I can see. We need to keep people away and the media far away. We don't need any pictures or video being sent to television channels across the world. We also need to find out where this craft came from."

They walk back to the area where the television screens are. Robinson lights a cigar and starts to smoke. Blowing smoke into the air and watching the video image of the UFO. Uf1-retrac team has ladders on the side of the UFO; they are all over the UFO, checking everything. Ten men are on top of the ship, using little scanners and probing devices with metal poles.

The mysterious alien liquids fully submerge Jaden's body and he still cannot move. He is holding his breath and the complete darkness still surrounds him. He can hear his heart beating all around him through the liquid, echoing like a lost beacon signal. He has been holding his breath for the past minute and he feels a burning sensation in his chest. His eyes are moving back and forth in the darkness. He feels confused, alone and paranoid as if he is about to die. Unexpectedly something sharp pierces his belly button causing him to blow out his last breath of air from his lungs. His nervous system sends shock waves of chemical messages. The final bubbles are exhausted from his mouth and disappear into the darkness. He continues to not breathe in the liquid. Small needles begin to attack and pierce his body in different areas. Jaden has no choice, cannot hold out, and inhales the liquid around him. He coughs the slightly thicker than water liquid back out. Something goes into his vein on his left arm and injects something. Jaden starts to convulse and his blood pressure rises. He gags for air and his heart beats faster and faster. He struggles to move and to break out of this paralyzed imprisonment in his own body. The liquid fills up both his lungs. His heart slows down to a very slow tempo and then it completely stops beating. His body lets off a few uncontrollable nervous twitches as his eyes roll into his head in the darkness of the UFO. Jaden goes into cardiac arrest.

7:15 PM

Major Robinson is sitting in a chair, gazing straight into the screen with the UFO08 on it.

'I'm going to get you alien ship. The military is going to have a field day taking you apart. You think you can just protect people and get away with it. We are going to find out, how you created that powerful energy force field. I guarantee you we will have that technology in the next few years. I would love to interrogate one of you little alien bastards. Squeeze your big green heads and put you in the Area 51 circus with the rest of your freak families,' he says to himself.

He continues, 'It is too bad your other E.T brothers died when they landed in their older ships. I do not think you can survive on our planet. I hear our bacteria are very infectious. That is why you are hiding out in your ship. However, you will come out eventually, or I will personally pull you out of there. We have ways of getting you out of there. Come on out and suck up our tasty infected atmosphere.'

Peters approaches Robinson with a smile on his face and says, "Sir, the more powerful scanner TC-100 device has arrived. The Uf1-retrac team has already started deep scans to penetrate the body."

"I would like an up to the second update of any findings Peters."

"Yes, sir."

Robinson sits back into his chair. A few minutes go by. Two Uf1-retrac men approach the Major, carrying a shiny metal box with CAUTION written on the outside of it. They stand straight and salute the Major.

“At ease men.”

“Your LRSB is here sir!” One of the men yells.

“Can you please sign for this sir?” The other one asks.

Robinson stands up and signs for the LRSB. The men place the box on the table and walk away. Robinson looks at the box with a huge grin on his face. Peters walks over and sees Robinson smiling, looking at the box.

“Sir, is this the LRSB you were talking about earlier?”

“Yes it is; a prototype.”

He punches in a code and opens the metal box. A cool wind blows by them. Cold smoke comes from the box.

“What is it, sir? What does it do?”

Robinson reaches into the box and pulls out a red glowing device that flashes every few seconds. There are no buttons on it and it looks like a cigar. Soldiers nearby turn to look at the glowing device. Robinson holds it in his hand and it glows.

“This is the best in top secret technology Sergeant. The LRSB is an advanced tracking device. It stands for Long Range Space Beacon. This device can be tracked and located 100,000’s of light-years away from Earth. We have been working on one of these for years, just in case a UFO gets away from us. It uses subatomic frequency waves, very advanced technology. The signal travels faster than light. It sends out millions of signals a second and they can travel through almost anything. As long as one of the signals reaches our galaxy, we will know the LRSB’s location with our long-range satellites. The U.S. government has a special radio telescope in West Virginia that will locate these signals anywhere in our galaxy.”

They both continue to stare at the glowing device.

“Sir, where are you going to put it on the UFO08? Has this been tested yet?”

“Peters, we are going to find a spot on the UFO08 or an opening on the ship. This device will stick to anything once it is activated. Tested? I have no idea how this LRSB was tested or if it will actually work. Here! Catch!” He tosses the LRSB at Peters.

Peters quickly extends his hands out and catches the device close to between his legs.

“You don’t want to keep that too close to your groin, Sergeant. I guarantee it wasn’t tested there,” Robinson says while laughing.

Peters looks at the three-inch long, narrow device with a serious face.

“It’s cold,” he says while extending his arms to give it back to Robinson.

“The box has kept it warm. The device is activated in cold temperatures like space.”

"I would hate to drop it sir and break it. My grandkids will probably be still paying for it," Peters says while carefully giving it back to Robinson.

"Peters, I don't think anything on this planet can destroy this thing. I was told it was made out of a new material the government has been experimenting with called nanotubing metal."

Robinson puts it back into the box and closes it. Robinson's cell phone starts to ring in his jacket.

"I need you to give me an update on the progress Peters." The phone continues to ring.

"Yes sir." Peters walks down towards the UFO. Robinson walks away and answers the phone. A deep voice begins to speak through the phone, "We need an update and a status report." Robinson starts to talk into the phone.

10:30 PM

The floodlights brighten the area as if it is daytime. The moon is full and shines over the cornfields. A calm wind is blowing from the west. Sergeant Peters runs over to Robinson.

"Sir, I have an update for you."

Robinson grabs a warm coffee on the table and looks up at Peters while sitting down.

"Tell me what you got, I saw you down there checking on everything and supervising over the Uf1-retrac team very closely. I'm sure you have something good to tell me and when we can start transporting this UFO08; hopefully soon."

Robinson drinks his black coffee and stares into Peters' eyes. Peters has notes on paper in his hand. He looks back and forth at the Major.

"We scanned the object for the past three hours. The body is unlike any material we have ever seen before. We are scanning all angles of the UFO08. We have found the following:

Traces of an advanced form of matter and anti-matter.

Unknown microscopic energies moving throughout the ship.

Neutrons, protons, anti-protons, unknowns, radioactive energy, and atoms are being manipulated throughout the ship.

The body is a liquid type of organic metal. There seems to be some sort of nervous system throughout the ship.

Some sort of an anti-gravity drive propulsion engine near the rear.

Numerous unknown materials.

Some things that looks like atoms, but are different colors and much smaller."

Peters swallows and clears his throat. He continues while Robinson puts down his coffee and rubs his black beard thinking about what he just heard.

“The matter and anti-matter look stable. The Uf1-retrac team has never seen anything like this before. The head scientist would like to talk to you in a few minutes,” Peters says while looking up at Robinson’s astonished face.

Robinson stands up and says, “We need this ship back to Area 51 ASAP....”

Someone interrupts the Major and says, “Excuse me, sir.”

“I’m John the head scientist, Major Robinson. I’m in charge of my team down there,” John says while shaking Robinson’s hand. John is a white male in his late fifties with a hint of Asian descent in his eyes. He is wearing prescription glasses and is wearing a white radiation suit. He carries his helmet in his left hand.

“We need more time to finish scanning the UFO before we move it. I have seen many unknown properties on this ship. We also do not know where the young man is in the ship, if he is still alive and if there are any other life forms aboard. The UFO08 is fully secured and is tied down, but we need to know more about it. This is definitely the best find I have seen in my thirty years of doing this. We need to know what we are fully dealing with here. We could start moving it now and it could blow up half the planet,” John says.

“Listen John, I understand your concerns. I have my bosses at the NSA and the Pentagon wanting to know when this object will be secured on a truck and on its way to 51. The media is outside the secured area asking questions and starting their own investigations. Therefore, I have enough bugs up my ass. You have another six hours to finish your scans and have this thing on a truck and on its way,” Robinson says with a straight face.

“Yes, sir.” John walks away, putting his white helmet back on.

“Those guys are good at what they do, Major,” Peter says.

“Yes they are, but they don’t have to worry about the politics,” Robinson responds.

“Have you ever heard of most of those things they found in this UFO sir?”

“No, but may God help us that those things don’t destroy us.”

Robinson sits back down and sips some more of his cold coffee. Peters puts his papers full of notes on the table.

“I’ve read somewhere that matter and anti-matter have to be separated or they might cause a powerful explosion. Also, that some of those elements are what a nuclear bomb is made of,” Peters explains.

“Son, do not tell me anymore. I don’t need anything extra to think about. It is bad enough that kid is in there and is an experimental monkey for those aliens. I guess it is only fair for all the times we experimented with their species. I’ve also seen enough alien movies when I was younger, and I know what a lot of aliens have in mind for us.”

“I’m going to do my rounds and check on the UFO08, sir.”

“You read my mind, Peters,” Robinson says smiling.

Peters walks away. Robinson sees a soldier standing about fifteen feet away, he yells to him, "Hey Private! I need some hot coffee on the double!"
The soldier yells back, "Right away, sir!"

FEBRUARY 16TH 12:10 AM

The moonlight is shining bright over the UFO adding to the artificial lights from the bright movie studio-type bright streetlights. A strong gust of wind is blowing harder from the east, making the cornstalks wave back and forth. Inside the UFO, there is a faint heartbeat. The sound is bouncing all around the mysterious alien liquid filling the inside of the ship like an underwater dark cave. Jaden wakes up and gags for air. Something feels different to him. He feels as if he is dreaming. He does not feel like his normal self. Jaden can't feel anything and is very confused.

'Am I dead and in heaven?' He asks himself.

There is darkness all around him, but suddenly something gets bright directly in front of him. From a distance, there is what appears to be a bright blurry screen with many things on it. He tries to get a closer look at this huge screen; he floats closer to it. The bright light shining on him enables him to look around and he notices he does not have a body. He is having an out-of-the-body experience. As he takes a closer look at this screen, with many different unknown characters, he tries to make sense out of it.

'It looks like alien symbols and alien language.' All the colors and strange characters on this big screen amaze him.

'I hope I'm not dead. I wish someone would tell me what is going on. I felt so much pain earlier and I can remember everything. I think I could be dead. I wonder what time it is, or how long I have been here. I know I'm still on the alien ship.'

He looks around behind him and just sees darkness. However, he notices little clear round things, floating together in a pair. They look like small semi-invisible balls. Jaden looked around more, and notices them all over the place. He tries to concentrate on one of them, and then he notices it disappears and shows up at a different location near him.

'The pair moved so fast.'

He turns and looks back at the screen and he notices he is towards the middle on the screen.

'Interesting.'

His curiosity slowly returns as he looks at other small clear balls up towards his left and concentrates on them. They also disappear; he turns back and sees another pair where he was just at. He figures out he is looking through a pair of the clear balls at a time and he is moving one to another. Suddenly an alien symbol appears over all the clear balls. Over each of them the word NANOEYE appears.

‘Okay, I get it, these are called nanoeyes. Got it!’ He looks at this large screen again with strange characters on it. ‘This really does feel like a dream. What the hell does all this mean?’ He asks while investigating.

He sees unknown characters with strange symbols in the middle of the screen. He also sees small and big unknown symbols on the bottom and top. He abruptly sees something he recognizes on this huge white screen, with black unknown characters on it.

‘Jaden! It says my name on the screen, cool!’ He notices an alien character on top of his name. He then sees BRAIN SCAN 1% next to his name on the screen towards the middle right.

Then he sees English words scrolling across the entire bottom of the screen moving to the left. On top of the English words, he sees unknown symbols and alien word characters scrolling very fast to the right. He concentrates on the nanoeyes below him and he is up close to the bottom scrolls.

“A B C D E F G H I J...U V W X Y Z 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 0,” This line scrolls by faster, then matches up with alien characters and symbols scrolling above it. It continues: THE..., AND..., IT..., DO..., THAT..., OR..., DONE..., FOR...,MY...,SHE,...,HE..., BY. Words are followed by brief definitions, then matched up with alien characters then disappear off the screen.

“VERB, NOUN, TENSE, ASPECT, VOICE, MOOD, ACTION...NOUN, PERSON, PLACE THING, ACTION, PRONOUN, SUBSTITUTES FOR NOUN...ADJECTIVE, ...PART OF SPEECH.....” It continues to scroll in opposite directions and Jaden continues watching the screen in amazement.

‘The ship is learning my English language. This is cool.’

Jaden moves back, so he can see the complete screen. He looks at the middle right corner and sees JADEN’S BODY. He also notices an alien symbol on top of that. Jaden concentrates on JADEN’S BODY on the screen. The body image glows momentarily then the main screen disappears, and Jaden’s naked body in the fetus position reappears over the entire screen.

He sees his body is floating in a clear liquid resembling water, with thousands of micro-tentacles going into his body. On the screen, his body is showing up with light around it.

‘Where are my clothes? I’m naked!’ His eyes are closed and his body floating there. There are several nanoeyes floating around his body.

‘Wow, that’s my body there. I look so pale. This is so weird,’ he says.

Jaden also notices a smaller screen to the right, with little alien symbols flashing. He turns around in the artificial eyes and looks back at his actual floating suspended body in the dark. He moves closer for a better look.

‘Oh my God, those tentacles are going into my pores on my skin, mouth, stomach, and hair.’

He notices there are some nanoeyes behind his body and focuses on them. He is now behind his body observing.

‘Oh my God, there is a big tentacle going in my butt. This is too much, that was not necessary. I am sure that must have hurt. Perverted aliens! There are other ways to get my temperature!’

He focuses and moves back in front of his body and looks at the screen again.

‘I look like a freak show; I hope no one I know sees this.’

Jaden looks closer at the screen by his body; he starts to see words he recognizes: BODY TEMPERATURE 99.1 OXYGEN SATURATION LEVEL 98% BLOOD PRESSURE NORMAL. All words have alien symbols on top of them. He looks towards the top right he sees: 500,000 NANOBOTS INSERTED.

‘Nanobots inserted? What the hell are those? Oh no, I’m going to change into an alien,’ he says.

He concentrates on the NANOBOTS INSERTED on the screen. It lights up and a virtual image of his body shows up in the middle of the screen. He sees tiny dots all over his body, slowly moving around. Jaden notices a high concentration of the dots in his brain. The words and symbols on the screen change also. Jaden looks towards the left of the screen he sees BRAIN, NEURON CODE – DECODED / BRAIN WAVES FREQUENCY COMPLETE, ELECTRIC/CHEMICAL NERVE SIGNALS FIRING AT 400 FEET PER SECOND, MOTOR CORTEX SCAN COMPLETE, WHITE/RED BLOOD CELLS MODIFIED, ENGLISH LANGUAGE TRANSLATION FROM LEFT SIDE OF BRAIN 75%, ...TRANSLATION FROM RIGHT SIDE OF BRAIN 25%, NANOBOTS REMOTE TO BRAIN SIGNAL 100%, ARTIFICIAL ANESTHESIA TO BODY 99%.

‘At least I’m still alive. I remember most of those words from science magazines and from school. They are taking all my memory from things I know and translating them. I wonder if I can learn their language. For some reason, I do not think there are any aliens on this spaceship.’

Jaden looks around the screen again. He sees something in red: UNKNOWN NANO REMOVED. He thinks to himself, ‘Unknown nano removed? If it is unknown to them, what does that mean? What was it doing there? Maybe it was cancer?’

Jaden concentrates on the red words, just those words that change, and UNKNOWN NANO PARTICLE REMOVED FROM REAR BRAIN–SAFELY STORED. He concentrates on those words, but they stay the same. Jaden remembers the alien symbol on top of the words.

‘I don’t know if that’s good or bad.’ He looks at the virtual body of himself on the screen and sees a red dot where the unknown nano was removed.

‘That would suck if that thing they removed was something I might need, if I was to ever wake up. Let me see what else is around here.’

Jaden concentrates on the part of the screen that says JADEN MAIN. He sees the original screen with all the alien symbols and words being translated. Jaden moves towards the bottom of the screen, he see small

images related with the English words. $A^2 + B^2 = C^2$, $\pi=3.14$, he reads, and it continues, 65% BRAIN SCAN COMPLETE.

Words, numbers, sentences, continue to scroll by and match up with alien symbols scrolling towards the right. 'These are the things I was learning in college and in high school,' Jaden says, 'Oh my, I hated learning that algebra, calculus and statistics.'

Jaden continues to look at the screen, 'Cool, some of the biology and pre-med courses I took in college.'

JADEN BODY STAGE 1 60% COMPLETE

'60% complete? What is that about?' He concentrates on it, but it does not flash or do anything.

5 AM

"Sir," Peters runs over to Robinson who is dozing off in the chair.

"Huh?" Robinson asks with a confusing look on his face.

"This contact lens is hurting my eyes. Hold on a second Peters."

"Yes sir."

Robinson pulls out eye drops, looks straight up, blinks his eyes and uses a few drops.

"Oh that feels so much better." He blinks his eyes a few times, and then takes a sip of his cold coffee.

"Did that happen from staring at the UFO08 on the screen too long, sir?"

"Possibly, when you look at it long enough, it looks like a smaller rectangular version of the Borg cube from *Star Trek: Voyager*," Robinson says.

"You are right, sir. It does resemble it somewhat," he says while looking at the screen with Robinson.

Robinson continues to drink his now cold again coffee. The coffee tingles his tongue and mouth. A cold chill moves throughout his body.

"When are they going to make something that keeps coffee hot for hours and days Peters?"

"Sir, I would definitely buy something like that, if it did that for coffee."

"What do you have for me, Sergeant?"

"I have an update. The UFO08 has been fully scanned and penetrated to the best of our ability. We have found the following: We located a human life form, who we assume could be Jaden. The body is in a fetal position. It looks as if it could be hibernating or frozen. There is movement as if it is breathing."

Robinson interrupts, "How is the body breathing? How is it alive?"

"We don't know sir, but there seems to be some sort of artificial arms or tentacles connecting him to the ship. Somehow, it's keeping him alive. There are very faint sounds resembling a heartbeat. He's not moving and seems to be floating in something."

“Something?” The Major asks in a puzzled voice.

Peters continues, “Some sort of liquid, we can’t make out what it is.” Robinson looks at the television screen of the UFO and starts to think.

“What are these aliens up to? Are they turning this kid into a space fish? He’s probably going to come out of the spaceship and be able to breathe underwater. Then he will be able to talk to fish. I can see it now, Aquaman with tentacles, communicating with all the fish in the ocean,” the Major laughs, and Peters chuckles.

Then he continues, “Have you found a location on the ship for the LRSB to be placed?”

“Yes we have, we found a little compartment opening, with a blue light inside. It should fit your LRSB device,” Peters says.

“Let’s go and insert this bad boy.”

The Major grabs the box and walks down to the UFO with Peters. The Major looks at all bright lights and walks slowly with his eyes wide open looking at the UFO in person. He steps over dead cows.

“I just stepped in cow blood!” Robinson yells, “Someone clean up this mess over here.”

The soldiers are standing up straight around the UFO while saluting the Major as he walks by. Robinson pulls out sunglasses with his left hand and puts them on.

“The bright lights make it seem like it’s daytime here.”

“Yes sir, it’s very bright here.”

John walks up to Robinson and says, “We have the spot for your device right over here, sir.”

“Thank you John, I see you are getting a lot done.”

John, Peters and Robinson walk over to the area where the small compartment door is on the UFO. Robinson stares at the blue light inside.

“Has anyone stuck their hand in there, since it looks like it could be a handprint for opening the ship?”

John responds, “We tried that already, sir, it didn’t do anything.”

Major Robinson bends down and puts in the combination for the box. He opens it up and hands the LRSB device to John. John places the device inside the compartment door. The device sticks over the blue panel area.

“Does it need to be turned on sir?” Peters asks.

“It will turn on when it senses movement.”

Major Robinson stands back and looks at the ship’s body.

“John, do you think these ropes and cables can safely lift this ship onto the tractor-trailer?”

“Yes, it should sir; the tractor-trailer should be here any minute. The small crane is in place. We are ready to transport her. This is a very nice ship, sir.”

Robinson takes a deep breath, while touching the UFO with his left hand.

“John, where do you think this alien ship is from?”

John turns back to Robinson and says, "I don't know sir, there is only one human life form on this ship that we believe to be the male subject called Jaden. We have detected some kind of life forms or live energy all over the ship, but they are too small to detect what they really are from outside. Maybe when we get this ship open back at headquarters we can determine everything inside. I think this is the best find I have ever seen, sir. However, I'm puzzled to why would a UFO like this land here in the first place, and where are the aliens inside? Did they leave on foot and could be coming back soon? What are they doing with the teenager inside?" John wonders aloud. He then continues, "Maybe the kid could be infected with something that could kill everyone. Maybe he is an experiment and could infect the planet. This kid is going to have to be contained for a long time, if we ever reach him."

"Good questions John, but I don't have the answers. Those same questions and statements puzzle me also. I guess in time we should all find out," Robinson says.

John closes up the opening on the side of the ship while talking to the Major, "I'm looking forward to working with you again, sir."

The tractor-trailer blows its loud horn while it pulls up through a narrow dirt road. The tractor knocks over cornstalks from the sides. Soldiers move out of the way, while Sgt. Peters walks up to the tractor-trailer and directs it.

"How much longer, before we can transport this UFO08, John?"

"Less than forty-five minutes, a little after 07:00 hours, sir."

"That's good John, thank you," Robinson says while he walks away and starts to dial numbers on his cell phone.

"Yes, sir. Yes, sir. Forty-five minutes," Robinson says on the phone.

Jaden is staring at his unconscious, floating lifeless body. He notices small light particles lighting up in another area of his brain. He drifts off thinking of being on the *Ripley's Believe It or Not!* television show with superhuman powers.

"Well Jack, there weren't any probes stuck up my ass or anything like that. Those rumors are untrue. They were friendly aliens and just wanted to share their technology on faster than light space travel with me. They were shorter than I am, so I was like a god to them. Then they asked me what type of superhero I wanted to be and I chose to be a cross of Superman, Wolverine and a Jedi. As you can see, I have lightsaber claws as hands and I can see through your wife's clothes backstage Jack from where I'm sitting."

"Freak!" Someone in the audience yells.

"Well you look like a freak to me. What do you think audience?" Jack the host of the show asks.

"Freak! Freak! Freak!" The audience chants.

Jaden responds with a hypnotizing look on his face.

“You do not look like a freak and you are the best looking superhero we have ever seen,” Jaden repeats while waving two fingers at the audience.

The audience and the host’s eyes are in a daze. They repeat what Jaden says, “You do not look like a freak and you are the best looking superhero we have ever seen.”

The audience cheers and Jaden stands up bowing his head with a huge smile on his face.

Jaden comes back to reality and is now looking at the translucent screen. 85% OF BRAIN SCAN COMPLETE, it says.

Jaden is getting bored in the nanoeye facing the screen in front of him. His feeling of nervousness returns. This out-of-the-body experience is confusing to him. In a dream, he does not realize he is conscious. However, in this state of mind he is conscious of everything. Being tired and hungry is not a problem for him. This experience feels as if he is in a very detailed, controlled dream. He wonders what is going on outside this ship. He nervously wonders what the military is doing outside and if they will come in there after him.

Suddenly, he sees the screen jerk back and forth. The screen changes and a big alien symbol shows up in blue. Then it goes smaller, and reads FLIGHT MODE underneath. The screen turns blinding bright and he moves back some in the nanoeye. The screen then goes dimmer and projects an image. Jaden notices it is video images from outside the ship in very detailed clarity. He sees all the military men around and dozens of men in white body suits around the UFO. Jaden concentrates on the screen and thinks about changing the angles of the images. The screen disappears and he is looking on the outside of the ship in a nanoeye. Everything looks huge as he notices the eyes must be at the atomic level.

‘Wow, this is like being inside a virtual camera,’ he says to himself.

He concentrates on different angles. He sees a tractor-trailer and ropes pulling on the ship he is in. Jaden looks in another direction and he sees Major Robinson sitting in a chair smoking a cigar. He zooms in and sees Robinson’s old, wrinkled face up close.

‘Oh no, not that guy again, that guy has it out for me. He will take this ship apart and take me apart without mercy,’ Jaden says.

He thinks back two days ago to what Robinson told him at his house. *He remembers him grabbing his shirt and pulling him close to his old frowning face, “Listen you little shit! If I find out you’re hiding information and not telling me where that object is at, I’m going to make you disappear. Then you’re going to wish you were never born. For the last time, where is that UFO you were talking about on the phone earlier today?”*

Jaden remembers his reply, “I already wish I wasn’t born, your breath is melting my face. Is this the military’s way of pre-torturing someone, by using

bad breath methods? Listen, Captain Major Old Sock Breath, I don't know what you're talking about. I don't know anything about a UFO. I thought they didn't exist? I was talking about a UFO show on television to a friend earlier today....." Jaden laughs to himself as he remembers in details the conversation.

Jaden thinks about the main flight mode on the screen. He quickly leaves looking at Robinson and goes back to the main screen inside the ship. He sees all alien symbols in white over the live video from outside. The alien symbols get smaller, and English words appear underneath them. He reads in red: SHIELD STRENGTH 100%, ANTI-GRAVITY ENGINES 80% CHARGED, MANUAL FLIGHT AND AUTO FLIGHT, SPEED, ALTITUDE, RADAR, GRAVITY FORCES 65%, AIR PRESSURE / BAROMETER 2000 PSI, STAR / SUN SOLAR CONVERSION STRENGTH 60%, 40% SUNLIGHT CHARGE NEEDED FOR GRAVITY FLIGHT BALANCE.

Jaden notices in red: LIGHT REFLECTION / INVISIBILITY.

'Interesting, hmm I wonder....' He concentrates on those words; then they change. Jaden sees SEMI-INVISIBLE, INVISIBLE, INVISIBLE RE-IMAGE, OFF.

'I have an idea.'

7:05 AM

"Oh my God!" Robinson yells. He stands up and looks at the UFO directly.

Peters runs over yelling, "Sir, sir, it disappeared! The UFO has disappeared!"

Robinson and Peters stand motionless with their mouths wide open. John comes over the radio, "Sir, it's still there, but it is reflecting its light somehow, appearing invisible to our eyes. We can still see it on infrared and thermal sensors. We are going to attempt to lift it again."

The chains appear to be holding empty space.

"Have you ever seen anything like that Peters?"

"No, sir, it's like it isn't there. I'm sure the military could really use some technology like that sir."

Robinson starts to talk on the radio, "John, how much longer before it's on the tractor-trailer bed?"

"It is very heavy sir. It seems as if it weighs five times the size; we are taking it slow, a few more minutes.... Hey take it easy there!" John yells to someone behind him.

The sky slowly lightens as dawn breaks. A rooster squawks in the background near the barn. The sun pierces the sky and shines on the little crane lifting the UFO. It slowly shines down onto the invisible UFO and passes right through it.

‘Ha ha ha...’ Jaden continues to laugh to himself.

‘Damn, that was funny. The look on their faces was so hilarious. That would definitely make the cut on *America’s Funniest Home Videos*.’

The screen shudders again. Jaden turns the invisible option back to off by thought and focusing with the nanoeye he is seeing through.

Jaden knows there are not any aliens on this ship or any aliens he can see. He is guessing the flight screen is in front of him so he can take control of the ship or try to fly it somewhere. ‘Maybe some sort of test?’ He questions himself. This is very puzzling to him.

‘Why else would there be a flight option screen in front of me?’

He wonders if there is an alien here that he cannot see. Whenever he passes a nanoeye throughout the ship, it’s mostly black until he reaches outside the body. He thinks that maybe the entire ship is an alien.

‘Test or no test, I’m not going where the military is trying to take me and this ship.’

Jaden is looking at the main screen again thru the floating nanoeye. He is getting used to being out of his body and operating things as if he is using a personal computer. He changes back to the flight screen.

Jaden sees the same screen he saw a few minutes ago with all the navigation options. He notices the 40% CHARGE NEEDED FOR GRAVITY FLIGHT BALANCE option has gone down to ten percent.

7:10 AM

There is a loud clanging and crashing sound. The sound echoes in different directions. The visible, rectangular-shaped UFO was just placed on the wide load tractor-trailer. The military men and UF1-retrac team are helping to secure it to the trailer. Sgt. Peters is supervising the men to tie the ropes tighter.

Major Robinson is on the phone talking, “Yes, sir, it will be en route in two minutes. Yes, yes.”

Back on the ship the gravity flight balance has gone down to zero percent. The entire screen with alien symbols and English letters on it turns green and starts to flash. He sees two more options on the screen, INITIATE ANTI-GRAVITY ENGINES and VIEW CHANGE. Jaden concentrates on VIEW CHANGE and he is looking outside the ship again. The only difference is all the options that were on the screen are semi-transparent in his view now. He can see the flight screen through the nanoeye also.

This is exciting to Jaden, he feels as if he is in a futuristic virtual reality video game. He realizes he is tied down to the tractor-trailer. He can actually feel the metallic chains as if they are around his real body. His human body

is connected with the outside of the UFO. The chains feels like small leather belts wrapping around his naked body, slightly squeezing him.

‘I have a view all over the ship at any angle, Cool! Let’s see, I have some interesting items and options to play with here.’

Jaden concentrates on the INITIATE ANTI-GRAVITY ENGINES on the left of him.

A humming sound is beginning to roar from the UFO in stereo. The men tying down the UFO run for cover. The sudden humming sounds make them lose their grips and stumble backwards.

“Oh my God, what was that,” Robinson says.

He picks up the radio and yells into it, “Sergeant Peters I want those men back in there to finish securing the chains and I want that tractor-trailer to start its engines!”

The humming sound gets louder. Peters orders the men to get back in there to finish the job. The men try to continue pulling on the chains and ropes. The metal chains and ropes start to lift. The wheels on the back of the trailer begin to lift in the air as well.

“It’s trying to get away! Move your men back!” Major Robinson yells into the radio. His voice can be heard without the radio. He continues on the radio in a lower voice, “HCT55 unit, initiate protocol 1.”

The men on the ground run and take cover. Fifteen seconds go by and a helicopter is heard hovering nearby. Wind is blowing in all directions. The blades are chopping through the wind like a high-speed fan. The helicopter stops directly over the UFO with something underneath it. The helicopter drops a metal net over the UFO and quickly pulls away. The net starts to light up with electricity. The tractor-trailer engines turn off and the driver gets out and starts to run. The UFO humming sound goes silent and there is a loud thump. The chains are relaxed and the trailer wheels are back on the ground.

‘What the hell was in that net?’ Jaden asks. Then everything goes black through the nanoeye. ‘This isn’t good. I feel like I just closed my eyes, everything is black.’

He tries different nanoeyes and they are all black.

Sergeant Peters runs over to Major Robinson.

“Sir, what was in the net? The sound is gone and the UFO looks as if it lost power along with the tractor-trailer.”

“Good old fashioned American technology. The net contains trillions of electromagnetic impulses. Guaranteed to destroy and disable anything electrical or mechanical underneath it.”

Sgt. Peters looks down at the UFO with a confused look on his face, and he asks, “What about the tractor-trailer?”

“We have time for another one to come in. The backup tractor-trailer should be here in a few minutes. We don’t take chances here, Peters. Get your men down there to untie the UFO08 and get it ready to be put onto the next truck.”

“Yes, sir,” Peters says while running away.

The white bearded Caucasian driver of the tractor-trailer approaches Robinson. He speaks with a southern accent while waving his hands outwards, “What did you all do to my truck? My watch and beeper stopped working also.”

Jaden sees a big alien symbol in red. It gets smaller and he reads RESTART underneath it. Then he reads, PROTECT MODE, PROTECTING JADEN’S HUMAN BODY.

‘Damn, I was beginning to shit bricks sitting here in the dark, thinking the entire ship had a blackout.’ English words and alien symbols start to scroll by very fast all over the screen. One of the words reads RESTARTING.

‘Alright! Cool, the ship is restarting as if Windows 3.11 just crashed.’

The flight screen lights back up, he is back at the flight screen and he quickly changes view. Jaden is looking outside the ship and quickly moves between the nanoeyes.

‘I’m still tied down. Let’s see what this ship can do. I’m getting the hell out of here.’ Jaden concentrates on raising the anti-gravity engines to ten percent. He then sees MORPHING FOR FLIGHT.

A low humming sound is heard again outside the ship. The annoying sound quickly gets louder. Robinson turns and looks with his eyes wide open. He knocks over his coffee; it spills all over the small table, and finds its way to the dirt mound.

“What the hell is this bullshit?” He asks in a disgruntled voice.

The men stop untying and tighten the chains again. The soldiers and Uf1-retrac team cover their ears near the UFO.

“HCT-55 unit 2, initiate protocol 1!” Major Robinson yells over the radio.

Everything is happening very fast. A soldier covering his ears near the UFO has his helmet come off and float upwards into the air. The UFO begins to lift upwards very slowly, lifting the chains and the trailer. The ship begins to glow brightly in all directions. The men cover their eyes. Light particles can be seen moving up and down the body at high speed. The entire body begins to change shape. There is a bright flash as the humming sound continues to get louder. The bright flash and light particles fade away. The body of the ship morphs into a gigantic, metallic, carrot-shaped UFO. Something silver and metallic comes out from the sides of the ship on both sides. They pass directly through the chains. The pair extends out four feet from the body and lay flat like floating wings. The

metallic wings are about three feet wide and nine feet long. They extend from the middle of the ship towards the small end of it.

Everything seems to be happening in slow motion. Robinson continues yelling in a deep voice. The entire tractor-trailer lifts into the air. Then the cabin area of the truck detaches from the rear trailer and slams to the ground. The loud crash echoes in all directions, shaking and vibrating the ground. The men take steps back. The rear trailer and the UFO are floating nine feet in the air. Small yellow particles begin to come from the bottom of the wings. The soldiers and men in white suits become weightless. They are trying to run, but they levitate in one place and lift with the ship. The men begin to scream and yell, while saliva comes from their mouths and quickly turns to small bubbles. They attempt to grab onto something. Another helicopter quickly approaches. Suddenly it goes very quiet. Inside the ship, Jaden feels as if he is stretching his body. Outside the ship, the only sounds are screams and helicopter blades cutting the wind. Peters is holding onto cornstalks with his right hand while trying to keep a soldier from floating away with his left.

“Hold on to my hand tight!” Peters yells while his legs begin to float upwards.

Yellow bubbles float from the pants of the soldier. The soldier Peters is holding onto grabs another soldier’s foot and they form a human chain. Others soldiers are not so lucky and spin out of control upwards. Their arms and legs are out of control.

There is a spark of bright electricity around the chains. Major Robinson covers his eyes from the light. Pieces of the trailer, ropes and chains levitate in one spot and leave the UFO. Soldiers and retrac team bodies are still floating fifteen feet in the air. Some are upside down and running. Some are screaming while trying to grab onto something. They are all helpless and have fear in their eyes and face.

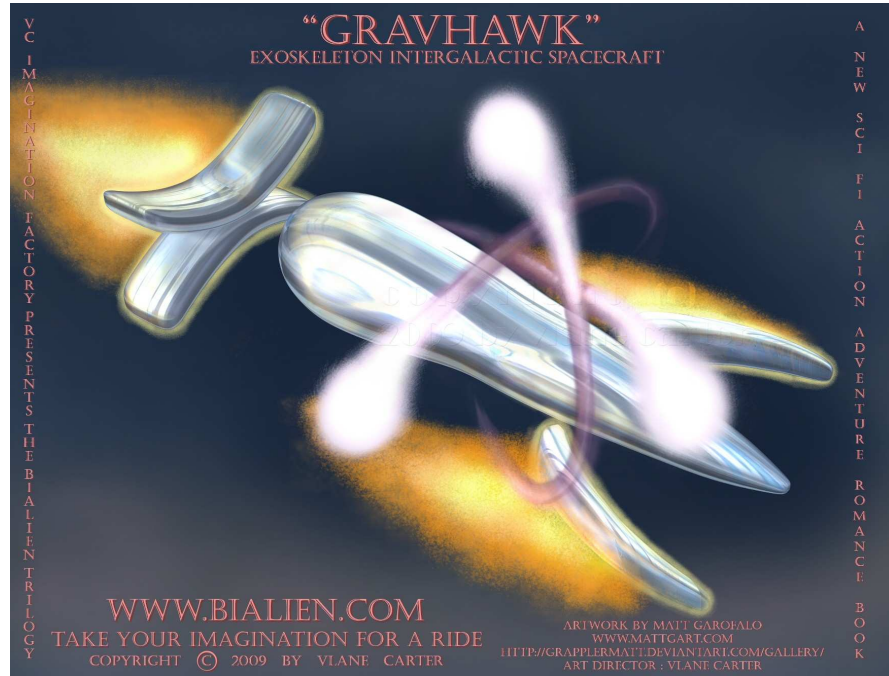
There are men holding on tightly to the frozen cornstalks. The UFO lifts up faster and is about thirty feet from the ground. Robinson extends his neck to look in bewilderment at his prized possession floating away. Suddenly the rear of the ship starts to move and extends outward like a liquid metal wave. Something comes out of the rear and morphs into a tail. The tail stops three feet from the rear and levitates behind it. The bottom piece of the silver metallic tail looks like a frown and the top part extends upwards like a smile. They are connected as one, but two inches separate them. The tail is about ten feet wide and three and a half feet deep.

A sniper bullet is shot at the UFO from the distance. The bullet slows down and slowly approaches the UFO. It then stops six feet from the UFO and disappears into a small spark of light. Another HCT-55 helicopter hovers over the UFO taking off. It drops another net over the UFO. The net opens up directly over the UFO. Electricity brightly lights up six feet around the UFO, quickly traveling around it at high speeds. From the

ground, you can see a clear energy shield around the ship. The net instantly disintegrates and the electricity fades away. The UFO lifts up faster, slowly turning clockwise. Small yellow particles can be seen being emitted from the tail and wings.

Major Robinson continues to have an astonished look on his face. He can't believe what just happened. The trailer and chain pieces slowly descend to the ground. The helicopter tries to move out of the way. The UFO is spiraling up at breathtaking speed and clips the rear of the helicopter. Four feet of the helicopter tail disappears including the rotor. The engine sputters and the helicopter quickly spins out of control. The dozen or so men floating fifteen feet from the ground quickly drop to the ground. Pieces of the trailer, ropes and chains also fall to the ground making loud clanking and thumping sounds. Half of the rear and front tires on the trailer are disintegrated. The helicopter sputters and continues to spin out of control towards the ground. The two pilots jump out of the sides screaming; one lands in a pig's sty and the other in a cow's pen. The helicopter crashes into the barn and explodes. Sounds of men moaning on the ground can be heard echoing in every direction. Guns are being shot at the UFO from all directions. Major Robinson's cell phone starts to ring. He keeps his eyes on the disaster in front of him. He rubs his head and continues looking in shock at the UFO getting smaller and smaller. The sunlight reflects on the newly morphed UFO as Robinson's cell phone continues ringing.

Chapter 2: The Sonicboomathon Chase



7:15 AM

The wind is blowing from the west at 15 mph onto the UFO making a howling sound. The ship is slowly floating across the sky at 25 mph. Jaden can feel the cold wind all around him as if it is blowing against his face and body. He feels as if he is flying in a dream. He sees the explosion at the barn and feels bad for the poor farmer named Jack that owned the property there. Below him he can see the closed off area with hundreds of military personnel on the ground closing off several areas. There are citizens, police and National Guard troops pointing towards the UFO. The nanoeyes are flying autonomously in different directions. A nanoeye detects a brown-feathered eagle approaching from a distance. Jaden's altitude reads 203 feet.

'Holy shit! What a rush. This ship just morphed like the *Terminator 2* robot. That was amazing watching this ship transform. The wings and tail coming from the body are awesome. It felt like I grew two arms and the tail felt like I just stretched my legs after a long trip. I wonder if my heart is beating fast. Let me check and see.'

Jaden checks his physical body and monitoring screen to see if he is okay. He is still crouching in the fetal position. He can hear his heart beating very fast from the adrenaline rush he just experienced. He feels more comfortable with all this constant multi-tasking and flying the UFO on pure thought. The ship tilts to the left and then to the right instantly. A few minutes pass by as Jaden is flying over the area he grew up. The eagle flies alongside the ship. It makes a hawking noise while turning its neck and head to look at the ship. The UFO stops midair and turns in the direction of the eagle. The eagle continues flying and the nanoeyes continue to circle the huge bird. Jaden makes the right wing extend upwards as if he is waving at the bird.

‘Hello, Mr. Hawk. You look so beautiful up close. Your feathers float so nicely through the wind. Don’t be afraid, little guy,’ Jaden says while the wing extends back down.

Jaden realizes it’s a red-tailed hawk and not an eagle. The bird slowly flaps its wings and circles the ship while making loud bird sounds.

‘Hey bird, I’m not a nest. There is no place to sit here,’ he says while following the excited bird with the nanoeye.

Another red-tailed hawk comes from the national park underneath him. Two mourning doves also approach from below. The hawk reaches the rear of the UFO and one flap of its wings propel the hawk very quickly upwards. The two doves and hawk quickly propel towards the ship out of control. The UFO quickly turns and moves out of the way from the fast moving birds, just missing them. The nervous birds poop as they pass over the ship. Jaden tries to get out of the way, but it narrowly lands on the body.

‘Yuck that feels nasty. I can even smell that...no respect for a ship that was just washed...I mean morphed.’

The birds quickly scatter and they gain normal flight. Jaden thinks for a second about chasing them, but he lets them go. He wonders why the birds lost control like that. He figures it must have been gravity related like the military men floating upwards a few minutes ago in zero gravity. He continues forward at a maximum speed of 30 mph. Jaden wonders why he can’t go faster.

He wants to go back into his body soon, but he is making the best out of this weird, frightening and exciting experience. The other helicopter is coming towards the ship from a distance. Jaden can flip through the menus and screens much faster now. It is as if he is clicking a mouse on the computer and whatever he thinks of happens instantly. This is much easier than driving a car or playing Super Nintendo. He can see at any angle outside the ship and he can zoom in on anything. He can’t wait to tell his friends about this. Jaden wonders what they are doing now.

Jaden sees all the military trucks and police cars blocking off streets. He sees yellow tape closing off areas and a news reporter on the ground from a distance. He zooms in on her.

“I’m Angela Clarke reporting for Channel 6 Local News. Behind me, the military has sealed off the area where some unknown object landed last night. The military has been tight-lipped so far and refuses to answer any questions. Several trucks and helicopters have been seen entering the area. The military said a radioactive meteor landed here yesterday at 5 PM, and didn’t give more details.”

The camera operator turns the camera up into the air. Miss Clarke turns around and looks up.

“Oh my! There is something flying in the air, just over my right shoulder. Oh my God! It looks like a UFO or something. I can’t believe what I’m seeing now,” she stands there holding the microphone speechless looking into the air.

The camera operator zooms in on the UFO. “I’ve never seen anything so shiny and exotic looking like this. The wings look as if they are floating along the side of the body,” he says.

“Tell me you’re getting all of this, Jerry,” Miss Clarke says.

“I didn’t blink my eyes for the past minute, ma’am.”

The crowd standing behind the yellow tape begins to talk louder. The UFO continues to hover by them making a slight buzzing sound.

“Yes sir, yes sir, I understand. I know the protocol, I’m working on that now,” Robinson hangs up the phone with an angry and disappointed look on his face. He takes a deep breath and bangs his hand on the table. He flips the portable table over and radios fall on the ground.

“How the hell did this happen? “Shit! Shit! Shit!”

He kicks the chair and knocks over another hot coffee. Peters and three other soldiers are standing by Robinson in a line, very quietly. Robinson rubs his head and calms down.

“We just went into DEFCON 3. We are also into Operation Unknown Alien Intentions. My bosses are trying to blame this mess on me. We have to take that UFO out,” Major Robinson coughs then continues, “Officer, I want you to take care of that crowd and take any video recorders. Relay that message to the men outside the perimeter, and I want you to personally to see that everything is done properly. Then report to me. Anyone giving you a problem, or asking too many questions, arrest them.”

“Yes sir, right away.”

Robinson turns to Peters, “I need you to go to the Marino family house, question his family and then his friends again. Get any information you can get, he might be a victim or he could be working with this unknown alien terrorist group.”

“Alien terrorist group?”

“We don’t know what the intentions are of these aliens; that kid could be one of them or a part of them now. That ship is a threat to national security and America. This kid could be trying to kill people or blow up his high school. We don’t know. We also don’t know what the UFO08 is capable of in weapons,” Robinson pauses and pulls out a cigarette from his jacket.

He then pulls out a lighter and flickers it a few times. He sits down in the commander chair.

“I have a light sir,” Peters says.

“I got it.”

He puts his hand over the cigarette and continues to try to light the cigarette. It lights up and the white smoke flows through the air and seamlessly disappears.

He takes a deep pull and continues, “This might be out of my hands soon...”

The Major exhales.

A man comes on the radio, “HCT2-55 unit still in pursuit of UFO08, flying southeast at 323 feet and at 30 mph. It appears to be flying towards a school and residential area. I have the target two miles in front of me and awaiting further instructions.”

“This is Major Robinson. Continue pursuit of UFO08. Do not engage yet, you will be shortly in contact directly with the Pentagon and the Air Force units about to intercept.”

“I see two F-15E’s forty miles away and a SR-71 Blackbird on my radar intercepting at high speed!”

“That’s a copy.”

Major Robinson puts down the radio and talks to Peters again, “I can tell this is going to be a disaster; this is going to be a long day. I need you to stay here until Lieutenant Barker gets here and then go to Jaden’s family house. Try to get there before the FBI shows up.”

Jaden is flying high in the air above his town looking down. He sees his old high school beneath him. He feels as if he is a floating video camera. The fresh air blows across the UFO and Jaden can feel it crossing his body. Everything is so clear and detailed around him. He keeps wondering why he can’t fly faster than 30 mph. When he thinks about accelerating or increasing anti-gravity engines, JADEN’S BODY STAGE 1 98% COMPLETE lights up in red. Then he can’t see what STAGE 1 means. Words and sentences are still being matched up with alien characters on another screen.

Jaden flies over his old high school.

‘This must be first period. Look at all the freshmen walking to class. Let me zoom in on them.’

“You dropped your books!” An older bully knocks down a freshman’s schoolbooks from his hands.

“Why did you do that? My mommy paid a lot of money for those SAT books.”

“Your mommy huh? Mama’s boy huh? Your mommy gave you any lunch money for me?” The older bully asks.

“I’m not giving you my lunch money,” the freshman says with confidence, “Who are you suppose to be Nelson from *The Simpsons*?”

Other students stand around and start to watch the entertainment. The older kid gets up in the freshman’s face and grabs him by the collar, “You’re giving me whatever money you have in your pocket or I’m going to beat your face in.”

The freshman looks scared at the bully, but his eyes are behind him.

“Look a UFO!” The freshman yells. The bystanders begin to point into the sky.

“You think I’m that stupid to believe that?” The bully asks while searching the kid’s pockets. The freshman stands there in shock pointing in the air.

Jaden is hovering in one place being entertained by the commotion.

‘Wow, this is good. Front row seats to a freshman being bullied. This is good, Bart Simpson and Nelson Muntz in high school. This reminds me of my junior high school days of being bullied and kicking the bully’s ass. I didn’t think these things still happened in high school. Stand up for yourself freshman! I wonder if there is something I can do to help him.’

Police sirens are heard from far away.

“You’re a good actor huh? All you have is five dollars?”

The freshman whispers in a scared and terrified voice, “Aliens are looking at us.”

“Oh yeah huh? You think I’m stupid?” The bully makes a fist with his right arm and moves his arm back to punch the kid in the face. His right hand stops midair and he releases his grip on the freshman. The freshman falls to the ground and the bully’s body floats into the air. The bully begins to scream while his pants fall down to the ground, leaving him naked three feet in the air.

The high school students start laughing at the bully floating in the air unable to move. The freshman runs away with his books. The kids standing around start to run in all directions, screaming and running. The bully falls to the ground with his pants at his knees.

“What the hell! Arrrggghhhh!” He turns around and sees the UFO seventy-five feet in the air near him. He quickly pulls up his pants and he runs towards the school. Local police swarm the area and they escort the kids into the school along with teachers.

‘Now that was classic. I used some kind of a tractor beam on that kid. That was hilarious, that kid will believe the next time a UFO is behind him,’ Jaden says.

The officers on the ground start to shoot their shotguns and guns at the UFO. The students run into the school screaming and hiding behind trees. The UFO flies away.

“Are you okay son? Are you hurt?” The police officer asks the freshman kid.

The student continues looking at the UFO in the distance and crying. The officer picks up the kid and brings him into the police car. The five-dollar bill lies on the ground covered in blood. The wind blows it away.

PENTAGON, WASHINGTON, D.C. 7:45 AM

“That’s right sir, upstate New York in a small town called Stillwater; twenty miles north of Albany. We are currently tracking it on one of our spy satellites with three more moving into position. The UFO08 has already hurt dozens of soldiers and one civilian,” General Dudley says over the phone to the Secretary of Defense.

General Dudley is a short bald man in his late sixties. He walks around with a cane and served in Vietnam. Secretary of Defense Oscar Strongwater is a white man in his early seventies and was appointed to his position by the President of the United States.

“Dudley we need this object taken down with any force necessary. Too many people have seen it and this is getting out of hand. We do not know what this UFO08 is capable of. We need this contained right away. Use as many jets available. Give all jets, helicopters, and tanks the green light to fire. I want everything recorded; I also want Major Robinson’s report on my desk by 08:00 hours tomorrow. You even have permission to use the SR-71B and put on standby the stealth bombers.”

“The SR-71B? Do you think that is needed?” Dudley asks.

He continues, “There is a fully loaded AC-130U gunship a few minutes away and it should be able to take out the UFO08. It is only flying at 30 mph.”

“We don’t need to take any chances. The UFO08 could start moving at faster speeds at any moment. It has already changed into an aerodynamic body. This is a threat to national security; we are not taking any chances here. We need our most advanced, fastest and top-secret jet on this,” Secretary of Defense Strongwater orders.

“The SR-71B new prototype engine is still in the experimental stage.”

“Yes, I know. We need our fastest jets; I want every available aircraft on this. The LRSB online yet?” Strongwater asks.

“No sir, it’s currently offline. The LRSB is only active and online in outer space. It transmits on subspace...”

Secretary Strongwater interrupts, “I don’t need to know how it works General. Let’s try and keep this short and to the point.” Strongwater stops talking and coughs a few times.

He continues, “I heard some local citizen could be involved or is being held inside UFO08?”

“Yes, sir, the FBI is on their way to question the teenager’s family.”

“If this kid is dead or alive, we don’t need this story on the front page of Enquire magazine. When the UFO08 is shot down, everything is sent to the labs. No one is to speak to the media and the President has been informed. We will address the media publicly when this is over. If the boy’s body is found it stays in the lab, not to be returned to the family. Let the local and state police know this kid is wanted,” Strongwater says.

“Wanted for what sir?”

“He is wanted for stealing government property.”

“Yes, sir.”

General Dudley hangs up the phone with Secretary Strongwater.

“Officer get me on the radio with the AC-130U gunship.”

“Yes, sir.”

A few minutes pass by. General Dudley walks over to the two-way radio. He walks with his medals shown proudly on his military jacket. The officer hands him the radio.

“This is General Dudley at the Pentagon, who am I speaking to?”

“This is Warfare Officer Cole, aboard the AC-130U gunship from Albany Division, sir.”

“Listen Officer, you tell your crew we don’t need any mistakes on this. We need this unidentified flying object taken down by all means necessary. It has already injured officers and civilians. It is a threat now to our country!”

“Yes sir! I will inform my crew, we will use all necessary firepower to take down this object...,” Cole abruptly clears his throat and continues, “Sir, we mostly fire at ground targets.”

General Dudley replies, “The UFO is only flying between 25-30 mph at a low altitude. You are also the closest to the target.”

“Yes sir, we will fly higher than the UFO and take it out as if it is a ground target,” Cole says.

“Be careful, the UFO08 has an advanced shield technology and might have an offensive system we don’t know about.”

“Yes sir!” Officer Cole says excitedly. Dudley hangs up the two-way radio.

“HCT2-55 fall back to base, we have live video feed from other sources.”

“Yes sir! Reporting back to base.” The HCT2-55 turns around.

Jaden is still slowly flying the UFO over where he grew up. He really wants the ship to go faster soon; he knows the ship can do more. It feels as if he is driving a car at the speed limit or flying in a Badyear blimp. STAGE 1 is still flashing red and he knows it has something to do with his speed. Jaden makes it to his neighborhood where he lived most of his life. He floats over his house.

‘Wow, I wonder if mom and dad went to work yet. Let me see if I can zoom in here. On second thought, I think I shouldn’t do that. I might tractor beam my house by mistake.’

Sirens can be heard in the background as Jaden turns around and heads in another direction. Suddenly his front door opens. The autonomous nanoeye detects this. His mother, Stacey, walks out the front door with a cup of coffee in her hand. Steam from the coffee can be seen coming from the brim of her homemade coffee. She assumed Jaden stayed at his girlfriend’s house last night without calling again. Ten minutes earlier, she left a voice mail on Amy’s house phone. The UFO turns around.

Stacey is a fair-skinned African American woman in her late forties. She talks with a slight English accent and has a size eight figure. Her hair is short in a Halle Berry early nineties haircut. She has light brown eyes and a small nose. She was raised in England where most of her family is from. Stacey came over to America in her early twenties for a college education. She later fell in love with her husband Tony Marino.

She is wearing a dark brown business suit, a three-quarter black winter coat and opaque tights. Stacey was on her way to work. The keys in her hand can be heard jingling as she slams the door shut. She puts her keys in her bag and pauses. She feels as if something or someone is watching her. Her shadow from the sunlight disappears and she hears a slight humming sound. The sunlight disappears around her as she looks to the sides of her. She slowly turns around and looks up. She sees something blocking the sunlight. She focuses in and sees the UFO levitating in one place pointing right at her, while partially blocking the sun. The sun shines on her face and she puts her right hand over her eyes to block out the sun’s rays. Her mouth opens up and a look of fear comes across her face.

“Oh my God what is that?” She yells while dropping her coffee. Her coffee spills out of the cup. Some of it lands on her shoes and lower tights. Her mouth is wide open and she is in complete shock.

‘Hi mom, look at my new spaceship! It doesn’t need any insurance!’

She quickly opens her bag while looking up at the UFO slowly getting closer to her. Her hands are shaking and she grabs the key and shoves it into the lock. She quickly turns the key, opens the door and slams it behind her. Stacey locks all the locks and runs into the basement. She is breathing heavy. Jaden realizes she couldn't hear him. Stacey quickly takes off her shoes and runs upstairs to her bedroom. She drops her winter coat and bag on the way. She slides under the king-size bed while tearing her tights in a few places. She looks around in different directions to make sure she is alone. Her teeth chattering echoes around the room.

Jaden sees his mother is scared under the bed through the nanoeye. He realizes he freaked her out enough. Local and state police start shooting at the UFO from the ground. The bullets hit the body causing small waves of liquid metal to go in different directions. The bullets feel like hail against Jaden's skin.

They begin swarming on the ground under it and police get on a loudspeaker, "Everyone please stay in your house. This is a police emergency."

Jaden is getting bored and heads in another direction. He feels bad for scaring his mother half to death and now he is freaking out the neighborhood. He still can't get over the amazing feeling that he is flying. It feels like a dream that he can't wake out of. He really wants to see what this ship can do. Jaden knows this can't be the top speed. Jaden flies towards his college. He feels as if the wind is blowing against his face.

'I wonder if Amy is still mad at me or if she is in class already.' He sees students pointing in the air and running. One of Jaden's screens light up and he sees an unknown threat 8000 feet away.

DEFENSE/OFFENSE MODE ONLINE lights up in red letters. Suddenly purple light particle rings are forming in the middle of the ship. The particles quickly stick together at high speed. A huge purple molecule forms together and passes right through the hull of the ship. It extends seven feet outside the ship in different directions and curves back into the body. There are three clear bulbs that resemble the shape of a huge egg on different tracks of the purple molecule. Each bulb is moving around a track of the molecule, slowly passing through the body and back out. The six nanoeyes quickly pass through the huge molecule. 6 NANOSCANNERS ONLINE shows up in red letters. The nanoeyes convert into nanoscanners.

'Cool, look at that. A cool huge glowing molecule. That is awesome!'

He sees different nanoscanner screens with numbers at the bottom of each image. There are more options on each screen now. The options intrigue Jaden's curiosity. The nanoscanners quickly scan the large cargo plane flying towards him. They combine the images together and form one big vision of the cargo plane. The cargo plane has two huge propellers on each side of the

wings. Jaden changes his vision and sees the airplane in 3D with an enhanced 360° vision.

UNKNOWN AIRCRAFT, SPEED 315 MPH, ALTITUDE 1522 FEET, DIRECTION NORTHWEST the screen reads. Jaden switches between different nanoscanners. He can actually hear the propellers turning and cutting the air. It actually sounds like a loud fan to his ears as the nanoscanner passes right through the blades. He sees the outside of the plane and changes angles. NO DEFENSE ENERGY SHIELDS FOUND ON CRAFT, 12 CARBON BASED HUMAN LIVES DETECTED, nanoscanners display on each vision.

‘Oh Shit! That is the AC-130 gunship! My brother told me about those airplanes when he was in the Gulf War. That is one deadly, dangerous plane.’

Jaden suddenly sees through the body of the gunship in a three-dimensional view. He sees cables, wires, steel, plastic, engines, gas flowing, oil flowing through pipes, eleven male crewmembers and one female crewmember sitting in chairs. He also sees quite a few television screens, hundreds of large cannon shells and thousands of large bullets loaded up. Jaden can see inside of the gunship at any angle or direction.

The crewmembers are breathing heavily and blood is flowing fast throughout their bodies as they each witness the UFO flying before them. A nanoscanner is displaying the bacteria, dirt and sweat on the crewmembers’ skin. Trillions of bacteria colonies are growing all over their bodies. They are in many shapes and sizes. He then notices bacteria everywhere in the area growing and moving. Jaden feels nauseous and disgusted. He feels as if he is about to throw up. The nanobots in his body quickly override that feeling between his brain and nervous system. Jaden quickly changes from the amplified vision to another.

‘Okay, I feel better. That was the nastiest thing I’ve ever seen. I’ve seen that once in lab class, but not all over bodies moving around like that.’

A few minutes pass by.

‘This is crazy and unbelievable! I can see everything inside of this gunship from inside of this UFO! I’m controlling all of this with my mind. I’m controlling the nanoscanner when I concentrate on one or it can control itself. The vision is crisp and vivid and is at least three times clearer than my own eyes,’ he thinks to himself.

Jaden zooms in closer and he sees the crew briefly without clothes and he can see inside their skin. Their hearts are beating very fast and he can hear them. Beating together as if someone is playing the drums off beat. Jaden looks and zooms in on the female officer.

‘Nice body.....hmm.... she looks of European descent. She looks so serious and sexy. Let us see, what we can see here. Superman with his x-ray vision, moving in for a little peak. So, this is what Superman does all day, when he isn’t fighting crime.’

Jaden thinks about being on the *Price Is Right* show. He quickly thinks about the previous vision without any clothes on. The nanoscanner is viewing through the seat she is on and shows her sweat soaked back.

‘Bob, I think I want to see what is behind door number one.’

The nanoscanner turns around to the front of the female officer.

‘Holy shit! She is completely naked! Whoa, this is crazy. Nice sweaty breasts, slim waist, completely shaved, nice suntan line. She looks like she is about 5’2” 109 lbs.’

Jaden is looking so hard that the vision changes to the insides of her body. Inside of her body looks slightly animated, like a cartoon. He can see her entire circulatory system, veins and bone structure. Her lungs are quickly breathing in and out, and he can see the oxygen slowly being absorbed into her blood. She’s having an adrenaline rush.

‘No traces of breast cancer here officer, you are cleared for duty,’ he says chuckling.

He concentrates on the outside of her naked skin and looks down from her stomach area. ‘Let’s see what the prize of the day is. Let’s check out the multi-purpose hole of humanity, the sacred area on every female’s body. A female’s prize possession that gives a man a reason for living. The nanoscanners and aliens watching this want to see the man on the boat or the vertical cyclops...’

The nanoscanner slowly passes the belly, zooms back and focuses on a certain area.

‘Hmm.. let’s see. What is this red stuff flowing outside her body between her legs? It is just sitting there in midair floating outside her body, lying flat.’

Jaden changes view.

‘Oh NO!’ He yells to himself.

‘A Maxi pad! Yuck! Yuck! Oh no! Disgusting. That is what I get for trying to be an alien pervert. I can see this clip getting onto Milky Way’s Funniest Videos... *Starring Jaden the certified intergalactic pervert*. Yuck!’ He yells and then laughs to himself.

Jaden switches back to regular view and looks at her eyes and face.

‘Couldn’t warn me huh, good looking?’

He sees her looking very nervous, while sweat drops down her eyebrows. Her eyes are focused on the screen in front of her. Jaden turns the nanoscanner around to see what she is looking at on the computer screen.

‘What is she looking at? Shit! She is zoomed in on me with two mini guns and 25mm rounds. Shit, a female Rambo. I’m out of here!’

Jaden quickly changes his view to outside the UFO.

“I’m locked and ready sir!” Officer Jessica yells.

“This is Officer Cole, we see the UFO in sight below us. There is something purple moving around the body and it is about half a mile in front

of us. We have a lock and are firing weapons,” he says over the radio and continues, “Pentagon you should be receiving your live video feed now.”

Four of the nanoscanners fly back towards the UFO at a fast rate. Two stay inside the gunship floating around observing. Jaden tries to communicate to the gunship by thinking about it.

‘Hey guys I’m just flying around in this cool ship, I don’t want any trouble. I’m not bothering anyone.’

They are still locked on him and increasing speed towards him. Alerts of offense and defense icons show up on his screen. Jaden concentrates on trying to get away faster.

“Did anyone hear that crackling humming sound?” Cole asks his crew.

“Yes it came from the radio. The signal came from the direction of the UFO,” an officer says.

“Make sure you record it,” Cole tells the officer.

“Yes sir.”

Cole turns to his crew of eleven, “Fire at will.”

“Firing now, sir!” Officer Jessica says while she wipes the sweat from her face.

Everything starts to slow down around Jaden. NANOTIME is seen in the top right hand corner. He sees flashes of light coming from the direction of the gunship as they fire upon him from above. Little beams of light are being shot at him. He sees a barrage of very large bullets and cannons coming at him at very fast speeds. He tries to bank upwards and the light particles are passing by all around Jaden. The first cannon hits Jaden and he feels a painful sting. He tries to move to the right and activates his shields. The sounds of the gunfire and cannons fired are heard two seconds later, “Boom, boom, boom, boom, ta-ta-ta-ta-ta-ta...”

REVERSE SHIELDS ACTIVATED Jaden sees on his screen. Outside the UFO’s body and inside the shields turn completely black. Jaden is flying away as fast as he can, still at 30 mph.

‘All this technology and this B.S. spacecraft has a maximum speed of 30 mph. I’m a sitting duck.’

The shield catches the gunfire and cannon rounds ten feet from the ship. The force of the cannons makes the ship move in other directions. Sparks of fire are lighting up behind the bullets and cannons, slowly moving with the ship. Everything speeds up again around him and NANOTIME flashes off. Jaden flies upwards towards some clouds to hide. “Boom, Boom, Boom, Boom” The gunfire is riddling around the UFO.

‘I can even feel the bullets and cannons hitting the shield.’

The bullets and cannons floating around the shields move closer into the shields then disappear. 'Where did the cannons disappear to? Why does it say NANO-PLASMA ENERGY RECYCLING on the screen?'

The AC-130U gunship continues to fire at the ship as it goes into the clouds. The gunship flies by Jaden in the clouds and stops firing. The UFO is hovering inside a cloud.

'This is stupid; I know they can see me. What would MacGyver do in a situation like this?' He asks himself and then chuckles.

'He would use this cloud and sunlight as a weapon somehow. Then again, he probably would not even be in this situation flying around in this UFO with a 30 mph speed limit! This sucks! I feel like Beavis and Butt-head hiding behind something where I know someone can see me. Let me scroll through these screens, so I can hit this gunship with something.'

"Use the 25mm and 40mm L60 Bofors cannon shells," Cole says. The AC-130U gunship continues firing at the UFO while turning away from it. It slowly turns to the left to circle around, but continues firing at Jaden inside the small cloud. The cannons make the outside shield glow brightly.

BRAIN CONVERSION COMPLETE, OFFENSE WEAPONS 1 ONLINE Jaden sees.

'Let's see, here is a meter, that looks like a strength level. Let me play with this option. I don't want to blow them up completely. I see a few areas on the gunship lighting up on the screen. This is not easy, I have to concentrate on flying, zooming in, concentrate on which nanoscanners to look through and target this big goofy cargo plane with big guns,' Jaden pauses.

'The bigger cannon shells are making this UFO craft move when it hits the outside shields.'

'Fire!' Nothing happens.

'Shoot.' Nothing happens.

The gunship turns around to get another direct shot at Jaden. Jaden flies out of the clouds and towards the gunship. Targets turn green on the screen Jaden sees.

'Duh, I'm not a pirate on a pirate ship. I can't say the command to myself, I have to think it to myself,' Jaden laughs to himself and thinks about firing. The purple molecule around the body lights up brightly and a pink torpedo is fired from the left side of the molecule out of thin air. It passes right through the shield around the UFO and goes in the opposite direction of the AC-130U gunship.

"Sir, something was fired from the UFO08 in the opposite direction," Cole says on the radio.

‘Shit, it shot in the wrong direction, stupid UFO. I targeted the gunship in the other direction. Is there an alien Stevie Wonder in here firing the weapons for me?’ Jaden asks.

The projectile is moving very fast in the opposite direction and then begins to turn around.

“Weapons Officer, target that pink projectile,” Cole says.

The gunship begins to bank left hard. “Sir, the projectile is heading directly towards us, and it’s 4588 feet away. It is also speeding up to 500+ miles an hour!” Warfare Officer yells.

“Let the computers take it out,” Cole commands.

‘Chicken! Where you flying to? Big bad airplane! I shoot a pink torpedo looking booger at you and you’re flying away so fast!’ Jaden yells at the plane.

Jaden wants to check something out. He concentrates on the projectile and he is looking from the pink torpedo’s view. He sees the plane in view, getting closer. The gunship turns in the opposite direction and the computer starts firing at the alien torpedo with its mini gun bullets and 25mm cannon rounds.

‘That gunship has such precise aim,’ Jaden says.

The bullets and cannon hit the alien torpedo directly. The torpedo breaks up into a dozen little pieces, but still keeps at the same speed at the target.

‘Wow! Interesting now I see many different views. I bet this is how spiders’ eyes are.’

The gunship continues firing, but without any effect on the torpedo. It gets closer, and the dozens of small torpedoes form back together as one. The gunship does a sharp nosedive and banks right. It starts to release a bunch of flares and continues firing at the torpedo. The torpedo again breaks up into pieces and then forms back together. Jaden continues switching views and he notices fighter jets lighting up on his screen a few miles away. The torpedo breaks into five medium pieces. One hits the mini gun, 40mm and 25mm cannon weapons. The other two remaining torpedo pieces hit two of the four propeller engines. The impact shakes the AC-130U.

“We are hit, we are hit Pentagon!”

The targets that were hit glow pink and then evaporate into thin air. The left side propeller engines do the same. Black smoke starts to pour from the AC-130U in those areas. Liquid gas and oil is pouring from where the propellers used to be. The wings are damaged with two missing propellers but they are still flying with the two other propeller engines on the right side. The aircraft leans to the right. The liquid gas and oil stops spraying and the AC-130U starts flying straight again in the opposite direction.

‘I hope they are okay, I don’t want anyone to die,’ Jaden says in a modest tone to himself.

The gunship’s engines are wailing.

‘That was a good and interesting shot. That alien booger torpedo just kept going, even though it was shot at. This is amazing and wild. I’ve never seen anything like that before. This is the best video game and live entertainment I could ever dream of. No controls just thought and concentration.’

“We took a direct hit headquarters. We were fired upon and we need assistance,” Cole says to the Pentagon over the radio.

He continues in a disappointed voice, “We lost two of our engines and three weapons. They just glowed and vanished without exploding.”

“Stand by AC-130; can you still fly?”

“We can still fly, but losing oil pressure and gas from the missing engines. We only have our 105mm M102 howitzer weapon left that wasn’t out when we were hit,” Cole says.

“Can you fall back and give long range video footage?”

“Yes, we can give visual support.”

“You have backup arriving in your area in less than one minute. We are going to organize a systematic attack on the UFO08. There are two F-15’s, SR-71 Blackbirds forty seconds away from you,” General Dudley says.

Then he continues, “Two AH-64 Apache helicopters are standing by on the ground, right under the 08.”

“Yes, we see them sir on our radar. I will relay the coordinates to the other units. The 08 is giving off very little heat and radar. They will need to set their missiles and weapons to explode before contact or increase sensitivity on self guided missiles,” Cole says.

On a small road facing the UFO in the clouds, a young male news reporter is talking into a camera. “This is Paul Patterson, reporting to you from Channel 6 News. It is complete lockdown here in Stillwater. Residents are locked in their houses and told not to come out. People have been hurt on the ground, and behind me is the National Guard with military vehicles. There are two armored Apache helicopters hovering on the ground behind me. There seems to be something hiding in the clouds. An AC-130 gunship was firing at something a few minutes ago. It is hard to see what’s going on through the clouds. Over the scanner, we can overhear the military talking about this object as a 08. I have never seen anything like this in my life. My co-worker Angela Clarke was arrested by the military twenty minutes ago. We don’t know why many people by and around the farm a few miles from here have been arrested. I was told there was a big explosion from a helicopter from some kind of experiments being done there.”

He pauses and drinks a bottle of water. The cameraman points into the sky and gets Paul’s attention. They go back to recording again.

“The AC-130 gunship is back. There are also two fighter jets flying in from the east as you can see. The two helicopters are moving towards that mysterious cloud from the south, which something is inside of. They are coming in my direction and ...”

General Dudley communicates with the backup units. Cole coordinates with the backup units. The AC-130 flying with one side higher than the other and targets the UFO from over three miles away.

‘Oh shit, I see fighter jets and a helicopter below me. They are going to hit me with everything they got, just like a fat kid trying to knock down a stuffed piñata.’

Jaden tries to zoom in and see these jets up close. He doesn’t have time to zoom in. He can see them all on his screens. Everything is flashing on his screen and showing threats. Jaden begins to feel nervous and panics.

He flips through all the screens, looking for something he can use. He sees some things still in alien characters, but some are beginning to make sense to him. Jaden slowly flies to another cloud in an attempt to hide. He also sees his body still suspended, lighting up and glowing. A clear eggshell is around his body in a suspended state with half the tentacles still in him.

The Apache helicopters quickly leave the ground.

“Eagle 1, firing sidewinder and AMRAAM missiles,” the F-15E pilot says over the radio.

“Eagle 2, firing Maverick and AMRAAM missiles,” the second F-15E pilot says.

The two AH-64 Apache helicopters fire their Hydra 70 rockets and AIM-9 sidewinders at the UFO. The AC-130U fires its last remaining 105mm M102 howitzer weapon. Sounds of missiles and rockets being fired fill the air in stereo sounds. Thirty-six military personnel and General Dudley at the Pentagon watch the televisions silently in a large room. A man coughing from the back can be heard throughout the room. They can see different views on the screen from three spy satellites and aircraft cameras. The President and Secretary of Defense in the White House can also see the live video feed. People on the ground are pointing at the cloud and taking pictures of the missiles moving from different directions.

Paul Patterson continues reporting, “... And, the fighter jets are firing missiles at that cloud. The AC-130 gunship is firing from a distance...”

‘Oh Shit, with a capital S. Eleven rockets and missiles are coming in all directions directly at me at 1000-1500 mph,’ Jaden says in a petrified voice.

Jaden is panicking and tries to fire at the missiles and rockets being shot at him. He can hear the fuel burning from inside and outside the missiles and

rockets coming at him at supersonic speeds. A smaller torpedo hits two missiles and rips them into pieces. He can't focus fast enough through the nanoscanners to hit them all. Jaden braces for a painful impact and makes sure the shields are full on. He also thinks about moving as fast as he can, but slowly moves like a turtle crawling 31 mph from the clouds. Suddenly Jaden sees STAGE 1 COMPLETE flashing across the screens in large green letters as the missiles reach twenty feet from the ship.

On the ground the reporter is yelling, "There is a UFO flying towards me about 500 feet up! The missiles are about to hit this flying object!" He yells.

"Are you getting this Bobby?" Paul asks. Bobby the cameraman nods his head, while his other eye is looking at it directly. He admires it and zooms in on the purple exotic looking molecule with the clear egg-shaped balls moving around it.

"It's flying back into another cloud...."

Fireworks of lights and explosions are flickering from the clouds. The sound quickly follows.

"Boom...Boom... Boom... Kaboom."

Loud explosions fill up the airwaves. A small fiery, smoky mushroom cloud forms.

"Boom...Boom...Boom," sounds of explosions take over the airwaves. A different sounding low bass sounding "Boom" is heard seven seconds later about 500 yards in another direction.

Fire and debris quickly fall towards the Earth. Bobby the cameraman starts to backup, while Paul is still talking into a wireless microphone looking towards the camera.

"Oh my god! A fireball just hit the ground ten feet from me. There is more falling right in our direction. It's landing all around me! It is raining UFO pieces and debris."

The cameraman moves behind the news van, along with the other bystanders. Paul is still looking towards the clouds with his back towards the camera.

"It's destroyed! It is gone! That's right ladies and gentlemen; the object hiding in the clouds has been destroyed. The fragments are falling right around me right now as I speak."

"Get out of there!" A voice yells on Paul's earpiece.

Paul turns around to face the camera and he sees that Bobby is gone. The rest of the debris falls on the ground and tumbles towards Paul. He leaps out of the way, but some of it hits him head on, tossing him ten feet away.

"That's right ladies and gentlemen. I have fallen and I can't get up. If anyone hears this, please call an ambulance for me."

“Yeahhh! Alright!” Military men are cheering throughout the Pentagon’s defense room.

“We got it! It is not there anymore,” a first officer says to General Dudley.

“I need this verified, right away,” Dudley says to the officer.

General Dudley looks closer at one of the screens and continues, “It looks like a missile has gotten away.” The officer asks the pilots to check their missiles’ cameras to verify which missile is still flying away.

“That is a negative Pentagon, all of our missiles exploded,” a pilot says.

The cheers stop and it goes quiet again. The first officer zooms in the satellite at the fast moving missile.

“Damn, shit, damn, son of a bitch,” the men in the Pentagon’s situation room say at the same time.

“That is a negative General. The UFO08 is still active and flying at about Mach 1.2, northwest. It is giving off a strong heat signature now,” the first officer says.

The phone rings, General Dudley talks with a disappointed face for thirty seconds. Everyone in the room is quiet and looking at the screen.

General Dudley turns to everyone in the room and speaks, “We are in DEFCON 2 now, and I need all personnel, Air Force, Marines, and National Guard on duty now. I need the Air Force’s best pilots and fastest jets to take this UFO08 down before it gets to a major city and does more damage. I need ground defenses on standby depending on where this UFO08 is heading. I want all spy satellites to track this object down. I also want to see the video of the last attack to see if any damage was done to this spacecraft with our missiles. I am also going to need a sound analyst to decode the sounds that UFO08 is making and has made. Men and women, we must and will take down this 08, this is a big threat to national security,” Dudley pauses, while looking at the second officer trying to get his attention.

He continues, “Dismissed.”

“Sir, you have two phone calls, Line 1 is John, head scientist from the Uf1-retrac team. Line 2 is Secretary of Defense,” the second officer says.

‘I can take my antacid after I answer line 1,’ Dudley says to himself.

“This is General Dudley.”

“This is John Logalbo from the UF1-retrac team. We have reason to believe Jaden Marino is either flying or somehow controlling the UFO08. Also he is trying to communicate with us.”

“Ha ha ha! Where did you get this crock of bullshit from Mr. Logalbo? They paying you to be a physicist and a comedian?”

“I have,” Dudley interrupts John.

“Where’s your evidence? I think some of that UFO08’s radiation has gotten into your brain.”

“I have proof sir; we have scanned at least one life form still alive on board the UFO08 before it got away. The UFO08 has traveled by Jaden Marino’s neighborhood and school,” John is interrupted by Dudley again.

“Maybe the aliens took his mind and memories, and are just going by those places? There is no way he is flying that UFO or learned to use all its weapons and systems in less than twelve hours. Maybe Jaden Marino is an alien himself now and has some alien terrorist thoughts against America. Maybe he was lunch for the aliens on their ship. We just don’t know do we?”

John was talking, while Dudley was talking, “Sir, he was flying as if a teenager would be flying an aircraft. He wasn’t trying to harm anyone, just defending itself,” John tries to get out in one breath.

“Listen, I’ve heard enough John. It is our job to analyze the UFO08’s intent for America. This is what we are paid for. You do your science work and experiments and I will do my job keeping America safe. Do you see me coming down to your deep underground Area 51 alien experiment circus telling you how to probe E.T. or Alf?”

“What if you shoot it down and more of them come? That ship is very advanced; it could be trying to communicate with us.”

Dudley interrupts, “Or trying to communicate with its mother ship to kill everyone on Earth. I have a more important phone call on the other line. Will there be anything you need to tell me that is actually important to me now, Mr. John Logalbo?”

“Yes, when the UFO08 takes off or accelerates, it disrupts the gravity around or behind it.”

“I will take that into consideration, goodbye!” Dudley says in a sarcastic, angry voice and hangs up the phone. He takes an antacid pill. He takes two more then takes a deep breath and picks up line 2.

Jaden feels the cold wind quickly moving by the body of the UFO as it penetrates through clouds and freezing cold air. The friction against the wind is heating up the outside of the body. Jaden notices the wings are up vertically and energy is coming out from the unattached wings. He has never seen a ship like this and can’t believe how fast he is moving.

‘Woo hoo! This is flying! Finally some real speed. I knew stage one had something to do with my speed. I don’t even feel the vibrations of flying on a regular airplane. It feels like I’m flying like a bird in a dream. I love the orange and yellow thrust coming from the wings and tail.’

Jaden realizes his body was being prepared for this type of high-speed flying. Everything is moving so fast around him. 680 MPH 3790 FEET it reads on the virtual screen. He can see all around him in all directions. The nanoscanners are coming in handy and instantly move in the direction he

thinks. Jaden practices switching between them and focuses on the trees and lakes beneath him. The purple molecule goes back into the body and disappears. The wings and tail move when he thinks about turning.

‘Where did those jets go? Oh wow, they are way back there. I guess they gave up on chasing me.’

“This is team leader Eagle 1 to Federal Aviation Administration control center,” the first F-15 pilot says over the radio.

“This is FAA controls, go.”

“We have an escaped unidentified flying bogey heading west.”

“We know and we are tracking it on the radar,” FAA Control says.

“We are trying to take it down. There are about thirty more jet fighters en route. I’m going to need the air space cleared within 200 miles of this unidentified bogey. I’m also going to need permission for all jet fighters to fly over residential airspace at sonic and supersonic speeds. We are just under the sound barrier and waiting for permission; over.”

“Standby Eagle 1, we have to check with the Pentagon, local FAA, local and state police.”

The three fighter jets and a SR-71B are flying in formation in the direction of the UFO.

‘This is flying! Let’s see how fast I can turn and maneuver!’

The thrust of orange and yellow light particles increases. Jaden flies straight down through some soft pillow clouds; the clouds feel like mist going across his face. He can feel the heat being created from the friction of the air. A low thumping bass sound is created from his wake and the air pressure changes around him. A nanoscanner shows the sound waves of the sonic boom quickly moving in all directions around and away from him. Jaden remembers from school when something travels faster than 760 mph (Mach 1) it’s moving faster than the speed of sound and a sonic boom is created. A nanoscanner rides the invisible sonic boom towards the ground. Jaden can see naked treetops shaking from his wake of turbulence.

‘This feels like I’m playing a flight simulator game on a PC, but in a dream.’

Jaden checks back on his body. He sees it is glowing with something clear surrounding him, as if it is protecting him inside of a cocoon. He checks the screens and sees STAGE 2 53% COMPLETE. Jaden can see images inside of images. He can still see outside of the spaceship, but the screens are blended into the main flying images. Alien symbols and English words are still matching up. He notices the words are of space, stars, and galaxies. The word Andromeda scrolls by on the screen then stops, with an alien symbol. He wonders why it stopped on the Andromeda Galaxy.

Jaden has a flashback to when he was twelve and his father was explaining the Andromeda Galaxy through a telescope to him. However, he cannot hear the words, only the images from the past. Then the image changes to when he was fourteen and reading science books on Andromeda.

‘That’s crazy! They are scanning everything in my brain.’

Those screens fade away and the flight screen view comes into focus. When he thinks about what direction he is going, a compass shows in the top left corner. He sees that he is flying northwest. The flight screen is setup similar to the flight simulator games he used to play on the computer. But this is so much more realistic, defined and faster to him.

Jaden continues to fly lower towards the ground and comes upon a large lake. He knows this is Saratoga Lake. A nanoscanner a few miles ahead detects sounds of birds, crows hawking and ducks splashing on the half-frozen lake. There are a few boaters on this huge lake.

The ducks and birds detect something coming and fly away. Jaden slows down to about 158 mph and fifty feet above the water. He can smell the fresh lake water and feel the breeze across the ship. Jaden tries to go as low as he can.

‘I wonder if a nanoscanner can go underwater.’

He controls a nanoscanner to go below the lake. The ship slows down to a complete stop and levitates ten feet above the lake. An older fisherman in a rowboat sees the UFO and looks as if he sees a ghost. He drops his pole in the water and quickly begins to row.

Underwater it is first completely dark, but suddenly everything is bright as day. He sees fish biting at the worms on the pole floating to the lake bottom. Jaden sees weeds, plants and fish all around. The fish look silver and brown. His vision is as clear as being on the surface. He realizes the nanoscanners can pass through and see through anything perfectly. It passes near a fish and he sees bacteria on it, he also sees oxygen bubbles in the water and a catfish quickly moving. Jaden’s attention span is limited and his vision switches to outside the ship. He accelerates towards the boater still quickly paddling away.

The UFO is looking directly at the boater and the man freaks out. The man’s blood pressure increases and he begins to yell.

“Aaaahhhhh! UFO is about to get me!!! Somebody help me!!”

Jaden chuckles to himself, but thinks the old man might have a heart attack if he messes with him. He flies off and quickly accelerates. He admires the water coming out of the lake behind him.

‘The water underneath me is beginning to float upwards in small balls. Hmmm... Let’s see how fast I can go over the water.’

Jaden speeds up and the water behind him flies up thirty feet. Then it turns into suspended bubbles for a few seconds and then falls back into the lake. He is creating a straight line across the lake and reaches 741 mph. A sonic boom is felt and heard all around him. Another man on a small fishing boat drops his fishing pole, begins yelling aloud while holding his ears. Water splashes in his face and all over him. The thumping boom echoes across the lake, breaking ice along the shoreline and causing huge waves on the lake.

‘I love doing that! That was amazing!’

He feels as if he is a smaller Concorde jet. Some of the lake is frozen near the edges and Jaden flies over it. A fifteen-foot wide portion of the ice is being ripped up in slow motion and then the pieces fall back down onto the ice. He sees trees and land approaching very fast.

‘I’m thinking and reacting so much faster. My reflexes are so much more enhanced. Let’s see what else this ship can do.’

Jaden is flying at 812 mph and approaches the shore at an altitude of nineteen feet. He starts dodging between the trees. Jaden hits a tree, but his reaction automatically activates the shields, ripping the tree branches off.

‘When I was about to hit that tree, it was as if I had a reflex reaction of something about to hit me. Then the shield came on by itself, as if I was trying to protect my body.’

Jaden pulls above the trees and back into the air.

‘Shit, that was fun! Hell yeah! I’m getting used to this.’

He flies straight into the air pointing straight into the clouds at 1024 mph. He levels out and starts to fly south above the clouds. He again climbs in altitude.

‘I’m flying like Superman! Daa, da, da, daaa....’ Jaden hums the Superman theme.

‘I need some theme music. I would love to fight Superman now. Chase him through the air and catch him with my tractor beam, with his made in Japan, super tight suit. While I have him in my beam, I’ll fire some Kryptonite alien booger torpedoes at him. Oh man, that would be hilarious... Wow, I must be taking a lot of G’s, turning like this.’

Jaden ascends to 13,700 feet and stops. The wings automatically turn downwards and horizontal. He is levitating. The cold wind blows on the ship and Jaden feels it blowing across his body. The cold feeling goes away and he feels warm again. The temperature is -50°F around him. He misses the cool purple molecule and wonders why it disappeared.

He changes his views from different nanoscanners. Three of them constantly stay around the ship while the other three wander. A few minutes go by and Jaden quickly speeds up again. He descends while

increasing speed to 533 mph and then breaking the sound barrier. The nanoscanner behind the ship picks up the loud sonic boom sound waves.

‘I know that major highway. That is the Interstate 87, that highway goes to New York City I believe. I haven’t been there in years. I can always come back by my neighborhood later when school is over. Hmmmmmm.’

Jaden descends to about 1000 feet, slows down and follows the highway south. A sudden booming sound quickly passes the spaceship. Jaden flinches and the shield automatically goes around the ship. He can actually see the sound wave heading towards the ground. Jaden realizes what it was and the shields disappear.

‘I love this view. Flying is a lot of fun, those cars look like ants moving in formation. That is the Hudson River alongside the highway.’

FAA CONTROL CENTER

“This is the FAA Control Center to team leader 1, over.”

“This is team leader 1, FAA Controls, go,” the F-15 pilot says over the radio.

“You have full clearance to fly above Mach 1 to take out the bogey. The airspace is clear 300 miles in all directions. All airliners and personal aircraft have been forced to land at the closest airport. The local and state police are aware you will be breaking the sound barrier over residential areas. There have been already hundreds of calls of that bogey creating sonic booms throughout the area,” FAA Controls says.

“Thank you FAA Controls, we will try to take this object down as fast as we can. We have fifteen jet fighters here and ten more on the way, over.”

“Good luck and Godspeed to you all. FAA Controls out.”

“Team leader 1 to my squad and the other team leaders; we have full clearance to take down the unknown. We have been given the okay to break Mach 1 and beyond. Shoot to kill, please keep in mind we are flying over residential areas. Be careful where you fire a missile; the debris could land on a house or school. There are citizens and civilians down there. Any questions?”

It is silent for a few seconds and then the SR-71 Blackbird pilot speaks, “Team leader 1 are there any records of so many jet fighters flying over residential airspace at above Mach 1 speeds? Wouldn’t this create supersonic booms and chaos for people on the ground? Over.”

“I’m sure this would create some concern for people on the ground and no this has never been done over residential areas at such a low altitude. But that’s not for us to worry about. Our main priority is to

bring this object down as quickly as possible before it hurts other people. Any more questions?"

There is silence.

Flight leader 1 clears his throat, "Well if there aren't any more questions, the bogey is south seventy-five miles near the 87 Thruway. We will synchronize our attacks as best as possible. All pilots good luck and afterburner on."

All the jet fighters turn on their afterburners and loud sonic booms are heard in all directions. A small, puffy fog of smoke is seen near the tail of each jet fighter as they break the sound barrier. They fly in formation at 875 mph towards Jaden flying the UFO by pure thought. The thumping sound echoes towards the ground in all directions, breaking glass and windows. Thousands of dogs are barking in the area. The loud sounds confuse elderly drivers and simultaneous car accidents happen. Hundreds of cars on the ground are shaking and animals run for cover. The bulbs in stoplights and streetlights directly below the aircraft explode.

Jaden is flying closer to the ground at about 200 feet and 156 mph. The highway south and north has two lanes. There are two vehicles driving at 49 mph blocking both lanes. The SUV is in the right lane and the car is in the left. There are trucks and cars tailgating behind them flashing their lights.

'Let's see what is going on down there. Let me use my natural human investigating techniques along with some alien nanoscanners.'

He uses two nanoscanners to move closer towards the SUV and car slowing down traffic. Jaden gets upset seeing a female driver in the car eating a donut and drinking coffee while she drives with her right leg. Another female driver is in the SUV in the right lane. She is arguing with someone on a cell phone.

Cars and trucks are blowing their horns behind them.

"The speed limit is fifty miles an hour! I can drive in any lane I want to! Obey the speed limit assholes," the lady in the passing left lane says while taking a bite out of her second donut.

"Cruise control at forty-nine saves lives," she mumbles to herself while licking her fingers.

Jaden can hear the other lady's conversation.

"...I think she should be expelled from the PTA and arrested for sleeping with that 15-year-old male student. If she can't get some from her own 50-year-old husband that's not my problem. This is not the state of South Carolina...."

Jaden flies closer to the ground and behind the two drivers slowing down traffic. A nanoscanner passes through the car's body and Jaden sees the engine's pistons moving up and down. Everything looks

animated and in 3D. Hot engine oil and radiator fluid circulate into different compartments around the engine. The nanoscanner exits and circles the car.

‘I have something for these two road hogs,’ Jaden says to himself.

The other drivers see the UFO flying in front of them and slam on their brakes. Jaden goes as close to the ground as possible and HOVER MODE appears on the flight screen. He is three feet above the ground hovering at 48 mph. The cars and trucks behind him stop completely while the two women drivers continue at their same speed. Jaden thinks about bright light and a bright beam of sunlight is emitted from the front of the two wings. The drivers in the opposite direction slow down to see the UFO flying above the highway. Some slam on the brakes and there are accidents.

“I don’t care how bright your lights are, I’m not moving! Flash all you want! Asshole,” the lady in the car says while she wipes her mouth with a tissue and drinks some more coffee.

“Some asshole in a big silver truck is flashing their brightest lights behind me, Karen,” SUV lady says over the phone.

The huge purple molecule appears around and through the body of the UFO. Jaden fires a very small pink torpedo, the size of a hotdog towards the female in the car. It passes through her slightly open window and hits her donut causing it to vanish. She drops the coffee on her leg, and fumbles with the steering wheel.

“What the hell was that?” She says while swerving all over the road and into the right lane.

SUV lady sees this and moves towards the right shoulder dropping the phone into her lap.

She yells out the window, “Bitch! Learn to drive! What are you drunk? You almost hit me!”

The lady in the car looks at her hand in disbelief. She leans over and manually rolls down the passenger side window and sticks her middle finger out the window.

“Who you sticking your fat middle finger up at? You overweight buffalo, with your loser Buffalo Bills team stickers on your windows....” The SUV driver yells out the window while looking back and forth at the road. “That is why your loser Buffalo Bills lost four Super Bowls in a row. They can’t catch or win and you can’t drive!” She yells while reaching down to pick up the phone.

“I represent the average American, you Euro-toothpick. Thick is always going to be in. At least my team made it to the Super Bowl,” the lady in the car yells.

The jet fighters quickly fly overhead and pass Jaden. A few seconds later, constant sonic booms are heard and felt on the ground like very loud bass thumps.

“They are shooting at me! Aaaahhhhhh,” the lady in the car yells while she speeds up.

“I have to go Karen, I heard five loud gunshots, I think that large truck behind me is shooting at me. Call 911! I got to go!” She speeds up and hangs up the phone.

Jaden sees the jet fighters flying by above and realizes they do not see him this low to the ground. The purple molecule forms from the body of the ship.

“Team leader 1 to pilots, do you see the bogey on your radar?”

“That is a negative sir.”

Jaden felt those loud sonic booms passing by him. He realizes they are loud and scary from the ground.

‘Okay let me get out of here this is boring, flying behind these two arguing road hogs. But, I have to leave with a bang. This is for all the drivers who suffer behind drivers like you two.’

Jaden slows down and stops. He then speeds up and wings turn vertical. He flies ten feet above the ground and accelerates over the two vehicles. The two drivers start to scream in panic as their car and SUV lift up from the back in slow motion. The coffee floats in midair as the vehicles flip forward and land upside down. Their bodies float as they put their hands towards the ceiling in anticipation of falling downwards. The vehicles slowly slide upside down and onto the rooftops. They continue to scream and grab onto the ceilings. Jaden sees an overpass coming up very fast with an 18-wheeler stopped there. He pulls up fast and slices the top rear of the trailer. Jaden creates a sonic boom in the process that travels back towards the ground shattering car and home windows. The women in the vehicles continue to slide faster while all their windows break. The zero gravity leaves the area and their bodies fall towards the ceiling of their upside down vehicles. The strong sonic boom also shatters windows on vehicles driving in the opposite direction. Birds are seen flying away in all directions.

The ship shows up on radar again. The loud sound travels from the ground upwards. The jet fighters change direction and bailout left 90 degrees descending towards Jaden’s ascending upwards position. The UFO takes off like a missile launches from the ground. Jaden reaches 4822 feet at 1050 mph in two seconds. Constant sonic booms are heard in the air and over the ground. The emergency call center is flooded with phone calls. People are calling reporting bombs are going off.

“Pentagon to teams. Be careful, the UFO08’s trail disburses energy that disrupts gravity for an unknown distance. This can cause confusion with the onboard computer circuits in missiles and your jets’ systems.”

“That is a copy sir; we are engaging this threat now, with caution.”

Jaden flies into some clouds. Four of the F-15 jet fighters step up pursuit. A trail of white smoke follows the tail and wings of the UFO. The other fifteen jet fighters stay behind and observe. Jaden slows down and stops inside the thick clouds. He checks to see what he is up against. Nanoscanners go out from the purple molecule in all directions and instantly scan each jet fighter.

The flight screen Jaden is seeing shows each jet fighter’s ship in 3D animation. He can see their missiles and guns showing a color of red. The gas tanks, fuel lines, electronics and the pilots are in yellow. The screen also shows their speed, altitude and gravity forces around them in blue. He sees the jet fighters’ gravity is reading sixty-five percent. He finds it interesting that the gravity forces around the ship he is in is between zero and ten percent. The nanoscanners show the materials their hulls are made from on the periodic table.

‘Four against one huh? I have an idea... let me check my flight menu again.’

He reads in red letters: SHIELD STRENGTH 100%, ANTI-GRAVITY ENGINES 95% CHARGED, MANUAL FLIGHT, SPEED 201 MPH, ALTITUDE 5126 FEET, ENEMY RADAR 19 THREATS, EARTH GRAVITY FORCES 65%, AIR PRESSURE / BAROMETER 2000 PSI, STAR / SUN SOLAR CONVERSION STRENGTH 99.5%, 40% SUNLIGHT CHARGE NEEDED FOR GRAVITY FLIGHT BALANCE.

The flight menu has items in blue: LIGHT REFLECTION / INVISIBILITY, SEMI-INVISIBLE, INVISIBLE, INVISIBLE RE-IMAGE, OFF, STAGE 2 61% COMPLETE.

‘Let’s have some fun.’

The UFO flies out of the clouds directly in front of the four jet fighters. They quickly arm their missiles. The UFO banks right and up. It accelerates faster up to 540 mph. Three of the F-15’s fire two missiles each. The missiles travel at a very fast speed towards the UFO. The missiles travel right through the UFO flying on a straight path. They explode at a distance on the other side of the UFO.

“Did you see that flight team leader 1? The missiles flew right through the UFO; I can’t believe what I just saw!” Pilot 3 yells.

“Target was a miss but they all detonated on the other side of the UFO08. The heat signature was generated about seventy feet in front of the threat,” team leader 1 says.

The jet fighters begin firing their 20mm machine guns. The bullets look like fast moving fiery lights being shot from all directions. The bullets go straight through the UFO, slowly flying in a direct path as if it wants to be shot.

“We are not hitting the target at all. The target is now turning upside down and right side up. It is doing complete circles, as if it’s playing with us,” pilot 2 says.

“It just disappeared back into some clouds,” pilot 3 says.

“Are you getting this team leader?”

“Yes I am, I’m watching. I’ve never seen anything like this before,”

‘That re-image option was cool! It showed what I was thinking the UFO should be doing, while I was flying nearby invisibly. The nanoscanners got together in front of my fake UFO image and created a slight heat source. That was awesome and it was so easy to use these options. This UFO turned my thoughts into action instantly. I’ll fly with regular invisible now,’ Jaden says to himself.

REFLECTING LIGHT FROM ALL ANGLES continues to flashes on the screen. Jaden accelerates out of the clouds.

“The UFO08 is still inside the clouds,” pilot 2 says.

“Does anyone have a visual?” Team leader 1 asks.

“No visual, nothing on the radar,” pilot 2 responds.

The team leader 1 pilot knows the UFO is around here somewhere, but can’t figure out where it is.

“Team leader 1, I’m flying faster with less power. It feels like I’m floating and my controls are less responsive. My computer system is saying ‘Unknown gravity force,’ ” pilot 4 says nervously.

Team leader 1 continues to think to himself and then he comes up with the idea to turn on his infrared/ heat sensors. He sees the UFO swirling around one of the F-15’s.

“F-rank1504 the target is right in front of you, twenty feet, flying backwards and doing swirls! Turn on your infrared, thermal imaging and heat sensors!” The team leader shouts to pilot 4.

The image of the UFO quickly appears on the young pilot’s left eyeglass screen. Fear and panic spreads throughout his body as he jumps back in his seat. He swallows some saliva down his dry throat and his heart rate increases. He is looking at the advanced spaceship up close. He freezes up for a few seconds.

The pilot panics and starts to fire his M61 Vulcan cannons from the wings.

“Aaahhhhhh!” He yells as he bails to the right. The UFO turns back forward and accelerates quickly. The first few 20mm cannons hit the body of the UFO while the rest are deflected by the shield that just instantly formed. The hits on the body are interpreted to Jaden’s body as being hit by paintball rounds.

‘Ouch, that really stings.’

“The UFO08’s body is generating heat as it passes through the air. Set your computers to constant changing heat signatures. The computers will automatically adjust at lower and higher speeds. The UFO08 also reflects all radar when invisible,” team leader 1 says over the radio.

Eight more jet fighters accelerate and join up. “This is team leader 2, we are here to assist. We are about to coordinate all of our missiles and gunfire at the target at the same time.”

‘Okay the gig is up, that was fun while it lasted.’

The UFO goes visible again. One of Jaden’s screens is showing heat being generating outside the ship. It is showing the ship cutting through the air and creating heat.

‘Let’s see what these American jet fighters and this UFO can do.’

The UFO accelerates and creates a bright light from behind its unattached tail and vertical wings. Unknown magnetic energy is keeping the wings and tail floating in one place on the sides and rear of the UFO. The speed of the UFO reaches 977 mph in seconds and a loud thundering sounding sonic boom quickly follows the ship. Team leader 1 and three other pilots on his team put on their afterburners and step up pursuit. The UFO descends at break necking speeds. All twelve jet fighters descend and try to catch up to the UFO. They each launch a missile at the UFO. Jaden can see the twelve missiles traveling behind him at around 2600 mph. Jaden increases speed up to 1880 mph and the Hudson River quickly approaches. Jaden quickly brakes in two seconds to a complete stop eighteen feet above the river. The wind and sonic boom crash into the river. Water flies in different directions as if there was an underwater explosion. The UFO levels out and Jaden quickly accelerates again in the opposite direction over the water. The missiles try to change course, but slow down a little and burst into the river. Several powerful explosions explode and feel as if it is happening in slow motion. Water flies in different directions. Twenty foot waves form and crash into the shorelines on each side of the river.

“Shit! Did you see that? That UFO just took at least twenty-five G’s on that complete stop at that speed,” a pilot yells over the radio. They all continue talking about that.

PENTAGON, WASHINGTON, D.C.

“No human body can survive twenty-five G’s, there’s no way that kid can be alive in there,” General Dudley says to his first officer.

“Maybe they changed his body into something else? The UFO08’s actions are like a young teenager playing with our jet fighters.”

“It’s possible, but we need a precise hit on this target at once,” General Dudley says in a firm voice while hitting the table with his hand. The officer relays the message to the jet fighters.

POUGHKEEPSIE, NY

‘Oh my God! This is like playing a futuristic virtual reality flight video game. No controllers and everything is at the speed of thought. In fact, this is faster than the speed of thought. I feel like I am thinking much faster than I usually do. I can multi-task like a 386 personal computer, see many things at different views and do the impossible. This is crazy; I have to show my friends and family later. This is the best thrill I’ve ever had.’

Jaden continues flying down the Hudson River south at 750 mph at nineteen feet above the water, creating a stream of floating water behind him. He is intrigued by the small cloud forming around the ship from the sonic booms.

Team leader 1 quickly flies behind the UFO, firing cannon rounds at Jaden. The water flies up behind the UFO and floats in the air for a few seconds, looking as if it is suspended in midair. The jet fighter flies about forty feet above the river behind its target. The cannons get caught up in the shield and disappear. The UFO starts to turn left and right, and then upside down in an attempt to dodge the fast moving cannon projectiles.

‘I can actually see the 20mm cannons flying towards me. It’s like the nanoscanner sensors are detecting them for me and I’m able to move before it hits me.’

Two additional jet fighters fly one hundred feet above them and begin firing. Most of the cannons create a huge splash in the water. The UFO continues spinning in circles at a very fast speed while flying straight. The cannon fire passes right between the wings. Constant sonic boom sounds spread out in all directions in the area. “Boom, Boom, Boom.”

The two jet fighters flying above the UFO fire missiles. The UFO stops spinning and accelerates quickly. Using his nanoscanners Jaden sees a small bridge quickly approaching. The missiles approach quickly from above and get within thirty-two feet of the UFO. It continues to spin while dodging the cannon fire. Jaden goes under the bridge, stops completely and nose-dives into the river. Water splashes in all directions. The missiles quickly pass by and are hit by the water. His human body feels the cold sensation around his body from the 35°F water. The jet fighters quickly pass over and pull upwards.

‘Wow, this water is cold.’

The cold feeling goes away and Jaden hears the sounds of being underwater. He can taste the brackish water through the body of the UFO. The current of the river is pushing the UFO south. The wings change direction and are straight out at a horizontal angle. Jaden can see a few fish quickly swimming away. The ship comes out of the water backwards with its nose towards the river. There is no water dripping off it and it doesn’t appear wet. It levitates up beside the bridge.

He flies above the bridge backwards, while the cars on the bridge slam on their brakes. There are four simultaneous fender benders in both directions on the small bridge. The missiles crash into the river without exploding. The people in their cars on the bridge are amazed at the UFO flying above them straight into the air backwards. Jaden sees them watching him forty feet below him.

‘Look at me humans! I’m doing a nose stand over the bridge. Once in a lifetime trick. Throw your dollars into the air, don’t be cheap. I don’t work for free,’ Jaden says sarcastically.

The people are looking with their mouths wide open. He starts twirling in the air clockwise and then comes back down the other side of the bridge and goes back underneath. The wings change directions back to vertical with the body and to the sides. He takes off at a very fast speed. People get out of their cars and try to look down, but he is gone. They see all the jet fighters in the air going after it. The people on the bridge point at a completely black jet that they never seen before flying by.

‘Okay, that was too tough for the jet fighters. I guess follow the leader was out of the question. What is this coming up behind me? Hmmmm... a new black jet fighter? Let’s see what you’re made of.’

He begins to probe the SR-71B Blackbird that is trying to catch up to him. Team leader 1 tries to re-circle.

“This is team leader 1 to Blackbird 1.”

“Blackbird 1 go.”

“Blackbird 1 you cannot fly directly behind the UFO08, the trail of the UFO08 disrupts the gravity from 0-20%. It will mess with the gyroscopes and computers of your jet fighter.”

“That is a negative team leader 1. My computer system and gyroscopes are very advanced. I was watching and analyzing your teams go after this UFO08 for the past twenty minutes. I reprogrammed my flight computers to adjust in zero gravity, increasing my thrust power and controls handling. I’m taking this threat down.”

‘Impressive,’ Jaden says to himself as he overhears the communication of the pilots.

The Blackbird SR-71B comes up behind Jaden flying 455 mph. Bright yellow particles come out from the wings of the UFO and it accelerates up to 920 mph flying over the river. The Blackbird accelerates behind the UFO also using its advanced afterburners. The Blackbird begins firing rounds at the UFO. Jaden quickly dodges the bullets by spinning again. Some of the bullets hit the UFO.

‘Man that really stings. I guess I can’t use the shields while doing that.’

‘I’m going to take you down,’ the Blackbird pilot says to himself.

The pilot has a black beard, brown eyes and a full helmet over his head. The white middle-aged pilot has a look of determination in his eyes as if the UFO did something to him personally.

‘Let us see what you got, Mr. Black Jet, with the cool aerodynamic shape,’ Jaden says.

The Blackbird fires bullets at the UFO while the other jet fighters fly above and observe. The UFO pulls up sharply and begins to fly straight up at a 90° angle. The Blackbird pulls up slowly and the pilot grunts from the G-forces he is taking. The heavy pressure on his body increases his heartbeat. Blood slowly circulates to his brain as he struggles to pull up on the joystick. He feels light headed. The pilot turns upside down at an angle back towards where the UFO is flying straight up. Jaden slows down for the Blackbird. The SR-71 Blackbird flies into the UFO’s gravity wake and flies straight up into the sky vertically. The Blackbird’s afterburner ignites and it tries to catch up to the UFO.

“That Blackbird pilot just took at least ten G’s on that pull up. That UFO took at least forty G’s. That pilot has to be careful not to blackout,” team leader 1 says to his team.

“I guess he knows what he is doing to be flying a top secret SR-71B that I didn’t even know existed,” pilot 4 says over the radio.

The UFO accelerates straight up at 1266 mph and 11,999 feet. The sounds of a high-powered engine can be heard above the clouds. Orange light particles are exhausting from the wings of the UFO. The SR-71 Blackbird continues to fly 508 feet behind the UFO while firing bullets again. The UFO begins spinning and dodging the bullets. The UFO’s bright orange light is blinding the Blackbird pilot. The glass around the Blackbird’s cockpit darkens. The pilot continues to accelerate as the UFO also increases speed. The UFO hits 2256 mph and reaches hypersonic speeds. Thumping sounds can be heard rippling down to Earth in a 200-mile radius. They are at 59,000 feet still flying straight up at a 90° angle. The outside body of the UFO is at 808°F, while the air temperature is at minus -170°F. The wings and nose of the UFO change to a light red color. The nose of the Blackbird lights up slightly red also.

Their speeds begin to multiply, as the oxygen gets thinner. They hit 7489 mph and then 10,433 mph. The Blackbird continues to fire frozen bullets as the UFO continues dodging them.

PENTAGON

“This is General Dudley to Blackbird 1, come in Blackbird.”

“Blackbird 1, if you can hear me pullout. You are reaching your maximum ceiling height. Pullout, that is an order,” General Dudley repeats over the radio for a third time.

The SR-71B Blackbird cannot hear any radio transmissions. The pilot has no idea how high up he is.

“How is the Blackbird able to fly straight up like that?” Dudley asks his first officer and then continues, “No one can survive that many G’s flying straight up into the sky like that at that speed.”

“Remember he is flying in zero gravity. G forces do not exist in zero gravity. It is like flying in space, but with oxygen all around. Similar to our zero gravity training chambers,” the first officer says in a calm voice.

‘Come on you Top Gun Tom Cruise look-alike pilot, you slowing down on me. Keep up!’ Jaden yells.

“I got you, you bastard,” the Blackbird pilot says in a low confused voice. He locks onto the UFO with a smile on his face. He fires a missile; it accelerates slowly towards the UFO trying to catch more momentum. The missile speeds up considerably and gets within twelve feet of the UFO. A bright orange flash is seen exploding like a lightning strike on a dark night from the rear tail of the UFO. The pilot hears an explosion. The UFO disappears from the Blackbird’s sight. The missile explodes, but doesn’t create an explosion. The UFO quickly accelerates and reaches 26,555 mph. The sky turns dark around the Blackbird as it reaches 114,000 feet. The pilot is breathing heavily through his oxygen mask and begins to feel dizzy. The Blackbird loses its flame and engine thrust. It slows down considerably and floats upwards out of control rotating in different directions. The pilot blacks out and lets go of the flight stick. It is completely silent around the pilot. The computer screen flashes STALL, NO CONTROLS, S.O.S., 1% THIN OXYGEN. The Blackbird loses the zero gravity wake from the UFO. It continues to fly upwards while spinning out of control. Ice is quickly forming around the Blackbird.

Jaden continues to fly straight up at 34,000 mph and hits 520,666 feet. There is a red and orange tail stretching miles behind him. Jaden’s screens light up flashing: STAGE 2 70%. His thrust begins to slow down automatically. Jaden realizes he is about to go into space and the ship is slowing down on its own.

The SR-71B Blackbird slowly begins falling towards the Earth. Jaden hovers horizontally at 615,000 feet looking around. He looks outside the UFO in all directions.

'I love how the wings change to horizontal automatically when I'm hovering. That is so cool. I'm on top of the world!' He continues, 'Eat your heart out Mr. Englewood.' Jaden thinks back four years ago when he was in high school.

"Mr. Jaden Marino! Do you think you are on top of the world?" Jaden's social studies teacher asked him.

He grabbed Jaden in the hallway in-between two classroom doors by his shirt.

"I know it was you that put that boot on my car's wheel yesterday afternoon."

Jaden replied with a smiling face, "Maybe you owe tickets. How can a kid give you a city car boot?"

"I don't owe any tickets you little bastard!" He yelled and continued, "I know it was you. You were the only kid who got a D on my social studies test two days ago. You were the only person who argued with me for twenty minutes for his grade. You are the only student that gets away with things because your father is the principal," Mr. Englewood said while accidentally spitting.

"Say it but don't spray it," Jaden said in a humorous voice, while he wiped his face and turned his head.

"Mr. Englewood, is that my Pops walking down the hallway?" Jaden asked.

Mr. Englewood took a step back and released his tight grip from around Jaden's shirt near his neck.

"Maybe the city gave you a D, for disabled," Jaden said while chuckling.

"You think you're funny huh?" He asked.

He continued, "Just because your daddy is the principal of the school doesn't mean you can get away with whatever you want. You have to earn a grade in my class. You can't skip through life not paying your dues. Life isn't a joke. What are you going to do when your daddy isn't around?"

"I can handle things without my Pops' help..." Jaden is interrupted.

"Listen you little shit, I'm going to take you down. You're going to amount to nothing once you're out of high school. You'll never be an astronaut; they don't accept people who never work hard for anything. You'll be lucky to gas up or remove human waste from an airplane in the future," Mr. Englewood said in a low voice.

"Maybe one day I'll save the world or do something great that no man has ever done before."

“Only thing you’re going to do great is make the perfect taco at Taco Bell or dry my son’s BMW at the car wash. You certified loser and horrible comedian. You think because your father is the principal your grades can be adjusted and you don’t have to work hard. We shall see who will be left back and I’ll make sure social promotion doesn’t save you this time.”

“I heard your wife left you back because you can’t get it up, ha ha,” Jaden laughed and continued, “Maybe they will make something that fixes that in the future.”

Mr. Englewood’s face turned red and his face frowned.

“You leave my ex-wife out of this. You think you’re funny huh? We’ll see how long you’re on top of the world attitude lasts. Your arrogance will be your downfall,” Mr. Englewood paused and took a deep breath. He moved closer to Jaden.

“Maybe you should volunteer for the Marines now and go overseas to the Gulf War. They need some know it alls. So you can come back in body parts like your dead brother. Maybe then. . . .”

He paused as he looked at Jaden’s face increase with wrinkles. Jaden’s eyebrows went down into his face. His light skin turned red. His right fist curled up into a ball and Mr. Englewood stepped back. Jaden quickly went into his Tae Kwon Do stance. He threw a right punch into Mr. Englewood’s chest. Mr. Englewood took two uneven steps backwards as Jaden spun around with a roundhouse kick into the older man’s face. Mr. Englewood turned to the left and fell down grabbing some lockers on the way to the floor. The locks on the lockers rattled in sequence. A teacher walking down the hallway blew a whistle and rushed to the scene. Students came out of their classrooms to see what is going on. Someone grabbed Jaden and the images get fuzzy and then fade away.

Jaden is looking outside of the UFO while hovering in one spot. It is completely silent around him and he is at the beginning of space. He is flabbergasted by the view at this height.

‘I can see the planet curving in all directions and everything is so small below me.’

A nanoscanner continues to fly upwards towards space at a high speed. He is looking through them and he sees something lighting up and slightly reflecting in space. The nanoscanner flies faster towards this object that is turning into three or four objects sitting above the earth.

‘What the hell?’ He asks as the nanoscanner gets closer.

‘I can’t believe this! These four satellites are right over me! I’m being watched by military forces all over the world probably.’

He gets a closer look at one of them. Jaden is amazed at all the little moving parts inside of the first satellite. He reads what is says on it: TOP

SECRET, PROPERTY OF MASA. He checks what the other satellite says: TOP SECRET, PROPERTY OF UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT. CIA.

‘These have to be spy satellites. I can actually see the radio waves coming and going from them. This is amazing!’

‘Made in Taiwan, China and Japan? At least the government has received some good labor and parts for a good price. This third satellite far to the right looks a lot older, let’s see what this says, property of Russia? They watching me too. This is crazy, but very interesting.’

Jaden switches back to outside the UFO view.

‘What can I do now? I have an idea.’

Jaden quickly accelerates forward at a fast speed. He switches his view back to the satellites and sees thrust coming from outside the satellites as they move in his direction.

‘They are really watching me and following me.’

Another nanoscanner flying in autonomous mode shows its vision smaller inside of the vision Jaden is already seeing through to get Jaden’s attention. The vision changes and he sees the SR-71B Blackbird flying out of control towards the Earth with frost all around it. He can see into the Blackbird’s cockpit and notices that the pilot is unconscious. There are beeping sounds and lights flashing all over the place. The aircraft is shaking and flipping in every direction.

‘Shit! That pilot is going to die! I forgot all about him. I have to do something.’

More nanoscanners quickly descend towards the out-of-control Blackbird as it falls through thick clouds. Jaden dives down in the direction of the Blackbird and accelerates as fast as he can. The yellow energy particles are being emitted from the wings of the UFO. The entire outside body of the UFO turns bright red as it heats up. He is flying downward at 32,053 mph. The UFO is lighting up like a meteor as it enters the upper atmosphere.

‘My altitude is 478,000 feet. The Blackbird’s altitude is. . .’

Jaden tries to see the altitude on the SR-71’s flight computer screen. He sees it is at 29,899 feet. Jaden hits the lower atmosphere and the increasing oxygen slows him down considerably. The yellow energy coming from the wings of the UFO turns to a bright, whitish-orange color. The SR-71 is at 19,038 feet. Jaden slows down to 5407 mph and continues to lose speed even though he is trying to go faster. He is confident he will catch up to it, even though he is at 67,193 feet.

The other nanoscanners reach the SR-71 and scan everything on the aircraft. Jaden sees other jet fighters firing warning shots by the SR-71, but the pilot is still unconscious. A nanoscanner scans inside the pilot’s body and sees very little white smoke coming from his lungs. Jaden sees an animated image of his heart beating irregularly. The pilot’s body is at

95°F and is shivering. The pilot's altitude reaches 12,998 feet. Jaden can see the SR-71 zoomed in through the clouds from the UFO's view. He quickly catches up to the SR-71 and slows down to the SR-71's falling speed of 590 mph. Four loud simultaneous sonic booms created from Jaden's high speed pass him and the SR-71. The powerful shock waves rattle the Blackbird like an earthquake waking and bringing the pilot to consciousness. The supersonic booms continue towards the ground. A trail of white smoke follows the Blackbird's wings. The pilot wakes up disorientated and confused.

'How can I stop this jet from hitting the ground?' Jaden asks as he uses his imagination.

The other F-15's begin firing cannons and bullets at Jaden as he gets close to the SR-71. The shields go on instantly around the UFO.

'I'm on your side you flying dicks! I'm trying to help your pilot!'

Six nanoscanners fly about ten feet below the SR-71 Blackbird jet. The powerful cannons continue to hit the outside shield while causing the UFO to move from the force. The UFO begins to release a translucent energy to the six nanoscanners and a ring of light particles begins to glow under the aircraft. This technique is greatly reducing the gravitational forces around the Blackbird. The UFO's energy slows down the SR-71 to 121 mph, but it continues to fall towards the ground. They are now 1568 feet from the ground.

'This guy is still going to smack the ground. I have to do something else.'

The computer is asking the pilot to eject. His radio is still not working as he tries to use it. He tries to eject, but his screen communicates to him a failure. The escape hatch over him is frozen. The UFO fires a translucent green beam at the SR-71 from the purple molecule. The green beam spreads out and covers the entire jet fighter. The green beam is slowing down the Blackbird significantly and straightens it out horizontally. The pilot sees the UFO over him and realizes what it is trying to do. He tries to fire the engine, but it does not turn on.

'This must be a tractor beam or something. This ship read my mind and translates that into the best possible action, cool,' Jaden says.

Jaden wonders why the UFO can't pull the jet upwards with the tractor beam. The SR-71 is still falling towards the earth at 75 mph at 789 feet. The other jet fighters stop firing at the UFO as they finally figure out the bogey is trying to save the SR-71 from crashing. The pilot still tries to start the jet engines, but they are dead. Billions of microscopic nanobots leave the purple molecule around the ship and ride the green waves towards the SR-71. They enter the foreign aircraft and quickly move around the fuselage. They find ice all around the engine

compartment and the fuel lines. The nanobots heat up the internal parts in the Blackbird.

The nanobots push fuel into the engines and remove particles of ice in the hydraulics of the Blackbird's tail. The SR-71 is seventy-three feet from the ground and is approaching a residential house in Nyack, NY. The pilot tries the engine again and it sputters like a broken down car. The landing gear comes out. There is a crowd of neighbors pointing towards the sky in the quiet suburban neighborhood. There is an elderly man covering his ears with his hands standing near his 6-year-old granddaughter. His ears are ringing from the powerful supersonic boom that attacked the neighborhood less than a minute ago. There are also broken home windows and broken car windows on the street and sidewalks.

The young girl points towards the sky and tries to get her grandfather's attention. The grandfather sees his granddaughter's hair floating into the air and is speechless. Broken glass, dirty snow and debris begin to float upwards.

"Look granddaddy look, Superman is inside of that spaceship saving that Air Force jet from crashing into our roof. Superman has a spaceship now!"

"What did you say, Cathy? I can't hear anything you are saying! My ears are ringing."

The sputtering engines get the older man's attention and he looks up. He is in complete shock and stands with his mouth wide open. His hands are still over his ears.

"Watch out Daniels! It's going to crash into your house! Get out of there!" A neighbor across the street yells.

The grandfather is in shock and can't move. The little girl is smiling and pointing at the rescue.

“Come on Superman alien, you can do it!” The little girl yells.



F-15 jet fighters can be seen flying near the clouds from a distance. The Blackbird pilot becomes very nervous as he is within several feet of the house beneath him. Sweat is running down his face as he turns his head from side to side looking out the oval window over him. He closes his eyes and prays for a second. He nervously presses the engine start up button for the last time before impact and holds the button pressed in. The engine on the right ignites first. The SR-71 leans to the left and then the left engine ignites and it levels out. People are running down the street covering their ears. Hot yellow thrust shoots out from the rear and 150 decibels echo in all directions. The powerful vibrations from the engines cause birds to flee in a nearby park. They quickly flap their wings in an attempt to leave the area. The trees aligned on the sidewalk also vibrate and the snow falls from the naked tree branches simultaneously. The vibrating sound rattles the already broken glass in homes, causing more fragments to fall. The pilot feels a sense of relief as his aircraft gains momentum. The thrust heats up the snow on the roof of the house. The little girl covers her ears and her grandfather pulls her away from the scene. The SR-71 slowly moves forward and the people in the street can feel the heat from the thrust. The wheel from the right landing gear hits the chimney of a brick house. Bricks fall towards the ground and some people start running. The stalling alarm goes off in the cockpit and the SR-71 quickly takes off at a 20° angle. Debris lands in the street as water comes down from the melted snow. The radio starts

working again and the green beam from the UFO disappears. Jaden follows the Blackbird as it's flying twenty-seven feet from the ground and over a park area. The nanobots and nanoscanners float back towards the ship. The Blackbird flies faster and gains altitude. Just as it flies away, Jaden is hit with three missiles from different directions. He activates the shields too late and takes a direct hit. The force from the powerful missiles spin the UFO out-of-control and towards some trees below. It loses some of its anti-gravity lift. The UFO lightly crashes into a wooded area. The wing and tail go into the body of the ship. The ship rolls in some mud like a carrot stick. Snow falls from branches of nearby trees.

'Shit, that hurt like hell. That felt as if I was hit by a car and I flew over the windshield. Man, why do I have to feel the pain when something hits the body with something?'

Three Blackhawk attack helicopters approach where Jaden went down. A tank also approaches knocking down small trees.

'I have to get out of here, let me check the screens. Okay diagnosing damage complete.'

ANTI-GRAVITY LIFT IS ONLY 10% OPERATIONAL, LOWER ATMOSPHERE THRUST ENGINES 20%, SHIELDS OFFLINE, BODY INTEGRITY 100%, NANOBOTS REPAIRING ANTI-GRAVITY ENGINES, THRUST ENGINES, AND ANALYZING SHIELD'S RPM MOLECULES SEQUENCE .

'I have only one nanoscanner to use. The others are helping the nanobots with repairs.'

Jaden thinks quickly and he tries to take off.

"This is Blackhawk 1 to base; the UFO08 is taking off over Mountain View Nature Park with smoke behind it at 12 o'clock in front of me. I believe it is damaged and I'm opening fire."

"This is SR-71 Blackbird to base; the UFO08 just risked itself to save my life. Is there another option besides destroying it?" The pilot asks.

"This is General Dudley; you have your orders to destroy the target. SR-71 if you feel you suddenly have a change of heart because E.T. saved you from being a splattered fly you can relieve yourself from duty."

"Sir, this UFO08 ship has very advanced technology. It repaired my ship in seconds. We should at least try to communicate with it some more. It isn't attacking anyone."

"Blackbird SR-71, can you clear the airwaves, we have a job to do. You need to come in for repairs and be debriefed," General Dudley says.

The Blackhawk helicopter fires its cannons and rockets. The rockets and cannon fire go right through the UFO slowly taking off into the sky.

“This is General Dudley, everyone use their infrared and heat sensors. I repeat! Infrared and heat sensors only, do not use regular vision and lock. Does anyone see the UFO08?”

The UFO disappears into thin air.

“That is a negative sir!” The Blackhawk helicopter pilot says.

General Dudley gets off the two-way radio and talks to his officers in the room. “I want a team at the crash site right away. What town is that?”

“Sir, that is Rockland County, NY,” the first officer says.

“Make sure that SR-71 pilot returns to base ASAP, I think that UFO messed with his brain and turned him to the dark side.”

‘Man, I barely got away.’

Jaden is flying four feet above an 18-wheeler on the highway in invisible mode.

‘Flying around the trees and using just a little thrust got me to the highway less than a mile away. That decoy worked again for me. The nanoscanner created a sense of heat and smoke in the decoy, very cool.’

Jaden is going over a long bridge called the Tappan Zee. He recognizes the area and he knows this is towards NYC. The fresh breeze from the river flies across the UFO. He sees a view of the city through thick clouds and fog to the south. The 18-wheeler makes it across the bridge and slows down at the tollbooth. Jaden keeps flying forward at a low speed. A spot check is setup on the other side of the toll. One of the National Guard troops at the spot check is using infrared binoculars. He spots slight heat coming from the invisible UFO flying over the cars and spot check. He radios in and gives the location while following it as it passes over him. A few National Guard troops open fire with their M-16 machine guns.

‘Man, they see me now. Those bullets feel like bee stings. Let me check the repairs.’ Thrust engines are at fifty-five percent and anti-gravity lift engines are at twenty-five percent. The shields are still offline. Jaden increases speed over the highway. He is balancing the amount of engine thrust and anti-gravity thrusts manually. The tail comes from the rear. Blackhawk helicopters fly over the bridge.

Jaden reaches 225 mph and is fifty feet above the 87 Thruway heading south. Jaden decides to fly higher and into the clouds. The nanoscanners detect eight F-16 jet fighters quickly approaching.

‘So you jet fighters want to shoot me down after I help one of your pilots huh? I have something for you.’

Jaden checks the screens for weapons. He focuses on the same weapon he used on the AC-130 gunship. He scans the jet fighters and targets their missiles and guns.

‘I don’t want to blow them out of the sky or kill them. I want to see what they will do without any weapons to shoot at me.’

“Team leader to squad, the UFO08 is in the clouds. It looks like the missiles and gunfire hit it directly. I don’t think its shields are working. I can see it flying in the clouds to the south of us at 1600 feet. Its radar signal is stronger, so I know this is it,” team leader 1 says.

Four of the jet fighters approach from the east, another four approach from the west. Two from the north and two from the south also join the fight. They arm their weapons to detonate before impact.

Two pink torpedoes come from each side purple molecule. The torpedoes begin spinning around as they increase speed. The torpedoes change direction and head towards the ground.

“Something was fired from the UFO08, I repeat, something was fired from the UFO08. It is glowing pink and is heading towards the ground. Everyone fall back and take evasive action,” team leader 1 says.

The alien torpedoes break up into dozens of smaller torpedoes and go in different directions towards each F-16 jet fighter.

They all put on their afterburners and begin evasive maneuvering. Each alien torpedo maneuvers with the jet fighters and quickly catches up. They drop flares in front of the alien torpedoes, but they keep coming faster. The alien torpedoes hit each jet fighter’s missiles and guns causing them to glow different colors, and then disappear. An empty area remains where the jet fighter’s missiles, cannons and machine guns used to be.

“Team leader 1, the alien torpedoes had no effect or damage on my craft,” pilot 4 says.

“F-4 have you,” team leader 1 is interrupted.

“I’m firing on the UFO08 now; it just moved from the clouds. I have a lock I’m taking it,” pilot 4 says. ERROR, ERROR is shown on his flight screen.

“F-4 pilot, I thought you were taking the shot?”

“I have all weapons errors on my flight screen.”

“I was trying to tell you before you cut me off that the alien torpedoes destroyed every jet fighter’s missiles and guns including yours.”

The foolish pilot swallows the spit in his throat and looks at the UFO flying away.

“This is General Dudley, team leader 1 and another pilot continues to following the UFO08. There are too many clouds for the satellite to continue tracking. The rest return to base for plane analysis. A second wave is on its way. We will be changing up our offensive strategy.”

Jaden accelerates right by the defenseless jet fighters and heads south towards New York City.

‘That was amazing how those little alien boogers took out only the weapons and didn’t damage the rest of the ship. It was like they were vaporized.’

He flies under the heavier clouds and notices it is beginning to pour down rain. The rain slides smoothly over the UFO’s shiny body. The bubble rain floats around slowly in different directions behind the UFO. Jaden flies over the Hudson River while a few jet fighters still try to follow a few miles behind.

‘So many beautiful tall buildings. I haven’t been down here in years. So many people and cars.’

Jaden flies over near north Manhattan. He quickly accelerates over the East River and heads south towards midtown. The rain is pouring down harder and harder. Shields are back online and so are the engines. Jaden flies closer towards the East River to thirty feet. He is flying by the cars on the F.D.R Drive Highway at 55 mph while approaching midtown. Jaden goes under the 59th Street Bridge and something catches his attention. He does a complete stop midair. The UFO begins to come up the bridge while facing downward. As the UFO comes over and on top of the bridge, cars crossing it begin crashing into each other. People get out of their cars and point towards the sky. The UFO flies towards the tramway crossing from Manhattan to Roosevelt Island. The cold rain falls onto the tram roof. Jaden levels out horizontally in front of the tramway and zooms inside with a nanoscanner. He sees some young schoolchildren looking out of the windows. Jaden flies closer to the tramway while slowly moving forward.

“Kids! Kids! Stop running around. Stay in one place,” second grade school teacher Motley yells to her ten students on a field trip.

“Miss Motley, Miss Motley,” a student calls to her teacher while walking over.

“Yes Kim?”

“Look at my hair, it’s floating in the air,” Kim says.

The schoolteacher looks at the child’s hair in amazement with her eyes wide open. Kim starts to laugh and point at the teacher’s hair. Miss Motley looks up as the hair on her wig starts to stand up and float upwards. She quickly grabs her wig and holds it down. Another student named Berry jumps up and touches the ceiling.

“Teacher! Teacher look how high I can jump!”

The student jumps up and down slowly, higher and higher. The other kids watch in amusement.

“Wow! Look at Kenneth and Berry!” They yell.

“Stop jumping Kenneth and Berry this moment!” Miss Motley yells while holding her wig.

Berry stops and holds onto another student. Kenneth bangs his head on the ceiling. He falls to the ground and starts crying. The assistant teacher comes from the back and tends to the student crying. The other kids by the tramway window start to point upward.

“Look at the alien ship! It’s right in front of us!” One of the students yells. The kids move back towards the other side of the tramway with a petrified look on their faces. A couple on the tramway sees the UFO also and moves towards the opposite side. The kids start to scream with frightened looks on their faces. They jump back to hold on to their teachers’ legs. The kid that was crying on the floor stops crying and moves towards the opposite side with the assistant teacher. One student walks towards the UFO levitating on the side of the tramway. The other kids begin crying and screaming.

“I want my mommy!”

“It’s going to kill us!” The young students yell.

“Kim! Come back!” Miss Motley yells while holding the other kids.

The curious student stands by the window in amazement, while her hair is standing straight up. The UFO does *something* and then disappears. The student’s mouth and eyes are wide open. The curious student is grabbed from behind by her teacher and pulled closer towards the other side.

‘Interesting, seeing those young students’ reactions. One kid wasn’t scared at all and was very brave.’

Jaden flies upwards and towards Manhattan still invisible. The sky gets darker and darker. He sees jet fighters flying overhead. Jaden flies towards the buildings on 59th Street. Jaden sees all the people on the ground walking with their umbrellas open as it pours on them. The people on the ground look like ants to him. They are walking around in different directions not knowing he is floating above them. Rain is floating around the UFO as it slowly goes down the streets at 30 mph.

‘I have to go by the city speed limit. Ha ha.’

He turns north on 5th Avenue. Seven nanoscanners go out and start to look around inside of buildings. Jaden is flying over Central Park.

‘I wonder what is going on inside these buildings.’

‘Boring. Boring. I see boring people just sitting at their desk doing normal office work.’

Jaden is flying over Central Park. He sees a few people jogging and walking their dogs with umbrellas.

‘Hey! Clean up after your dog!’ Jaden yells.

‘Some people just don’t care if their dog leaves soft landmines behind.’

He concentrates on the dog’s landmines and sends a small torpedo towards it, vaporizing it. He leaves a little hole in the ground also as small pieces of concrete fly into the air.

‘Hey I’m not perfect! What’s another pothole in this city with millions of them?’ He asks.

‘I’ll clean this city up! One poop at a time!’ He yells in a sarcastic tone.

The dog looks up into the air and begins barking.

‘So you can hear and see me huh, little doggy?’

It begins to rain harder and lightning flashes across the dark, cloudy sky. The nanoscanners are scanning through buildings and different floors. One nanoscanner is only scanning voices and sounds without any images. The lightning temporarily disables its video transmitting capabilities.

Inside of a close by office building in a janitor’s closet, the nanoscanner overhears a conversation. Jaden smells perfume, sweat and vaginal wetness. It quickly grabs his attention. Jaden also smells deodorant and coffee breath.

“How many more times do I have to keep doing this until I get my promotion and next raise?” A female voice asks.

“Don’t worry baby, your name is on top of the list. That should be done around Christmas time, I promise,” a male with a deep voice says.

“You said that last Christmas.”

“You’re wasting time. Why don’t you pull that little skirt up and panties down. You can sit right here.”

“You don’t feel bad doing this knowing your wife is at home?” She asks while sitting on him.

“Oh baby, my wife doesn’t feel like this. That old wrinkled 100 lbs more than you Patsy. I don’t feel bad at all. I wish I could trade you in for her. You still taking your birth control every day right?” The man asks while kissing his secretary in the cleaning closet.

“Oh yeah...I’m still taking them every day....Right there, oh, oh,” she moans.

The nanoscanner is transmitting the audio conversation. Jaden sends the other nanoscanner to the same location. He hears the moaning sounds.

“Are you finished already, sir?”

Just then lightning strikes very close to the office building. The audio transmitting nanoscanner temporarily loses its connection to the UFO and floats upwards to another floor. The audio comes back....

“Tell me Charles, why should we go with this new writer’s books?” An older man asks.

“This book ‘Quickflash’ has the action, adventure and romance you have been looking for. It’s like a futuristic James Bond. I see great potential with this book and it is very creative. The second book, ‘Terry’s Nightmares’ is an exciting book for teenagers...” The agent says in a publishing meeting as he is interrupted.

“What was the author’s name again?”

“Vlane Carter. He is very creative and is definitely going to be a successful writer.....”

‘What the hell am I listening too? What happened to the moaning sex sounds? That malfunctioning nanoscanner must have gone into a board meeting or something.’

The damaged nanoscanner goes into a working nanoscanner. Jaden is outside the building still invisible moving up the building’s floors. A strong wind flows down the side of the office building. He uses all of his nanoscanners to find that interesting room he was just listening in on. He finds the cleaning closet again with the moaning sounds coming from it. Now he has images to go along with it.

‘Alright! This is a show! This older guy is breathing hard as if he is about to get a heart attack. Nice legs and body Miss Secretary. Damn it’s over though. Minute man is finished,’ Jaden says.

“Do you hear a humming sound Ben?”

“No,” the excited boss says while pulling up his pants.

“Look, Ben my panties are floating in the air behind you, so is my hair!” The secretary yells.

‘Hey! That’s not safe! Where’s the protection...’ Jaden yells while he is interrupted.

Two missiles hit the UFO from below and another two rockets hit the UFO from above simultaneously. The shield goes on instantly, absorbing most of the blast. There is a huge explosion, while the UFO flips in different directions and crashes into the building on the ninth floor. The ship rips through steel and concrete like paper. Glass explodes into thousands of different directions. The shield strength quickly goes down. The explosion creates a huge fiery hole in the side of the building on four floors. People and debris are instantly incinerated. A very low flying stealth bomber is seen flying down the avenue. A silent flying helicopter also flies by. People in the streets are pointing up, looking at

the stealth bomber and the explosions on the side of the building. A huge fire quickly spreads.

‘That really hurt, those jets caught me off guard. I was too busy being a peeping-alien-tom. The shield came on automatically like my body reacting to something about to hit me. The ship braced and protected itself just like me doing the same thing as though something is about to hit me.’

Jaden sees fire and smoke all around the ship’s energy shield. The nanoscanners can see perfectly clear through the smoke and fire. Jaden sees bodies burning and people trying to run down the stairs. The two people having sex are unconscious lying on top of each other.

“I’ve fallen and I can’t get up!” An older lady yells out with dirt on her face and debris over her.

“Help me! I can’t breathe! Something fell on me!” A trapped and injured person yells out.

The building sprinkler system begins to spray water over the fire. However, it has little effect.

Jaden checks all his screens to make sure everything is okay. He sees that everything looks normal. He slowly flies through the fire while papers and debris fall around the ship. Jaden notices the nanoscanners can move freely back and forth through the energy shield. Sparks are coming from the lights as the power goes out in the building. People are hiding under desks, in lounges and running down staircases with clothes over their mouths and coughing. People are screaming. The fire alarm is blaring throughout the building. Jaden can see the molecules inside the fire consuming everything around it like a virus or a hungry leech consuming its prey. Lightning continues to strike in the sky while it continues to rain. The rain goes inside the building. Jaden’s nanoscanners detect several jet fighters flying above, two Apache attack helicopters hovering above and military trucks with rockets on the ground below. Jaden sees people trapped in different rooms around him. He chooses to see if he can do something about the fire he feels he is somewhat responsible for. He can feel the heat from the fire as if he is in a very hot sauna. It smells like wood and chemicals. The UFO is still hidden inside the fire from the outside.

“There is no sign of the UFO, sir. It’s just fire all over the place, nothing could withstand a simultaneous blast like that, sir. It was a direct hit,” Apache pilot 1 says to General Dudley over the radio. He continues, “Sir, that was over 10,000 lbs of TNT”.

“This UFO08 is stronger than you think, soldier. All units standby, continue scanning anything that moves,” General Dudley says over the radio.

Jaden concentrates on the fire and the molecules it is made of. He zooms in and sees trillions of atoms jumping around spreading and mating with oxygen atoms. The purple molecule shoots beams in different directions to disrupt the gravity around the fire. The fire takes up a spherical shape and nanobots attack the mating atoms.

A fire ladder from the street begins to extend to the ninth floor. A young firefighter with a water hose on his back quickly climbs the ladder.

“Sir, the fire around the explosion is turning round like a sphere,” the first helicopter pilot says.

“That is what fire does in zero to low gravity. The UFO08 is still active. Wait until it comes out of the fire before taking another shot at it,” General Dudley tells all units.

“There are people on the ground and people stuck on higher floors banging on the windows for help.”

“You have your order,” Dudley replies.

The young firefighter begins spraying water on the spherical fire. The water turns into little balls and floats forward.

The UFO’s outside shields begin to glow and a clear shock wave of energy is spreading all around in different directions instantly putting the fires out.

One of Jaden’s screens says: MATTER, ATOMS AND OXYGEN ATOMS DISRUPTED.

The young firefighter looks in disbelief as his water floats into millions of one-inch bubbles. He sees the entire fire disappearing before his eyes on all four floors from the little water he sprayed. Firefighters, police and people on the ground begin to cheer for the young firefighter. He turns around and waves at the crowd smiling. The rain slows down as the heavy clouds pass by towards the east. The UFO quietly flies out of the building invisible.

‘Oh, thank you everyone! Thank you! It was all the UFO; advanced E.T. technology,’ Jaden proudly says to the cheering crowd below him.

“Hit it now!” Dudley yells.

The helicopter pilot sees the fireman below the UFO and stalls. The wings on the side of the spaceship turn vertical and Jaden slowly flies up the side of the seventy-story building.

Another fast, low approaching stealth bomber flies down the avenue targeting the UFO slowly flying upwards.

“I have a lock on the UFO08, I’m taking a shot,” the pilot says.

“STB03, do not take the shot, too many civilians on the ground and witnesses watching now,” the helicopter pilot tells the stealth bomber pilot.

The stealth bomber flying fifteen feet above the cars in the street tilts upwards 90° and fires a missile at the UFO. Jaden’s nanoscanners detect the fast moving stealth bomber and he takes evasive action. The UFO quickly accelerates up the side of the building. A strong force of air follows behind the UFO. A roaring sonic boom is created, echoing the loud boom downwards. The windows begin to break into millions of pieces that float in the air. They dance together making small clashing sounds and mix with bubbles of rain. The missile quickly crashes through the pieces of glass. The light rain and glass slowly dance together a few feet from the side of the building. Glass from other buildings in the area near the UFO begins to shatter as the sound travels in all directions. The buildings swirl back and forth, as the spaceship continues straight into the cloudy sky. The missile follows the UFO into the clouds. The glass quickly falls towards the ground as people run for cover. The firefighter on the ladder quickly runs into the floor where the fire was to avoid the glass. The shock wave freaks him out as he covers his ears from the sudden boom.

The UFO quickly does a 180° turn and heads back towards the ground. The missile continues upwards. Jaden is getting upset at these aircraft firing missiles at him.

‘Where did that cocksucker stealth bomber go to?’ He asks.

The nanoscanners are moving around autonomously while going where Jaden might want them to go. They are learning Jaden’s habits and things he usually looks at.

‘There he goes, flying south down 5th Avenue.’

Still flying invisibly, he tries to catch up to the stealth bomber trying to get away. Rockets are shot from a military truck driving down the street. He quickly dodges the rockets shot at him. Jaden comes up behind the stealth bomber flying low down the avenues. It picks up speed as the UFO’s heat signature is detected. The nanoscanners quickly analyze its stealth technology.

‘Interesting material the body of this stealth bomber has. Let’s see, what can I use on you?’ Jaden asks, while he searches one of his weapon screens with alien symbols all over it.

‘Hmm...Let’s see what this does.’

Jaden fires an unknown alien weapon towards the stealth bomber as the bomber pulls up from flying low. A small orange projectile torpedo is shot from under the purple molecule. It travels at high speed and misses

the stealth bomber. The projectile disappears into thin air. The stealth bomber does twists in the air and heads west towards the Hudson River.

‘How did I miss that little bastard?’

Many more jet fighters approach Jaden from the clouds in all directions. The stealth bomber pilot ejects from his aircraft and parachutes towards the ocean. He can’t comprehend why the pilot ejected even though he missed it. Jaden speeds up and continues heading south in Manhattan.

‘What a view this is! I can see everything like it’s a sunny day. I always wanted to do this!’

Jaden flies in between the World Trade Centers. He always wanted to do that and everything feels like a dream coming true for him. To Jaden’s right he can see the stealth bomber crashing into the river creating a huge splash. The UFO slowly approaches the Statue of Liberty and stops.

‘Looking kind of green today, huh Miss Liberty? You have trillions of dirt particles all around your body Miss Liberty.’

Jaden thinks about what that last alien weapon actually did. He thinks back and replays what just happened as the orange projectile went off. He zooms in and looks in slow motion.

‘The projectile completely missed. But the exhaust from the stealth bomber went off.’

He zooms in on the ground in the area and he sees streetlights going out and cars shutting down. This intrigues Jaden and it gives him an idea.

Suddenly a bolt of lightning strikes the UFO directly.

‘Shit! What was that?’ The electricity dances around the shields and goes into the purple molecule. It feels like a massage on his shoulders. The electricity slightly charges his weapon systems. Jaden concentrates on the army of aircraft coming towards him. He notices an alien character on his screen that reads: THREAT LEVEL 49%. He speeds up to 204 mph and heads up through the clouds.

“Team leader 1 to Pentagon, the UFO08 was just struck by lightning and just flew into some low clouds. The UFO08 is no longer a civilian threat. We will fire all weapons at once.”

Thirty-four jet fighters are spread miles across the sky targeting the UFO from all directions. Jaden can hear their engines roaring towards him. Stealth bombers, stealth F-117’s, F-15’s and many other jets speed up towards the UFO. Jaden stops above the clouds while the jet fighters approach within a few miles. Jaden gets the UFO to act as if it is damaged by going constantly visible and invisible. The UFO is also emitting dark vapors.

“We can see the UFO08 on satellite now again. The object looks damaged. All units fire all missiles at target,” General Dudley says over the radio.

A young officer whispers to the General, “Sir, if you fire those missiles over nearby residential areas and destroy the UFO08, it could explode like a nuclear bomb and kill people below. Staten Island, Brooklyn and Jersey are below the UFO08.”

The General steps back, puts his right hand on his shoulder and looks the young officer in the eyes, “That is the chance I’m willing to take. Accidents happen every day; my job is to stop this UFO from making a mockery of the United States government. This wouldn’t be the first government cover-up. I’m sure the White House will come up with something good.”

The young officer walks off and Dudley looks back up at the large monitor screens.

One news helicopter is flying below the clouds circling as a military helicopter keeps them flying below the clouds.

“There is definitely something going on above the clouds ladies and gentlemen,” a news reporter in a helicopter says in front of the camera.

Jaden uses the nanoscanners to go out in all directions around him.

‘Damn that’s a lot of jet fighters....1, 2, 6, 34?’ Jaden asks.

‘Thirty-four jet fighters? This is crazy. Okay, let me concentrate. Let’s see if the king can outsmart you pawns, knights and bishops. Hmm. . . . one chess piece against thirty-four.’

Each jet fighter fires two missiles each at the UFO sitting in one place above the clouds at 3200 feet. The missiles cruise through the air from all directions, then speed up as they fly through a zero gravity zone. It’s quiet in the Pentagon office as everyone is looking at the monitor screens. Someone’s pager goes off, but it keeps beeping.

The news reporter can see two surface to air missiles coming from the Staten Island Ferry. He can hear the missiles in the clouds. The anxious news reporter gets the pilot to fly around the military helicopter and into the clouds.

Three orange larger projectiles are shot from the UFO and very quickly go below the missiles and into the clouds. The clouds light up orange for a few seconds in all directions then turn back to grey and white. An invisible shock wave spreads through the clouds and in all directions. The sixty-eight missiles lose thrust and continue to float forward facing different directions.

“This is News Chopper 10 and we are in the clouds to see a glimpse of the stolen military jet the military claims it is trying to take down. Could they be terrorists? We are about to get a ...”

The camera goes off and the lights flash inside the helicopter. It starts to shake and the engine sputters. It is all white around them inside the clouds as they spin in all directions. The pilot's control screens are all messed up and he does not know which way is up or down.

"Holy shit! We are going to die!" The news reporter starts to scream into the non-working camera. The news helicopter begins to float upwards out-of-control. The military helicopters below the clouds lose control and head towards the river.

The missiles float aimlessly in different directions. One explodes causing more to explode. The explosions turn into a huge sphere of fire. Another twelve missiles continue upward and some fall to the ground slowly spinning out of control. Some of the thirty-four jet fighters try to bail out and bank in different directions, but it is too late. They are caught in Jaden's trap. They all lose power, controls, and thrust. They float up and then flip upside down in the direction they turned. Each jet continues to float out-of-control in the direction they turned before they lost power and controls. Several pilots parachute out of their aircraft as four jet fighters crash into each other. They parachute upwards and continue to go upwards in the zero gravity area. The other twelve jet fighters that were floating upwards slow down as they go outside the zero gravity zone. The pilots inside of the zone are still trying to get control of their jets. The jet fighters that banked downwards continue towards the ground, but speed up as they leave the zero gravity area. Those pilots eject out of their aircraft and open their parachutes.

The news helicopter that was in the clouds continues to float out-of-control upwards with its blades slowly spinning. The passengers are screaming at the top of their lungs. It comes out on top of the clouds and in the middle of the chaos. The news reporter is lightly holding onto the handles. He can see all the jet fighters floating in different directions and some parachuting out. He looks to his far left and sees the UFO floating in one place. Even though he is spinning in different directions, he keeps his eyes focused on this exotic UFO just sitting in one place.

"My God!" He yells in a shocked voice.

The jet fighters floating upwards outside the zone change direction and speed up as they fall downwards. They slow down again as they go back into the zero gravity area. Half of the jet fighters parachute out of their aircraft and float upwards.

'Damn this is funny and entertaining. Look at how stupid everyone looks, floating in different directions yelling and screaming in their cockpits. The force of the parachutes opening up and zero gravity is propelling the pilots straight into the sky,' Jaden says.

Jaden heads under the clouds. He sees jet fighters crashing in all directions and heading down in slow motion. Lightning bolts are striking

to the east. Pilots are parachuting towards the water in all directions around him. Jet fighters are raining from the clouds. Everything is happening in slow motion for everything else, but fast for Jaden. There is a pilot falling near the Statue of Liberty that gets his attention. He quickly moves closer to the pilot and levels out. The Caucasian pilot in his early thirties is holding on tightly to his parachute with both hands and staring into the clouds as if he saw a ghost. Jaden notices the pilot is petrified, as the nanoscanner gets very close. The Statue of Liberty is facing the pilot and UFO. Jaden concentrates on his head and he sees what the pilot is thinking. Chemical messages and small impulses of electricity are moving all around his brain. Jaden sees images of the pilot's kids, wife, and dogs. Images of his past, of dying and his life up to now.



The pilot is shaking all around his body and his eyes look as if he is seeing a ghost. He has images of himself being in a coffin. Those images go away and an image of a gun appears. The scared pilot pulls out his handgun with his right hand from his jumpsuit. He holds onto the rope of the parachute with his left hand. The nanoscanner leaves his brain and is directly in front of the freaking out pilot. His mouth is wide open and fires his bullets at the UFO only twenty-one feet in front of him. Everything is happening so fast for the pilot.

“Pow, pow, pow.”



The bullets stop a few feet from the UFO's body and sit midair. The nanoscanner spins around the pilot as he continues to fire. Pilots and jet fighters can be seen crashing into the water and exploding on land in the background. Jaden moves forward as the wings flash and turn vertical.



The pilot continues to fire his gun as he aims at the moving away UFO.
“Pow! Pow! Pow! Pow!”



Jaden feels bad for freaking out the pilot. Orange and yellow exhaust shoots from the wings and tail. Jaden takes off north at breathtaking speeds and quickly gains altitude. The gravity in the area returns to normal. Stealth bombers, helicopters, jet fighters and parachuting pilots quickly fall towards the ground and river.

The UFO flies back into the clouds and turns west at 1475 mph. Trails of cloud lines follow the spaceship. The nanoscanners keep up with the ship.

‘Let’s see how fast I can get to the west coast. I want to fly down Hollywood Boulevard and then tea bag the Hollywood sign.’

Nothing is following behind the UFO. He reaches 2809 mph and continues to increase speed. Suddenly a grey and black camouflaged SR-71C Blackbird comes from below and begins to tail Jaden.

‘That’s a nice color, never seen you before. Let’s see if you can keep up.’

Jaden increases his speed and reaches 5102 mph. The UFO is pushing the thick, hot air out of the way, as if it was cutting through water. The high speed is creating strong winds to the sides of the UFO. Wakes of sonic booms move in directions behind the UFO and Blackbird. The Blackbird keeps up and gets closer. Jaden tries to go faster. He feels the outside of the UFO getting hot as it creates friction against the air.

‘How can I go faster?’

A few minutes pass by. Jaden is constantly changing altitude as he goes back down to 1700 feet.

He scrolls through some screens. He sees ANTI-MATTER LIGHT ENGINES OFFLINE.

Jaden tries to put them online, but they flicker and stay offline. As Jaden is concentrating on the light engines screen, he quickly switches his attention to what is going on outside the ship. He sees a large airliner heading towards the ground trying to land on a runway directly in front of him. Jaden changes direction as the airliner instantly appears in front of him. The UFO turns upside down at the last second. He flies under the belly of the airliner with hundreds of passengers on board and just misses the extending landing wheels. Jaden sees big buildings and recognizes the Sears Tower. The SR-71 Blackbird flies up higher just missing the slow airliner. Jaden flies above the buildings at 4177 mph. The powerful wind shaking feels worst than an earthquake. To the pilot it felt like strong turbulence. Their radar screens light up for a few seconds. People on the airplane look around at each other with confused looks.

The UFO's powerful supersonic wake catches up to the airliner and hits it with such force that it rips off the flaps on the wings. The landing gear just finished fully extending and windows crack and shatter. The cabin windows explode outwards and the loud engines fill the airwaves. The powerful jolt feels like a car crash. The aircraft lifts up from the rear and begins to nosedive. The airliner tilts left and right. The brave pilot fights the forces as his adrenaline kicks in. The co-pilot wakes up and looks around in shock. The passengers panic on the full 737 airplane. The two airline stewardesses lose their balance and fall to the floor. An older man in first class has his glass of wine splashed into his face. The first class passengers' oxygen masks drop from overhead first. Passengers scream from the sudden explosion sound. They automatically think they were hit by a missile as the lights flicker onboard. All their belongings on their laps float into the air as they hold on to the seat in front of them. A second sonic boom hits their craft. They feel the aircraft continuing to lean upwards. The pilot increases the dual thrust with his right hand. The loud engines can be heard throughout the cabin at 150 db.

"Oh my God!"

"Terrorists!! We going to die!" A man yells as he covers his ears.

"Pan Am bombing!" Another man yells.

There are more screams and yelling. A stewardess crawls into the bathroom to cover her ears. Passengers can't hear anything except the sounds of the engines on the wings. Young kids are screaming hysterically. The co-pilot radios into the tower. An Arab man with a turban on his head is praying and moving his body back and forth in the back row. A nervous white teenager sees this and points at the man.

"Terrorist!!" He yells, but no one hears him over the loud engines.

A religious female crosses her heart with her hand and puts her head between her legs. Female passengers' hair is floating over their heads. Luggage falls from overhead as people think they are going to die. Passengers cover their ears from the sudden change in pressure and oxygen masks drop from above in the coach section. Babies are screaming hysterically and people urinate on themselves. An older man grabs his chest. A female holds her baby in her arms and puts the oxygen mask over the baby boy first. She also covers his ears from the loud roaring sounds. The pilot struggles to gain control of the aircraft only 500 feet from landing. The plane slowly levels back to horizontal. The airliner quickly accelerates and bypasses the airport landing.

Jaden watches the airliner with a nanoscanner and sees that it is circling around to land. He witnesses the damage he caused, but is relieved it's still going to land safely. Snow is on the ground in Chicago. Jaden sees the SR-71 pilot is far over him and he increases speed and altitude. He catches up to the SR-71 and is flying in front of it. He gets up to 5203 mph and tries to get the anti-matter light engines online. The pilot tries to get a lock onto the UFO. They go online and his nanoscanners disappear in front of him. The wings move closer to the body of the ship. The light engine power level goes to 0.1%. The outside of the UFO begins to glow yellow and it lights up as bright as the sun. All the sunlight in the area reflects into the UFO and it gets darker all around. The shields going around the UFO disappear and a vortex matrix shield forms 3000 feet in front of it. The SR-71 slows down and gets away from the UFO. Clear energy waves are being drawn in all directions towards the UFO. The sky around the UFO goes completely dark. The UFO flashes like a camera, then there is a very loud bang and it disappears. The force and powerful wind pulls the SR-71 and it spins forward out-of-control.

12:45 PM

"Where did it go? Does anyone see it?" General Dudley asks.

"Sir, it is off the radar and it disappeared. The satellites aren't picking up anything," the second officer says.

"Try the LRSB."

"That is a negative sir, it isn't online yet."

"Damn! Shit!" Dudley yells. He takes a deep breath then continues, "That damn UFO08 has to be somewhere. It's probably still on Earth somewhere. Activate all spy satellites all over the world to find this spaceship."

"Sir, the phones are ringing from law enforcement all across the country. They are saying there was a loud explosion from the sky and

windows were broken in millions of people's homes. Car windows and businesses have broken windows also. There are 100,000's of citizens complaining of ringing in their ears. There are tornadoes reported forming from the sky in different mid-state cities," the second officer tells the General.

A satellite expert walks up to the General.

"You need to look at this sir," The red-eyed General Dudley walks over to the satellite expert and reads his paperwork.

"Look at the clouds. They were floating eastwards at 12:30 PM. At 12:31 PM the clouds in this 200-mile radius are now floating westwards, creating tornadoes and deadly thunderstorms. In addition, a strong sound disturbance is spreading all over the world at Mach 100 speed from where the UFO08 was last spotted."

The General is speechless and doesn't know what to make of it. Fifteen minutes pass by and the military is still trying to locate the UFO that disappeared.

"Sir, North Korea is stating there is something flying straight down into their air space from 500,000 feet. They are saying it's glowing yellow and have tremendous heat. They don't know what to make of it," the second officer says aloud in the office.

"That's it!" He yells. He gets up and looks at the screens. "That's the son-of-a-bitch! Move all satellites to that location."

'What happened? Where am I?' Jaden asks.

Everything is bright yellow outside the UFO. Jaden feels intense heat all around his body. He feels as if he is baking in the sun and sauna at the same time. He wonders if he flew into the sun.

Jaden switches to a nanoscanner and sees the ship heading down. He cannot control the ship anymore. He checks the screens; manual controls are offline and autopilot is engaged. He wonders what is going on and he reads that stage 2 is 99.9% complete.

His altitude is 190,038 feet, speed 2309 mph. It is dark all around the ship. He realizes he is somewhere where it is nighttime. The nanoscanners quickly reach the ground and Jaden sees military aircraft with red stars on them taking off. Huge surface to air missiles are aimed upwards ready to be fired. He notices the colors and a red star flag. Jaden notices he is in North Korea and sees thousands of angry Asian people pointing and looking up at him. A nanoscanner turns and looks upwards towards the UFO from the ground. The ship looks like a bright shooting star. The UFO slows down and stops midair at 31,001 feet. Surface to air missiles are fired from the ground. Jaden begins looking through the screens.

‘Preparing for space journey?’ Jaden asks and continues, ‘This isn’t good. Okay, you can drop me off at home now. I had fun in the futuristic UFO, but you can drop me off back in New York?’

A minute passes by and Jaden continues to look through the virtual screens trying to see what is going on. Part of Jaden is curious about space and traveling wherever the ship will take him. But more of him is afraid of the unknown and what these aliens want with him. Panic sets in, as he has no control of the ship he is in. What is controlling the UFO is puzzling to him. He thinks about talking to someone there, but nothing happens. He is a prisoner and passenger on this exotic UFO. The yellow bright glow around the ship slowly fades away by the very cold air. Jaden checks on his body.

‘Oh wow! Look at my body.’

His body is semi-transparent in a cocooned fetus position. His organs can be seen glowing different colors. He can actually see his heart slowly beating through his lungs. Jaden takes a closer look and he sees his veins and millions of little nanobots of different sizes moving through his bloodstream. He wonders what those nanobots are doing. Just then, one of the screens shows stage two complete. It quickly changes to STAGE THREE 15%. The percentage number slowly counts up.

Twenty-four North Korean jet fighters are approaching the UFO. Jaden continues to check out the different alien screens as he tries to make sense of it.

‘Wait a second,’ he pauses, ‘Some of these screens are in alien symbols, but I understand what they mean. Cool!’

He can see 20-30 alien characters inside of one symbol and they come out in 3D.

MICRO OXYGEN CELLS 100%, PRESSURE AROUND HUMAN BODY 100% NORMAL @ 1000 FEET SEA LEVEL, ANTI-MATTER / MATTER STABLE 100%, LIGHT ENGINES 80%, SHIELDS STRENGTH 75%, MATRIX VORTEX SHIELDS 20%.

‘These Korean bastards are firing at me. Man, I want to take out all their missiles and jet fighters.’

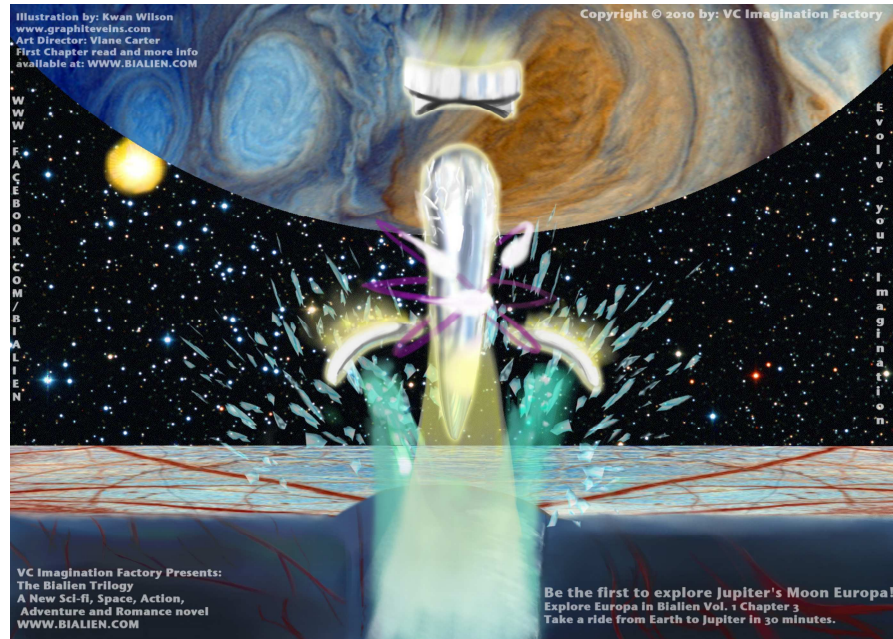
The jet fighters get to about 3000 feet away and fire their missiles. The front of the UFO points upwards towards space and accelerates. Creating a small sonic boom, the missiles quickly change direction and follow. The jet fighters fire their machine guns and cannons, but they do not hit anything. The UFO continues to increase speed. The missiles explode in the air like fireworks behind Jaden.

‘78,000 feet, 6231 mph, oh shit!’

‘The outside of the UFO heats up again. The UFO also begins to shake as it passes through the upper atmosphere and freezing cold

temperature at -175°F . The air outside the ship gets thinner and the shaking slowly goes away. The ship greatly increases speed. The UFO reaches 430,081 feet at 9808 miles an hour. Then 17,089 miles an hour at 780,088 feet as it reaches the beginning of space in lower orbit.

Chapter 3: Europa's Cracked Shell



The ship passes tons of space debris as it passes through lower orbit and higher orbit. The nanoscanners detect hundreds of pieces of debris floating aimlessly around the planet. There are pieces of satellites, non-functioning satellites, engines and metal floating in orbit around Earth.

A very large screen comes up by itself and displays a map of our solar system.

‘Oh wow, this is cool.’

The planets are all moving slowly around the sun. There is a planet flashing on the screen with a line drawn to it.

He slowly counts, ‘Earth, Mars and Jupiter. Looks like we are going to Jupiter for some reason. This is exciting, but scary. I wonder how long this might take. I hope it doesn’t take years.’

This is very amazing to Jaden as he sees space close-up and so many stars clustered together. The view is amazing from the dark side of Earth. This feels like a crazy dream to Jaden. This is freaking him out, but at the same time, it is capturing his curiosity. His imagination is going wild. The Earth is getting smaller and smaller behind him. Jaden is past where the satellites are. The altitude on the screen has been turned off and the speed reads 108,000 mph.

The sun is coming out and shines on the UFO leaving Earth’s orbit. Jaden checks his screens that show both images outside and info about the ship. The smell of fresh air is gone. When Jaden thinks about

smelling the outside of the ship it feels like his nose is trying to breathe in a vacuum hose on a vacuum cleaner. An eerie cold feeling goes around Jaden's body as he looks into the blackness in front of him. The moon suddenly comes into view towards the right.

LIGHT ENGINES 100% READY, OPTIC-WARP DRIVE ONLINE, YELLOW ANTI-MATTER / YELLOW MATTER STABLE 100%.

The ship changes direction and heads towards the moon. Messages continue to show up on the screen. The nanoscanners disappear in front of the UFO. The two tailpieces on the rear of the UFO separate by a foot. Light is drawn into the UFO from all directions and it begins to glow. LIGHT ENGINES POWER STRENGTH 1%. There is a slight flash of light around the UFO and it quickly accelerates. A long trail of exhaust comes from the tail and between the two upside down tails. Small amounts of yellow exhaust come from the two side wings.

Everything is moving faster around him. He sees Earth behind him getting smaller and the moon getting bigger. OUTSIDE EARTH'S MAGNETOSPHERE COSMIC RADIATION PROTECTION ZONE, HULL OF SHIP 100% STABLE he reads on the translucent virtual screen. The huge sun is shining so brightly. 1860 MILES PER SECOND can be seen on the screen.

'This view is amazing; I never thought I'd be in space. I hope I have enough oxygen. That's a long ride to Jupiter. The nanoscanners are in front making sure my path is clear. There are six of them!'

Jaden gets three of the nanoscanners to scan the moon. The nanoscanners are able to move much faster and give information that is more detailed. They scan around the moon very fast.

'Did we ever land on the moon?' Jaden asks.

The nanoscanners show there aren't any leftover presences of any man-made materials. It reads: VIRGIN MOON AND ZERO HUMAN PRESENCE.

'I've heard rumors from people saying we didn't land on the moon and conspiracy theories. But I'm sure there is some explanation,' Jaden pauses and stares at the moon. The UFO passes the moon very quickly.

He notices it took only two minutes to reach the moon. The speed to him is amazing. He wonders if the ship can reach the speed of light or faster.

PENTAGON, WASHINGTON, D.C.

Soldiers and military personnel are walking around quickly in the huge underground Pentagon area. Disappointment is in the air

"Sir, we don't know. The LRSB is online now. It's tracking the UFO08. It left our orbit a few minutes ago. It just flew by the moon in

less than three minutes,” General Dudley says over the phone. He listens, and continues talking, “It’s working well, and is still hidden inside the UFO08, sir.”

“The President is going live in forty-five minutes to talk to the nation about what happened today,” Secretary of Defense Oscar Strongwater tells Dudley over the phone from the White House.

“Sir, remember the radio telescopes all over the world are also picking up the loud radio frequencies and noise the UFO is making as it flies through our solar system. The Metrewave Radio Telescope in Pune, India has already detected the UFO08’s radiation trail and radio wavelengths. The ship has light speed capabilities and is traveling at a fraction of that speed now. It is moving faster than any meteor or asteroid in our solar system,” Dudley says.

“General Dudley, what is a radio telescope?”

“Sir, it is like a telescope, but it picks up radio waves and noise in space. It’s like an advanced radar capable of picking up different radiation and object transmissions. If that ship jumps into warp or light speed, radio telescopes around the world are going to light up.”

“That just shows what I know. I need to brief the President; I’ll call you back in a few. This is a big disaster; we need to do what we do best and get this covered up as soon as possible.”

SPACE 340,981 MILES FROM EARTH

Jaden is amazed at the planets in full color slowly spinning and moving around the sun. The UFO on the alien map is moving slowly towards Jupiter. The moon continues to get smaller and smaller behind the UFO. On one of the screens, the numbers count down from ten. The light engines charge to ninety percent. The ship begins to glow brighter as the light thousands of miles around the ship comes towards it. It gets very dark like an eclipse. A very bright flash of light flashes in all directions. The ship moves like a blur and he barely feels it. The flash can be seen from Earth with the naked eye. The speed is shocking to Jaden; it’s like nothing he ever saw on television. He sees the light he created is in front of him and is moving away. The sun also begins to get smaller.

‘This is very fast! Very fast! I’m going at warp speed! I’m going faster than any human being!’

The screen shows 178,000 miles per second.

‘I’m going a little under the speed of light. I think the speed of light is 186,000 miles a second,’ Jaden pauses then continues, ‘Thank you *Star Trek* episodes. I’m going boldly where no man has gone before.’

The ship is causing radio telescopes around the world to detect unknown radio frequencies, microwaves and x-ray signals to go crazy.

The light that was in front of the UFO slows down and stays in view. The ship reaches 186,101 mps. The outside body of UFO is glowing bright like a small nova. The ship is leaving a long energy exhaust in its wake. The small light the UFO is creating is passing in front of the ship like a wave. Jaden is intrigued that he is able to use nanoscanners to zoom in on Mars from inside the UFO. Jaden notices that Mars is on the other side of the sun and is too far away.

‘That’s interesting where the planets are; the screen here is showing each planet rotating.’ Minutes go by and the vortex matrix shields go online. Jaden sees the nanoscanners ten million miles in front of the UFO passing through the main asteroid belt. Energy from the purple molecule is beaming in front of the ship. A strong concentration of shields is forming in a cone shape in front of the UFO, extending hundreds of miles in front of it. Jaden quickly figures out it is there to destroy or block anything in front of the ship. The nanoscanners pick out the best path through the asteroid belt. The UFO changes its direction slightly with thrust from the left wing. Jaden sees rocks and very large asteroids floating around and barely moving. Jaden feels as if he is in a front row seat in a 3D movie, but without the glasses. The view is unbelievable and mind blowing to him. He feels as if he is flying through space.

The UFO slows down to 100,000 mps. The UFO is passing through millions of tons of rocks and asteroid debris. A fast moving rock the size of Rhode Island gets into the path of the UFO. It is caught in the vortex matrix shields and the UFO goes right through the newly created hole.

‘Wow! That happened so fast.’

Jaden replays what just happened in slow motion.

The ship clears the last of the asteroid belt and continues towards Jupiter at 169,000 mps.

PENTAGON, WASHINGTON, D.C.

“Yes sir, we are now tracking it using the Hubble Telescope. It is giving us the best images of the UFO08,” General Dudley says over the phone.

“That damn UFO08 has technology we really could have used. It flew right through the asteroid belt without incident. It looks like a very fast moving comet,” Oscar Strongwater says.

“It does sir, but we can’t get a clear image of the UFO because it is moving so fast, we can only see the light it’s creating.”

“Keep tracking it, the President and I are having a private meeting after he is fully briefed on this situation.”

OUTER SPACE

Fifteen minutes pass by and the brown, white and grey planet quickly approaches. The planet gets bigger and bigger. The ship enters Jupiter's powerful magnetosphere. A humming sound can be heard coming from the planet through the nanoscanners. Jaden sees hundreds of moons and asteroids circling Jupiter. The ship jumps out of warp speed and continues on warp impulse speed. It continues towards the Red Spot on Jupiter at one percent light engine power. Jaden remembers his father telling him about the Great Red Spot of Jupiter when he was younger. Jupiter has thousands of storm systems. He also remembers his father telling him that two planets can fit inside of it. The nanoscanners return towards the ship, pass through the molecule, and continue towards the hundreds of asteroids and moons surrounding Jupiter. Jaden is amazed with everything he is seeing. There is so much for him to see at once. He feels as if he is a kid again in a large amusement park, with so much happening around him.

The thrust impulse wing engines go online and the light engines go offline. The ship passes the closest, brightest moon with volcanoes on it and the ship continues to go towards the Great Red Spot on the night side of Jupiter.

'If I was in my body now my mouth would be wide open. The size of this planet is beyond amazing. There are storms, clouds and so much happening at once. The planet is moving so fast. That was a cool moon, wait a second, that moon is called Io. That means the Galileo spacecraft is around here somewhere. It just got here three months ago; I remember watching this on TV. '

The UFO gets closer and closer. Jupiter's size is breathtaking to Jaden up close. The pressure outside the ship greatly increases as it passes through very thick, bright red clouds that look very colorful. The clouds smell like rotten eggs to Jaden. Stronger anti-gravity energy comes from the molecule and covers the entire ship. The molecule's energy balls are quickly moving in and out of the ship collecting ammonia, methane, hydrogen and helium atoms. There is a violent storm taking place around him with 1200 mph winds. Gravity is constantly being disrupted around the UFO. The ship passes through the storm with slight turbulence. Jaden uses a nanoscanner to find MASA's Galileo spacecraft that should be near a moon. The powerful winds, forces and turbulence have the anti-gravity engines at forty percent power. The front of the ship turns red from the heat as it passes through 15,000 miles of clouds filled with ammonium hydrosulfide and water drops. It gets darker and darker as the sunlight can't penetrate this far into the planet. The ship quickly approaches oceans and oceans of steamy, solid white

clouds. The pounds per square inch (psi) reach a staggering 900 million psi outside the ship, and it continues to multiply. Jaden can see the outside temperature on his screens exceeding 9000°F.

Suddenly the wings on the side turn horizontal as if they were airplane wings. Jaden notices an alien character on the screen that he translates into MPB -MATRIX PLASMA BEAM ONLINE. The wings begin to emit blue beams in front of them, while yellow thrust continues to come from the rear of them. The wings slowly rotate clockwise around the body while emitting a blue light. Concentrated blue beams of energy are shot a mile in front of the ship. Jaden notices this is creating a tunnel through the steamy compressed hydrogen clouds. The ship enters the newly created tunnel. It turns completely dark all around as the ship cuts through thousands of miles of thick clouds. A cold, eerie feeling comes over Jaden. Goose bumps are actually forming on the skin of Jaden's cocooned body. Yellow thrust suddenly comes out of the rear of the side wings that are still rotating. They light up the area around the ship. He changes his vision and looks through a nanoscanner far in front of the ship. His mouth is wide open at what he sees. He sees bright blue light coming from all directions from a liquid metallic hydrogen ocean. Blue Javian lightning bolts strike upwards from the vivid colorful ocean. The constant thunder sounds like loud explosions. The nanoscanners are detecting all kinds of energy particles and atoms moving in so many directions around the highly compressed area. Jaden can't believe what he is seeing. There are oceans of metal boiling with bubbles exploding hundreds of miles upwards. The shape of the ocean looks like huge lava waves moving out of sync. The crushing, humming and exploding sounds quickly become very loud and annoying.

The UFO finally makes it down to the area. There is a very close energy shield two feet around the body of the ship. The purple molecule and moving energy balls are sticking out of this shield area. The wings stop spinning and switch to hovering mode, the MPB also goes offline. Jaden sees the outside temperature is exceeding 19,800°F. He checks on his body to make sure he isn't roasting. His body screen shows his internal temperature at 98.6°F with a cocooned area temperature of 78°F. Suddenly blue lightning attacks the UFO from all directions and Jaden quickly changes his vision. The strong, colorful Javian lightning bombards the outside shield and quickly jumps around in all directions. The ship glows lightning blue as the energy goes into the purple molecule's energy balls. To Jaden the energy feels as if he is getting a massage in the Jacuzzi.

The matrix vortex shields, optic-warp drive, and other systems begin to quickly charge. The pressure reaches a staggering 2.1 billion psi. The

ship then suddenly dives down into the hot 22,000°F metallic blue ocean. Jaden feels as if he jumped into an ocean of hot castor oil. He sees x-ray lightning particles jumping in every direction. The sounds he hears are like a loud jet engine, explosions, a whale cry and a rumbling earthquake muffled together. The ship quickly comes back out of the blue abyss. The metallic liquid floats around the shield and goes into the energy balls and then into the outside hull of the UFO. The lightning doesn't strike the ship anymore. The ship quickly accelerates upwards. Jaden can't believe this mind-boggling experience.

The lightning continues to dance around the shields. The ship turns around, points upwards and takes off through the thick, liquid hydrogen clouds. A wake of clouds follows the ship. The MPB goes back online and the ship creates another tunnel towards the surface. The ship is moving faster as it rides out the compressed hydrogen's exploding forces. Five minutes pass by and Jaden can see the powerful Red Spot get larger and then smaller as he leaves the atmosphere. Trails of white smoke trails behind the ship.

'Okay, everything is fully charged, I wonder where we are off to now?'

The UFO accelerates around the side of the huge 11 times bigger than Earth planet. Most of the nanoscanners wait at a large white and grey moon orbiting Jupiter. Jaden doesn't recognize or remember this moon.

The matrix plasma beams go online as the ship quickly approaches this obscure, isolated moon the size of Earth, just outside of Jupiter. The moon is light blue with dark tan and red veins that stretch thousands of miles across the surface. A few spots on the surface resemble dunes of ice. Floating debris and rocks that get in the way of the ship evaporate into harmless particles. A nanoscanner locates a slight crack in the ice. The purple molecule shines a bright beam in front of it. The angle of the wings allows the MPBs to aim directly in front of the ship. The ship flies straight towards the surface and the MPBs touch the surface first. Jaden gets a little nervous; he fears whoever is controlling the ship is inside of the moon. He knows this isn't Jupiter's moon Io. The blue beams from the wings create a circular hole in the ice as the ice quickly approaches. Millions of small clear pieces of ice float in different directions around the beam's energy and depart from the surface. The thin beam from the molecule is shining directly into the hole and between the MPBs. The sun can be seen from a distance near Jupiter. Enormous Jupiter is directly behind the spaceship and fills up the entire view over the icy moon. The tail of the ship separates further and floats about eight feet behind the

body. Millions of stars are in the background and darkness of space. The UFO dives into the tunnel of the hard, icy crust.

Jaden is curious to what is beneath the surface of this moon he is unfamiliar with. The quickly spinning MPBs on the wings are destroying miles of solid ice. The tunnel is very dark in front of the artificial light. Millions of pieces of ice are dancing together behind the UFO. The ship quickly reaches an ocean of liquid water. The sound of a car crashing into the water echoes up the tunnel. A loud splashing sound follows the crashing sound. The salty water quickly floods upwards towards the surface. It freezes the tunnel in seconds. The MPB turns off and the molecule glows in the darkness while still providing a powerful beam of light. The wings turn from a pointing outwards position to 20 degrees pointing towards the tail. The tail shrinks slightly in size. The ship moves much easier through the salty, dark water.

The completely dark water is showing bright as day through the molecule's front lights. Jaden doesn't understand the need for the bright lights because he can already see in the dark through the spread out nanoscanners. Thousands of fish come from dozens of miles away seeking out the light. The ship continues to dive as Jaden sees purple fissures creating heat and bubbles. Black smoke is coming from some of the hydrothermal vents. The ocean floor continues to drop as if he is going down into a canyon. There are quadrillions of green glowing extremophile bacteria slowly moving around the vents' geothermal energy. The uneven floors dip down miles below like a cliff. The invisible thrust from the wings turns the water into a slightly pinkish color.

Hundreds of small alien fish the size of a man's hand swim up looking at the UFO, but they stay away from the bright light. Most of the animals get out of the way of the light since they have never seen anything so bright. Jaden's is stunned at what he sees. He could never imagine underwater life on an alien planet in the solar system. He has never heard about this in school or anywhere in science books. The fish form a circle around the ship. They are emitting a green light around their body simultaneously as if they are trying to communicate. The grey fish have two spiky, white, long fins on each side of their bodies that helps them to swim. The fins resemble sharp Q-tips and carry small gills on each of them. They resemble parrotfish with two eyes on the side of their faces, and a third eye in the middle. The UFO is collecting samples of the rich mineral saltwater with seventy percent oxygen in it.

PENTAGON, WASHINGTON, D.C.

“The LRSB is not transmitting sir,” the second officer tells the General.

“Where did it last transmit?” Dudley asks.

“Somewhere on the outside of Jupiter.”

“I know this thirty million dollar piece of shit transmitter didn’t just stop working!” Dudley yells while he slaps the desk putting his head down and grabbing his hair.

“Jupiter could be affecting the signal. The Galileo Orbiter craft has been updated to try to locate the UFO in its proximity.”

JUPITER’S MOON EUROPA

‘This is amazing. I didn’t know there was an underwater ocean on a Jupiter’s moon. This is crazy! My know it all astronomy professor Dr. Samuels should be here to see this.’

Jaden switches between different nanoscanners spread out in different directions. There are plants, fissures, algae vines, and miles of underwater mountains. At a distance on top of the mountains are huge, colorful, glowing coral reefs, the size of elephants. Thousands of small fish are swimming around them. They extend in all directions, less than a mile beneath the ice. The smell of the ocean reminds him of being at the beach when he was younger. The 32°F degree water against the outside of the ship is transmitted to Jaden’s brain when he thinks about it. His mind interprets the signals as brain freezes and cold chills around his body. Jaden can taste the very concentrated amounts of salt, algae, and acidic water through the hull of the UFO as well. As he gets deeper, everything around him is emitting some kind of dim green light in the dark. The little grey fish quickly scatter into many directions as they sense something. THREAT LEVEL 11% shows on the screens. The UFO turns off its bright light and thrust engines. The glowing molecule also disappears. The ship uses pro-gravity energy to continue to sink like a rock. The nanoscanners detect large alien sharks approaching from below, as the ship continues to sink. They quickly scan each of their bodies analyzing cartilage, oxygen levels, muscle, and brain structure. The data quickly passes by on each nanoscanner’s vision screen.

There is a school of fifteen alien sharks approaching in an orderly fashion from the left. Jaden is able to see the insides of their bodies in animated vision. The sound of the insides of their bodies sounds like a balloon quickly being twisted near his ears. The twenty-foot long sharks resemble the shape of a shark on Earth. The grey-bodied shark with green glowing scales around its body has two huge pointy horns as noses on its heads. They stretch out three feet each. Inside of the double horns is a clear protective area where dozens of small, black, reflective eyes sit. The rows of eyes are on both sides of the cone noses. Under the noses is

a huge mouth with hundreds of six-inch long razor sharp teeth inside. On each side of the sharks near the head are round, double layer fins that stick out five feet in diameter. The fins look circular like stingray bodies. There is another small set of fins towards the midsection and a long narrow tail. There is a huge muscle in the tail that allows it to change from horizontal to vertical when it changes directions. The UFO continues to cruise downwards. The nanoscanners detect the group of sharks communicating with each other using a magnetic radar system in the tips of their noses.

Jaden changes his vision to outside the ship. He sees the wings imitating a fish. The side wings are sticking out straight and flapping backwards like a fish. The wings then disappear into the body, reappear in a straight out position, and repeat the sequence. Jaden sees some of the sharks approach the ship and surround it. The ship levels out and faces the majority of the huge sharks. The wings stop moving and sit at an outward 90-degree angle. He sees that they have a confused look on their strange faces. Jaden thinks the ship is going to try to communicate with the organized sharks. He can't believe how organized they are, as if they have some sort of evolved intelligence. The ship's body lights up in a sequence like Morse code. The confusing sequences are making the sharks get closer to Jaden and slowly freaking him out. He has a bad feeling about this communication.

The sharks quickly attack the ship from all directions. The ship jerks in different directions from the sudden force. Two attack the wings on both sides. The double noses turn sideways and their huge jaws comes out from underneath and swallows the wings simultaneously. Another attacks the nose of the ship and grinds its sharp teeth on the silver metallic hull. Another two attack the rear tail, trying to pull them apart. Another pair attacks the hull of the ship from the rear. One slides down the bottom side and the other on the top like a snake, in opposite directions. Their bodies wrap around the hull and lock into each other's tail. They pull into opposite directions passing each other side by side squeezing the hull. When their faces split apart to open their large jaws, their vision changes to directly in front of them.

'What the hell?'

There are hundreds of other alien fish watching from a distance. Jaden is caught off guard from the sudden attack. Jaden feels the biting and squeezing against the ship. The wings feel as if a huge snake with small teeth is nibbling on his arms. His feet are experiencing the same thing, up to his knees. His midsection feels as if two pythons are trying to squeeze him. Jaden also has the feeling of a huge leech over his head, squeezing and scratching his skull. The gross feeling he is interpreting

makes him feel like throwing up. Jaden still doesn't have any control, but he wishes he did.

'Get off me you little shark rats! I'm not a meal!'

Jaden tries to mess with the weapons screen, but it's offline. He wants to blast these bastards around him so bad. Jaden figures the ship is doing some sort of experiment or taking a non-violent approach.

The UFO continues to float downwards with these sharks continuing to bite and pull. The sharks on the wings are trying to pull the wings off. But the powerful, invisible magnetic energy between the body and the wings keeps them from moving. The sharks wag their tails in different directions in an attempt to come off with a piece of the ship. The entire wings are in the sharks' mouths as they continue to pull and bite. The sharks on the tail continue trying to pull a top and bottom side of the tail apart. The angry sharks coordinate and swim the ship towards the left. But the ship counters that action. A nanoscanner detects a seventy-five foot mother alien shark quickly swimming towards them a half a dozen miles away. Jaden can't believe how organized the sharks are. This reminds Jaden of a Tom and Jerry episode where Tom had crabs biting him all over his body and he was jumping around yelling. The pain increases around Jaden's body.

Suddenly the sharks with the pit bull jaw grip over the wings and tail begin to glow pink. Jaden is surprised that the thrust isn't hot or bothers the sharks. The ship continues to head downwards, gradually increasing speed. Brighter pink thrusts come from the wings and tail as the ship increases in speed. The side wings point towards the rear, while the sharks continue to hang on. The shark on the nose falls off first. The sharks on the tail lose their grip and spin in circles from the ship's powerful downwards tidal wake. The sharks around the midsection of the ship do the same and join the tidal wake. The sharks on the wings are slowly being pulled off from the increasing force of 200 mph. A screeching sound is heard on both sides as the sharks slowly lose their strong grips. There are hundreds of different fish moving out of the way from below. A whirlpool spreads behind the ship in all directions. Jaden feels as if his arms are slowly being scratched by two cats. The sharks fall off one by one, and spin in the tidal wave whirlpool. A relieving feeling passes around Jaden's body. The zero gravity wake quickly spreads outwards and pulls hundreds of animals into the ship's direction. The whirlpool reaches the top of the ocean.

The nanoscanners detect dozens of miles of milky white, glowing strings floating aimlessly in all directions, below and around the ship. There are all types of fish swimming around the glowing strings providing a dim light.

The huge mother shark continues to head towards the ship at an amazing 90 mph. Jaden sees it through the nanoscanner as if it wants a big meal. The threat level goes up to 18%. Jaden is in disbelief as he sees all of this before him. Another nanoscanner detects the ocean floor three miles in front of the ship. Jaden sees some lime glowing starfish, thirty feet in diameter with four-foot long spikes and thorns around them. There are glowing seaweed vines 80-90 feet long extending from the ocean floor. Fissures, alien crabs with twelve arms, glowing eels with wings and square-shaped stingrays parade the ocean floor. They begin to scatter as they hear something coming from above them. There are giant glowing worms on the ocean floor the size of a big screen television. There is glowing endolith all across the ocean floor in rocks, shells and coral. There are dozens of brown scallop shells that resemble lasagna ruffles on the floor. The alien scallops have dozens of glowing eyes all across its shell. They also have thousands of small teeth that extend across the opening of the two shells.

The wake behind the ship gets bigger as it dives past 300,000 feet. The ship slows down and turns as it reaches a rocky bottom. The whirlpool resembles an underwater tornado from a distance as it slams into the ocean floor. There is a loud crashing and exploding sound as the whirlpool hits the rocky bottom. The whirlpool is glowing green and white from the extremophiles and millions of collected strings. The ocean floor shakes violently as a shock wave travels in all directions at 5600 mph. Debris, sharks and other animals spiral down the whirlpool colliding on top of each other as if a train was just derailed. A cloud of dust moves from the impact area as if a bomb just exploded.

Miles in front of the ship there is a huge twenty-foot glowing jellyfish with a yellow body floating towards a collective of thirty of them to form a glowing 400-foot circular congregation of connected jellyfish. They slowly connect together from all directions as if they were seeking shelter. The UFO continues to scan millions of different alien life forms as it moves across the high-pressure ocean floor. Jaden is speechless as he tries to take in everything he is seeing. He is zooming in on the pitch-black ocean floor. There are dozens of red snakes with little legs and hard, narrow, glowing shells on their backs. They spread out in many directions as they sense danger approaching. There are dozens of fifteen-foot wide clamshells in a group. The majority of the five-inch fish have one eye in the middle of their heads and skinny bodies. The creatures also have 10-20 small fins moving on the side of their eyes across the side of their bodies. Their bodies are repeatedly glowing together as if they are sending Morse code to each other. The UFO begins to glow and light up at the same pace the alien fish are.

The ship turns down and goes through a tunnel that leads miles deeper. The wings move into a forward position and closer towards the body. The dark tunnel gives Jaden the creeps as green light from the vines disappear. The vines extend across to each side of the solid rock tunnel. The ship rubs against a few vines. The ship passes the vines and enters an area in the tunnel where 100,000's of little thin hairs are extending across the tunnel, blocking the pathway. The hairs move and rub around the body of the ship as if they were tasting it. A nanoscanner detects something alive hiding in the walls of the tunnel. The ship passes without incident.

The pressure oddly decreases as the ship goes lower. There is a huge open area that resembles a large cave. The nanoscanners are picking up a mountain half a mile away. It looks like the mountain is alive with carbon-based cells and membranes. The ship goes in that direction. The nanoscanners detect something alive inside. Jaden sees shreds of glowing, digested material that resembles feces around this huge mountain that extends a mile high. The UFO, still in autopilot, scans the side of the mountain and materials. The nanoscanners detect something moving very fast inside the mountain. Suddenly something large reaches out of the opening to the mountain and grabs the UFO. The UFO is pulled quickly inside of the mountain by a sticky, large tentacle tongue. Jaden panics as the UFO turns off its thrust engines and the wings and tail morph back into the body. The ship does not do anything as it is quickly propelled into the mountain and what looks to be a mouth. Jaden freaks out as he can feel goose bumps jumping around his skin. The sounds of being inside of a body can be heard. Huge hairs push the ship down what appears to be a throat. The throat area quickly attempts to squeeze the ship. Jaden can feel the pressure of the cellular walls squeezing him as if a big person was hugging the life out of him. Panic sets in as a slimy material coats the ship.

'I'm claustrophobic!' Jaden yells in a panicked tone.

The high pressure squeezing has no affect on the ship's hull. The area opens back up and the silver carrot shape UFO lands in what appears to be a huge stomach area full of acid.

'Oh shit, this is gross. I've just been swallowed by a slimy sea creature! This is disgusting! This is beyond disgusting!' Jaden has the feeling of wanting to throw up, but can't. The nasty acid liquid feels as if it is all over his skin. Goose bumps return to his human body. Squishing, farting and digesting sounds are all around him. He tries to ignore the smell and sounds he hears around him. The smell is worst than road kill. Jaden knows he is protected inside the ship and tries to calm down. But he can't figure out why the ship went along with being captured. The

nanoscanners put together a 3D image of a large, grey, squid-looking alien animal quarantined inside of this huge underwater mountain. The humongous animal has hundreds of very long tongues that look like tentacles that extend to different holes in the mountain. Jaden's fear turns to curiosity as he looks at the 3D images on his screens. He has never seen anything like this. The strong stomach acid tries to digest the UFO along with other half-digested alien creatures.

STAGE 3 COMPLETE flashes on the lower part of the screen.

'Oh great, stage three was to be eaten by an underwater alien monster on a moon far far away.'

Jaden investigates what is inside the Mortal Kombat pit of death he is inside of.

'I can't believe all the things sitting in this animal's stomach. It has eaten thousands of fish animals. Ha! Ha!'

Jaden continues to laugh as he sees a few half digested alien sharks beneath him. He continues to laugh as nanoscanners detect three more alien sharks coming down from different throats.

'Looks like you sharks couldn't attack Mr. Godzilla Squid here.'

The sharks fall into the huge stomach and they start going crazy as the acid burns their skin. They quickly try to swim back towards the throat, but it closes up. The sharks together begin biting one closed off throat.

'Where you sharks going? Sit and stay awhile, let's play a game of UNO. Don't leave! This acid sauna feels good after awhile; it's good for your skin. You don't want to give this squid indigestion while you stay at the roach hotel; I mean squid motel. You'll get used to the strong acid in no time, just like your friends below did.'

Jaden tries to entertain himself while trying to not think about the disgusting situation he is in. The sharks are quickly ripping away pieces of the throat with their sharp teeth, but slow down as the strong acid digest their skin and inside mouth area.

'You should have called your big mama to come rescue you. You don't look so bad now.'

There is a thumping sound from a distance outside the mountain. A nanoscanner quickly detects the mother shark that was coming towards the ship earlier a few miles above the mountain. She crashes into a tunnel she is too big for. Jaden admires the huge size of this enormous creature. He notices she has eyes on the side of her body and vertical and horizontal gills.

'Looks like your mama is here for you, but her big ass can't fit in the tunnel.'

Jaden thinks of some mama jokes from high school to entertain himself, while the sharks a few feet above him slowly stop moving and sink into the abyss.

‘Yo mama is so fat, the last time she saw 90210 it was on a bathroom scale. Yo mama is so fat she can’t jump to conclusions.....’

He laughs to himself, but can’t think of anymore fat jokes for some reason.

‘....Yo mama is so ugly she entered an ugly contest and the judges said: sorry no professionals. Ha! Yo mama is so stupid, she took the Pepsi challenge and chose Jiff peanut butter.’

‘Okay that last one was kinda corny and very junior high school.’

The ship is analyzing and scanning everything inside of the monster. Jaden tries to get manual control of the UFO, but it does not work. He wants out of this monster squid; he had enough torture.

‘Oh man, let me fire some weapons inside of this giant squid monster and give him some nasty tasting indigestion. I’ll let it know what American fast food taste like after a few hours in someone’s stomach,’ Jaden says in a humorous voice.

Jaden wishes the UFO would at least put up its shields so he doesn’t have to taste, smell and hear the insides of this animal. Jaden wishes he could wax the outside of this UFO with this squid’s insides.

Suddenly the ships anti-gravity engines go on. The wings and tail morph from the body. The tail and wings are in their normal flight position. The UFO fades semi-invisible and an unknown alien symbol shows up on the screen. The unknown alien symbol has numbers counting down from 8 seconds next to it. The huge purple molecule forms around the body. The UFO begins to move through the stomach not in a solid form. It passes right through the skinless, eyeless, finless sharks and other dead creatures. The ship leaves out of the giant squid’s stomach and through the solid mountain.

‘Holy exogorths, how is this ship doing this?’

The UFO quickly clears the large, solid mountain with two seconds left and is back in the deep ocean. The UFO goes visible and takes a solid form. The giant squid makes a loud belching sound.

‘You’re excused!’

The UFO points upwards and accelerates towards the tunnel.

‘Alright, let’s get out of this dark E.T. octopus monster land. This scene just reminded me of a scene in *Star Wars V: The Empire Strikes Back* when the exogorth space slug tried to eat the Millennium Falcon, but ten times more gross.’

A long, tongue tentacle quickly reaches out to grab the UFO again. The yellow tentacle wraps around the rear of the ship’s tail. There is tension as the tongue pulls back tightly with a strong force and slows

down the UFO. The ship measures the force at 100,000 pounds per square inch. More tentacles come from other directions to assist in recapturing the first dinner to leave the squid's stomach. The ship gently increases speed as more pink thrust comes from the wings.

'What is this tug of war? Shoot those tentacles with something!'

The tentacle is torn from the alien squid as the ship quickly propels upwards, just missing being grabbed by the other high-speed tentacles. The ship reaches the tunnel while dragging the 3000-foot long sticky tentacle still wrapped around one side of the tail. The wings move to a forward position and closer to the body. The ship quickly moves through the tunnel passing thousands of hairs. Suddenly a huge animal that resembles a Venus flytrap snaps out from the right wall and completely swallows the ship. The ship doesn't stop and rips the mouth from the walls. The wings morph through the animal's body and continue to provide thrust up the tunnel. The wings are now five feet from the UFO's body. The yellow glowing mouth with thorn teeth continues to squeeze the ship's hull. Jaden feels another bear hug as the animals begin to annoy him.

'Catching a ride huh?'

From a distance, the ship looks like a silver dildo with a glowing, yellow rubber tightly around it. The tentacle on the rear resembles a long piece of toilet paper being dragged on someone's foot.

Jaden sees the mother shark at the end of the tunnel, swimming back and forth over the exit, with an army of sharks nearby.

'Oh shit, big mama shark heard my insensitive mother jokes.'

The UFO quickly exits the tunnel and the seventy-five foot long mother shark times the exiting ship and opens its huge mouth.

'Oh no!! Not again!' Jaden yells as he sees thousands of huge teeth before him.

It swallows the ship and the flytrap animal still gripping the UFO's body. The blunt force and speed of the ship makes the shark propel upwards. A loud impacting sound echoes in all directions. The ship goes right through the shark's stomach and stops in the lower intestines area. The animal cries in pain as it bites down on the still moving tentacle protruding from the shark's mouth. The rubbery tentacle refuses to break away and pink thrust comes out between the shark's teeth. Jaden gets disgusted again as he is inside of another alien life form. He feels like the hand inside of a sock puppet. He can't help but laugh as he and the ship drag three things towards the surface. The wings morph through the shark's body and are twenty-five feet away from the UFO on both sides. The powerful magnetic energy in between the wings is messing with the mother shark's navigation and communicating capabilities in its nose. The army of smaller sharks tries to catch up to its leader, but can't catch

up to the ship's 159 mph speed. They are caught in another tidal wake. The mother shark is wagging its huge tail in an attempt to stop from going up at such a fast speed. The ship fights the direction changing force from the alien tail.

'You not so tough now, huh big mama Jaws?'

The pink light particles from the wings shine brightly against the shark's glowing skin. The ship reaches 315 mph as it quickly moves through the water causing another whirlpool. The Venus flytrap animal dies from the change in pressure as the ship reaches ten miles from the ice surface.

'Goodbye, genetic modified fish from The Simpson's power plant lake.'

The ship slows down as the wings begin to rotate around the entire shark's body. The matrix plasma beams go online. With the wings fifty feet away from each other, they concentrate their beams on an area twenty feet in front of the shark's tail. They penetrate the ice creating a much bigger tunnel, 115 feet wide. A tidal wave of water rushes behind the ship. The loud sounds of a bottle filling up echoes behind the ship. The sudden change in temperature begins to affect the still alive shark. The UFO breaks through the surface in a huge explosion of water. The sunlight shines over the shark's body. The water begins to freeze behind the ship and a hundred foot frozen crystal geyser quickly forms.



The ice quickly freezes the entire tunnel with debris and other smaller sharks trapped inside. The yellow tentacle continues to drag from the shark's teeth. Jupiter is very bright towards the left of the ship. Two small moons can be seen from a distance near Jupiter. The small Sun shines from the right side of Jupiter. Jaden is so happy to see Jupiter and the sunlight shining towards him. A small atmospheric pressure around the moon makes everything frozen around the UFO. The ship vibrates from the shark's final silent groan as the temperature in space drops to -454°F. The vacuum of space sucks the air from the shark. The water begins to boil in the shark's mouth. Oxygenated blood rushes to the dying animal's brain as the body quickly freezes from the outside in as if it was floating through liquid nitrogen. The carbon-based animal is frozen solid and its insides expand around the ship, crushing it tighter.

'Hasta la vista baby!'

A flash of light comes from the animal's mouth and the ship quickly accelerates to 60,000 mph. The shark breaks off into thousands of frozen pieces, along with the flytrap animal and tentacle tongue. A strong feeling of relief and freedom comes over Jaden. The wings move closer and stop three feet from the body as they emit a bright yellow thrust.

'Oh wow, I'm so happy to see this large colorful planet again. What an experience,' he says cheerfully.

Feelings of remorse quickly come over him as he thinks about the shark dying that way, but it quickly leaves him as he feels that's what it deserved. The ship changes direction to leave Jupiter's orbit.

'There goes the Galileo spaceship orbiter. I knew it was around here,' Jaden says while zooming in towards it with a nanoscanner.

Jaden notices it is pointing towards him in the UFO. The antennas are pointing towards Earth's direction. Jaden reads the insides of the orbiter: WELCOME FELLOW ALIENS. WE COME IN PEACE. GREETINGS FROM HUMANS ON EARTH. Then there is a map and diagram of where Earth is. There are records and other things buried deep inside of it.

'What a Catch-22, as soon as these curious aliens find this orbiter and reach Earth, the government will put them underground in Area 51. I see why aliens would want to come to Earth to attack us. Most of the time we encourage it or ask for it.'

Jaden can see the invisible radio waves being transmitted towards Earth. He suddenly remembers when the Orbiter left Earth's orbit in 1991 it couldn't fully open its high-gain antenna and it was forced to use the low-gain antenna. Two sets of nanoscanners get to work and enter the high-gain antenna that looks like a half opened golden umbrella. The nanoscanners quickly find the problem and dispatches nanobots to create artificial microscopic lubricants inside the deployment motors. The high-gain antenna fully opens like a golden umbrella. The nanobots go back

into the nanoscanners and 134 kilobits a second of data transmits from the antenna at the speed of light.

The light engines charge and go online. Jaden smiles as he realizes he changed history and seriously helped MASA with its spaceship orbiter that couldn't properly send pictures and data to Earth.

A much larger map comes on the screen.

'This is radical! I can see millions and millions of stars. This is the Milky Way Galaxy.'

Jaden can zoom in and out to different parts of this large map and notices a line. The ship uses a little extra power to escape Jupiter's powerful gravity forces. He zooms into where he is now.

'The line points to the ship going into the...into the...' he pauses and follows the line.

'The sun?' He asks. Just then, the UFO goes into light warp speed.

The ship races with the invisible radio waves streaming towards Earth. The solid line goes into the sun and then broken lines can be seen heading towards different stars. They end at the center of the galaxy. Jaden is puzzled. He looks around the screen. On the side of the map it reads: GALACTIC BULGE / CENTER MILKY WAY GALAXY 28,459 LIGHT-YEARS."

Then it reads underneath it: 35 EARTH MONTHS.

'Thirty-five months?' Jaden asks, 'That is impossible. That doesn't make any sense. Oh no, I'm going to be older.'

Jaden zooms out and he sees Andromeda Galaxy glowing. He zooms in on Andromeda and sees more solid lines leaving Andromeda's Galactic Bulge center. The lines then point to a planet in the middle of Andromeda's Galaxy. The planet is also spinning around its own star.

The UFO passes the Asteroid Belt and clears it, avoiding hitting anything. The UFO slows down out of warp between Mars and the Asteroid Belt. The nanoscanners are in front of the ship and around it. So many things are on the screens that Jaden is trying to understand. On one of them it says: ANALYZING SOLAR WINDS STRENGTH, ANALYZING OPTIC-WARP POINT OF SUBSPACE ENTRY.

'What the hell is all of this stuff?' He asks.

'Now I'm getting nervous.'

The UFO enters light speed again, but this time at maximum speed. The light engines are at 100%. The bright waves of light the UFO just created are in front of the ship and stay in sight. The ship's speed reaches 185,900 mps as it heads directly towards the glowing sun.

PENTAGON, WASHINGTON, D.C. 2:31 PM

“Sir, the LRSB just came back online eighteen minutes ago. It transmitted a signal from near one of Jupiter’s moons. Photos of the UFO08 just came in from the Galileo Orbiter. The high-gain antenna mysteriously began working. Using the Hubble, we can now see the UFO08’s light and wake traveling at the speed of light with a trajectory course to the sun. It should be passing Earth’s orbit around the sun in nine minutes. It should reach the sun in 16 minutes,” the first officer says.

“That is interesting. Look at that thing move. Maybe it’s going to destroy itself or blow up our sun. Who knows? We have a lot of explaining to do, there is going to be a big investigation from every agency on this planet. The Russians are asking questions. Anyone with a telescope can see this UFO08 flying around lighting up our solar system. We also had to delay the President’s worldwide speech about this event, until we see what this UFO08 is about to do now,” Dudley says.

Jaden stares at the bright yellow sun, not knowing what his fate is. He thinks that maybe landing on the sun is some kind of transporting method.

‘Man, this sucks. I hope I don’t die; I don’t like looking the sun in the eyes. I guess the ship is returning to the planet where it is originally from. Some 2 ½ million light-years away from here. I’ll be dead before getting to the third star from here. This sucks, I’m never going to see my mother, father, girlfriend or friends again. I’m going to die of old age traveling through space,’ he says in a panicked voice.

Jaden looks at his body again through the nanoeye. He sees his body glowing invisible and visible again as it sits in an embryonic cocooned state. His lifeless body is not breathing, but he can see and feel his heart slowly beating.

‘My body looks like I’m in a giant womb, hooked up to an artificial umbilical tentacle.’

The UFO passes Earth’s orbit in a blur of light. The ship starts to shake and rumble like turbulence on an airplane. The sun gets brighter and brighter. There are five nanoscanners hundreds of miles directly in front of the UFO. They begin to spin around in circles very fast creating a colorful rainbow spectrum of light. An arched trail of white light that resembles a quarter moon stretches from the wings to the tail on both sides. The UFO reaches 186,100 mps and more energy and light go into the UFO from in the area. The UFO passes the orbit of Venus. The ship continues on a straight path towards the sun, while just passing Mercury’s orbit.

Jaden's vision through the nanoscanners in front of the ship is unviewable. They spin around creating a very small hole in space. He notices something flashing on the screen: SUBSPACE OPTIC-WARP PATH 98% STABLE.

The vision outside of the UFO is very bright, like high beams in his face. The temperature outside the UFO goes past 7000°F. Jaden goes into shock as he feels he is about to die, the sun getting so close is freaking him out.

The UFO reaches 186,222 mps, its maximum speed. The UFO starts to rotate clockwise and goes semi-invisible. The purple molecule emits exotic infrared energy around the ship. The small quarter-sized circle resembles a hole. The blinding bright sunlight in front of Jaden allows him to focus on the completely dark hole that is slowing down towards the ship. Jaden thinks the hole must be some sort of pathway somewhere.

Everything seems to be happening in slow motion. The ship begins to glow very brightly as if it were using the sun's rays and radiation as an energy source. The UFO reaches a few 100,000 miles from the sun. There is a bright flash of light as the ship goes faster than the speed of light. The spaceship breaks down into quadrillions of microscopic molecules as they quickly move through the nanoscanners' circle. There is another bright explosion from both sides of the Sun's surface as the subspace hole closes. Coronal filaments, loops of mass ejections, magnetic arcades, ultraviolet typhoons and x-ray hurricanes explode from the surface of the sun. Solar flares travel in all directions and towards the solar system.

PENTAGON, WASHINGTON, D.C. 2:49 PM

People are running around the office very fast and phones are constantly ringing.

"Sir, the space station detected a powerful solar flare coming towards Earth in the next 5 minutes," the first officer tells the General.

"Pardon my ignorance, but what is a solar flare?" He asks.

"Sir, a solar flare is high concentrated energy erupting from the sun's surface and goes out through our solar system. Earth's magnetosphere field protects us from regular solar flares. But the powerful ones effect things on Earth like beepers, cell phones and satellite transmissions."

"Thank you soldier, is there any trace of the UFO08 or signal from the LRSB?" The General asks.

"No sir."

"Keep monitoring, I have a conference call with the chief of states and the resident."

The first officer turns on the main television in the large room.

“This is Betty Miller live from BNN worldwide television. Something has happened in upstate New York today. Early this morning there were reports of the U.S. government chasing something in the area. People have been saying it was a UFO, but the government says an experimental jet fighter was stolen and the government was trying to shoot it down. They didn’t say if they were successful or not. The President is giving a public address in a few minutes; we will switch to that live. We will now switch to reporter Jerry Cuttings that is live in Middletown, New York at a local hospital.”

“Thank you Betty, there has been a rush to the emergency room like this one all over the northern states in America. Thousands of elderly people rushed the emergency rooms, as some had heart attacks and trouble breathing. This is due to the loud sounds that were coming from the U.S. Air Force jets flying at sonic speeds over land. The FAA approved flight at these speeds to shoot down an experimental government jet that was stolen. People have been panicking, going crazy and thinking we were being bombed or under attack. Many vets came to the hospital having flashbacks thinking they were still in a war.”

The reporter walks over to someone in a hospital bed.

“Sir, tell me what happened to you today? What did you hear?”

“I fought in the Vietnam War twenty-five years ago. I was driving down Main Street earlier today when everything went to hell. I heard a missile fired and loud booms that can be felt on the ground. I looked up and it was all happening above the clouds. I could see some Air Force jet fighters speeding across the sky as if it was an air show. People started to panic and I my heart started to race. I thought we were under attack. I know the sound of missiles being fired and jet fighters maneuvering in the air. I felt like I was in Vietnam all over again. I saw Vietnam jet fighters firing back. Everything was happening so fast and I couldn’t breathe. I got out of the car and collapsed on the ground. I began to crawl, holding my heart. People started to ask me if I was okay. I looked up at them and they looked like those Vietnamese bastards,” the grey-haired man says.

“Okay sir, I hope you feel better thank you for your time,” he says while pulling the microphone away.

The Vietnam vet grabs the microphone back. The startled reporter looks at the man with a look of confusion. Their eyes lock as a cold chill moves down the reporter’s back. The cameraman takes his eye from the eyepiece and looks at the reporter.

“I’m not finished talking,” the man says in an eerie voice. He continues, “I fought for this country twenty-five years ago and I can’t even get normal medical coverage! I can’t get a job, can’t get any respect and nobody cares about vets!”

The reporter takes back his microphone and walks away from the angry Vietnam vet, sitting by himself on a hospital bed.

“This is Jerry Cuttings, reporting live from Middletown, New York.”

“Thank you Jerry, seems like you made a new friend at the hospital. We now go live to Stillwater, New York where reporter Dennis Matthews is standing live in front of the alleged suspect’s house,” the news anchor says.

“Thank you Betty. Early this morning, government officials, men in white clothes, MASA and the FBI have been questioning a family outside this small town. It has been a complete circus here as the Marino family has been questioned throughout the day. The police and government officials are looking for this 19-year-old male named Jaden Marino for questioning about a missing government experimental aircraft missing early this morning. Here is a video earlier of the mother, Mrs. Marino being driven away in a black government truck,” Dennis says.

“Mrs. Marino do you know where your son is, or why you’re being asked to go with these men?”

“I don’t know where my son is, I don’t know what’s going on. Jaden come back home if you hear this,” Mrs. Marino yells while looking confused and being escorted away into a black SUV.

“That was earlier today, we have Major Robinson coming out of the house now. Major, can you tell us, how a 19-year-old teenager was able to steal a top-secret government experimental plane?” he asks in front of the other news reporting shoving their microphones into his face and flashing their cameras.

He stops and looks into the camera with a dead serious look. He takes a deep breath. Sgt. Peters stands behind the Major. Cameras continue to flash like a movie star is present. There is complete silence as Robinson clears his throat.

“I don’t know how he was able to steal a government’s aircraft at the time. Teenagers steal trains, cars, boats and airplanes all the time these days. He is wanted for questioning. It’s possible he might know the person who did it or could have had help,” he says as he looks at the news reporter in the eyes and not the camera.

“People in the area are saying there was a UFO involved and there are many witnesses,” the news reporter says.

“There was no UFO involved, our new experimental jets might look like a lot of things, but there was no UFO involved here today,” Robinson says.

“Why was the Air Force given clearance to break the sound barrier over residential land? That is illegal over residential land. Didn’t they know that would cause massive panics in the area?”

“That’s something you’ll have to ask the FAA and Pentagon. I don’t have time for anymore questions,” he pauses.

Major Robinson looks directly into the camera, “This teenager’s name is Jaden Marino. He is 5’9” 160 lbs, fair skin with blue eyes and curly hair. He is bi-racial and was last seen wearing a black and blue NY Giants jacket, blue jeans, and black Jordan sneakers. He is wanted in connection to this investigation. If anyone sees him, they should report him to their local police or FBI ASAP at 1-800-555-5FBI.”

Major Robinson walks away and Peters follows. They all yell out questions simultaneous.

“Okay sir. Well what now?” Peters asks

They walk into a black government truck and news cameras continue flashing pictures. They quickly drive off while other military SUV’s follow.

“Thank you, Dennis. This is BNN news and we have full coverage from today’s strange events. There were reports of three dozen Air Force jets and numerous missiles crashing and exploding around the area of lower Manhattan. Many just landed in the water without exploding. Witnesses report aircraft falling from the sky like rain by the Statue of Liberty today. The low clouds camouflaged the activities of what was happening above. There were dozens of military boats pulling jet fighters from the water all afternoon.”

“Four jets crashed into Staten Island, one hitting a house and another landing on a supermarket. There were reports of serious injuries there. Missiles landed in Bayonne destroying a business and a row of stores. Three aircraft crashed into different parts of west Brooklyn. One F-16 landed on a business building on 39th Street in Sunset Park, destroying a few back offices. Another one landed on the elevated BQE Expressway. The last one landed in a park off 76th Street in Bayridge. The rest crashed into the East River and Hudson River. Witnesses say the air fighters were falling towards the ground as if they ran out of gas. Other witnesses reported there was gunfire and missiles fired above the clouds. There were also reports of power going out in cars, streetlights and homes for hours in this area. There were many more complaints of loud booming sounds from New Jersey to Chicago. From Chicago to California a very loud explosion sound spread south and north of Interstate 80. People along this highway reported seeing tornados forming from the sky and

clouds changing direction from east to west. An undetermined number of people were reported having ringing in their ears. North Korea has suspected the United States of shooting something into its airspace. They are in full tactical alert and are in defense mode.”

Peters and Robinson sit in the back of the black government SUV talking as they are driven towards a military airport.

“The Pentagon says the UFO08 flew out to Jupiter at the speed of light and then it flew right into the sun destroying itself. Isn’t that crazy sir?” Peters asks Robinson.

Robinson shakes his head and smokes a cigar.

“I wish I had a Cuban cigar, nothing like the taste of a Cuban cigar. They used to let us smoke Cuban cigars at Guantanamo Bay when I was in charge down there years ago. It was so nice playing by your own rules,” Robinson says while he zones out

Peters continue talking about the UFO incident in the background. Robinson pulls out a lighter and lights a cigar. He opens his window next to him. The smoky haze of smoke flies out the window as he exhales. Major Robinson is day dreaming back to when he was sitting on the beach, with his sandals on, giving out orders smoking his Cuban cigars. He thinks about the taste of those cigars compared to the Dominican cigars he is smoking now. Robinson continues to mumble to himself smoking his cigar.

“...the speed of light, sir. This isn’t fiction, or *Star Trek* or *Star Wars*; this is a real ship traveling around our solar system at that speed....” Peters continues to talk to himself.

“...the sand was so white, I was working, but I was on vacation...” Robinson says in a mumbling voice zoned out.

“If that kid is still alive, he would be the fastest flying human in the world!” Peters yells.

“... I want to retire on that beach, Peters...”

Peters is so excited, he doesn’t notice Robinson not listening to him.

Robinson continues with eyes in a daze, “I wish we could invade Cuba and kick out the dictators. Why can’t we put in a leader we choose, like we did for Haiti last year? America could greatly profit from the Cuban economy, the tax alone on those cigars....”

“The World Wide Web has pictures of the UFO and people are talking about it in chat rooms. Sir, are you listening to me?” Peters asks in a louder tone.

“Peters! What are you talking about? World Wide Web?” The Major asks.

“The Internet sir, it’s getting more popular every year. It’s going to be the new way of people communicating in the coming years.”

"I heard about that, I don't believe it's going to amount to anything. You're wasting your time investing your paychecks in Yahoo and AOL stock. What the hell is a Yahoo? The government would control all of that in the future and control what is on the Internet."

"I don't know sir; private sectors are jumping to get online. I think Yahoo has a catchy name."

"That damn UFO ruined my promotion. We have a lot of explaining to do this evening Peters."

"I know sir, we can just tell the truth. We did our job as best we could."

Peters turn on the medium-sized TV to BNN.

"I can't believe military trucks have satellite TV in them. This is unbelievable."

"Yeah it is, but soon every citizen will have something like this in their cars and trucks. I wish the government would come out with something then keep it for themselves. Citizens always get our past down technology. Peters! Turn that up."

The television has scrambled signals as trees block the satellite's signal. Peters increases the volume by using a remote control. Robinson taps his cigar on the top of the open window. The ashes blow into the wind with the white smoke. The picture then comes in clear and the volume is very loud. Peters quickly turns it down as Robinson gives him a serious look. He then focuses on the 10-inch television screen behind the driver's armrest.

"... twelve people died, because of today's freak events," the news anchor pauses and listens to her earpiece.

"We will be going live in just two minutes, ladies and gentlemen for the President's speech in Washington. We now have Sandra live in Ballston Spa, New York, as she has the suspect Jaden's best friend in front of her. Sandra you're live," anchorwoman Betty says.

A few seconds goes by and Sandra talks into the camera.

"We are in front of a local autobody shop. I have suspect terrorist's best friend James White in front of me. Mr. White is your friend a terrorist and do you know where he is?"

James is a chubby, Caucasian, teenage male that is wearing a backwards NY Jets football hat. He has a few freckles on his face and chubby cheeks. He stands at 5'8", 215 lbs and has brown eyes. He talks into the camera with a smile on his face while the reporter puts the microphone under his mouth.

"My friend is no terrorist. He is nothing more than a pretty boy geek. I've been his best friend for the past ten years. Jaden where you at man? Stop hiding from the police and turn yourself in and clear your name," the teenager yells while smiling into the camera.

Another teenager walks up and yells into the camera, “Jaden is sticking it to the man! Fight the power Jaden. Don’t give up! I’ll be at the pizza shop later playing *Street Fighter Hyper* edition!”

The teenager quickly runs away. The news reporter is caught off guard and looks startled.

James has a smile on his face as Sandra puts the microphone to her mouth.

“Do you believe what the government is saying that he stole or helped steal a government experimental plane?” She asks.

“No way! He can barely drive good, he doesn’t know how to fly a plane; he can barely beat me in *Flight Simulator*, *Doom 2* or *Mortal Kombat 2* arcade games. Come to think about it, I remember him telling me yesterday or the day before that he found a UFO....”

“Which day was it?” She asks.

“I have no idea, I was high at the time, I thought he was messing with me. That California ganja had me on cloud nine. I thought I was dreaming when he was telling me all that stuff over the phone.”

“Is there anything you want to tell your friend?”

James looks into the camera, “Jaden stop hiding out wherever you are, before you fall behind in your school work again. The government towed your car and people are looking for you. Your mother and father are worried sick. Your girlfriend Amy is also looking for you...”

An older hippy looking man runs up to the news reporter and James. He is out of breath and breathing hard. He sticks his head between them and grabs the microphone.

“The government is grabbing up dozens of people, man. Some kind of conspiracy is happening. They grabbing up anyone who saw the UFO. They tried to put me in a van, but I ran and jumped in my Jeep. I took the back roads, but I knew they were still somehow following me...” the hippy man says while his white smoke breath reflects against the bright lights of the camera.

Black vans with flashing lights in the fenders approach from each direction on the small business street.

“Shit! Here they come! The Area 51 pigs! Save yourself!”

The out of breath man runs and the cameraman follows him running down the street. James sees unmarked police vans coming down the streets, tosses his bags of weed on the ground under the news reporter’s feet, and takes a few steps back. The video is cut and back at the studio news anchorwoman Betty is looking into the camera with a serious face.

“We somehow lost that video feed. That was very interesting information we just received. Something odd is really happening all around New York today. We are going live to Washington, D.C., where

President Clifford is giving a live speech to the entire world about today's events."

The BNN news channel switches to the President of the United States in Washington, D.C. The small auditorium is full of news reporters, cameras and bright lights.

"Good evening fellow Americans. Today was a day of long events. Today we were under attack by an unknown terrorist group. They stole a top-secret government plane and tried to use it against us. He or she was flying loose over New York and across the United States. We are not going to stand by while fellow Americans die and get hurt, due to a group of selfish people that don't like what we stand for. It could have been an inside job, but a full investigation is on the way. I gave the Air Force permission to fly at sonic speeds today to take out this threat..."

People around the country are glued to their television screens.

"... I know there were thousands of Americans that didn't know what was going on and are suffering headaches and ringing ears. However, we had to act fast. The top-secret plane was destroyed and we are looking for the few involved. The threat level has been raised and the threat has been taken out. Are there any questions?" President Clifford asks.

All the news reporters raise their hands at once. The President points at a reporter.

"Where is local news reporter Angela Clarke? Angela and her cameraman were investigating where this incident started early this morning in Stillwater, New York. Now they and a bunch of other people disappeared without a trace, where are they?" The older news reporter asks.

The President drinks some water and speaks, "I don't know of any people missing, and I don't know anything about the whereabouts of Angela Clarke. Maybe you should fill out a missing person report for her and those missing people in 24 hours," he chuckles.

"We have proof the government is rounding citizens up in black vans," the reporter shouts.

"Next question," the President shouts.

The President points at the next reporter.

"How is a local teenager, Jaden Marino, involved in this missing government top-secret plane? He, his friends and family don't have any

connections to a terrorist organization. Is he considered a terrorist also?" A news reporter asks.

"I believe he was involved with an unknown terrorist group. Teenagers in college join many organizations and groups. This could have been one of them. You never know who might be crazy or a terrorist these days. There is also a chance he died in the plane crash when we shot down the stolen plane. If anyone sees him, turn him in. Next question," the President says with a straight face.

A chubby, young, white man with glasses stands up, with photos in his hands.

"Good evening President, I'm Michael Morris. I have proof that there was no governmental experimental plane involved and there were no terrorists involved. That this experimental plane was actually a UFO you were trying to shoot down. This has cover-up written all over it. Here are the photos of this UFO being chased by the Air Force. There are also witnesses that saw this alien plane being fired at."

The room is filled with people mumbling to themselves and flashing photos at Michael Morris. The President chuckles.

"Mr. Michael Morris, let me see those photos."

A secret service man grabs the photos and takes them to the President on the podium.

"There's no such thing as UFOs?" Mr. Morris asks in a laughing voice.

"Where did you make these photos up at?" The President asks.

"I didn't make them up; they were photographed by a photographer in upstate New York, outside of Stillwater."

"I can see the Air Force jets in the background, but that image looks like something that was made up. There are no such things as UFO's. If there are witnesses that saw this UFO, they should call the FBI and tell them what they saw. They would be more than happy to investigate these findings. Next question."

"I also have witnesses in Europe that reported seeing a UFO through their telescope flying at the speed of light in space..." he is interrupted by the President.

"Next question!" He yells, and then continues, "Does anyone have a question that doesn't involve accusations of an imaginary UFO flying around?"

"Yes, you!"

Peters turns off the television as they reach a checkpoint to get into the military airport.

"That was crazy," he says.

“That Michael Morris has always been a troublemaker. He put together this cover-up very fast. I’m sure him and his photos won’t be making it out of the White House tonight,” Major Robinson says.

“Sir, I’ve been to Area 51 recently in Nevada and went into some restricted areas over the years. I saw some things that were very puzzling. Did we actually land on the moon in 1969?” Peters asks.

Robinson looks up at the driver, suddenly looking up in his rearview mirror at him.

“Sergeant Peters, certain questions should never be brought up. If you see something puzzling it is good to keep it to yourself and use your imagination.”

The SUV stops 100 feet away from a military helicopter sitting by itself. The driver runs and opens the door for the Major. They get out of the vehicle and begin walking towards the helicopter. The driver walks in front of them.

“We don’t need an escort soldier,” Robinson says.

“Yes, sir.”

The driver walks back towards the SUV. Robinson and Peters walks together.

“I can tell you my logical opinion on the moon landing. The Russians were ahead of us in the late 1950’s in all aspects of space and rockets. We were trying to play catch up during the entire sixties. Here is a simple concept, if the Russians didn’t land a man on the moon or didn’t bother trying, I don’t think anyone made it to the moon,” Robinson says.

“That concept always puzzled me in the back of my mind. I didn’t want to think the possibilities were true. I remember reading the Russians never tried because they gave any human making it to the moon in the sixties, a 0.017% chance. One reason was the sun’s strong cosmic radiation was too powerful outside of Earth’s magnetosphere. Spacesuits would never be able to withstand that direct radiation on the moon. The flag waving as if there was an atmosphere present and perfect video footage behind huge spacesuits always bothered me over the years,” Peters says while they walk up to the helicopter and open the door.

They climb inside and sit down.

“You are a smart man, Peters,” he says with a smile on his face.

There is silence as the pilot walks towards the helicopter from a distance.

“My theory, Peters is, if you can’t beat them, make up something to prove that you did beat them. It’s all about having a strong hold on space and image is everything. America needed a confidence boost, since we failed to put the first man and first woman into space. We only launched two monkeys in 1959 and I’m sure the U.S. government wasn’t going to just have that on record. The Russians were the first to launch a rocket

into the moon in 1959. Radio telescopes from several countries backed and verified the impact on the moon. What other country verified the United States landing on the moon in 1969?" Robinson asks.

"None. That was where I read about the 0.017%. The instruments on that rocket to the moon in 1959 helped the Russian scientists determine it wasn't possible for them or anyone to land on the moon during that time. If it was possible, they would have done it already and I'm sure it would have been done in the early 60's," Peters responds excitedly.

"Exactly! Logically, if we landed on the moon in 1969, we would have landed on Mars in the 80's and today we would be landing somewhere around Jupiter's moons. The U.S. can barely go into space now without a disaster. I heard from a strong source, our next attempt to land on the moon would be around 2025. We are still developing powerful enough rockets to make it there and back safely and we are in 1996. We are developing nano-fiber materials with the Russians that can keep harmful cosmic radiation from penetrating spacesuits. Five hundred years from now humans are going to look back at the 1969 moon landing and ask how technology for the United States got worse. They had six flawless trips to the moon with primitive technology without anything going wrong. Then the next few decades, dozens of accidents and disasters just going into orbit..." Robinson stops himself to chuckle. The chuckle turns into a laugh as Peters joins in.

He coughs and clears his throat and continues with a smile, "That's like scoring A's on six advanced calculus tests then getting F's on algebra and B's in basic math. Then it takes you another fifty-six years to restudy and to attempt to get another A in advanced calculus."

"Wow. That is an amazing metaphor and concept, sir. If this were high school, any logical teacher or principal would have thought the student cheated. It boggles the mind how gullible Americans can still be twenty-seven years later. I was well convinced though for years. I do agree with you that humans in the future would look back and eventually figure it out. It is mind boggling that eighty-nine percent of Americans believe we landed on the moon while over seventy percent of people in the U.K. and Asia think the opposite."

"You gotta love the American government, with its secrets and techniques for covering up things and wanting to stay a super power in the world," Robinson says.

"You know something Major, the Russians were so smart, they knew it wasn't realistic putting a man on the moon so they put their energy into beating us again by putting the first space station into space in 1971."

"My father was heavily into the space race in the sixties. He couldn't figure out how NASA had a big fiery accident with the space program in 1968, and then the next year they had a flawless landing on the moon. He

also used to talk about MASA scientists going to Antarctica to find meteors that landed from space in 1967. I miss my dad with his theories.... My dad used to say instead of two sides competing against each other, working together will take you twice as far,” Robinson says.

“The Cold War was not about working together. It’s interesting how the United States only landed on the moon when President Nixon was in office.....”

The pilot opens the door.

“Hello sirs!” He yells while saluting. Robinson and Peters salute back.

There is silence as the pilot puts on his headphones with a microphone.

There is silence until the pilot starts to talk into the radio for clearance to take off. Peters whispers to Robinson, “I think the moon landing video should have been impeached along with Nixon.”

They burst out laughing and Robinson’s face turns red as he coughs very loudly.

A minute passes by and they fasten their seat belts. The helicopter blades begin to slowly rotate.

Robinson and Peters put thick headphones over their ears.

“Just keep cool and tell the truth as to what happened when in Washington!” Robinson yells over the helicopter’s engine.

“OKAY SIR!”

The helicopter blades increase speed and make more noise. The helicopter takes off into the air.

“DO YOU THINK THE KID JADEN SURVIVED ALL OF THIS? DO YOU THINK HE IS STILL ALIVE SIR?”

“I DON’T THINK ANY HUMAN BEING CAN SURVIVE ALL THESE ORDEALS AND ESPECIALLY SURVIVE FLYING INTO THE SUN. THE SHIP IS DESTROYED AND SO IS HE!”

“I FEEL BAD FOR HIS PARENTS! THAT WAS THEIR SECOND SON THAT THEY LOST!” Peters continues, “I THINK THERE’S A CHANCE HE AND THE UFO08 CAN STILL BE ALIVE. THAT SHIP WAS VERY ADVANCED. IT’S PROBABLY TRAVELING THROUGH SPACE RIGHT NOW SOMEWHERE!” Peters yells.

“THAT’S IMPOSSIBLE!”

“I BET YOU \$100 IN THE NEXT COUPLE OF YEARS, WE WILL GET A SIGNAL FROM THE LRSB!” Peters yells.

“YOU GOT YOURSELF A BET, YOUNG SCI-FI, STAR TREK, AND STAR WARS FAN. I’LL GIVE YOU TILL THE YEAR 2000 THAT THERE WON’T BE A SIGNAL FROM THE LRSB!” Robinson yells while grinning.

They shake hands while looking into each other's eyes while smiling.

Jaden's mind has several flashbacks

Everything is blurry, Jaden suddenly sees himself sitting in his classroom from elementary school. He is drawing something on paper, while his teacher is teaching basic math.

'I remember this and this teacher. That's Miss Hentinks! I'm in the third grade now, drawing the space shuttle Challenger. This must be around 1986.'

The teacher walked over to Jaden, "Why are you drawing, in my math class? Does this look like art class to you?" The class turned around and looked at Jaden.

"Sorry Miss Hentinks I wish I could have saved them. I did not want them to die. I don't like for people to get hurt or die. I want to be an astronaut one day."

A kid in the back of the room made a comment, "Jaden wants to be a superhero space monkey."

The entire class laughed. The bell rings and the teacher tells the class about the homework assignment, while young Jaden continued drawing.

"Space monkey, space monkey," the buck-toothed kid in the back of the room continues to shout. The bell sound fades away, so does the images he remembered.

A new image is forming, looking blurry and unclear. He hears a faint sound that he remembers that is getting louder and louder.

"Happy birthday to you, happy birthday dear Jaden happy birthday to you."

An image appeared and Jaden sees his family and friends around him. He sees his birthday cake he remembers that it said Jaden 13 on top of it. His older brother is at his side cheering for him.

"Make a wish, little brother!" Douglas yelled.

Jaden smiled and was so happy. He blew out the candles. His father, mother, aunts and his friend James are around him. He missed a candle, so Jaden blows harder.

'I remember wishing my family stayed together that year. I believe this was January 14, 1990. There was so much fighting between my parents that year. I miss my older brother so much.'

"Thirteen punches! Thirteen punches for Jaden!" Jaden's best friend James yelled. James a chubby, white boy that has cake all over his mouth, punched Jaden's arm thirteen times.

"Come on James, we are getting too old for the thirteen punches thing," Jaden said.

"Yeah, but I figured we could keep doing this until we both have girlfriends or married," James said.

James ran towards the backyard in the house with more cake in his hand. Jaden's five years older brother Douglas walked over to him. Douglas a brown-eyed, ladies man with a smooth voice, placed his arm around Jaden. Douglas wore an Aerosmith sweater, winter coat and blue jeans.

"You know little brother you're getting older and older each year. You're going to have to look after mom soon, with pop working so much. How's your karate class going?" He asked.

"They are going well I'm going to make brown belt by next year. What do you mean; I'm going to have to look over mom soon?"

"I wanted to tell you first," he paused and swallowed, "Listen younger brother, I'm going to joining the Marines when I turn 18 in June. I didn't tell mom and dad yet."

Light blue-eyed Jaden looked down at his ice cream birthday cake melting.

"The Marines? Why? Why can't you just go to college? I don't want you to go into the Marines," teary-eyed Jaden said.

"Don't worry Jaden, I'll be back twice a year and I'll have my own money for college. You know mom and dad are going through a financial situation now. I'll definitely be back to take you to your first strip club when you turn 18."

"Strip club? What's in there?"

"When you're 18, you'll know all about it."

"I don't want you go Douglas," young Jaden said.

"You'll be okay, I want the chance to explore the world and do something with my life," Douglas said.

Douglas walked to the backyard, by the apple tree while Jaden followed. Douglas pulled out a pack of cigarettes, and lights one.

"Douglas, why do you smoke cigarettes?"

"They relax me when I'm stressed and it's something I'm used to. They are not for you though. Don't smoke these, they are bad for you kid," Douglas said.

Jaden admired the white smoke floating away into the air. Jaden hugged his older brother and looked him in the eyes.

"If I had your eyes Jaden, the women would be all over me."

"What's so good about blue eyes?"

"It's something that women love and it creates a nice look for you. Us being bi-racial it's also not that common. You got pop's eyes, and I got mom's eyes."

Douglas took another pull of the cigarette and 4'8" Jaden hugged him quickly.

Douglas coughed up the smoke. "What are you doing little man?"

"Don't go Douglas; I don't want you to join the military. Please don't go, don't go, please don't go," Jaden said as the vision fades away into stars.

The UFO's and Jaden's molecules are traveling faster than light through subspace. Jaden is looking through a nanoscanner as it passes through a never-ending tunnel covered in light particles. He sees thousands of stars passing by all around him in different sizes. Everything is inverted like a negative filmstrip that is not developed. Then he sees many different inverted colors. It is very quiet as Jaden is flying through sub-space. The stars have a purple bright grey color.

His mind has another flashback.

FEBRUARY 10, 1995 FRIDAY
ASTRONOMY 101 CLASS (FIRST WEEK)

"...astronomy goes way back to ancient times and became famous with the Egyptians. This was also a time where astronomy was also used in religion and used to explain the stars. It was used to help guide people from one location to another by using locations of the stars..."

'I remember this class; this is when that crazy good looking girl was hitting on me. She had long black hair, hazel eyes and a pretty smile.'

Jaden sat in the back of the lecture hall, while he listened to the professor. There is an attractive girl sitting next to him, looking at him and smiling. She passed him a note. Jaden read it: "Hey cutie, what are your parents? My mom is white and my father is black. I like your eyes. Are you single? Write back, I'm Claudine," the note read.

He turned to his left and looked at the attractive bi-racial female, smiling at him. Jaden replied and wrote on the same note.

"...We will be covering different areas of astronomy... Procession of the equinoxes is the gradual shift in the orientation of Earth's axis of rotation..." the professor continued.

Jaden whispered, "What is this, high school, with the note passing? I'm dating someone now and my parents are the opposite of your parents. I'm Jaden."

"Hey, Jaden, nice to meet you. That is good, that you don't have a girlfriend yet. I usually don't come on to men, but I've been watching

you all week and I'm attracted to bi-racial men," Claudine whispered with her hand over her mouth.

"Well, I'm sure you will find another mixed man, somewhere on this community college campus, but I'm spoken for already," Jaden said with his hand over his mouth.

"...Einstein's theory of relativity states mass-energy equivalence $E=mc^2$..." the professor continued to talk.

"There aren't many mixed men on campus and there aren't many good looking men that look as good as you. I think we would have good chemistry together," she said with a huge smile.

"How would you know we would have good chemistry together? You barely know me. I also told you, I'm spoken for already."

"...Einstein's theory of special relativity states that an object cannot travel faster than light in a vacuum, unless the object had special shielding around it..."

"Yes, you are right, I barely know you. But I can sense good quality and chemistry in a man when I see it. If she isn't your girlfriend then you aren't legally off the market yet. Besides, I think we can make a nice baby together, if we got together. Our baby will come out with question mark features. My eyes, your eyes or our parents' eyes. A spin on the chromosomes wheel of fortune..."

Jaden's eyebrows drifted higher, as he was amazed with her crazy talk.

"...we could connect emotionally and physically on different levels, since we both understand each other from being bi-racial. I feel we are soul mates. Our parents would accept us as being together..."

The professor walked up the stairs in the lecture hall towards the back.

"...Black holes are..."

Jaden interrupted her, "Is this what you do with your parents' money? Find the most attractive bi-racial man in college and calculate what a baby would look like with him. Then plan your future with him, before you know him?" he asked.

"My parents are loaded. I can have whatever I want. The way your eyes and face expression look now is such a turn on right now..."

"Are you on high on something? I think you need to find yourself another bi-racial experiment and you two should go on Jerry Springer."

The professor approached between them and he focused on Jaden. The entire class turned their heads to watch.

"Excuse me young man, what is your name?" Dr. Samuels asked.

"I'm Jaden Marino."

"I see you are having a private conversation in my lecture hall, I'm assuming you know everything I'm talking about," the professor said.

"I know most of it, doctor," Jaden replied.

"What is the galactic bulge and where is it?" He asked with his arms folded.

"The galactic bulge is located in the center of our Milky Way Galaxy. Our entire galaxy, including our solar system spins around this center. Every galaxy has a galactic bulge. It is made out of trillions of suns and is 80,000 light-years in diameter..."

Jaden is interrupted and the professor tried to quickly ask a question he might not know.

"What will happen to you if you fall into a black hole and what is a black hole mostly made out of?"

"If you fall into it, the event horizon, which is the area outside the black hole, will pull you in and rip you apart. The singularity is where you would be crushed down into the size of an atom. From what we know, it is made out of a collapsed star. It contains gravitational energy, dark matter and dark energy."

"Very good, Mr. Marino, I see you know something, everything was correct except the dark matter and dark energy, save the science fiction for Star Trek. There is no evidence that is what black holes are made of..."

"But how do you know or how can we know for sure it doesn't?" Jaden asked while Claudine looked forward with a smile on her face.

"Son, my lectures are about proven science, astronomy and scientific facts in space. You can watch Voyager if you want to learn science fiction. My lecture hall is not a place to rap to your neighbor for her digits. You can do that outside of my lecture classes. Now that we have spent a few minutes on Mr. Marino, can everyone please turn to page 30 in your textbooks..."

The professor walked away and Claudine passed Jaden another note. It read "I'm impressed, Bi-Einstein. We are having a party off campus next Sunday, you should come by. We are going to have a lot of liquor and bring a friend."

There is a heart at the bottom of it.

FEBRUARY 20, 1995 MONDAY
ASTRONOMY 101 CLASS

Jaden remembers this day the following week. He went to that house party with James, the day before. The psycho Claudine girl got him drunk and was trying to rape him in the bathroom. He could never remember a female so aggressive towards him.

The professor gave another lecture in class, "...22% of the galaxy has been known to be made of dark matter and 74% is thought to consist of dark energy. It is very hard to detect, but we know it is out there. It is what scientists believe holds galaxies together. There is more dark energy and matter in our galaxy than other nearby galaxies. They are smaller than an atom and they pass through solar systems and us humans as I speak..."

Jaden had his right hand on the side of his head, holding his head up with sunglasses on. It looked as if he was reading his astronomy book, but he was dozing off. He was dreaming about the party he was at the night before, where he was trashed. The memory fades away.

AUGUST 19, 1995 SATURDAY 1:45 AM

Jaden and his father Tony stand in their backyard taking turns looking through the telescope. Tony has salt and pepper hair on his head and face. His father stands at 5'8" 175 lbs with blue eyes and a full beard. Tony is full-blooded Italian, is in his mid-40's, and has glasses on. They both drank a beer and talked to each other.

"I'm proud son, that you had a good first semester in college. You graduating early from high school was a good idea," Tony said.

"Well thanks to you pops, you being the principal and all. The good grades and the few strings you pulled really helped out a lot," Jaden said.

"No Jaden, you did that all on your own son. You studied hard and graduated with the required credits."

"Well, thanks for putting the paper work through for me and getting me into this community college so fast. I kind of miss you having my back in school. I enjoyed being the principal's son throughout high school," Jaden said while he looked through the telescope.

"I enjoyed being there for you while you were in high school. So what are you going to do now with your life son? Where do you see yourself in ten years?"

"Well I hope to transfer to a four year Ivy League college. I would still like to get a physical science degree, then a master's in it. I want to try to pass the MASA's physical examination. If I can't get into MASA, then I'll settle for being a commercial pilot. I love flying things."

"Sounds like a plan son. I'm proud of you, in whatever you do. I'm glad I was able to be here for you while you were growing up. It is very tough being married and raising a family these days. My personal advice would be to get married in your late thirties and have children in your mid-forties. Be very sure before you get married or have any children. Be with the person for at least ten years before you think about having children with them. Women and men change over time, people grow into

different people. They evolve into different people over time; find out what the female could grow into as early as possible. Spouses growing away from each other is the biggest problem in marriages these days. Divorce is much higher than it used to be and marriage just isn't the same anymore."

"I understand, pops. You've been telling me this for the past ten years...."

"I have to drill this into your head, because most teenagers make their life decisions around your age. Between seventeen and twenty-five are the years most men and women make their decisions for the rest of their life. Many young men and women around these ages think they know everything and ruin or change their lives forever. Men going to jail and getting criminal records for life, women getting pregnant at an early age, women being with the wrong man at an early age, getting on drugs, ruining their credit and joining the military are the biggest mistakes young people make during these years...."

His father opened another beer and guzzled it down. He started to talk with a slight slur in his speech.

"...the military stole my son from me. They used him as an infantry marine test dummy. He wasn't fully ready mentally to be on the front lines during the Gulf War. He was so eager to serve his country, to do things on his own and not listen to me. He could have joined the National Guard, non-infantry, Air Force or the navy to serve his country safely. He didn't think we would go to war the following year. I told him the United States is in some kind of war every ten years. We are always in the world's business; you never know when troops are going to be deployed..."

Jaden looked at his father with watery eyes. The moon shined brightly over them.

"You did your best pops. Douglas made his own decision for his life. It isn't your fault."

"I don't know what I'm going to do if I lose another son."

"You aren't going to lose me pop. I'll be here for you."

"Just remember, the people who run this country are very arrogant, money and power hungry. They want to eventually control us like animals. Our history proves this, cover-ups and conspiracies is the American government's way. They betrayed Douglas and covered up his death. Eventually they will betray you, son, watch your back. If all else fails, save yourself and the people you care about."

"Pop, what are you talking about? You aren't making any sense. Pop, I think you are having too much to drink," Jaden said while he took the beer from his father's hand and placed it near the telescope.

"I'm not drinking too much, I'm fine. Give me that beer back."

“Let’s talk about something else, then. You were beginning to sound like those freedom of speech protestors.”

“Mark my words, we are going to be in another senseless war in the next ten years. We need another country to bully. Wasting trillions on invading another country when we can’t even get our own country in good shape. Those trillions we spend on wars, that money could have been used on universal health care, giving every citizen a proper education and making our country stronger. You don’t see China, Canada and Australia invading other countries...”

“Dad, dad dad! Let’s talk about something else...”

“...No, I’m going to finish this last point about this country. Republicans are like religious backward thinkers fueled by money for the rich. They do the opposite of what democrats do. Democrats are like scientists and forward thinkers of change for poor and middle class. Independents are like traitors always choosing different sides. Republicans think in a collective, like the Borg in Star Trek. Special interest groups feed their pockets telling them how to think. The political system is a joke with both sides, mostly opposing each other...”

Tony’s blood alcohol level passed .12. Jaden attempts to get his father out of his long politician discussions.

“Dad, what did you think of Amy last month when you met her at the BBQ?” Jaden asked.

“Your girlfriend? She’s okay, for now. I don’t think she is the one for you though,” Tony said.

“Why not, what do you mean? You don’t like her?”

“She is a good; good for now girlfriend. I don’t see you being married to her. I can sense she is going to change in the future.”

“How can you sense this?”

“She isn’t sure of herself. She tried very hard to impress us, as if she was trying to hide something. She was putting up a front, that wasn’t her true self. She is one of those people that would change ten years from now and you two would end up hating each other. Whatever you do, don’t get this girl pregnant. I’m sure you will find your soul mate down the road. You would know deep down if she is the one for you.”

“I know deep down now, that Amy is the one for me.”

“Son, search your feelings...”

Jaden walked over to his father and placed his hand on his shoulder.

“You sound like Yoda from Star Wars now. Pop, I love Amy and I can picture myself being married to her down the road. I’m going to stay with her, no matter what happens, just like you and mom.”

“You young people, with your falling in love with each other so fast. You are eighteen-years-old Jaden; you have the rest of your life ahead of you, why are you worrying about being in love so soon and thinking about marriage at such a young age?”

The question echoes in Jaden's memory. The images go black and fade away.

FEBRUARY 13, 1996 11:40 PM

Jaden drove home late from school after studying in the library. It was a cold, rainy, foggy night. He was on a road driving towards his home two miles away. There weren't any cars on the road. Jaden saw something glowing and floating in the air towards his right.

"What the hell is that?"

Suddenly a bright light shined from it towards Jaden's car. He pulled over quickly on a snow embankment. His tires briefly glided on the ice and the driver's door sprung open. He walked a few feet away from the car that is still running with the headlights on. Cold smoke left his mouth. The light quickly disappeared and the shiny object levitated in the air pointing towards him. Jaden felt as if the object read his mind and scanned his thoughts. The object quickly goes into the nearby field. He ran onto the private property. The images fast-forward and skip to him touching the UFO's wet outside. Static electricity came from the body of the ship to Jaden's fingers. He is hypnotized by its beauty and silver bluish color. The vision faded away.

Twenty minutes later Jaden went home and called James on the phone.

"James, James wake up," Jaden whispered on the phone.

"What? What? It's 12:05 AM."

"I found something; I think it is a UFO or something."

"Come on man, a UFO? You been eating those weed cookies again late at night? I remember the last time you ate too much of one of them. Tell Amy's friends to stop making them so potent and go by the recipe. You tripping out again and it's twelve in the morning. I'm still high from earlier and I have to wake up in six hours."

"I'm telling you man, I'm not eating any weed cookies. I saw something amazing. Then I saw government vehicles in the area when I was driving home. I'm telling you man, I saw something real. I'll tell you later, I forgot these phones could be being monitored."

"Yeah, tell me later, tell me about your new E.T. spaceship friends later. Later."

Jaden fell asleep in his room. The morning comes and he heard his parents leaving for work in the morning. He smelled the breakfast his mother left for him on the kitchen table. He woke up thirty minutes later, showered and dressed. Jaden turned on the radio and listened to the news while he ate his cold eggs, sausages, home fries and pancakes.

There was a loud knock on the door. He opened it and Major Robinson stood there with a serious look on his face. Jaden saw the military uniform and a cold chill went through his body. He stopped chewing the food in his mouth and looked the Major in the eyes.

"How can I help you today?"

"Are you Jaden Marino?" He asked.

"Yes, I am..."

The memory fades away.

FEBRUARY 14, 1996 9:30 PM

Amy pulled her Pathfinder SUV into a parking lot space outside of Saratoga Lake.

"Turn the car off and your lights," Jaden said in a loud whisper.

"Jaden, why can't you drive your car and why are you hiding in the back seat of mine?" she asked while turning around to talk to him.

"There are people watching me and following me. I saw people following me at school today."

"What people? You are paranoid baby," she said.

"I'm serious. Remember the spaceship I told you I found last night?"

"Yes. I thought you were just joking with me."

"Ever since I found it, I've been seeing government vehicles driving around town. Then I called James when I got home last night. I know the government was monitoring all phone calls in the towns. This morning, this scary looking military man knocked on my door to ask me about the UFO. James was the only person I called. I'm telling you, they are watching me and following me. They want to know what I found, so they could cover it up and make me disappear," he pleaded.

"Do you know how crazy you sound?"

"Yeah," he said while peaking out the back window.

"Baby, listen, I've been horny all day today. I'm so happy today is Valentine's..."

'Shit, I forgot today was Valentine's,' Jaden said to himself.

"...I want you to fill my hungry kitty cat up," she said while climbing into the back seat with him.

She pushed the front seats up and brought one of the rear seats down.

"Lay down on that side baby."

Jaden lies on the flipped down seat side. She took his jacket off and unbuckled his pants.

"Did your soldier miss me today?" She asked.

Jaden leaned up and looked out the side window as a car drove by.

"Baby! Your soldier friend is sleeping. He is never sleeping on me," she said.

"I guess he isn't ready for basic training today."

"I know the ancient secrets to awaken your sleeper cell soldier," she said while she climbed over him and kissed him on the mouth.

She kissed his neck, down to his chest and continued south. Jaden quickly thought about the Wheel of Fortune game show.

"Whoa! Ding, ding ding! I would like to solve the puzzle Pat: My soldier is ready for the Vietvagina jungle. You are correct! The audience applauds," he said while clapping his hands.

She giggled while Jaden laughed.

Amy pulled down his pants and climbed on top of him.

"Here's the condom right here," Jaden said as he waved it in the air as if he had a flag in his hand.

"Damn, that was quick. Did you pull that out of your ass?" She asked in a sarcastic tone.

"Yep, ass cheek pocket. I saved this special extra sensitive, almost like wearing nothing condom just for tonight."

"We can use that special condom in a second. Let me feel my soldier without his bulletproof jacket on first."

"You are a raw dog pirate matey I see," he said.

"Arrggghhhh matey, I'm taking your buried treasure and there is nothing you can do about it. Arrggghhhh," Amy imitates a pirate while holding his arms down and slowly scratch up his arm to his chest.

A light reflected off Amy's body and the shadow of the light slowly moved behind her. Jaden entered her and she gave off a slight moan of pleasure. Jaden closed his eyes and enjoyed the instant feelings of pleasure moving up his spine up to his brain. Her eyes are closed and she had a smile on her face, while she gained momentum. She pushed up and down from his chest with her right hand. Jaden heard a car driving by from a distance and gets distracted. He held on tightly to the condom in his right hand.

"Baby, concentrate. How does that feel?" She asked as she rubbed her breast under her size 34D bra.

"It feels like two warm, slimy, meaty, wet fish smashed together."

"Silly! You saying my love hole smells like fish?"

Jaden opened his eyes and looks at Amy.

"Of course not, it smells like roses. But, I think we should put this on now."

"Okay."

"Hey, what car is coming up with those bright lights?"

Jaden leaned up, looked out the rear window as the slow moving vehicle pulled up closer with high beams on. Amy leaned down under the windows glass level while her ass continued to move. He gets nervous and his heartbeat increased and then the dark colored SUV parked in a parking space across from them. The images faded away.

The doorbell rang at his parents' house. Jaden was upstairs doing his homework in the dark with a small flashlight and he heard it. Jaden's mother Stacey walked to the door. Jaden tiptoed to the staircase and listened.

"Ma'am I'm Sergeant Peters. I'm with the government special affairs unit..." he said while showing his ID.

Jaden panicked and his mind was moving 1000 miles an hour. He became very nervous and panics, but stayed focused to the conversation.

"...Your son Jaden Marino is wanted for questioning."

"How do you know I'm his mother and what are you questioning him for? Is he being charged with something?" She asked.

"No, we just want to ask him some questions about something he witnessed driving home two days ago. We also need to run some radiation tests on him."

Jaden began to pace back and forth while freaking out. He peeked out the hallway front window and saw dark colored trucks with government hazmat plates.

"Tests? What did he witness? Why aren't the local police questioning him?" She asked.

"I'm not at liberty to say."

She folded her arms and looked at him with a cold look.

"I'm not at liberty to help you then. My husband will be home in an hour, you can come back then. He was in the Air Force and he understands your language better than I do."

She closed the door and he put his foot in the doorway, right before it closed on him.

"Ma'am we need the boy to come with us now, or I will arrest you and him. Then I will charge you with interfering with a high-level government investigation. We are above local police and federal jurisdiction. Let us talk to your son for a few minutes outside. You and your husband can meet us at this address," he said while handing her a card.

She looked Peters in the eyes and saw that he was serious.

"Jaden, come here for a second. Someone wants to talk to you!" She yelled.

Upstairs, Jaden's rear bedroom window was wide open.

"Jaden! Get your ass down here, when your mother is calling you. I know you hear me!"

Peters listened to his earpiece, "The jewel is on the run."

"We will be back ma'am," Peters said while he turned around and jogged to the truck.

"Jaden! Where are you?" She asked while closing the front door.

Jaden jogged through neighbors' backyards, with his head down.

'You assholes aren't getting me and making me disappear. I've seen enough conspiracy shows. I know where I'll hide, where you can't find me at,' Jaden said to himself while breathing heavy.

The images fade in and out. Another image shows him in the cornfield. Everything goes completely dark in the flashback.

Chapter 4: Questions Require Answers



Jaden opens his eyes for a second and then he closes them. Jaden is on a hospital bed. His eyes open again and see a bright white light over him lighting up the room. The room is slowly spinning as if he just got off a fast ride. Sunlight is hitting the floor under the closed blinds. There are a dozen white roses on a black desk near him that his nose senses. He turns his eyes and focuses on someone entering the room he is in. A familiar looking doctor is walking towards his hospital bed with a chart in his hand. The Caucasian doctor is in his late 40's and is clean-shaven. He is wearing green scrubs.

"Jaden how are you feeling today?" The doctor asks.

"I'm feeling okay, where am I? What's going on?"

Jaden looks around and sees he is hooked up to a heart monitor machine. He looks at his hands and touches his head. Jaden feels bandages around his head.

'Something big happened to me, but I can't remember anything,' Jaden says to himself.

"Where am I? What hospital am I at? How did I get here?" He asks the doctor.

The doctor pauses for a few seconds, "You're at Stillwater Medical Center in New York. You were brought here by ambulance; you were in a car accident."

"Why do I have bandages around my head?" He asks.

“You hit the windshield pretty hard son. You had a concussion, but you’re going to be okay.”

Jaden looks around.

“You’re my private family doctor, why are you working in the emergency room at this hospital?”

“Jaden you hurt your head pretty bad, maybe you should relax and take it easy. Your mother will be here soon,” the nervous eyed doctor says while walking away.

“Oh my God, I have such a headache. What the hell is going on here? I can’t remember any car accident,” Jaden says to himself quietly.

Jaden relaxes in the soft, white hospital bed. A nurse wearing an all white uniform comes into Jaden’s room. The nurse walks over to Jaden smiling. Jaden knows he has seen her somewhere before. She has red hair and a medium-sized figure.

“I’m Nurse Marge and I’m going to take your temperature young man,” the nurse says in a European accent. She pulls out a thermometer. “Now if you don’t mind, can you bend over so I can take your temperature?” She asks while putting lube on the thermometer.

Jaden looks at the nurse as if she is crazy.

“Bend over?” Jaden asks her in a shocked voice.

“I’m nineteen years old lady, you going to put a thermometer up my ass? You want to put your fingers up there too?” Jaden asks in a sarcastic voice.

The nurse pauses for a few seconds and says, “I apologize, can you open your mouth instead?”

She retrieves a new thermometer, Jaden opens his mouth and she places it under his tongue. He then mumbles looking directly at the nurse, “I’ll put something up your ass.”

The nurse gives an innocent smile and hands Jaden a small cup with a few pills. She takes the thermometer out of his mouth and says, “98.6 perfect.”

“What are these pills for?”

“They will help your pain go away in your head.”

“The pain only comes when I think about the past and what happened to me. Why is that nurse?” Jaden asks.

“You’ll have to ask your doctor that,” the nurse gets up and leaves a cup of water for Jaden.

She walks away and is interrupted by Jaden, “What day is today?”

“Today is February 16th”

“What year?”

She pauses for a second and looks Jaden in the eyes.

“Today is February 16th, 2003. Oops, I’m sorry, today is February 16th, 1996,” she says as she turns back around and goes through the door.

‘What is going on here? I can’t remember anything short-term. Every time I do, my head hurts more and more. Let me take these pills, maybe I’ll feel better.’

Jaden sees blue and red pills in his hand. Jaden takes both of them. He closes his eyes, and relaxes. He quickly falls asleep. An hour passes and the doctor returns.

“Jaden are you feeling better, how was your nap?” The doctor asks.

Jaden slowly opens his eyes. Everything is blurry; he tries to focus on what is around him. He sees the doctor sitting on the bed next to him.

“I’m a little better, my headache seems to be gone,” Jaden says while he rubs his head looking around. He notices Nurse Marge is standing behind the doctor smiling. She looks as if she lost a few pounds.

“Nurse, Marge, how was your Valentine’s Day yesterday?” Jaden asks.

She pauses for a few seconds, and says, “It was fine.”

“Did Homer Simpson get you something nice for Valentine’s?” Jaden asks, as the nurse rubs her red hair. The doctor turns around and looks at her.

“Yes it was fine; my boyfriend took me out somewhere.”

“Where did he take you to?” He asks in an inquisitive voice.

The doctor interrupts, “Jaden, you know your mother is outside and she will be here in a few minutes. Why don’t you leave Nurse Marge’s personal life alone,” the doctor says in a calm voice looking Jaden right in the eyes. He continues, “How was your rest? Has your head been feeling better?”

“I can’t remember much about the accident, but I feel something else happened to me, but I can’t remember. When I do start to think about it, that’s when my head starts pounding.”

“Try not to think about your past, concentrate on getting better and getting some rest. We have some more tests to run on you tomorrow.”

Just then, Jaden’s mother Stacey opens the hospital room door and walks straight towards Jaden with a nervous look on her face.

“Jaden are you okay?” She asks, as the doctor stands up from the bed and stands near the nurse. He whispers something into the nurse’s ears. Stacey holds Jaden’s hands and rubs his head as he lies in bed with scratches on his face and body.

“I’m fine mom,” Jaden says as he hugs her.

The doctor and nurse walk out of the room.

“Mom, there is something going on here. A few things don’t seem right. The doctor is our private doctor, but he is here working in a general hospital. I’m also in the same emergency room I was in when I sprained my ankle in karate school years ago. I’m also in a private room in the emergency room, I know this is expensive. Also, when I think back to

what has happened to me, my head still hurts a lot,” Jaden says quickly as he tries to catch his breath.

“Jaden, baby, everything is going to be okay,” Stacey says.

“Where are dad and Amy?”

The mother pauses for a few seconds, then responds, “Your dad is at work and I left a voice mail for your girlfriend Amy.”

“What happened in the car accident I was in? How did I crash?”

She pauses again and puts her right hand on his shoulder, “Jaden, baby, umm, the police said you were drinking and driving...” she is interrupted.

“Drinking and driving! How can that be?”

“I know you drink and drive sometimes Jaden,” Stacey says.

“How would you know that mom?”

The mother is quiet, and then hesitates, “I’m your mom, and I know everything about you.”

“Mom, are you okay? You don’t sound right. You’re sweating and talking with a nervous voice.”

“I’m fine son; your daddy would be over to the hospital tomorrow.”

“I know he is upset, especially with the car insurance being in his name.”

“He isn’t upset, he is just happy you’re okay. He didn’t say anything about the car being wrecked.”

Just then, the phone rings. It rings again and Jaden answers it.

“Hey dad. We were just talking about you. I’m fine, I had a headache earlier. Now it’s gone.”

There is a thirty-second pause as Jaden’s father speaks to him.

“Love you too dad.” Jaden hangs up the phone.

“Now you get some sleep son; me, your dad, and Amy will be back tomorrow morning.”

Jaden’s mom kisses him on the side of the face. She walks out of the room.

‘I know something is wrong here. My father isn’t upset, my mom isn’t talking right. Amy didn’t come to the hospital first or call,’ he says to himself.

“Wait a second! Amy! I don’t remember what we did for Valentine’s together!” Jaden yells.

He grabs his head, as it starts to hurt again. Jaden begins to feel dizzy and the room begins to spin around. The phone rings. Jaden is feeling very dizzy and his head is hurting so much that he can’t answer it. The nurse and the doctor rush back into the room. The phone stops ringing. The doctor gives him a shot. The nurse and the doctor are talking to Jaden, but he can’t understand what they are saying. Jaden turns his head

towards the window and he sees the sun setting. Jaden closes his eyes and opens them. The sun appears as if it is rising up from the horizon and moving at a fast speed. The sun and the view look blurry like a TV with bad reception. Jaden closes his eyes and falls to sleep.

It's dark, a buzzing sound is heard, but there is no image of anything. A humming buzzing sound, that sounds familiar to him. Jaden sees quick images. He sees an image of him in the back seat of her SUV... Amy is crying next to him and he hears words.

"I don't care about what you saw, where is my Valentine's Day gift?"

The voice and images fade away. He sees an image of him flying in the air at a fast speed. That quickly fades away and it goes dark again. There is a sound of wind blowing by his ear. Jaden hears many voices at once. Everyone is talking together, while it is completely dark. A distinctive female voice is heard clearly through all the other voices, "We will come soon. We will come for you soon." The voice fades into the many other voices being heard.

"Listen you little shit... Wish you were never born. Never born, never born." Then they all fade away.

Jaden wakes up and lifts up from the bed in a cold sweat. The sun is shining bright into the room. He rips the heart monitors from his chest, turns to the right, and swings his legs off the bed. The linoleum floor is icy as he takes his first steps. Jaden looks around the quiet room. He stands up and walks over to the wall in front of the bed.

"What kind of hospital room doesn't have a TV inside of it?"

Jaden looks at the solid wall. He touches it.

'Why does it feel like I'm being watched?'

Jaden walks over to the window and feels the breeze on his body. He sees people walking around downstairs. There are many trees outside the window. Jaden is very confused as he remembers images from his dream.

'Something big happened in the last week or a few days ago. I can't remember anything that has happened. A lot of things aren't making sense.'

His headache returns and he ignores it. Jaden walks over to the door and tries to open it. However, it is locked. Jaden pulls on the door harder as he panics.

"I have to get out of here. I have to get out of this hospital."

The knob on the door is being fumbled with. Someone is trying to open it from the outside. Jaden steps back from the door. It opens and the doctor walks in with the nurse behind him.

“Jaden, what are you doing out of bed? You need to rest. I know you’re not used to being in the hospital, but you need to follow the rules here.”

The doctor puts his arm around Jaden and walks him back to his bed. Jaden, with a confused and angry look on his face, pushes away from the doctor. Jaden takes a few steps back.

“Something is going on here. I want some answers.”

Jaden stands on the other side of the bed, looking at the doctor on the other side of it.

“Why is it I can’t remember anything from the accident? Why does my headache come back when I think about what has happened to me?”

The doctor clears his throat a few times. “Jaden you had a mild concussion and you have slight amnesia. Your memory should come back soon,” the doctor says while taking a step closer to him.

Jaden continues in a confused voice. “Why did that nurse agree that her boyfriend is Homer Simpson? Why did she try to put a thermometer up my ass like I was 1-year-old? Why do I feel like I was only sleeping for an hour and the sun is back up?”

The doctor and nurse just stand there and look at Jaden. The phone rings and Jaden hops over the bed. He answers the phone.

“Hello?”

“Jaden, Are you okay? I miss you,” Amy says over the phone.

“Amy, what did I get you for Valentine’s Day?”

“You didn’t get me anything, it’s okay.”

‘Something is wrong here, she always takes Valentine’s Day serious,’ Jaden thinks to himself.

“What happened in the back seat of your SUV on Valentine’s Day that you were crying?”

“I don’t know what you’re talking about Jaden. I didn’t see you Valentine’s Day. I was busy studying for my test in college.”

‘This girl would find time for Valentine’s Day. I know I saw her two days ago.’

The doctor and nurse are still standing there just looking at Jaden. Jaden holds his head while still talking to Amy on the phone. His head starts to hurt a lot. He ignores it.

“You don’t remember having sex with me on Valentine’s Day in the back seat of your SUV?”

“Jaden, I told you what I was doing. Now baby, I’m coming to see you in the hospital later this afternoon and.....”

Jaden hangs up the phone.

“That’s not my girlfriend,” Jaden says while standing up.

“Doctor, I’m still waiting for the answers to my questions.”

“Jaden you need to calm down, sit back down and relax in the bed,” the doctor calmly replies.

“I’ll relax when I get some answers that make sense!” He shouts.

Jaden picks up the phone and tries to call his best friend James.

“The number you have reached has been disconnected,” the phone says.

Jaden tries to dial the number again and it’s the same issue. Jaden starts to take deep breaths.

“My friend James’ phone number has worked for the past fifteen years, now it’s disconnected two days later?”

The nurse leaves the room.

“I have to get out of this hospital. I feel like I’m being watched. This place doesn’t feel real.”

“Jaden, you can’t leave the hospital until you are properly checked out. You have to be checked out by a doctor. You’re going to have to stay here for another two days, until I see you’re fit to leave. You’re getting very delusional; we might have to find you a psychologist. You might have to stay here longer than that then,” the doctor orders

“You are an outpatient doctor. You work full time at a private practice. My family has been going to you for years. This is not how you normally act. You have answers for everything. Now I’m here asking you questions, that you obviously are ignoring. You do know that questions require answers right? Now stop playing stupid with me!”

The doctor puts his hand on Jaden’s shoulder again. Jaden brushes it off. He hops behind the bed again.

“I’m remembering now. I was being chased by men in white suits...”

“Jaden, why don’t you take your pills, so you can relax? You really are not well,” he doctor says while handing them across the bed.

Jaden knocks them out of the doctor’s hand while yelling, “I don’t want any more of your pills! I’m getting out of this B.S. hospital now.”

The door opens quickly as two men in security uniform walk inside with the nurse behind them. They stand by the door.

“Oh man, this is getting funnier by the minute. You two work for this hospital also? You two used be security guards in my high school. Now you work here?” Jaden asks.

“Come on, where is the *America’s Funniest Home Video* cameras at?” Jaden asks.

The security guards don’t say anything, but look at Jaden with a straight face.

“You see Jaden, we don’t want to have to use any force against you,” the doctor says.

“I can take those two guards without a problem, then I can take you out also you fake Russian KGB doctor,” Jaden says in a confident voice.

“Then you would be charged with assault, Jaden. Do you want a criminal record to follow you the rest of your life?”

Jaden stands up and gets into a karate stance.

Just then, Jaden’s mother opens the door. She runs between the big hospital security guards and past the doctor.

“Mom, how did you get here so fast? You said you were coming late in the morning with dad. Don’t you have to work today?” Jaden asks.

“Are you okay son? Don’t cause any problems in the hospital,” Jaden’s mother pleads.

“Mom, how are we paying for this hospital visit?”

“Son, what are you talking about?”

Jaden reaches out and grabs his mother’s purse.

“Jaden what are you doing?”

Jaden is looking through his mother’s bag. Everything looks blurry inside. He finds her wallet. Stacey looks shocked to what her son is doing. She tries to grab her wallet back, while Jaden pushes her away. He finds her insurance card. Jaden turns it around and it is completely blank. Jaden stands there surprised and drops the wallet on the bed, while still looking at the blank card.

“Mom, you have a blank insurance card?”

“Son, we have universal health care now. We don’t need insurance cards anymore.”

“Universal health care in America?” Jaden asks while starting to laugh. He continues, “Do you actually expect me to believe that? You never showed me your insurance card in the past. I know this place is a fake.”

Jaden walks over to the closet and says, “Where are my clothes?”

“Jaden your clothes are in a safe place,” the doctor replies.

“Jaden what are you doing? You’re breaking your mother’s heart,” Stacey says while beginning to cry.

“You’re not my mother, that isn’t my doctor, and this can’t be a hospital.”

Stacey begins to cry. The doctor pulls out a syringe and squirts it into the air. He looks at Jaden while folding his arms. Jaden walks towards the door and the big 6’3” and 6’5” guards stand in the way. The guard on the left is Caucasian and bald and the guard on the right is African American with a full head of hair.

“I have a black belt in karate and a yellow belt in jujitsu. I would suggest if you don’t want to get hurt and end up being in one of these hospital beds, get out of my way.”

“Sorry, we can’t do,” the guard on the left says while pulling out a straitjacket.

They rush to grab him and the nurse stands back towards the door. Jaden gets into a karate stance. A wind blows the blinds behind Jaden. Jaden throws two straight punches into the one guard’s chest. He falls backwards and has the wind knocked out of him. He loses balance and hits his head on the wall. The black guard on the right grabs Jaden’s arm. Jaden quickly grabs his arm also, gets closer to him, and elbows him in the face. Jaden then pulls him around and flips him over his back. The guard flips over and bounces on the bed and then onto the floor. Jaden is feeling energetic and stronger than he normally feels. The guard on the floor behind the bed holds his face and grunts in pain. The white guard gets up from the wall breathing heavily. He pulls out a baton and comes towards Jaden. The nurse flings the door wide and runs out. His mother is hiding under the bed crying. He jumps towards the wall and kicks off it. He forms a kick in midair, while kicking the guard directly in the face with the bottom of his bare feet. The guard falls back into the wall very hard, making the entire room shake and causing a loud thumping sound. Jaden reaches out and grabs the door before it closes. He swings the door open and walks outside. The doctor lunges from behind and tries to stab Jaden with the syringe. Jaden grabs his arm and pulls it hard forward. The doctor loses balance and hits the hallway wall headfirst.

“Does anyone else want some of the jujitsu/Tae Kwon Do experience? I’m giving out free universal ass whippings,” he says as the doctor lies on the floor holding his head moaning.

“Hey doc, take those pills for that headache you’re going to have.”

Jaden walks away from the doctor lying on the floor. He turns around and walks back towards the doctor on the floor. Jaden grabs him by the shirt collar.

“What is going on here? Why are you people messing with me? Why can’t you answer any of my questions?”

The doctor just laughs while blood is pouring from his head. His voice changes and it sounds much deeper.

“You don’t know what you’re in for. Ha ha ha. I don’t know where you think you’re going.”

Jaden walks down the hall and says to himself, ‘That dude sounds like the *Hellraiser* dude.’

“You can’t leave!!” The doctor yells, while continuing to laugh.

Jaden walks quickly down the hallway. Nurses and patients look surprised as Jaden begins jogging down the hallway. Jaden is looking at their faces and they all look very familiar to him. He knows he has seen these people before. He remembers some as being in his college and two people were his neighbors that moved away. Jaden is puzzled that everyone in the hospital looks familiar to him. He looks up at a loud ear piercing voice coming from a loud speaker.

“We have a code red, on the third floor. All units please assist situation on third floor, room 305,” the overhead loud speaker says.

Jaden turns around a corner. He sees an emergency staircase. He looks down the stairs and it’s dark, but then it brightens up. A cold wind hits his body and face. The continuous wind brings shivers around his body. The stairs stop at the second floor. Jaden opens the door and walks slowly down the hallway. He looks all the way down the hallway on his right and sees how dark and fuzzy looking everything is in that direction. The walls look alive as if they are adjusting around his vision. There looks as if dark images are forming and then disappearing when his eyes focus. On the left, it is dark, but there is a room with light coming from it.

“This doesn’t even look like a hospital now. There are no people around here.”

Jaden jogs over to the bright door and opens it. He sees another door inside. He stands on his tippy toes and is amazed at what he sees. Jaden sees six doctors standing around two beds in a large room with dingy grey walls. Jaden stares as if he is seeing a ghost. His body is frozen and he can’t move. Feelings of shock move around his nervous system like an S.O.S. signal.

Jaden sees two copies of himself lying naked, surrounded by doctors in the middle of the room. One is strapped onto a portable hospital bed. The other is on an operating table strapped in. He can’t believe he sees exact images of himself. Feelings of disbelief and cold chills go up and down his spine. Jaden needs his eyes to prove he isn’t seeing what he thinks he sees. He opens the door and looks around the room and his eyes open very wide. The bright fluorescent lights shine down from the ceiling. The room is moving in slow motion around him. He sees more of his lifeless bodies on the wall hung up like coats. The strong smell of being at a morgue with dead bodies attacks Jaden’s nose. He covers his nose with disgust, but his mind is too determined to find out what is going on. The doctors look at Jaden surprised as if they are caught in the act. He is determined to find out what is going on and stares at their eyes behind the masks.

They have blood on their gloves and bloody tools in their hands. Jaden counts about eight clones of himself all around the room. The three on the wall are missing limbs. They are still breathing, but don't look like they are in pain. Jaden notices that the clones on the wall to the right have dark patches around where the arms and legs are cut off. There is a small room with windows towards the rear left. There are two Jaden clones walking around like zombies. There is another closed off room with a huge window to the right with another cloned Jaden with his head on the glass and hands on the side of his face watching Jaden. Jaden quickly walks over to the operating table and pushes a doctor out of the way. A feeling of shock goes from his eyes to his brain and around his body.

Jaden sees his clone in a zombie state of mind with his arms down to the bone and muscle, deteriorating. Red muscles are all around the body and the eyes are missing. Blood is coming out of its arms. The hands are just bones and veins. Jaden gets very upset at what he sees. The doctors stand there not knowing what to say or do.

"What the hell is going on in here? You people cloned me and you are doing experiments on me! You have me walking around naked with a half-sized penis!"

Jaden grabs the closest doctor near him. He rips off his mask and instantly recognizes the face. The adrenaline rushes to his muscles. He grabs the collar of the white overcoat and lifts the doctor up in the air while choking his neck. Jaden feels puffy fur protruding from around the doctor's neck area. But he doesn't see any fur there. There is nothing but anger in Jaden's face as he tries to get to the bottom of this.

"You're no doctor; you're my fourth grade teacher! I want some answers, or I'm going to beat it out of you, Mr. Stevens. Then I'm going to beat some answers out of my clones!" Jaden yells while accidentally spitting in the fake doctor's face. Mr. Stevens is speechless while gagging to breathe.

Suddenly the door swings open and something quickly enters. Jaden tries to turn around and a security guard hits Jaden over the back of the head with a baton. Jaden falls over and lands on top of the doctor. The doctor pushes Jaden off him.

They begin communicating in a high-speed alien language.

"Why is he down here?" The doctor's voice changes into a deeper voice.

"We don't need him anymore. We just need his brain, body parts and more blood. These human brains are difficult to copy while they are still in the host," the doctor that looks like Jaden's fourth grade teacher says.

Jaden lays on the floor unconscious. The five guards are standing over him. Two of them lift his lifeless body and put his arms over their shoulders. They carry him outside the room. Then they carry him down a long hallway. Jaden briefly opens his eyes and sees the hallway lighting up as he is carried down it. Looking further down past the light it is completely dark. Jaden feels like he is in a scary movie and it's moving in slow motion. He is semi-conscious and his speech is slurring.

"Where are you taking me? What is going on?"

They ignore him and Jaden continues, "Why? Why do you feel so . . . so hairy, when you have a uniform over your body?" Jaden mumbles in an incoherent voice to the guards carrying him. They ignore him.

"I don't see any hair there." Jaden smiles at the guards, while he begins to feel the pain from the blow to his head.

"Why- Why do your hands feel like . . . like claws, Mr. Security Guard? Also. . .Your breath smells like. . . like... like a dog that eats human food. Ha ha."

Something catches Jaden's attention above him; he looks up towards his right on the ceiling. Two bright eyes without a body light up near the ceiling.

Jaden still out of it and half-awake thinks he is seeing things. He hears several footsteps behind him.

Jaden turns his head to get a good look at the guards carrying him down a hallway without any doors.

"You two aren't security guards. You two are the officers that came to my house to tell my family my brother died a couple of years ago. Who are you guys trying to fool?"

They reach a poorly lit room at the end of the hallway. Jaden is coming too, but can barely move his body. He notices the room looks like an operating room. They lay him down on an operating table in the middle of the room. A doctor with a smile on his face walks up and injects Jaden's arm with a needle.

"You bastard, what did you inject me with?"

The doctor leaves from in front of Jaden.

The room looks like an all white hospital operating room, with dimmed lights.

'I can't be on Earth, where the hell am I? What is going on? I can't move my body. I can't move anything,' Jaden thinks to himself.

Four security guards stand by the door and watch. They lick their lips as if Jaden is food to them. Jaden is only able to move his eyes and mouth.

Jaden taunts the guards, "When I get out of here I'm going to break your arms and then feed you your fake badges."

More of Jaden's memory starts to come back to him. He remembers being in the UFO and flying through space.

Suddenly the doctor comes out with an object looking like a circular saw in his hand.

"So you couldn't stay in your room and go along with the program huh?" The doctor asks while ripping open Jaden's grey hospital shirt.

"Why are you doing this to me?" Jaden asks in a frightening voice, while continuing to struggle to move.

"I'm going to do a lot more to you. First, I'm going to remove your heart while it's still beating. Then I'm going to quickly remove your brain. How do you humans say it? This won't hurt a bit."

"Why did you bring me to this planet, all the way from Earth to kill me?"

"Us? Us? Ha ha ha ha," he pauses for thirty seconds and continues laughing.

The security guards at the door laugh.

"We wouldn't waste our time on a maggot human like you. We would definitely put every single one of your body parts to good use."

"I'm a maggot? You're a maggot and your mama's a big nasty horse fly that eats brown shit all day," Jaden snaps.

The doctor laughs and says, "We don't look nothing like you ugly humans. Your disgusting sweating and dirt particles constantly leaving your skin is beyond disgusting, you maggot."

"You wouldn't call me a maggot if I wasn't paralyzed in this chair," Jaden says while struggling to move.

"What kind of aliens are you people? How do you look human? You aliens look like people I know."

"Your primitive brain is so easy to manipulate into believing anything."

The doctor continues to laugh while starting up the small circular saw. Jaden tries to move, but is paralyzed like a spider's victim stuck in its web. The loud spinning blade grabs Jaden's full attention.

"Can't we all get along? There is no need for violence now," Jaden says while nervously smiling.

The doctor puts the quickly spinning circular saw towards Jaden's chest then pauses.

"That's a good one. Can't we all get along? That was from the L.A. riots a few years ago right?" The doctor asks.

Jaden thinks that they know all of his memories.

"Yeah, why can't we humans and aliens get along? Come on guys, we should have a universal friendship here. There is just too much violence in the universe," Jaden says in a persuasive voice.

Jaden begins to perspire and shake, “Didn’t we learn anything from *Star Wars* and the Borg? Killing someone isn’t the answer to solving intergalactic disagreements. If you want to clone me and torture my clones go ahead. If you want me to go back to the hospital room and play along, sure I can do that. But there is no need for alien on human violence.”

“You humans are nothing but slightly evolved animals. You can kill animals and eat animals and you don’t think anything is wrong with that...”

“I didn’t kill any animals....”

“You are a tamed animal and this is nothing more than cutting up an animal. When I’m finished removing your organs, the rest of your fat, muscles and skin will make a nice meal for the guards by the door. You humans make tasty meals. To us you taste like hamburgers,” the doctor says.

“Eating me? I’m not food! I’m no Big Mac!” Jaden yells while trying to struggle.

“You won’t have to worry about anything in the next few minutes. You humans are excessively violent to each other. Those memories you have, of the riots, world wars, violence upon each other and all the other things in your history are. .are. . .” he pauses, “The point is, you humans should be used to it... enough talking and stalling, okay? Time to die.”

He puts the circular saw towards Jaden’s chest, closer and closer. Jaden’s eyes are focusing in on the high-speed blade creating a breeze towards his chest and face. The sharp circular blade pierces Jaden’s chest causing him tremendous pain. Blood splatters in all directions, but floats upwards. He yells in agony and the guards begin to laugh. His blood forms half-inch round balls. Jaden blacks out and goes into shock from the pain quickly overloading his brain. As Jaden closes his eyes, he sees two bright eyes without a body on the ceiling above him. The doctor takes off his glasses and looks in confusion at the blood floating upwards. The blood bubbles disappear as they get near the ceiling. The mad doctor continues to cut downwards to his upper abdomen. The lights flicker then go out. It is completely dark in the room. The doctor stops cutting and yells to the guards still laughing.

Suddenly something falls from the ceiling and there is a lot of noise and scuffling in the dark. There is a glowing object that resembles a sword, quickly moving back and forth in the air. The glowing blue weapon has red lightning jumping around it. The yells turn into loud screeching sounds and stuff falling over. Something is sprayed over Jaden’s open chest wound. Something is then injected into his neck

through his jugular vein that mixes with his blood. It is completely dark in the room and it goes quiet. Jaden's large chest wound stops bleeding.

Jaden, still unconscious, is lifted from the operating table by something. His body is put over the shoulder of a warm alien being. The lights flicker in the room and Jaden regains some consciousness. He sees the doctor with blood all over his jacket and the circular saw going through his head. Jaden moans in pain as he tries to figure out what is going on. Jaden's body is being carried towards the door. Jaden hears a high pitch sound that sounds like a fax machine.

Then, a very fast speaking female voice is heard, "I'm Bellona and I'm here to rescue you. I'm trying to get you outside this virtual hospital and underground city. Your body will remain paralyzed and your lungs will stop working soon. You will be holding your breath for about ten minutes once we get out to the surface. My team and I are trying to get you off this planet. Your normal vision will be back very soon."

The fast talking voice echoing from all directions stops. He was able to make out most of what she said. Jaden sees himself being carried by a silvery alien body in the reflection of a mirror on a wall. It has two legs like a human. Jaden is able to turn his head slightly. Jaden notices this alien has six fingers that look human, with an extra thumb. The extra identical thumb is on the opposite side of the hand and is providing an extra grip on Jaden's body. He is facing down towards the ground while his legs and lower body are over the shoulder of this alien rescuing him. Jaden sees pieces of the guards lying on the floor. He looks again and the image is distorted. The pieces of the guards turn into hairy pieces of an animal with claws where the hands used to be. Bellona looks through the door in both directions. Jaden looks behind him in the room and the room changes. It changes from a bright operating room to a dark, slimy room. The skinny alien begins jogging down the long hallway. Jaden feels high up in the air, as if the alien is at least seven feet tall. His body is going up and down with the fast movement. The hallway turns into a tunnel. Jaden notices a clear force around them. Jaden hears many footsteps. They go up many stairs. He is petrified since he can't see what exactly is going on. Bellona stops running and stops against a wall. The air is turning very humid and Jaden is breathing very lightly. The footsteps go by at a fast speed down the stairs.

Jaden believes they are cloaked and invisible like the UFO spaceship. They go through a door. They continue to run down this eerie tunnel with low light. Dark colored trees and vines are appearing all over the place. Mist is in the air and reminds him of being in a sauna at the gym. The tunnel opens up into a large room with high ceilings that resembles a gymnasium. The room has vines, trees and plants all over the place, similar to a greenhouse. Bright light is shining on Jaden and

Bellona from the light emitting trees. She has small light particles inside her skin as she gently puts Jaden against the wall sitting up. Jaden sees the alien figure that resembles a human body walking forward. Her body looks smooth and similar to a female human with curves. She walks like a human being.

Fourteen hairy, black animal-looking creatures approach. They are called nobles. The nobles are hairy creatures that look like a half gorilla with two very hairy legs with feet and an upper body like a beetle, with little antennas coming from their heads. The nobles are making loud animal sounds. They also have a round arch around their backs like a beetle and four claws that extend out like hands. The nobles line up and fire a green liquid from their claws at her. Bellona instantly forms a shield three feet around it. An awkward sound comes from the formation. Another smaller shield forms around Jaden as the sounds from the middle of the room go quiet. A slight humming sound is also heard in Jaden's ears. The complete bubble-shaped shield extends into the wall digging into it. His vision becomes blurry and altered by the clear shields around him. It looks similar to looking through a clear lake. He can't hear anything except the humming sound.

The two-foot long spray, that looks like flying vomit, hits her outside shield and goes around it. Smoke is coming from the ground where the alien creatures are firing their toxic poisonous acid. The shield turns completely green as all of the nobles continue to rapidly fire at the same time. Jaden can see through the green material over her shield.

Jaden is hypnotized by her warrior stance as if she is ready for battle. She stands fearless as the animal creatures surround her while continuing to fire. Two red molecules suddenly appear around her wrists. The molecules look similar to the ship's molecule, but only six inches in diameter. Her body looks like a blur as she begins moving at high speed. She punches holes through her shield in the direction of the animals. Green glowing balls of energy fire like high-speed cannons towards the enemies. Their green toxin that was absorbed into the shield's energy is being used against them. They are hit and their bodies are quickly penetrated and ripped into pieces. She is moving so fast it looks as if there are two female aliens inside the shield punching holes in different spots.

Jaden witnesses this and is speechless. Bellona stands there with these red molecules spinning up and down her arms in sync. They begin to glow very bright red. She looks up towards the ceiling. She puts her arms together over her head. The two molecules slowly move upwards and leave her fingertips. They merge and get larger as they float near the top of the shield above her. Jaden sits there speechless and is unable to

blink his eyes. The single molecule is about four feet in diameter. Bellona extends her right hand towards the ground. Jaden feels an invisible force quickly passing under his legs and towards the female alien. She quickly extends her arm towards the molecule above her and an invisible force leaves her arm. The force propels the molecule through the shield and towards the ceiling in a red flash of blurry light. Bellona turns around and walks towards Jaden, sitting against the wall in disbelief. Some debris falls from the newly created hole as air is quickly sucked through it like a vacuum. Branches, body parts and vines are pulled into the ceiling's new hole.

The shield disappears and the particles go into her back. Smoke comes from the lifeless body parts. Some of the creatures' bodies pull towards the ceiling. She walks back towards Jaden. Jaden is mesmerized by her walking towards him. Her beauty and brawn captivates Jaden. He knows she can't be human, but a cross between a mechanical robot and human. Bellona has something over her face that resembles some type of mask the same color as her body. He looks deep into her blank face with no hair sticking out from the mask. Her two wide eyes are glowing white, like an eyeball without pupils. Her iris reflects the light that is behind her. Her chest looks like a mannequin's breast, smooth, but no nipples. There are hundreds of white light particles slowly moving around inside her skin. Her legs are skinny and muscular. She has six fingers, but no fingernails. Jaden sees no lower female body parts. He feels she is someone here to save him, he feels safe and comfortable around her. Jaden also feels helpless since he is still unable to move. This alien female warrior stands in front of him and stares deep into his soul.

"Who are you? Why are you helping me? What's going on?" Jaden asks but doesn't get a response.

The 6'5" foot alien picks him up again and places him on her shoulder. She quickly walks to the middle of this large room, stepping over slimy hairy body parts. Air is sucking out of the four-foot octagon-shaped hole above them. The howling sound of wind moves around the silent room.

Suddenly the ground shakes and thirty hairy creatures begin coming from the walls in all directions. These creatures are called blisters and they have long white and black hairs around their body. They walk upright and stand about 5 feet high. They are more organized and walk slowly in formation about thirty feet away. These blisters have different shiny metals over their bodies. Similar to knights in the old days, but without the swords or shields in their hands. They also have a large, shiny hump like a beetle on their backs. They have two black antennas sticking from their helmets. Their eyes are at the end of the antennas.

The creatures only have two arms and a metallic mask over their heads. They have an object looking like a weapon, in their right hand. The weapon looks like narrow silver Television remote controls a few inches in size. They appear to float a few inches from their hands. In their left hand, they have invisible shields over their ant-like faces.

They fire yellow energy beams at Bellona in the middle of this room that Jaden is still over the shoulders of. The yellow energy beams hit the outside of her shield and bounce back in different directions. This time it bounces back off the blisters as each has their own clear invisible energy shields that light up over their left arms. The beams bounce onto the walls and in all directions making holes in the walls. She fires a blue six-inch round energy projectile into the air with her left arm. It passes through her shields and floats about twenty feet in the air and gets larger. It spins around clockwise very fast, drawing some kind of energy from the large room. Jaden is held tightly by her right hand.

The blisters charge towards her from all directions still firing, weakening her shields. The shields get smaller to about two feet around Jaden and her. She begins to run towards the wall knocking creatures out of her way, with the shield following with her. The shield is getting smaller and smaller. Jaden notices her body is getting smaller. The blue projectile explodes in all directions. The blisters dive and dig into the ground with their claws to keep from floating away. Their antenna eyes look out to see what is going on. The blue projectile makes the entire area lose its gravity. They continue to fire at Jaden and Bellona. She jumps on the wall and begins to run vertically up it. Jaden hears her loud thumping footsteps. The blisters stop firing as they hold on tighter from the zero gravity in the room. Everything is happening so fast for Jaden; he feels as though he is in a dream. Some lose their grip and float towards the vacuum hole forty feet above, making loud screeching sounds. They are sucked in like a dust ball into a vacuum cleaner.

Jaden doesn't even feel like he is on a wall. His up and down balance makes him feel as if he is on a ground surface. They reach the ceiling and run on it. Bellona detects something coming below. Jaden looks towards the ground and he sees a different type of huge, robotic alien creature with a long neck. The skelborgs' are translucent down to the skeleton bodies, as if you are looking through an x-ray. They are about ten feet in diameter. Their white glowing bone structure can be seen through their synthetic skin and muscles. Their outer body suits are invisible to Jaden's eye. They have a dark helmet over their skinny faces with glowing green eyes. They have long glowing arms that resemble a weapon. Their weapons are purple and extend out where the hands would be. They walk

on the ground not affected by the gravity disruption in the room. Their big size makes Jaden believe their weight is keeping it from floating away. It stands there looking up and gives Jaden the creeps. He swallows saliva as it looks up at him. Their staring at him makes Jaden's blood pressure increase.

"That thing looks very scary, it's almost eight feet tall and wide like a fat girl at an all you can eat," Jaden says while keeping his eyes on it.

The equilibrium in his ears goes out of sync and he feels very nauseous looking down. The howling octagon hole in the ceiling gets louder and louder. Jaden's lungs stop breathing on their own. He feels as if something is making him hold his breath. The robotic alien fires a fast moving orange ball with a ring around it from its left arm towards them. Bellona tosses paralyzed Jaden into the hole head first and the shield goes around his body. He feels a powerful acceleration as he falls upwards. The orange ball explodes creating a large explosion. A huge amount of debris and rocks fall all over the place. Jaden sees fire that looks like small spheres in front of him. He is surrounded by fire from the explosion. The blast greatly increases his speed as he freefalls up the dark hole. The powerful blast hits the female alien directly. Her body sustains heavy damage and is on fire. There are microscopic robotic organisms called microbots, attacking her body through the fire. Her legs amputate from the torso and suck through the hole. Her fiery left arm floats away, but quickly pulls back towards her body by a magnetic force. Her body sustains hundreds of holes through it. There are clear seals over the area where her legs were cut off. Her left arm is floating two inches from her torso, where her arm came off at.

The skelborg extends both of its hands upwards. Bellona's eyes glow very dim and she can't move. Her severely hurt body is caught in some kind of tractor beam, slowly pulling her downwards. The fire on the ceiling blows out into the hole. Everything is happening so fast.

Jaden is less than a mile from the surface. Jaden is falling upwards faster than an express elevator. His arms are to his side and his body is straight as he continues to fall upwards with fire all around and the clear shields protecting him. Jaden hears noises like a fax machine and dial-up modem, but much faster.

The skelborg's microbots are attacking the inside of her body. The defensive nanobots inside her body are trying to fight them off, but are being overpowered. Bellona is twenty feet away from the skelborg, when suddenly its head disappears. The upper body expands outwards. An open area that resembles a shredder with spinning teeth replaces the head

and neck area. She is about to be pulled into a spinning vortex of glowing razor sharp teeth. She is fighting the tractor beam energy with pro-gravity nanobots quickly moving around her body, pulling her upwards. But it is not overpowering the skelborg's tractor beam around her. Most of her energy is going towards protecting Jaden and keeping the shield energy around his quickly propelling body. She needs his body to make it to the surface. Microbots are trying to enter a secure area in her brain. The force of the tractor beam slowly detaches her head from her body. There is magnetic energy pulling between her neck and head. The army of blisters is holding onto the ground and lifts their heads simultaneously and fire at Bellona. The beams fire together and hit one targeted area on her body creating a hole through it. Her body reacts to the penetration.

An army of nanoscanners quickly enter the octagon hole from the surface of the planet. They quickly pass Jaden's lifeless falling body and reach Bellona's amputated free falling legs that are on fire. The nanoscanners quickly spin around it, dissolving them into molecules.

Her head separates from her neck by nine inches and is two feet from the spinning mouth that will destroy her. She feels tremendous pain as her body is being pulled in two different directions. Her very low energy body is not responding.

There is a dimly lit red dwarf star in the sky above. The galactic center's sun is also shining brightly over the surface. Jaden is moving upwards at a very fast speed and reaches the surface. His uncontrollable body continues upwards by the side of a large rocky mountain. Fire explodes around him and in different directions as he spins sixty feet into the 1% oxygen atmosphere. Jaden can see and feel bright sunlight shining over the top of the mountain. There is also some dim red sunlight shining behind Jaden. The ignited fire around him quickly goes out. His body descends as the planet's gravity takes over. Jaden is falling towards the ground, but not as fast as he would on Earth. He is about to hit the ground and closes his eyes to brace for impact. He abruptly stops a few feet from the ground, when something grabs him. The shield around Jaden's body goes off and another one quickly forms. He is being held by something invisible with feathery and hairy large arms. Jaden can't see its face, but assumes it's someone on Bellona's team. It begins to run with Jaden over a rocky surface. His body slowly bounces up and down.

There are purple and green dagger-like crystals of many sizes all around the surface of the planet. They point up as high as fifty feet from the surface. They point out into different directions and some sit on top of mountainsides.

“I’m Marco and I’m going to get you to our ships not far from here,” he says in a deep robotic voice.

Jaden understands, but doesn’t reply. Feelings of confusion continue to cross his mind.

The skelborg has its arms around Bellona’s head, slowly pulling it into its mouth. The top of her head is being cut away by the hot plasma energy teeth. The nanoscanners reach down the hole where Bellona is at. They quickly spin around her body, changing her molecules into energy. Her body and separated head disappear into a flash of light into the tunnel towards the surface. The billions of microbots are left behind and float into the skelborg. It then jumps upwards towards the ceiling with thrust coming from its feet and elbows. The alien’s huge body shrinks in size as it reaches the tunnel. It fires another large orange projectile upwards towards the flash of light moving at a fast speed.

The flash of light reaches 153 feet over the surface of the planet and stops. There is a bright beam coming from a nearby star and another source of sunlight coming from Andromeda’s Galactic Bulge. Bellona’s energy molecules begin to form back into her body. Hundreds of nanoscanners spin clockwise reforming her body with the help of the sunlight. Her body has trillions of yellow spinning light particles reforming her into solid matter. Nanobots are quickly moving around the inside of her body creating glowing light particles. Her silver body returns and something comes out of her back. Semi-visible wings that resemble an angel’s wings come out her back and levitate six inches from her back. The wings are not touching each other and extend down to her buttocks. The trillions of spinning yellow light particles disappear from around her body. Glowing blue particles come out of her arms and disrupt the gravity around her as her wings slowly flap. She quickly flies towards the ground.

Something is carrying Jaden, across rocks, sand and debris. He closes his eyes and he is able to see through a nanoeye. Jaden sees Bellona’s body floating like alien angel in the bright sunlight. He is still not breathing and is holding his breath. It is amazing to him he is able to hold his breath for such a long time. Jaden realizes they must have done something to him when he was in the UFO.

The orange projectile comes out of the tunnel in a glowing blur of energy straight towards Bellona. She fires an invisible force from her right arm, hitting the projectile head on. It explodes into a horizontal line of spherical diamond fire, lighting up the shadow side of the mountain. She passes through the fire and continues downwards. Jaden has a front

row seat to the fireworks show. She quickly reaches the ground near the tunnel and kneels from the sudden impact. The wings on her back disappear into her body. She makes two fists and puts them together. She pulls them apart and a glowing sword forms. The weapon has blue lightning jumping around a yellow light that extends 2 ½ feet. The tunnel glows and she swings her weapon downwards just as the skelborg exits.

Jaden witnesses a second colorful explosion splitting in two directions. The skelborg is split into two pieces and then explodes. The energy sword disappears into Bellona's hand as she runs towards Jaden. The nanoeye is not controllable by Jaden.

Jaden hears the low fax machine sounds around him again. The alien carrying Jaden appears and he is able to see its entire body through a nanoeye. The alien resembles a male figure and his size and shape intrigues Jaden. The blue and orange alien is about ten feet tall. His light blue semi-metallic frame is wide. He has orange fur all around the top part of his body. Around the skin of the alien is a shiny blue metallic body. There are small white light particles moving up and down inside the skin. This alien looks like a powerful fighter. He has several chrome spikes two feet long coming from his back and up to the shoulders. Red lightning particles are jumping around between the spikes on its back. There are red molecules on each wrist of the alien. His arms are long and furry and look somewhat human. His face is covered by something that looks like an exotic blue chrome helmet. His round reflective helmet glows different colors. Jaden continues to stare at the color-changing helmet.

Both aliens run together. Jaden does not feel like Marco is running. They both go invisible again. Jaden, still unable to move, turns his eyes to the right and sees a clear energy shield a few inches from his eyes.

They run across an open, rocky field. There are large, shiny metallic discs half way into the rocky ground all over the place. The galactic bulge's bright sunlight shines on them as they carefully run around the huge metallic discs that are arranged in an orderly fashion. The light is so bright that Jaden has to squint to see what is going on. His eyes cannot tolerate the bright light so he closes them. Jaden feels as if he is dreaming. Nothing feels real.

The ground starts to shake and rumble. The bright light fades away from Jaden's closed eyes. They run between a small passageway that resembles a ravine. The small mountains on each side are separated by about thirty feet and are about twenty feet high.

Six enemy spaceships approach them from the same direction. The ships are called cubfighters and look like flying brown stingrays. Each double wing is levitating a few feet from the body and they have white thrust coming from the rear of them. They stop midair simultaneously and their bodies begin to glow. They fire two sets of brown laser beams at them. Marco and Bellona's shield systems become very visible and absorb the powerful blasts. They stumble from the sudden impact of force. The ground is shot up around them creating a lot of dust. The holes in the ground go down dozens of feet. Jaden experiences the forceful movement with his new friends, but concentrates more on trying to breathe. He tries to inhale, but he feels as if he has a plastic bag over his face. His body is still paralyzed and he struggles to get some control of his body. He wants to move his arms around his throat, but he can't.

Marco tosses Jaden to Bellona. His body feels weightless as it glides ten feet through the air. The feeling instantly registers in his long-term memory as a feeling he felt when being tossed into the air by his father when he was a toddler. Jaden feels as if he is being tossed around like a Raggedy Ann doll.

Bellona holds Jaden against the wall and they are invisible. Marco runs towards the opposite wall and takes on the green laser fire. His shield takes on the powerful blasts. Suddenly, the dozens of chrome spikes on Marco's back stick up and float a few inches from his back. The red molecules on his wrist begin to spin in circles and light up red. He sticks his right arm out and a spike from his back travels through the molecule on his wrist and turns into a long metallic weapon in the shape of a spear. The weapon has light particles moving up and down it. His right hand holds the long barrel weapon that looks like a sniper rifle and a rocket launcher combined. The edge of his red spinning molecule is at the grip of the gun, somehow powering it. Marco quickly approaches the mountain and his body becomes semi-visible. His body disappears into the solid rock. Three cubfighters quickly circle around and levitate over the area scanning for them.

Suddenly Bellona becomes visible with Jaden in her arms and begins running down the ravine area. The cubfighters turn and begin firing at her. The barrel of Marco's four-foot long semi-visible weapon pokes from the top of the mountain. The weapon moves in a blur to three different positions in less than a second. In each position, a glowing silver projectile was fired towards the cubfighters at near the speed of light. Jaden hears a low popping sound from a distance behind him. The three cubfighters quickly propel backwards into the air and explode into brown fire. They are completely destroyed. There are three more cubfighters at a distance approaching. Marco pulls himself up from

inside the mountain and is not on top of it. His body turns visible as he quickly begins to run. His body is moving so fast that he looks like a blur of energy. The weapon disappears through the molecule on his arm and returns with the rest of the levitating spikes on his back. The molecule on his left arm is missing. Another spike from a different area on his back floats upwards, changes direction and passes through his right molecule. A lime glowing green weapon forms in his hand. The weapon looks organic with light particles moving around inside of it.



The three cubfighters fire their green lasers simultaneously and they merge and hit the mountain behind Marco. A white energy leaves the cubfighters' bodies and quickly rides the laser down to the mountain. Marco is running on top of the mountain and his feet thump the ground shaking the entire mountain. The entire mountain explodes under his feet and he leaps into the air at the last second. Marco's left red molecule is rotating and floating about a ½ mile to the left of him in the sunlight. Rocks and fire explode around Marco's body as he falls. He fires three green projectiles from his exotic weapon without even aiming it at the red molecule. The molecule redirects the projectiles towards the three cubfighters levitating together. The molecule slightly changes directions in milliseconds. The cubfighters are hit from behind and quickly drop towards the exploding mountain. They go down and the fire explodes upwards. All three crash into the fiery mountain at high speed. Marco lands on the ground below; there is a loud thud and energy disperses in different directions. His knees bend slightly and he quickly runs towards

Bellona. His weapon disappears and floats around towards his back again. Rocks and debris continue to fly in all directions. He dodges medium-sized fiery rocks as they fall. The mountain Marco was on is completely destroyed. Dozens of diamond-shaped flames form towards the sky. Marco hears debris hitting the other mountain and rolling to the ground. Fire and rocks completely cover the path behind them.

Sunlight appears again around Bellona and Marco as they run together across a rocky field. The three cubfighters that fell towards the mountain were not completely destroyed and quickly fly from the fire. Suddenly the bright sunlight fades away. Something dark is blocking most of the sunlight from the galactic bulge and local star. It looks as if a double eclipse just took place. There is a slight glow coming from where the bright light was. There is a low screeching sound coming from behind them. Jaden begins to gag and suffocate for air.

An army of one hundred beetled blisters start coming out of different holes in the large mountain behind them. Their arms extend like legs and they run like a quadrupedal animal. The blisters have another layer over their bodies like synthetic suits. A half dozen seven foot skelborgs run behind the blisters. The skelborg's have transparent bodies. Their slightly white glowing bone structure can be seen through their synthetic skin and muscles. Their outer suits are invisible to the average eye. In their right hands are glowing green plasma swords. The blisters fire their yellow lasers toward the rescuers. Jaden and his new friends helping him reach a small hill. They turn around to see the blisters from a distance. The yellow beams strike around them, bombarding the mountainside with debris. Small light particles appear around their bodies as they jump up and float towards the top. The cubfighters coordinate their fire together into one brown laser beam. The beam creates small diamond-shaped flames around it and hits them directly. The force propels their bodies into the side of the mountain. Bellona has Jaden over her right shoulder and her left hand pushes off from going into the mountain. The powerful beam strongly disrupts their shield energy. They change direction and they begin running up the mountain. Hundreds of small rocks fall down the mountain. Marco's shields begin to get weaker as he runs faster towards the plateau area. Jaden goes into cardiac arrest and stops gagging as Bellona quickly runs up the mountain. Something sharp like a needle leaves Bellona's arm and goes into Jaden's vein. Fluid quickly enters his bloodstream.

The plateau area they are trying to reach has boulders and rocks falling over it. Suddenly the ground starts to shake all around like a magnitude 6.0 earthquake. On the far right of the large mountain is a smaller one that is about two miles from Jaden. The top half of the

mountain explodes and creates a large mushroom cloud into the mostly carbon dioxide atmosphere. A UFO with a blue molecule around its hull quickly comes out of the mountain emitting the matrix plasma beams. A second ship follows with a purple molecule around its hull. This ship looks identical to the one Jaden was flying. The trotting blisters stop running and look back at the large explosion from the mountain. It rains dirt, metallic rocks and debris into all directions.

Marco makes it to the plateau area first, which is about 120 feet from the ground. Boulders completely cover the area. Light particles come from his molecules and move through the boulders. He quickly changes his energy shield into a long horizontal rectangular shape that goes under the boulders. Marco's body goes semi-invisible and runs through the huge boulders.

The UFOs fire cannon rounds at the cubfighters. The cubfighters' shields glow pink. The UFOs fire two sets of yellow torpedoes that split into two more sets. The cubs fire dozens of red lasers towards the torpedoes. The torpedoes create their own energy shield around themselves. The red laser slows down the torpedoes causing them to break into pieces. The cubs fire mini red cubes the size of a paperback book. The glowing cubes synchronize their shield draining green lasers at the UFOs. The UFO ships quickly dodge the incoming green lasers. The torpedoes form back together hitting the cubfighters. The nanobots in the torpedoes eat away at the cubs' energy shield, creating holes in it. The cubs take cover by retreating in different directions. The two UFOs go after them.

Two of the four robotic aliens use their thrusters on the bottom of their feet and arms to go airborne.

Bellona is standing invisible and absorbing incoming fire. Her body quickly turns -200°F and Jaden's body instantly freezes. Marco begins to lift the entire boulder area with the horizontal energy shield. The area shakes and a forty square foot horizontal shield lifts with hundreds of tons of boulders on it. He lifts it over his head and Bellona runs under it with frozen Jaden in her arms. Two flying skelborgs fire their primary weapon from 250 feet away. Four bright orange balls propel towards the plateau at 300 feet per second.

Bellona places Jaden on the ground; he lays there as if he is inside of a coffin made of clear energy. Marco holds the boulders and horizontal shield with his left hand. His right hand disappears and the large weapon appears. It lights up aqua blue and a projectile is fired towards the orange balls. Bellona also fires an invisible energy from her right arm. They

destroy three of the four projectiles. The last one explodes near them knocking them backwards. The powerful blast propels their bodies across the ground and the area is engulfed with fire and strong winds. Bellona continues to concentrate on her shield energy around Jaden. Marco lays flat on his back and the horizontal shield quickly falls within two inches of his face, but he holds it up with two hands. Bellona and Marco's bodies are on fire and take damage as they both lift the horizontal shield with boulders on top of it. The skelborgs charge their primary weapon system. Marco walks towards the edge of the plateau area, while holding onto the boulders above him with his left hand. He stands there, a huge flaming warrior. Bellona holds the horizontal shield area from the middle of the plateau area with two hands over her. The army of blisters beneath him stands up on their hind legs and continue to fire towards Marco. His body takes several direct hits. Marco swings his right arm forward near the horizontal shield and downwards. A congregation of glowing huge rocks propels from overhead and move in sync with Marco's arm movement. The rocks head towards the ground at 1000 feet per second. They slightly glow as they bombard the army of blisters. Several blisters are struck and the rest aim at the rocks. They dodge and roll to avoid being hit. The high-speed rocks create holes in the ground and debris explodes in different directions. Marco's right arm spins clockwise in 360° rotations and some rocks continue to move like cannonballs.

The fire burning in all directions shows fiery images of two other advanced looking UFOs parked behind Bellona and Marco. Microbots are in the fire attacking their bodies. Their spaceships are parked to the far right and left of the plateau area, UFO3 sits on the left side and UFO4 sits on the right. The ships have completely flat bodies and six separate floating pieces connect the ship together. There are red lightning particles in the middle and front of the UFOs. There are floating ball particles spinning under the ship and through the rings of each red molecule. A clear wave of energy from UFO3 suddenly spreads into different directions putting out the sphere-shaped fire like a fire extinguisher. The clear wave of energy contains a trillion nanobots to fight the 500 billion microbots in the fire. Bellona walks towards her exotic flat UFO4 ship and a giant red molecule appears and comes out towards her. It leaves the ship and moves over her body and creates a red light as bright as a red dwarf star. The energy balls are quickly moving around the molecule tracks. Her entire body glows red and turns as bright as the sun. The light can be seen for miles as a long flash of bright light. Marco stops firing the projectile rocks towards the blisters. He realizes the blisters are able to dodge each rock and he needs something that delivers a harder impact. The skelborgs fire their orange projectiles towards the red light from a distance. UFO4 fires a few cannon rounds,

from the top of the red molecule. It passes over Jaden's frozen body and towards the orange projectiles. They collide and there is an explosion. Marco tilts and curves the horizontal shield with his right arm, into a 90° angle. Tons of rock slowly crushes together as one side is held vertically. Marco looks up into the sky as if he is doing calculations.

Everything is happening so fast. The bright red light fades back into the molecule and it goes back into the ship. Bellona's body changes into a more reflective chrome tone. There are trillions of white particles quickly moving all around and inside her metallic skin. There are alien symbols all over her body that resemble tattoos that look as if they are in 3D. The joints on her wrists, knees, upper arms, elbow, waist and neck aren't attached to her body and levitate between one-half to two inches. Magnetic energy separates and holds her joints into place. There is a small red molecule moving up and down on both of her arms. Small chrome fingernails slowly grow from her six fingers. She is still partially covering her face and looks as if she is ready for battle. She quickly runs over to pick up Jaden and puts him into her ship. In the meantime, Marco swings his right arm up the vertical side of the shield containing the rocks and boulders. Rocks the size of basketballs shoot into the sky at 900 mph. Marco continues to swing and propels hundreds into the dark sky and some the size of a car. The skelborgs fire towards Marco. The blisters fire their weapons towards Marco, when they figure out what he is doing.

Suddenly, a larger shield appears around the entire plateau area in the shape of a huge contact lens. Marco's ship is creating the large shield. The other two orange balls explode outside the larger shield, creating fire and a shock wave all around the mountain. More large rocks fall from high above the plateau area and into Marco's 90° energy shield pile.

The blisters begin climbing the side of the mountain. Marco finishes launching several thousand tons of rocks into the atmosphere of the planet. His horizontal and vertical shield disappears. His ship quickly extends the shield over the area the boulders were at. Two skelborgs are floating outside the shield area and pink glowing cubes come from their chest areas. The cubes quickly spin in circles around each other, emitting an infrared beam towards the shield. It slowly breaks down the atoms in the shield in a two-foot area.

The bright gigantic bulge sunlight is still blocked by something making the area dark as if it was night. Three cubfighters can be seen exploding in the far background with UFOs 1 and 2 flying behind them. Bellona sees the skelborgs trying to penetrate the shield with their anti-

shield weapons to drop a bomb inside. Suddenly a rock comes from the sky at 9500 mph and lands where the blisters are, just missing one. The resulting sound echoes and a three-foot crater is created in the ground. The gravity of the planet increased the force of the boulders and rocks Marco fired into the upper atmosphere. They begin to rain down over the area. Bellona runs and her body goes invisible. Her personal shield forms around her body. She leaps into the air and her shield passes through the larger shield. The shield disappears and her body slowly begins to rotate 360°. She puts her two fists together and pulls them apart. She forms two identical sword-like weapons from her fists. Everything is happening so fast and the skelborgs see two spinning swords coming at them. The sword has baby blue lightning jumping around a yellow light that extends two and a half feet long. The lightning jumps two inches and bounces back from a small clear shield surrounding both weapons keeping the energy intact. There are millions of anti-hydrogen glowing particles moving around the outside on the sword creating a smoky haze. Her body is spinning in circles and her arms are straight out. She quickly swings and cuts apart the cubes. The skelborgs see Bellona coming towards them and quickly react. The dark sky lights up like a meteor show as the rocks rain down. The blisters on the side of the plateau area are trying to dig through the rocks under the shield area.

Bellona quickly swings at the skelborg's head, cutting its head off before it could draw its weapon. She misses the other one. A trail of white smoke comes from the ground and up towards Bellona's spinning body. Her body looks like a glowing spinning T. The other skelborg she passed aims its primary weapon at her. She tosses the sword in her right hand towards the ground. Dozens of lasers are passing by Bellona; she collects some of them into the sword on her left hand. She fires a semi-invisible force from her right hand at the skelborg as it fires an orange projectile. The force makes the projectile explode and propels the skelborg's body into the shield covering the plateau area. The explosive fire and the pro-gravity force of her weapon makes the side of the mountain crumble and pulls the Blisters body down the side of the mountain. The blisters try to hug the wall and hide in their shells, but it is too late. Screeching echoes in all directions as they all slam into the ground at three times their body weight.

Rocks and boulders rain from the sky in a blur of light, hitting dozens of blisters. They come down in a loud whistling sound that echoes between the surrounding mountains. The high-speed projectiles smash into the iron-metallic ground creating holes. The impacts echo for miles and sound like landmines going off. Bellona's body stops spinning and she falls towards the ground, while catching her spinning second

sword. She lands on a blister crushing it into the ground, like Mario steps on a turtle in *Super Mario Brothers*. She crouches from the impact and her face looks as if she is ready for battle. She is in the middle of a mob of blisters, fleeing to get out of the way of the raining projectiles. They gallop to take cover against nearby mountains. The high-speed boulders and projectiles bombard the area. Three remaining skelborgs fly by overhead and two fly down towards Bellona with glowing plasma swords in their hands. All three of their chest areas glow green as if they are charging a weapon together. UFO1 lands on the plateau area.

Dozens of lasers are being shot by the blisters towards Bellona while they seek cover. The swords absorb the energy of the yellow lasers. Bellona accelerates at high speed and moves in milliseconds. Her body also quickly rotates on its knees for faster turnaround time. The joints on her arms enable them to rotate in 360° angles and to intercept dozens of lasers a second into the two swords. Her hips and waist has magnetic energy around them helping her to rotate her flexible body. Bellona is moving so fast that everything seems to be happening in slow motion around her. From a distance, she looks like a blur of silver light. A boulder the size of a sumo wrestler comes directly over her. She turns and moves out of the way and it hits the ground where she was standing. The shock wave of sound from the impact slowly echoes in all directions. The debris and sand explode upwards in slow motion from around the impact areas. Bellona dodges lasers while striking several nearby slow moving blisters. Her swords begin to glow bright yellow from all of the lasers that went into it. She dodges another rock impact within inches. The skelborgs are moving at high speed as well, and dodge the missile rocks while getting closer to Bellona. Her right arm spins around to the other side of her body collecting the yellow lasers.

The skelborgs on the ground are twenty-five feet in front of her. The skelborg flying above beams a bright green laser from its chest towards teammates on the ground. The skelborgs on the ground fire two bright green matter beams from their chest at near light speeds towards Bellona. She quickly somersaults forward into the air, while leaving her legs below her knees on the ground. Rocks and debris still exploding in the air, harmlessly bounce off her body. She tucks in her upper legs and narrowly misses the first and second beams by inches. The green beams create a hole through several mountains behind her for miles. Bellona also just misses being hit by another boulder projectile. The red molecules on her arms rest in the opening at her wrists. While somersaulting in thousands of millisecond revolutions, she throws her swords at the two skelborgs in front of her. Her hands leave her body and propel with the swords at breakneck speeds. Thrust explodes from the

red molecules at the end of her hands like rockets. The swords cut through floating sand and debris. Her body stops spinning and quickly descends towards the ground and magnetic energy pulls her legs on the ground back towards her knees. The skelborgs quickly activate their shields and the swords explode on impact into a huge explosion of fire, yellow light and blue lightning.

The skelborgs fall back from the explosion and sustain damage. The explosion temporarily disrupts their defense and shield systems. Bellona's nanobots infiltrate the two skelborgs' bodies as she charges towards them in a blur. Her arms flip around 180° and another pair of hands form. The skelborgs quickly get up off the ground and the one still levitating above them aims its arms at Bellona. She puts her hands together and forms two swords full of red particles of energy. She spins around, just missing another rock projectile. Bellona's red swords strike the skelborgs' plasma swords and there is a spark of light flashing. They separate to two sides of Bellona. She blocks and swings at both of them as they do the same. Bellona is blocking behind her as well as in front of her with her fast moving magnetic joints. Marco places Jaden's frozen cocooned body into UFO1. The inside temperature drops below -300°F.

The skelborg above catches Bellona in an invisible tractor beam and pulls her body upwards a few inches. The two around her try to strike her simultaneously. The alien behind Bellona strikes towards her leg and her left knee extends a few inches and the plasma weapon harmlessly passes between them. She uses pro-gravity energy in her feet to pull her to the surface as she quickly jumps and flips to the right avoiding a rock projectile the size of a fifteen-inch television. She comes down and quickly cuts off the left arm of the skelborg in front of her. It continues to swing its weapon with its right arm. The light particles are quickly moving around in her skin. She is done toying with the skelborgs as Marco signals her. Her entire back area down to her legs, glows bright white and a duplicate body comes out of her back. The identical faster moving body of Bellona comes swinging at the one-handed skelborg with two swords. Her stunt double quickly blocks the sword strikes and cuts the skelborg from the bottom up. Bellona continues to fight the second skelborg in front of her, while dipping and dodging the hot plasma sword. Bellona's wings form on her back. Her stunt double quickly turns around and runs towards Bellona. Bellona quickly bends down on her knees and arches her back over. The stunt double leaps off her back while taking Bellona's wings with it. The last of the rocks and boulder projectiles fall.

Bellona leans up and the skelborg in front of her is completely frozen. The nanobots infected its entire system. Bellona's stunt double

goes after the last skelborg that has stopped using its tractor beam. The stunt double kicks off a high-speed boulder projectile in less than five milliseconds and propels itself towards the flying skelborg. The boulder projectile lands directly on the skelborg in front of Bellona, destroying it. Debris slowly flies around Bellona and her body shakes from the impact. The skelborg behind Bellona splits into two pieces and explodes. Her stunt double is about forty-five feet above her and is quickly flying and flapping its wings towards the last skelborg. The stunt double looks as if it is getting weak. It reaches the shield generating skelborg with a plasma sword in its hand. A midair battle begins. The stunt double's two swords instantly disintegrate when it touches the skelborg's energy shield. The skelborg lowers its shield and stabs the double through the chest. The hot plasma sword comes out the other side, between the flapping wings. There is no reaction from the stunt double as silver liquid pours down its lower back. The double quickly wraps its arms around the skelborg, stopping it from retracting the weapon or moving its arms. They look at each other face to face as the skelborg struggles. The light particle wings begin to flap as fast as a housefly's. It pulls them both into a backwards direction. The skelborg tries to fight it with its thrusters. The thrusters extend five feet down and burn the double's legs. The mask over the double's face disappears. The double puts its face close to the skelborg's face and kisses it. The wings continue to flap while completely confusing the skelborg. Suddenly they are both struck down by a high-speed boulder the size of a living room sofa. There are two explosions as the boulder hits the ground. Debris, fire and light particles explode into different directions.

Twenty seconds has passed since Bellona jumped down from the plateau area. Time speeds up around Bellona and debris and rocks land fall towards the ground around her. She walks over a surface that resembles Earth's moon. Bellona is weak from the battle and the light particles are slowly moving around her body. Her joints aren't levitating. The boulder spot where her stunt double was destroyed glows silver. The silver energy moves across the ground and back into Bellona's feet. The fifty-five remaining blisters that sought shelter on the side of nearby mountains notice the raining rocks have stopped. They begin firing their lasers towards Bellona again. Some gallop and some run on two feet towards her, while firing. The shield around her body absorbs the yellow lasers.

The angry blisters run up around Bellona while continuing to fire. They form a circle around her and begin to stand on top of each other like stadium seats. Her knees bend from the hundreds of lasers quickly hitting her shield. She lays down defenseless on her stomach. The shield

shrinks down and turns the color of the yellow beams. Yellow and grey particles begin quickly moving around the inside shield area. The particles collide into each other. The energy shields disappear into a bright flash of light. The flash of yellow light is brighter than the sun and turns everything in the surrounding area yellow. Her body explodes into thousands of pieces straight into space. The blisters fall to the ground and on top of each other. Eight of the closest blisters die from the explosion. Most are on their backs. They look around and into the sky to see what happened. Hundreds of glowing silver projectiles rain down directly on the confused blisters. They try to lie down and cover themselves with their strong armor backs, but it is too late. The silver matter burns and implodes their bodies as each one of them screeches in pain. The sound echoes into all directions. A sizzling sound can be heard from the dying bodies like eggs in a frying pan.

All the blisters lay motionless on the ground. A clear film and silver matter comes from their dead bodies from all directions. The glowing matter forms back together in one place. It continues to form together and forms back into Bellona. Her eyes light up and red hair comes out of her head. She has her yellow energy sword in her left hand. There are dozens of bodies all around her, most inside of craters. Lightning comes from all directions. The white lightning lands in the palm of her right hand and slowly forms a sphere of bright energy. Her semi-visible wings are floating over her back. UFO2 can be seen firing at a cubfighter ship in the far background. Her magnetic joints return around her body, along with her two red molecules. There are a few marks around Bellona's body. Suddenly the sunlight from the local star and galactic bulge shines down on Bellona and around the planet. The lightning energy dissolves into her right hand. Something small and dark is quickly falling towards the planet from space.



She leaps into the air and anti-gravity particles move around her body. Her wings slowly move back and forth as she flies towards the plateau area. It looks like a black meteorite. She reaches the top and forms her own shield. She passes through the larger shield still protecting the three UFOs there. Marco walks up to Bellona to see if she is okay. The black meteorite crashes into the ground about 500 feet away. The crashing sound bounces against the mountains and causes avalanches. Rocks fall onto the top of the shield. Bellona and Marco turn around, and walk towards the edge of the plateau and look down. Debris and rocks sit midair and appear frozen in time around this black object. The all black, shiny object looks like a huge alien with four arms. It has some human features around its body. Its left leg is bending across the ground while its right leg is kneeling. Its head is bowing down and looks as if it is praying towards the plateau area. Its two lower arms and hands are touching the ground to the sides. The mysterious alien's upper arms and hands have two swords in them; and point straight outwards. The swords have mysterious dark flames moving around. There are also weird alien symbols along both sides of each sword. Bellona gets angry and forms her swords. Her wings extend from her back and she is about to leap towards this unknown alien. Marco quickly reaches out and grabs her shoulder to stop her. She stops in her tracks and looks at Marco and they communicate in milliseconds. Bellona turns back towards the ships and Marco continues to stand there.

Bellona checks on Jaden and Marco's UFO3 ship hovers towards him from behind. His body turns semi-invisible and his ship passes

through him. His body disappears into his ship and they both take off through the shield. Suddenly all the rocks and debris that were frozen in the air are sucked into its body and disappear. Small dark flames appear over its shoulders and upper arms. Bellona sees this through a nanoeye and can't believe what she is seeing. It stands up straight to about ten feet tall and looks up towards the plateau area. This alien life form has no face, just a head and red glowing eyes. It has a human-shaped body structure and pure evil is the vibe it gives off as it begins to walk forward. UFO3 quickly returns to the area and meets up with UFO4. They levitate about 400 feet away from the ground over the threat. They each fire their cannons and four torpedo weapons from the top and bottom of their molecules.



It is a direct hit and there is an explosion of fire that extends upwards. The fire, debris, and explosion force is sucked into this black alien as it continues walking at the same pace unaffected. The rescue team can't believe what they are seeing. Bellona gets into her ship and her red molecule begins to move around her ship. The ship Jaden is in also forms its purple molecule.

The rescue team coordinates an attack. UFO4 and 1 fire from the plateau area a total of four red torpedoes and two bright yellow torpedoes. The torpedoes spin around and come up behind UFOs 2 and 3. UFOs 2 and 3 fire the same amount of torpedoes and they merge together into a torpedo as bright as the sun and as huge as a Volkswagen car. There is a very loud whistling sound. There is a very huge explosion and

light is everywhere. The planet shakes and rumbles like a magnitude 9.0 earthquake. Light and electricity is going into the air. A shock wave of energy expands into all directions. The mountains around the dark alien shake and rock avalanches fall down towards it. The large shield goes around the plateau area again, as it absorbs the powerful simultaneous shock waves of nuclear bomb forces. Fire and debris engulf the entire area for miles around. Everything is obliterated for miles around. A stream of fire in the shape of a diamond shoots into the sky. The sunlight from the local star is clouded by debris and fire. Avalanches of rocks and boulders fall from the mountains and topple all over the area below. Tops of mountains crumble down towards the surface and cover the impact area. The plateau area is bombarded with rocks and boulders. They land on top of the shield being created by UFO4 and 1.

Suddenly there is a low growling sound and fire begins to pull back down towards the impact area. The team uses nanoscanners to investigate what is under the rumble. They see the dark alien standing and levitating over a hundred square foot deep crater. Its four arms are in the air and its head looks up as if it is angry. It yells as if it is in a lot of pain. Dark flames about two feet high extend from its upper body. Rocks and boulders begin to rotate clockwise around it. Everything is being sucked into the dark, shiny alien along with a pair of nanoscanners that got too close. It begins to run and destroys rocks in its path. It jumps and floats up towards the plateau area.

It walks straight through the energy shield unfazed. The angry alien runs towards the parked UFOs and attacks them. It attacks UFO1 and walks right through it. It looks around confused and runs towards UFO4. Again, it walks right through the UFO as if they aren't there. It looks around confused. Suddenly the shield around the plateau area disappears, large boulders and rocks fall over the area, burying the dark alien. UFOs 1 and 4 are hovering above the mountain invisible and turn off their reimage technology. All four UFOs fire at the mountain creating another large explosion. They quickly take off and fly above the cloud of dust and debris. Some small, dark material flies down towards the explosion from different directions. The UFOs fly in formation and enter the upper atmosphere. Something is following them from the planet. The still slightly damaged UFO1 attaches and piggybacks to UFO4. They fly in the formation of a pyramid, UFO1 and 4 in the front, and UFO2 and 3 slightly lower to the sides. They reach above the planet and many distant stars can be seen against the bright sky. Two light sources shine on them. A black comet is chasing them from the planet. The UFOs change direction towards the local red star and enter light speed. At 185,900 miles a second, the UFOs move together as a long spaceship. This dark comet quickly catches up to them. It too is moving at the speed of light.

UFO3 and 4 fire a red projectile at the dark comet. But it does nothing and keeps coming towards them gaining momentum. They fire a combined laser of different colors from each molecule and the powerful beam is absorbed into the dark abyss. It continues to move closer towards them.

The UFOs change paths from the nearby star and fly towards the rest of the solar system. UFOs 2 and 3 get closer and connect to 4, while UFO1 is still being piggy backed on UFO4. The ships glow while a larger vortex electromagnetic shield is created all around them. Their tails come off and morph into one larger silver tail. There is a huge explosion of colorful light from the tail. Their speed increases past light speed and the light around them begins to fade behind them. They reach 286,000 miles a second. The black comet fades far behind. The UFOs begin to rotate and go semi-invisible. Nanoscanners create a small hole in front of the UFOs. The ships break down into quadrillions and quadrillions of atoms. They enter the artificial subspace wormhole created by thousands of nanoscanners and disappear into the darkness of space.

EARTH NOVEMBER 2001

Underground at a top-secret military base in the Nevada desert, Peters walks up to Robinson and gives him a piece of paper.

"Where is my hundred dollars? The LRSB transmitted a signal to Earth this morning. I knew that ship was still alive and not destroyed," Peters says.

"LRSB? Was that UFO09 or UFO10?" Robinson asks.

"That was UFO08, five years ago," Peters says.

"Yeah, I remember now, the exotic UFO that got away from us back in 1996, that cost us our promotions and made a mockery of the Air Force."

Robinson reads the paper with an astonished look on his face.

"Unbelievable, it transmitted a perfect signal from the Milky Way center, 28,098 light-years from here. That is unbelievable. That ship must be still flying around a thousand times the speed of light, unbelievable. One hundred dollars? The bet was before the year 2000."

"Come on sir, you still lost."

"Yeah yeah. I'll pay you later. Double or nothing for another signal in the next five years..."

Chapter 5: The Truth

It is completely dark around Jaden and he hears a howling wind sound. Suddenly a bright light appears at a far distance in front of him. A light particle quickly flies by him and it sounds like the strings of a harp being struck all together. He suddenly sees millions of other light particles quickly moving towards the light all around him. He looks down and his body is a light particle. His floating, uncontrollable, weightless body glides towards the light, but at a slow speed. Jaden sees stars far in the background around him. He feels very cold as if he is immersed in ice water. Jaden hears voices echoing around him from all directions. He looks down at his glowing hands and legs made of pure light particles.

"This isn't his time. I sense his destiny has not been fulfilled and he has a long journey before him," a robotic female voice says.

Jaden turns in different directions while listening to the voices echo. The light gets closer and he begins to get warmer.

"This unknown soul is needed like the rest and isn't anything special," an older man's voice says.

"I sense two anomalies in his twelve dimensions of matter strings configuration," a younger man with a soft voice says.

The bright light in front of him gets brighter and brighter.

"Something that needs to be further analyzed and corrected," the older man says.

"This universe continues to be unbalanced and there is a shift in the gravitational structure from that sector," the echoing robotic female voice says.

"For the past 100,000 years, we have only been receiving twenty-five percent of organic intelligent souls from that sector," the old man says.

"This has no relevance to this situation. He is needed in his mortal body and I sense a journey of several lifetimes before him. The anomaly in his string matter is the makings of a legendary good force," the robotic female says.

"Or the making of an evil unstoppable force..."

There is a long silence in the voices. The bright light is right before Jaden. Vibrating strings of the harp quickly pass him in the form of light particles. They quickly go into the bright, circular white light. His light body slows down and begins to go backwards. His light particles begin to stretch as his body moves faster and faster from the light. His light continues to stretch. The cold returns and hits his body like a snowstorm.

"I know you can't hear me or remember this when you return. But, your journey has just begun and you must create and choose your own destiny. Goodbye young carbon mortal," the robotic female voice yells

His body is quickly moving backwards and the light disappears. Everything goes blurry and then dark.

2.3 MILLION LIGHT-YEARS FROM EARTH
ANDROMEDA GALAXY – PLANET XENOS

There are sounds of children playing in the background. Jaden is breathing heavily and coughing. Cold chills move around his body. His mind thinks back to where he was dying and couldn't breathe. The sound of his coughing echoes around him. The smell of fresh baked chocolate cookies floods the air. He is lying in bed, covered up. He opens his eyes and everything is white and bright all around him. His blue pupils get smaller and adjust to the brightness. He quickly sits up and the sheets fall to his waist. He tries to catch his breath and breathes heavily while holding his chest. The bright sunlight is shining through the window nearby. His eyes begin to tear up as he listens to what is around him. He feels different as if he is outside of his body again. He is lying on a bed that resembles the one in his bedroom. He turns and looks around the room. Jaden notices this is the cleanest he has ever seen his room. However, he quickly realizes this is not his room. Everything is missing in this room; it's just an empty white room that is 20 feet by 20 feet. The window is to the left of him. It reminds him of a movie set. The window by the bed reminds him when he was fifteen years old. A time when he would fall asleep at night looking into the stars wondering if his older brother was safe. The sounds of children playing outside the window near him fade away. He looks out his window and doesn't see any kids, just an empty playground. It becomes quiet and he can feel wind on his face from all directions. He can actually hear his heart beating in stereo around him. The smell of fresh cookies disappears. This confusion is making Jaden nervous.

The room smells different, like the forest on a misty day. He knocks off the white bedspread and white sheet covering him onto the floor. He turns to his right with his feet off the bed. Jaden notices he is wearing a robe and he is barefoot. He feels different. It is as if he just came out of the shower, since he appears to be naked under the robe. A taste of slightly salty water is in his mouth and on his tongue. His body feels weird as he stands up. He feels dizzy and tries to catch his balance. He quickly sits back down on the bed. The room is spinning around him and his eyes lose focus. Jaden is beyond confused as to what is going on. He has broken memories about what has happened to him up until now. Suddenly something appears on the other side of the room. He tries to focus in on this silver creature with many legs and many blurry heads. He wipes his eyes and focuses again and he sees a four-legged animal walking towards him. There is a trail of light dust particles following its

body. It gets closer and resembles a silver lion with white glowing eyes. The metallic silver body has a thin layer of fur over the skin. The animal is about four feet high and seven feet long. Its feet, face, body and shape look like a lion from earth. Its seven chrome whiskers on each side of its face extend two feet out. The tail is chrome and slowly wags back and forth as it walks. A soft female voice speaks and echoes all around Jaden's ears.

"You know a lion goes back 32,000 years in your species. This standard universal lion structure is recognized on millions of planets in your galaxy and mine. These animals adapt differently on different planets and look different; but they all represent strength, bravery, royalty, a warrior and survival of the fittest...."

The four-legged alien lion stops about seven feet in front of Jaden on the bed. Jaden is puzzled, but recognizes the voice. He isn't afraid of the animal that isn't moving its mouth to talk. He is mesmerized by the lion's size and beauty. The animal has Bellona's colors and reminds him of her.

"They can be tamed, trained, but best of all they go on instinct and adapt to any environment..."

"Bellona, is that you?" Jaden asks.

There is a few seconds delay.

"Yes it is me...but I'll change to an image you are more used too and more suitable."

The lion morphs into a standing image and body of Bellona. A breeze of air passes by Jaden's face and body. He has a stunned look on his face. Her silver body isn't glowing and she has a face now. She has a small nose and a mouth that resembles a white female. She looks at Jaden and pauses for a second. Her eyes are different than he remembers. They are now white with blue pupils that slightly glow. They are still slightly wide and look slightly Asian. She now has black and silver hair that comes down to her shoulders. She looks more human now. Her body is missing the exotic tattoo symbols around it. Bellona still has mannequin breasts and five fingers with shiny clear nails.

"Okay, how did you do that?" Jaden asks.

"We are in a virtual city and anybody can be whoever they want."

"Virtual city?"

"I will explain later what I mean. Kind of hard to explain, with all the confusion in your mind."

"Okay, what are you alien people?" Jaden asks straightforwardly.

"We are Andromedians..."

"Why are you named after a galaxy? Why Andromedians?"

"To ourselves and other advanced species, we are named as long digital numbers and codes. We call ourselves according to what intelligence level an alien species is at. Your computers can easily

understand our digital name, but is very hard for your organic brains to memorize. Since we are the first alien species your human race has been in contact with, using a name that is familiar with our location was the logical choice....”

“That was a little condescending, but okay,” Jaden snaps.

“You want to remember fifty characters filled with symbols and 3D numbers?”

“No, that’s okay,” Jaden says.

“Well, as I was saying, we are Andromedians and we are part of a very large colony and alliance of species. Our planet consists of about 10,000 Andromedians and 100 guest alien beings like you. Our biomechanical bodies are created by us and used outside of our planet. Our life starts at a trillionth of an inch. We don’t have any children, so we do not reproduce naturally. Our technology is based around nanotechnology. We transfer from body to body. We have two types of bodies we use. We all have our standard biomechanical warrior bodies for fighting and traveling outside of our planet. Then we have virtual bodies that we use in our city here. This is how I’m able to morph into something else just on pure thought. These bodies can change from day to day. Our brain systems are stored on silicon- nanites. This allows us to control our bodies, ships, and other things. It also allows us to save our memories and information just in case the body dies by being destroyed. Our bodies self repair and last for thousands of years. Many of us are tens of thousands of years old.”

“What is wrong with my body? What is going on and why am I here? Why does my body look and feel so different? What galaxy and planet am I on?” Jaden asks in a slightly elevated tone.

There are ten seconds of silence.

“Sorry Jaden, I have to translate your words into our language and it takes a little time to respond. The process will improve. All of your questions will be answered. Just sit back and relax for now. You’ve been through a lot,” she says.

Jaden relaxes on the bed, but has his head towards Bellona.

“You are on Planet 202-555, but in the English language we will call it planet Xenos. Planet Xenos is in the galaxy you call Andromeda. We are 5200 light-years from our galaxy’s center that you call the galactic bulge or galaxy center. We are approximately 2.3 million light-years from your planet, Earth. Your body looks different, because your original body is still being repaired,” she says.

“Repaired?” He asks.

“Yes, repaired. What do you last remember?”

Jaden thinks to himself for a second.

“I was being carried by Marco and you. I was tossed around like a rag doll or stuffed animal...” Jaden is interrupted.

“Stuffed animal?”

“Just a figure of speech,” Jaden says, as he continues. “As I was saying, I remember having trouble breathing and I couldn’t get any air. I was choking and we got to the top of a plateau area, then I remember falling to the ground and that’s it. Why is your name Bellona? Why that name?”

“Well really my name is many numbers and symbols translated into your language. Bellona was a name you came across in one of your 9th grade history books. She was a female warrior.”

“How do you know what was in my 9th grade history book? I can’t even remember that.”

“We have many details that happened in your life. We know your history, your past, and experiences. To answer your previous questions,” she pauses.

Amazing 3D images of Jaden display in the middle of the room, of when he was younger. Images of him playing as a toddler in a sandbox and images of him studying in the resource room in the 8th grade. The images quickly change to his human body that is currently being repaired. Jaden stands up from the bed and his feet touch the floor. The floor is warm, when he was anticipating it to be cold. The warm feelings pass around his temporary body. He walks over to the dazzling virtual display of his human body with images of his organs and nervous system.

“Your body was damaged from the very low oxygen on Planet 455. During your rescue your body died.....”

Jaden interrupts, “Died? I died?”

“Yes, you died, so your body had to be frozen. We didn’t have the, umm, tools and technology needed to help you at the time. This is why your lower body’s skin is a pale color,” Bellona says.

Jaden takes a deep breath.

“We are repairing your body now, cell by cell. So far, your undamaged brain has been restored. Every nerve, muscle fiber and spinal cord chemical messages are being bypassed to the artificial body you are in now. Billions of nanobots are helping with the remote transmissions from your brain. By the way Jaden, there is a faster way to communicate, but would require some practice on your end. Just think about the questions you want to ask, and I’ll respond telepathically. Using voice and sound communication is very primitive and takes longer. Practice just thinking about the question you want to ask and I’ll answer it in the middle of my conversation. But first, let me explain everything that is going on, so there are fewer questions for you to ask.....”

Jaden interrupts her with a telepathic question.

‘Yes, I can show you your body in the flesh,’ she says to him telepathically, but at a very fast rate.

‘You said it too fast. You sound like a tape recorder being fast forwarded,’ Jaden says telepathically.

‘I said I can show you your body. I’m sorry Jaden, our communication speed is very fast; I already had to slow it down considerably. Is this speed better?’

‘Yes!’

The entire room changes and his bed disappears behind him. He turns around and looks; Jaden hears bubbling sounds and he suddenly sees himself unconscious floating in a pool of clear water with billions of small bubbles moving in different directions. There is no glass around the water. The water is floating in a rectangular area about eight feet wide, twelve feet high and six feet in depth.

‘Your legs and lower body are shaking because we are attempting to reconnect your nervous system and bodily functions. You are naked because there isn’t an Old Navy within light-years from here,’ she says smiling.

Jaden laughs and she laughs.

‘We learned humor from many different species. In your species, it keeps people relaxed and lightens the mood. Is that better?’

‘Yes, but can you cover me up with something?’

‘You do not like your natural form?’

‘Well, in our society humans are only naked when we are showering, having sex or on a nude beach,’ Jaden says.

‘Having sex, what is that like?’ She asks.

‘It’s something when a man and women like each other, they express their feelings.’

‘I know what it means; I’m asking what is it like?’

‘Your alien species doesn’t have sex?’ Jaden asks.

There is an awkward thirty seconds of silence.

‘We do have your clothes, we are what you would call, dry cleaning them,’ she says while chuckling and then continuing, ‘Jaden let me explain what is going on with why you are here, so there are less questions and less confusion by you.’

‘You can call us Andromedians. My special unit team rescued you from Planet 455. Each of us has special capabilities in our warrior and external bodies. Similar to superheroes you see in your movies. The underground alien colony on 455 is part of a species called Darclonians. The Darclonians are a violent, manipulative, advanced robotic alien race. They have been known to recruit other species. They weren’t always a bad species. Let me explain how they came about. About 600,000 years ago and a couple of galaxies away, they were part of a bigger alien species called Delforbes. The Delforbes had organic brains and carbon-based bodies. They evolved much faster than most intelligent

civilizations. The robots they created on their planet became much smarter than they did. They had a revolution event in their own species called a technological singularity. They merged their biological brains with artificial intelligence and robot bodies. This new robotic species called themselves Robogods because of their superior thinking and advanced technology. They began duplicating themselves and colonizing non-life planets. They began traveling to many different galaxies, exploring as a good species, helping and spreading their technology to other species. The added artificial intelligence altered some of their logical thinking in their new bodies. Many thought killing, taking over weaker civilizations and manipulating them made more sense. The definition of their new name Robogods was taken out of context and was understood as a species who should be rulers and gods.'

'A civil war and power struggle ensued and each Robogod chose a side. The power hungry and ruling the weak half, took a path of evil, destruction and conquering many other species. They called themselves Darclonians and sought out others that believed in their ways. The remaining good half is in our alliance a few galaxies from here and they are still called Robogods. They are all robotic androids and are masters of computer technology. They can do high-speed calculations instantly. The Robogods banished the Darclonians away from their territories and nearby galaxies. The Darclonians swore revenge on the Robogods. The Robogods are very wise, peaceful and very helpful to other alien species.'

'Sometimes, Darclonians take over a species and use their bodies as their own. They have also been known to exterminate entire alien species. We were setting up a campaign to get rid of all the Darclonians, but other alliance nations couldn't agree on it. They are also known for cloning different species and using them for different experimental purposes. Over the years, they have been trying to get back to being in carbon-based organic bodies, for reasons unknown.'

'Very interesting, this is like hearing a bedtime story,' Jaden says.

Jaden walks over to his body and touches his leg through the water. His leg feels frozen, as his body looks very pale up close. She continues to talk, while he is amazed looking at himself.

'Our ship was on a set course to our planet, when the Darclonians captured it outside of Andromeda's galactic bulge center. Every galaxy center bulge has a matching super massive black hole. Each black hole is connected to another neighboring galaxy's black hole. Using the subspace under each black hole, we are able to travel from galaxy to galaxy in a fraction of the time. Usually it takes a couple of years to travel from galaxy to galaxy. The black hole in your Milky Way Galaxy

for some reason doesn't allow our biomechanical bodies to pass through them. Our transport system allows us to travel through and to many different galaxies.'

Jaden turns around and looks at her amazed. He thinks of more questions and she continues.

'Star to star is the local way of traveling inside of a galaxy. Some of our technology principles are similar to yours on Earth. Your technology with fiber optics involves breaking information into particles of light and sending it through a cable. On the other side of the cable, the signal is put back together. Our ships are broken down to a billionth of an inch and enter subspace. The tiny subspace hole is a fraction of a cubic inch. This requires lots of energy, so this is usually done near a star. Using a star's solar winds and nuclear fusion, our ships slingshot to the next star at 4-90 seconds a light-year. I hope this answers your question, now back to what I was previously saying.'

She is interrupted again.

'Yes, your body would be fine. We have dealt with many other species, similar to humans. Your brain structure is different, but carbon-based cell structure bodies are easy to repair. Time on Earth is currently about the year 2006 in the spring. Yes, ten years have passed for you. No, you're only about 1 month older. You don't age when your body is in billions of pieces and traveling through subspace. Time also slows down around you when you are traveling at light speeds as your brilliant scientist Albert Einstein figured out in his relativity theories. We are about 70,000 years more advanced than your species. We have traveled to many galaxies and seen countless astronomical events and encountered many species.'

'Good question, the chemical and electronic signals from your brain are being bypassed to your virtual artificial body here simultaneously. Your brain doesn't know the difference.'

'I feel a slight difference. This body just feels different; I can tell it's not me. I don't feel the same,' Jaden says.

'I'm sorry to hear that, it just takes some getting used to.'

A map of the galaxy is shown in 3D in the middle of the room. Jaden sees Andromeda's spiral galaxy and the Milky Way right next to each other slowly rotating.

'As I was saying; you were part of an experiment. Yes, an experiment. We were trying to find an average intelligent human with good vocabulary to bring back to our planet. If you remember, your mind was being read when you first encountered our UFO ship. You call it a UFO, but they are actually called EIS or Exoskeleton Intergalactic Spaceship. But you can call it a ship, UFO or EIS. The ship was looking for a human subject that had a great amount of knowledge of space and

science. The process usually takes days. However, your government compromised our ship, before the process was complete. Our ship decided you were the best candidate. The ship had very little time to prepare your body for space travel, since it was about to be captured. As you figured out, different stages were needed to prepare your body: 1. accelerated flight, 2. outer space, and 3. optic-warp. Usually all three stages are done before the ship takes off. The ship decided to see what you were capable of by letting you fly it yourself. The EIS has a portable artificial intelligent supercomputer. It is capable of flying itself, navigating, making its own decisions, and protecting itself. Unlike your computers and robots on Earth, our advanced artificial intelligence computer can be a companion like an Earth dog. It could be a male or female artificial intelligence. The EIS reacts to what the pilot is thinking. The speed of thought is translated into movements and directions. As you learned, you felt what the ship felt. The ship translated its dozens of external senses into your five senses.'

'As I was saying before, we abducted you. I'm sorry, wrong choice of words. I guess it was more you went willingly, since you decided to enter the ship on your own. The experiment was to first see if your body could make it through your black hole and form back to normal with the ship on the other side. Our bodies have always been destroyed when we tried to enter your galaxy's black hole. Yes, our biomechanical bodies only. The rest of the ship would re-assemble normally. We have been unable to fully investigate why. No, each ship is required to contain a biomechanical body when traveling outside our planet; that has always been our rules. Except if special permission is given as in your case. No, it would take too many millions of light-years to travel around the galaxy and not use our traveling system. Our ships can only travel at around the speed of light. Einstein's Theory of Relativity is somewhat accurate for ships in a full matter form. A ship would have to produce a powerful electromagnetic force field around it to go faster than light speed. That would be temporary and not long distance. It will still take too long to travel from galaxy to galaxy without using a galactic center black hole. Other alien species have other ways of traveling through space faster, but our method is more reliable.'

Bellona pauses for a few seconds, and then continues, 'Yes, we do have that same Andromedian body transporting problem in one other nearby galaxy. But we haven't sent a regular ship through there yet. We try to stay local within ten local galaxies. No, we do not clone species here; that is against our law and belief. No, your questions are not annoying me. Your thought process is very interesting to us. We welcome your questions, there is no rush. You making it here has interested thousands. Your human body has survived many vigorous

tests. Many are watching our interaction with as we speak. Yes, they are watching right now. There are about 20,000 nanoeyes in this room watching us.' Bellona pauses.

'Hello Jaden,' hundreds of voices say at the same time, as Jaden puts his hands around his head.

'How is life on Earth? Do you think your same gods and religion are on other alien planets? Tell us about the miracle that took place when you were younger. Why do you miss your girlfriend so much? Why is your species so violent to each other?' They ask simultaneously.

Jaden falls down to his knees with his hands over his head and yells, "Stop talking all at once, it's too many questions at the same time. I'm getting a serious headache."

"We are sorry Jaden. We are used to answering many at once. I will just talk to you," Bellona says while she stands near him with her hand on his shoulder, she continues, "I will research their questions from your memory and answer it for them."

'Are you okay now, Jaden?' She asks him telepathically.

"Yes, I'm a little better. That was like a lot of loud noises at the same time. Talking about hearing voices. You aliens can put someone in a mental ward doing that to them."

'If you were communicating without using your voice and communicated like us, you could interpret more information at the same time. You could also respond faster and think faster.'

Jaden stands up and looks at Bellona as she removes her right hand.

'Okay I understand. Let's try this telepathic thing again, with just me and you for now. Continue what you were talking about the nano stuff.'

'Nanoeyes and nanoscanners are all part of our advance nanotechnology. They are invisible to the human eye. Nanoeyes allow us to hear at a far distance, view things at a far distance and look through solid matter. Nanoscanners can do what nanoeyes can, and also analyze materials, scan through objects and determine their structure. This can allow Andromedians, for example, in a battle to know how to destroy a material it is scanning. Nanoscanners can do many other things. Nanoscanners and nanoeyes can be combined together, along with nanobots, to do other tasks. Nanobots are metallic microorganisms with a wide range of capabilities that work in a community and communicate to each other at high speeds. They can adjust to many different environments. Nanoscanners, nanoeyes and nanobots on our ships or bodies, work together and have many different tasks; some include transferring natural resources into weapons, quantum mechanics, manipulating super strings, protons, neutrons, atoms and anti-gravity technology. Meaning Jaden they can be controlled by us, human bodies or other life forms. Yes, Jaden they can be programmed by us to work

with any host and are loyal to the host forever. They can also work together like a colony, with chains of commands. Good questions, there are quadrillions of these nanobots working together in a community, to do certain tasks. They can, but rarely work independent. They can work like little alien people and have a certain degree of logic in their little minds. They think like artificial intelligent collective aliens. They help us in every way of life.'

'The nanoscanners guide our ships as they travel through subspace. Nanobots and nanoscanners reassemble the ship and pilot. Every billionth-trillionth of an inch of the ship in subspace has a unique ID assigned to it. They are each put back together according to their ID, piece by piece in seconds. Each ID is verified before being reassembled and some can be repaired on the spot if damaged.'

'We have been at war with the Darclonians for a long time. Our technology has always been better than their technology, up to now. We believe most are hiding in your galaxy and are up to something. There was an *unknown* nanomole found semi-hibernating in your brain. Yes, a nanomole that was not put there by us. Semi-hibernating meaning it has been recording everything the brain sees and different parts of the brain. They are most likely in every human's brain. The Darclonians have been known for using similar nanomoles on other planets, to record everything an alien does and to control them. They use other aliens' bodies as hosts, so how they look varies. Darclonians have perfected cloning, in organic humans. When we rescued you from Planet 455, there were several clones of yourself there. They have been doing weird and unknown experiments on your body. Sorry, we do not know.'

Jaden continues to think of questions telepathically.

'We have analyzed this nanomole in your brain and we believe it contains everything you've done in your lifetime, your parents, and your thousand-year family history. It is encoded and will take time to read. We don't know why, yet, it was used on your planet. How it got there and how it works, I can explain. The Darclonians robotic droids scan solar system to solar system. A planet at the right distance from a sun that can support life is targeted. They use asteroids or comets to put a sextillion of these nanomoles in them. They target the planet from a distance. The small comet would explode in the lower atmosphere and enter anything organic or carbon base. They probably did this a few times to your planet at different times. These moles find evolved and intelligence life forms. Once a qualified carbon organic species is found, the nanomoles learn its biology and reproduction methods. In your human case, it copies itself inside of a female body. There are two nanomoles in a female at all times. One stays in the womb and keeps copying itself into a fetus. The other one always stays in the brain

recording everything and constantly updates with the one in the uterus/womb.'

'The nanomoles in the father's brain, updates with his children remotely by comparing DNA characteristics. The nanomoles don't affect anything in the body. However, it can be activated to temporarily control the host's mind and body. There are three stages of the nanomoles: stage 1, the negative stage, which is also called semi-hibernating. It records everything from eyes and ears in detail, from generation to generation. Neutral stage 2: the mother ship sends a high-powered initiation signal, which would trigger a countdown in all the nanomoles on a planet. Every alien or human would be unconscious from anywhere between 15-25 seconds. Random humans go into a sleep stage and can be non-responsive for hours or days. Information could be uploaded to the mother ship at this time. Normal bodily functions still work (breathing, heart, etc.). The nanomole begins to reprogram cells in the body. This stage is for preparing the host for the next stage. Stage 3: the positive stage, which is called Hijacked Brain Aliens. In your case, it would be called HBH (Hijacked Brain Humans). This is where the nanomole takes over the mind and it waits to connect with a bioparasite. Bioparasites are metallic or organic Darclonians' brains. Similar to our silicon-nanite brains, which are usually sent from a mother ship. The mother ship in orbit powers the nanomoles in the brain for a complete mind take over. This usually takes several days for the entire process to be complete. The nanomole reprograms white and red blood cells to accept microbots and bioparasites. Bioparasites can sometimes help the nanomoles to accelerate this time. We have seen similar nanomoles work like this on planets in our galaxy that the Darclonians conquered.'

'This nanomole we found in your brain is a little more advanced. They also hide inside of sperm and go from male to female, like a virus. No, your technology is not capable of detecting it yet. Yes, it does go through condoms also. When the person dies, it is embedded into the skull. Yes, the recording is very advanced. This more advanced nanomole records everything the person feels, sees, hears, smells, experiences and emotional experiences are all recorded. No, you can't see yours, because it's still being investigated and we can't decode 90% of it. Mostly the recordings of your ancestors and many generations before your parents are encoded in Darclonian language. We believe they date back to the Neanderthal time period. Yes, it is probably capable of other things we aren't one hundred percent certain yet. No, we used your memory from your normal brain to translate your language. No, we don't know why the Darclonians are doing this. We are trying to find out,' Bellona stops to admire Jaden's confused face.

Jaden walks over and touches the universal 3D map; it zooms in to the planet he is on now.

‘Bellona, explain to me how your species doesn’t believe in religion,’ he asks.

‘I’ll give you a brief history of our species and explain our religious concepts. We evolved from other organic primitive animals similar to apes over a 500,000-year period. Our evolving to intelligence period was much faster than yours, since yours took millions of years. We used to give birth and reproduce on our old planet. Religion guided us through most of our problems through our humanoid era. Astronomy in the night sky gave us our original religious concepts. We were very peaceful and faithful to our Sun God that gave us light every day. Some believed nebulae in space were gods watching us. Fossils and science proved these theories and concepts to be false. This caused a lot of conflict in our species, similar to the conflicts that plagued the past 5000 years of your history, Jaden. Approximately 68,650 years ago, we were attacked by an alien race. Our technology at the time was no match for them. Millions of our Andromedian people died and they vowed to return. Seventy percent of our religious people were called the Cults. They thought it was punishment from God and those who had faith would be spared from the next attack. That time period was called the Great Transhuman War. Our early government was set out to solve and prove religion should be labeled fictitious and sides needed to be chosen, if we were going to stand a chance at fighting. The government used logic, facts and scientific evidence over the years. It wasn’t convincing enough for most of the Cults and civil disobedience began.’

‘Five Earth years later we received a remote transmission from another part of our galaxy. It was from an advanced alien species called Mapolians. They were aware of our past attack and wanted to help. They sent us information on how to advance our technology and how to defend ourselves with shield technology and nanotechnology. Our scientist teams went to work all over the planet. The Cults said the Mapolians were the devil and wanted to destroy us with evil technology. There was protests everyday outside our government buildings. The Cults were also very upset tax money was spent on this devil technology that was also helping to pollute our planet at an increasing rate. Not all of our citizens at the time could evolve their thinking. Many were kept in a primitive state of thinking and stayed on the level of brainwashed animals. People chose sides and we had years of civil wars around our planet. One-third of us Andromedians didn’t need religion to guide us anymore; we could then self guide ourselves. Those of us that didn’t believe in the Cults’ religion were killed by them and made an example of...’

‘...There was a choice us Andromedians had to make. We could be stronger, live much longer in new artificial cyborg bodies and fight the alien invasion or die and go to the fictitious heaven with the Cults. We had to give up reproducing, emotions, love, and feelings until a later time

they could be reproduced. This was the beginning of our Transhuman time period.'

'We do believe primitive civilizations need religion and faith to look forward towards every day. This type of belief system keeps people good and keeps order in civilizations. It also gives people a purpose for being alive and something to look forward to. If your civilization didn't have a faith or religion, there would be chaos, massive suicides, no will to live and it would be harder for people to get through tough times. Over time, most civilizations eventually have a time period where evolving to the next level takes place. Self-guidance is not an easy task for a species to accept. It is the final leap into the higher intelligence of an organic alien being.

'Our technology now can scan for any types of signals, spirits or life-forms in a wide range and distance. There is no heaven or hell in space. But there are places a life form goes once it dies. Eventually, technology surpasses faith, religion, and belief in a god being on its own. But, your human species have to be ready and prepared for that type of change. We do believe something is out there in the universe we haven't seen yet. The furthest one of our species has traveled was 5 billion light-years.'

'Very interesting, your history is amazing. It sounds like you can probably write a book about it,' Jaden says. He continues, 'I had a miracle take place a few years ago. I was hit by a car, flew over the windshield and I wasn't hurt at all. After that, I believed in God and religion a lot more,' Jaden explains.

'You don't think you just happened to land on the ground or your body protected itself perfectly, causing you to avoid injury?' She asks.

'It was a miracle from someone or something, because I should have been dead or in a coma,' Jaden explains.

There is an awkward silence.

'I think your Catholic religion is a good guidance for you. Miracles happen all the time to keep people in tuned with their faith in religion. How old am I? In Earth years, I would be about 49,201 years old. I'm considered young to the elders here,' Bellona says.

'I have died quite a few times and I've been in many battles. Died meaning, the body I was in died, but my silicon-nanite, which is equivalent to your mind and soul, was always retrieved. Yes, there is a way to completely destroy us. However, there is usually a backup of our silicon-nanite, stored in our city.'

Jaden continues to just think of questions to ask her telepathically. He is beginning to get used to it. It is much faster than talking with words. However, his headache returns.

‘I must say your species’ technology has really advanced significantly in the past 150 years. That type of advancement would usually take thousands of years for many species. It took millions of years to evolve into *Homo sapiens* and less than 150 years to develop into the technology age you are in now. To be able to go from living in caves and traveling on horses to taking baby steps into space is an amazing achievement. Yes, I agree, but at what cost? Is your species ready?’ Bellona asks.

There is another awkward silence. 3D video images are shown in the middle of the room.

‘As you can see, Darwin’s ape to human theory is somewhat accurate. Sometimes it takes hundreds of millions of years for intelligence to develop from a species. Adaptation is also a great contributor to the evolution process. Your species took less than four million years. We call it luck, with a combination of random mutations, stressful environments and survival. Not all species make the leap; ninety percent of alien life on planets stays at a primate level. Your species has a very high creativity level and good mathematic calculations for your time. The book report you wrote in the 10th grade on Darwin’s theory was very well done. You deserved that A+. Darwin’s theory of evolution is very close to the blueprint for life on many planets in many galaxies. Bacteria, amino acids, single cell organisms are the origins for the beginning of most evolving life on planets.’

Bellona walks closer to Jaden while they both look at the vivid 3D images. Jaden is trying to take all this information in Bellona has been telling him at a fast speed. The high definition 3D images show single cell organisms evolving into sea creatures from other planets.

She continues, ‘Yes, we are explorers. Peaceful explorers and peacekeepers; we do try to help different species when we can. We do enjoy learning about a species and its culture.... Let me explain that to you again. When our ship you were in, made it from our center galaxy black hole and began transporting star to star, a colony of Darclonians only 550 light-years from the center of the galaxy was able to detect the ship. They have never been able to pick up our ships in the past in subspace, but this time they did. They forced the ship out of subspace, by somehow redirecting the pathway. Then they captured our ship and hid it on one of their planets. We tried to negotiate with them for weeks; they denied even having the ship. Our ship sent us a signal when it left subspace. Since they know our communicating methods, they stopped and blocked our ship from communicating with us after it was captured. However, they didn’t know there was a device your government had hidden on our ship. We were able to translate the primitive transmission code. The signal transmits slowly and can be mistaken as noise. We were

given clearance for a rescue mission. They cloned your body several times and were doing experiments on your clones. Why? We don't know yet.'

'The place was real, but then it wasn't real; they were able to manipulate images in your mind into looking like you were on your home planet. Yes, certain things they couldn't answer, because there were answers you didn't know. When you caught on, they were just going to kill you and use your original brain for something. I couldn't come sooner, because the place was a maze of virtual transmissions and encrypted rooms. I needed a special body to sneak into the Virtualatrix underground world. A Virtualatrix manipulates brain wave frequencies and makes the mind think everything is real. I was discreetly sending you telepathic messages when you were sleeping. The Virtualatrix was offline then. My body was getting weaker and weaker from all those days underground.'

'As you can see, everything that happened from a nanoeye,' Bellona says while the nanoeye vision goes into Jaden's eyes. He is startled and jumps back.

"Wow that scared me!" Jaden yells and then continues, "I'm seeing through the nanoeyes as if I'm actually there."

'You can change the vision back to where you are now, just by thinking about,' she says.

'I got it, just how I was doing with the nanoscanners back on Earth.'

Jaden sees the rescue from different nanoeyes up close.

'Look at me, being carried by a girl.'

'Do you think being carried by a female life-form makes you look bad?' Bellona asks.

'Well, to us it makes the man look weak, to be carried by a smaller female, even though you're not really a human female. But to be saved by an alien female, I guess the same rules apply.'

'I do not understand this analogy. We are all equal in our species.'

Jaden changes vision of the nanoeyes.

'Maybe it's just an ego or primitive human male thing. Damn, look at me throwing up on the shield around my body before Marco catches me. Oh no, now it is going back into my face. That is very nasty, look at that green vomit all around me. What were they feeding me on Planet 455?'

'Something they were growing underground. We are sorry, but we underestimated how much oxygen your body would have needed for that distance to our ships. Most of the information the EIS attained about your planet and yourself was stolen by the Darclonians.'

There is a minute of silence as Jaden watches through the nanoeye.

‘Okay, are those spikes on Marco’s back?’ Jaden asks.

‘Yes, each chrome spike represents a different type of weapon system. The weapon forms once it passes through the molecule on either of his wrists and then the molecule powers it,’ she says.

‘That is very cool. I love the way his body hid in the mountain and the sniper weapon was shot three times from inside the mountain. I can’t believe how fast he can run,’ Jaden says.

He sees his body being placed in Bellona’s ship and Bellona jumping out of the plateau area to fight. Jaden is amazed at her fast movements.

‘Holy shit! You are dodging those high-speed rocks hitting the ground, while you are still fighting those beetle aliens. You are also fighting those skeleton aliens. How can you move so fast?’ Jaden asks.

‘My warrior body is made for agility and strength. I can move in milliseconds when I’m in battle mode. The skelborgs also fight at high speed. What are those tattoo symbols around my body? They represent my past, where I have been and who I am. I’m still in control of my soul even though my carbon-based organic body died hundreds of centuries ago. I’m still the same person. I represent peace, justice and giving energy back into the universe. When a soul dies, the energy on a subatomic level is released into space. The energy is called spirit quarks and they travel undisturbed towards the end of the universe. A few thousand years ago, I personally saved an alien species called Seraphians. This unique peaceful species was made of pure energy and gave me the honorary, semi-visible Seraphim wings on my back. The wings are made of spirit quark particles and help me to do amazing things.’

‘Wow, I’m speechless, I love the spiritual concepts,’ Jaden says. Something grabs his attention, ‘Whoa, what is that dark thing with four arms? It looks like Shadow Goro from *Mortal Kombat*.’

‘The dark alien that came from the sky was something we have never seen before. It was somehow blocking the sunlight before it crashed into the planet. Sunlight helps us repair or charge our bodies. We are calling that alien being a dark energy knight. Yes, a dark energy knight. No, we cannot call it a dark Vader. The outside of its body was pure, exotic dark energy.’

‘I remember reading about dark energy in astronomy class. Scientists just started learning about that stuff recently,’ Jaden says.

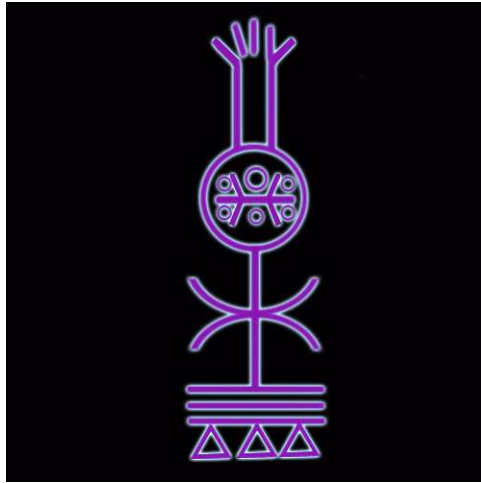
‘There is dark energy and dark matter in many galaxies. They hold together galaxies along with vibrating microscopic superstrings in hyperspace. However, there is a huge amount of this dark energy found in your galaxy. Dark energy is what the properties of black holes are made of. That’s good you know a few things about black holes. Black holes are capable of destroying anything that goes in them, down to a

singularity point. It is also capable of compressing the object or matter down smaller than trillions of an inch and destroying it. No Jaden, I told you we travel under black holes in subspace. We don't fly directly into one; that would be catastrophic. No species has been able to control dark energy around an alien like that, without destroying itself. Our supreme elders in our central congress have been discussing these new findings. Yes, there are about a billion of us Andromedians in five different galaxies. Our central congress is located about 100,333 light-years from here. Yes, that dark energy knight was very advanced; it was capable of walking through our strongest energy shield. It was also capable of withstanding all our weaponry. We have never seen anything like this. It can manipulate gravity also and suck matter into it. We don't know if it has other capabilities like firing something. An army of those D.E.Ks can take out a species' defense. Yes, D.E.K. is abbreviated for dark energy knight.'

'As you can see from the video, there was something chasing us from the planet. Pieces of mysterious dark matter went down to where the D.E.K. was buried and combined with this alien. It then chased behind our EISs at high speed. It seems to have been fueling from the ships' exhaust. Exotic exhaust is what our ships leave behind. Yes, similar to a warp signature. The object that chased behind the EISs was a dark comet moving at the speed of light.'

'Well Jaden that was something we didn't want to find out if we could fight at the time. We have never seen a comet that is not a ship move at that speed. Our priority was rescuing you and getting you back. Yes, we do have a name for it. We are calling it a dark energy wraith. It was powering itself from our ships' thrust exhaust and dark energy particles. It contained dark matter and exotic matter. We believe the dark energy knight was inside of it, controlling it. If it caught up to us, it probably would have destroyed us all. No, we don't experiment with dark matter or dark energy much. It is very dangerous, deadly and unstable. If someone can manipulate this technology, they would be unstoppable. That D.E.K. was able to stabilize different energies on many microscopic dimensions.'

'What did those symbols on its sword mean?' He asks.



‘We translated it into saying a universal Armageddon is coming,’ she explains.

‘Wow.’

‘You can say that again.’

The video stops playing the rescue. It changes to where Jaden was flying the UFO on Earth. He laughs as he sees himself out running jet fighters. Jaden can’t believe how fast the UFO was able to maneuver around on Earth.

‘The purple molecule around your ship emits an anti-gravity field from the balls around the ship, enabling the EIS to maneuver at high speeds. The molecule is an offensive and defensive weapon system as well. The yellow thrust coming from the wings is really heated oxygen and nitrogen particles. To answer that question, when you first entered our ship, the shape of it needed to be rectangular so that you can walk into it normally. When it took off, it morphed back into its natural aerodynamic state. The extra space wasn’t needed since your body was in a cocooned fetus position by then.’

‘So the EIS was just letting me control it until all my stages were complete, until I tried to fly off at 1% the speed of light?’ Jaden asks.

‘Correct!’ She says and then continues, ‘We are impressed with your skillful navigation skills. It’s very impressive how you were using just eighteen percent of your brain at the time. Your brain is capable of so much more. Yes eighteen percent, we increased it from seven percent so that your mind would be able to handle the ship’s high-speed movement calculations. We now increased it to twenty-eight percent and the nanobot monitoring shows your brain is reacting very well. You played many flight simulator games on your home computer over the years. Very interesting, this has given you a tremendous advantage. Our ships are capable of many other things.’

‘Few of us think your brain can compete with our brain capabilities if it was properly tuned and modified. Yes, tuned and modified, meaning for it to operate at near one hundred percent capability. Your brain can operate more effectively if it was better organized and information wasn’t so scattered. You could remember things in great details better than someone with a photographic memory. I think if you had a digital brain to work with your human brain, you could compete on the Andromedian mind level,’ Bellona pauses for a few seconds.

She continues, ‘Your body chemistry, DNA, RNA and cell structure is somewhat easy to manipulate. There is a lot that can be done with your body to make you stronger, faster and smarter. We think your bodies are too weak and die too easily if severely injured. A stab wound would make you bleed to death. We believe a body should still operate even if its head is missing or body severely damaged. Your body repairing system can be sped up. Your teeth are the only body parts that can’t repair itself; that’s interesting to us. You should be able to control more in your body. In addition, vital organs in your body can be replaced and something else can go there. Like what? Well for one, nanobots can do the same job your vital organs can do; kidneys, lungs, stomach and white blood cells can be replaced. For two, you can put weaponry system or energy storage in its place. These are just a few suggestions.’

Jaden is looking at the part in the video when he was racing the SR-71 and used the light engines.

‘Holy shit, I almost flew off the planet.’

‘That was a very dangerous move. The ship should not have allowed you to use the light engines. It is very bad to fly at that speed on any planet. You almost ripped a hole in your atmosphere and ozone layer. That can cause tornadoes, planet shifting, axis changing, weather changes, and deep planet freezing. Not to mention heating up the outside of our ship to the surface temperature of the sun. Yes, deep-freezing. If you rip a hole through your atmosphere at that speed and that much force, the cold temperatures from space would rush down to the surface of the planet. Think of it as a new Ice Age on the ground where you created the atmosphere hole for a thousand square miles. It would take a couple of days for the atmosphere and ozone to repair itself. By the way your planet is looking and the direction it’s heading, you don’t need problems like that. From what we learned, in another 700-1500 years your planet is not going to be able to support much life, unless something drastic happens in the next hundred years. The use of fossil fuel, building emissions and pollution on Earth, is making your planet uninhabitable. Soon your life expectancy will be reduced significantly. We should know, we are on our second planet now and we have been through what you will be going through.’

‘Our EIS went to a planet in your solar system called Jupiter to recharge its vortex matrix shields and other systems. VMS is mostly used in space to destroy anything in the ship’s path at light speed. MPB, matrix plasma beam, is the short-range and low speed matter destroyer. Yes, powerful Jovian lightning charges are a very good source of energy for our ships. A mixture of sunlight, lightning charges, solar winds, hydrogen, nuclear fusion, protons, matter, anti-matter, exotic matter, neutrons, atoms, radiation, nanotechnology and other particles are the sources to most of our energy technology.’

Jaden’s personal thoughts slip into the telepathic pathway.

‘You wonder what sex would be like with me. All that technology talk is turning you on?’

“Well, um, that wasn’t a question I was trying to have you answer,” Jaden says while blushes. He continues, “Okay, this telepathic communication is beginning to freak me out. I’m confusing my personal thoughts with what I’m trying to say. That wasn’t a question I wanted you to hear or answer.”

“I’m only responding to questions, your inner thoughts weren’t being read. But I think you accidentally put it out there. You’ll just need some practice in keeping your inner thoughts to yourself. Why is sex on your mind at a time like this?” Bellona asks.

“I’m in my sexual peak now and young male humans around my age think about this a lot. Between 18-25 years old are the sexual peak years for men, and 25-33 for females.”

“Interesting.”

Jaden walks away from the 3D image of the video playing in the middle of the room.

“Why do you have six fingers and this body only has five?” Jaden asks.

“We are used to having six fingers and an extra thumb. When we used to be carbon-based, our fingers evolved into growing an extra thumb. It is something we have grown accustomed to over the centuries. We are able to grab and hold things much easier. It also makes holding a weapon easier. When I’m fighting, I can hold my weapons at any angle, with the help of my magnetic joints in my fingers.”

“Interesting. Can I see what I look like, now?” Jaden asks.

An image of what he looks like appears in front of him. Jaden moves from right to left and his image moves with him, along with the robe covering him.

“Wait a second; I don’t even have a face,”

Jaden looks at himself in amusement.

“The image you see in front of you is just a blank body. This is a virtual copy of your human body. You can create your own image to what you would like your artificial body to look like. Give it a try; just think about what you would like to change or add to your body.”

He stares at his artificial body in front of him and concentrates. Hair appears, eyes appear and a mouth.

“This is cool,” he says.

His skin color is changing into different colors.

“Look at me, I’m the Predator,” Jaden says.

He changes his appearance again and a few minutes go by.

“Okay, I’m done,” Jaden says.

“Why do you choose to cover your face with a mask?” Bellona asks.

“Covering my face makes me feel more like a hero or villain. I feel as though I’m covering my identity.”

“In our city you can be or look however you want. I only cover my face in battle or when I’m on a mission.”

Jaden’s skin is light brown, he has strong muscles with huge veins going up and down his medium-sized frame. He has white and brown hair coming from his head that is straight and is two inches high. There is a shiny reflective mask over his mouth and nose area up to his eyes. His eyes are glowing red under the mask. The robe disappears and he has on black sweatpants down to his ankles. A light grey tank top appears over his upper body. Blue and white Jaden sneakers appear on his feet. There is a big J going across on each sneaker.

“How am I able to change my appearance like this and everything is still looking so realistic?” He asks.

“Well you aren’t really in real life now. You are in a virtual reality real life city. I’ll explain and show this to you later, because I see many questions crossing your mind...” she pauses.

Two other aliens appear behind her and walk up. Jaden looks startled at the blue alien and light brown alien approaching. The two aliens resemble male figures. The blue alien has many human features, but still looks alien. He has wavy blue and yellow hair all over his body, which can pass for fur. His face does not have any hair or ears. This alien is about five feet nine inches tall. It has a mouth, but no nose, and eyes that glow green. The blue and yellow alien approaches Jaden as the light brown alien stands behind Bellona on the right.

“Hello Jaden, my name is Marco,” he says in a deep voice and shakes his hand.

“You grabbed me when I exploded from the geyser on Planet 455 right?”

“Yes, that was me.”

“Thanks a lot. Good catch! I thought I was smacking right into the ground.”

“You had nothing to worry about. But, it was a long and daring rescue. Bellona was underground for days looking for you and sneaking past security measures. That was a risky rescue, but we were the best team for the job,” Marco says.

“The weapons on your back were very cool. The way you shot that gun in the mountain and midair was amazing!”

“It was nothing, all in a day’s work.”

“How many weapons do you have on your back?” Jaden asks.

“Two dozen; they range from sniper guns, gravity guns, sun dial weapons to powerful explosive cannons. There is one for each occasion.”

Jaden’s mouth is wide open, “Cool!”

Jaden sees similarities to the way he looks now and how he looked in his warrior body.

The light brown alien on the right is shorter and stands in silence. He also looks very human. There isn’t any hair over his body just a light brown color; two brown glowing eyes, no nose, or ears. He has small, clear one-inch stripes up and down his brown skin. Light particles are seen inside these stripes. A small, two hole opening on his face resembles a nose. Jaden assumes he was in the other alien ship that rescued his.

The brown alien speaks very fast, telepathically, ‘Yes, I was in the other spacecraft. I was the one that rescued the EIS you were flying on Earth. I’m Bomani, Jaden, nice to meet you.’

Bomani walks up and shakes Jaden’s hand.

“Can you say that again?” Jaden asks as they finish shaking hands.

“You would definitely beat the world record on Earth for the fastest talker,” Jaden chuckles.

There is a pause, then Jaden’s new friends chuckle.

Jaden hears a slight sound similar to a fax machine.

‘Bomani, we are using voice communication now. Can you please slow down your communication speed,’ Bellona says to Bomani at a high rate of speed.

Bomani repeats himself to Jaden, but word by word very slow.

‘Yes, I was in the other spacecraft. I was the one that rescued the spacecraft you were flying on Earth. I’m Bomani, Jaden, nice to meet you.’

“Hey, I’m not retarded or slow; you can speed up talking by about fifty-three percent. I know you aliens are E.T. math wizards and love using numbers,” Jaden chuckles.

“We are trying to fully understand your humor,” Bellona says.

“It is a part of us humans that make us human. We love to make jokes and make fun of things. It lightens tense situations and keeps people relaxed,” Jaden says.

Jaden thinks of something to ask, because there is dead silence.

“What is the rush with you aliens, with talking so fast,” Jaden pauses then continue, “Oh I’m sorry I mean communicating so fast? What is with the fax sounds I have been hearing when I was being rescued and now?”

Marco and Bomani take a step back and watch Jaden as he continues to watch the amazing highly detailed 3D video.

“We communicate at a very fast rate. Something your brain could eventually adjust too. We can reach a decision on certain things in seconds. The fax and modem sound you hear translates in your brain as a sound of our communicating from body to body and mind to mind at a very fast rate. The modem sound is more accurate, not a fax sound, similar to your dial-up modem where you dialed into 541 porno sites over the years,” Bellona says while she chuckles.

“How was my humor?” She asks.

“Ha ha, that was funny; you’re learning. I like that one. That is something I would have said,” Jaden says while he pauses and looks up with his left hand on his chin.

“Hmmm... I dialed up into porno sites 541 times? Man, I don’t know if that is good or bad. But it sure is funny if I did. Man, all those times makes me feel, makes me feel...”

“Makes you feel like a pervert?” Bellona asks.

“...makes me feel American!”

“I have a question for you Jaden, we are a little confused. When you were a teenager and you dialed into those porno sites, why did you use all those different lubricants on yourself? Was that to practice reproducing with a female?” Bellona asks in a confused voice.

Jaden thinks to himself and his face turns slightly red.

Jaden tries to cough and clears his throat but the sound comes out different.

“Well to answer your question, most human teenagers do this activity to charge themselves...”

“Charge yourself?” She asks.

“Let me finish. Yes, charge ourselves, it’s part of a stress reliever system, it gives our reproduction cells some exercise, and helps strengthen our arm,” Jaden says with a smile on his face.

“Are you trying to be funny Jaden?”

“No, not really, but if I was back home, this conversation would be very funny. I could imagine all the jokes J. Leno would make on the *Tonight Show* about this awkward situation.”

Jaden thinks to himself about what the *Tonight Show* host might say: ‘Yeah, this guy told some Aliens 2.5 million light-years from Earth, he jerked off as a teenager. He told them this is how human teenagers charge their bodies and exercise their reproductive cells. In a few years

E.T.s are coming from all over the galaxy to Earth, offering to beat teenagers' meat for them....We are here to release your stress for you young teens, let us try, our hands are faster. (Audience laughs) Five hundred years from now, when we travel in space and visit other planets, we see alien teenagers giving the Jaden's iron fist greeting....' Jaden breaks out laughing.

They turn and look at each other in confusion. Jaden is the only one laughing.

"Let us recalculate this new information, this is interesting humor," she says.

"No! Don't calculate this information. It isn't that important. I'm sure there are other things more interesting to calculate than this. Let's talk about something else."

Jaden continues, "You aliens analyze stuff too much and this conversation is going to be on the universal wide web Internet. Under Earth human, you'll read: 'Human teenagers have advanced stress relief and charging system. This is how they do it.' "

"We sense tension and embarrassment on this subject with you, we can talk about something else," Bellona says.

"I have a question, how is it that I'm breathing, but my chest isn't moving and I don't feel any air going in or out of my nose?"

"I'll answer this one for you Jaden; your mind is still sending the signal for your lungs to breathe in and out. Your artificial body doesn't need this, so your mind continues to think everything is fine. The nanobots in your head are circulating the blood and oxygen needed to keep your cells and tissue in your brain fully functioning," Marco says.

"Any more questions Jaden?"

"I can't think of anything right now, but I am getting a headache," Jaden says as he looks at the very pale lower part of his floating body slowly change to his face skin color.

Jaden walks closer to his floating body and puts his hand through the water. He feels his leg is still ice cold.

"My face looks like I'm dead. I feel like I'm on display and I'm being experimented on," Jaden says while he pauses.

"How long will it take for my body to be fully restored and unfrozen?"

They all speak together, "About forty-five minutes!"

"Hey! Hey! Hey! We can sing together, but not talk together," Jaden says.

"We are sorry Jaden. We were sort of what you call racing to see who can calculate all the calculations first, and then convert it over into your language," Bellona says.

“Our current nano-brain speeds are between 5-10 trillion calculations a millisecond.”

“Millisecond? I remember reading somewhere the fastest computer on Earth was about 140 billion calculations a second. My brain is just hurting, trying to calculate a millisecond into the equation. That’s very fast.”

“Well Jaden, we go by your brain’s memory and calculate what you know into our science. Everything you ever looked at, read or saw we are able to access,” Bomani says.

“I’m just trying to take all this info in. There’s so much information and so much to think about at once. Can we get out of here? I would love to see your city and your planet. Get some fresh air. I mean fresh scenery,” Jaden says while smiling.

“We have just gotten approval for a tour.”

“Wow that was quick. I wish political decisions on Earth could be solved this fast,” Jaden snaps.

Chapter 6: Alien Life

Jaden and his new alien friends begin walking down a long hallway that looks like a circular tunnel, spinning clockwise. Bellona's body morphs back into the silver lion she was earlier. Jaden is getting used to walking in this virtual body. Colorful like a rainbow, but mostly burgundy lights circle around at a moderate speed. The hallway smells like roses at a florist shop. Jaden turns around and he sees Bomani and Marco walking on the left side of the hallway. Jaden sees Bellona morphing back to her exotic lion body.

'When I walk, I like using a lion's body in our city,' she says before Jaden can ask her.

'We have some work to do Jaden, we will catch up with you later,' Bomani says telepathically.

'See you guys later,' Jaden says. He watches as they disappear into the glowing burgundy circular lights and dark walls surrounding him in the hallway. He turns and looks forward, as Bellona is waiting in front of him. At the end of the hall is a doorway full of light. The bright light is causing Jaden to squint his eyes as he walks outside.

'Are you ready to evolve your imagination Jaden?'

'Yes, I am! As soon as I can focus through all this light.'

'Your brain might need some time to adjust to all the colors of this magnitude.'

Bellona stands at the doorway and her tail stretches upwards. 'Don't worry, don't be afraid, grab onto my tail.'

The end of her tail morphs into a hand with six fingers. He has a surprising look on his face and hesitates before touching the silver hand coming from her tail. Jaden reaches out and grabs her hand. He closes his eyes and Jaden feels something passing through his body. A bizarre feeling of energy can be felt coming from Bellona's tail hand. They walk through the doorway and he opens his eyes. A fresh sea breeze hits both of their bodies. Sounds of birds echo in stereo around Jaden's virtual ears. His eyes adjust and the bright sunlight from above shines on everything around him. On the ground around Jaden are dozens of aqua colored diamonds that resemble small houses. On top of each diamond are dozens of floating grey and black thorns pointing thirty feet into the air and rotating. The thorns resemble a huge king's crown. The diamond structures are portals to different parts of the planet.

Jaden looks into the sky and turns his body to look over him. He sees odd shaped structures sitting on top of thick clouds high above him. On top of the white puffy clouds are slowly rotating rainbow cubes the size of 5-10 story buildings. There are also spheres that resemble little planets

on top of the clouds. The odd shaped structures resemble little cities. The cube buildings remind Jaden of the Borg ships from *Star Trek*. Towards the right is a huge lake that is completely reflective and calm. It reflects the floating cities above it. On his right is a huge rectangular body of water that goes fifty feet into the air, 500 feet wide and about 2000 feet long. There is no structure holding the water in place, similar to the body of water Jaden's human body is floating in. As Jaden walks, something rubs against his legs, but he is too hypnotized to care what it is.

There are mechanical, colorful fish that resemble dolphins, triggers, angelfish and sharks the size of a truck. Their eyes glow of electricity as they swim freely in the controlled body of water. The fish change color at different angles as they swim along. There are electricity charges flying in different directions touching the mechanical fish, giving them a glowing color.

'I feel as if I'm in a fantasy world. This is amazing and mindboggling. I'm completely amazed. I mean, mechanical fish the size of a school bus, a huge crystal lake, floating cities on clouds. Wow!' Jaden says while continuing to look around him.

There are different energies of light flying between the white clouds high above. The clouds completely cover the sky and the sunlight can be seen trying to penetrate them. At a distance, Jaden sees dozens of thirty-foot orange trees that look like giant mushrooms. Under the top of the mushroom trees are glowing blue lights with brown vines that stretch towards the trees' main body. Jaden walks through soft grass up to his knees.

'All of this is your virtual city?' Jaden asks.

'Yes. There is a lot more that are private areas and encoded areas that you can't see. The location of our city is deep underwater. I'll show and explain that too you later.'

'Okay. I feel like I'm in the cartoon *The Jetsons* and the movie *Star Wars*.'

'Come on Jaden, don't be afraid.'

'Someone needs to cut the grass here.'

The grass is instantly cut and is on the level of Jaden's sneakers.

'Wow! That was quick; I barely blinked my eyes. Aliens live in those structures?' He asks.

'Yes.'

'Do you have a house or structure like this?'

'Yes, maybe you can see mine one day, I'm sure you would like it. It's my temple of relaxing and connecting with the universe through spirit quarks.'

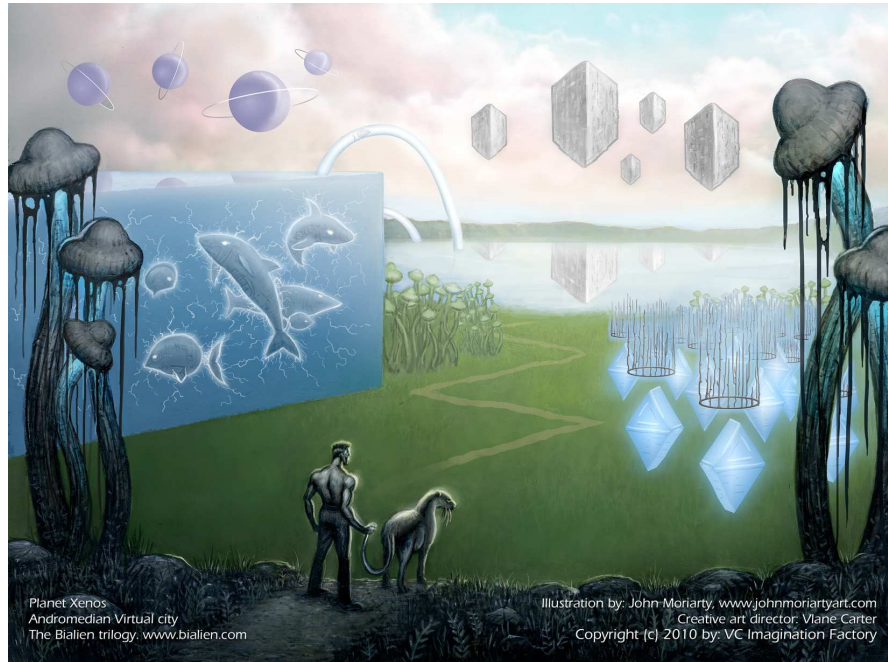
'Sounds very cool.'

Jaden walks and is astonished by everything he is seeing. The huge fish in the tank boggles Jaden's mind.

‘Those are biomechanical fish in that virtual tank. Our artificial intelligence pets are in there. Would you like to swim around in a fish body?’ She asks.

‘No, no thanks. I don’t want to be an alien fish. Maybe later,’ he responds.

Jaden tries to take everything in he is seeing. They continue walking forward. The fresh air of roses and flowers pass by his nose and is absorbed into his body’s pores. Everything looks so realistic with so many vivid colors. The thorns are slowly rotating on top of the sphere houses, creating a slight humming sound. On the floating structures, there aren’t any windows and they remind him of a futuristic movie. There are rainbows connecting to each structure and Jaden sees hundreds of different colors. Certain things and objects quickly go blurry and then clear to Jaden’s eyes.



‘Your human brain is trying to interpret fifteen million colors and a higher resolution, fifty percent more than what your human eyes are capable of seeing. Don’t worry, you’ll get used to it in a few minutes. Your artificial eyes in this body are sending a high-speed signal directly to your brain back in the room we were in. There is a slight bottleneck, but the nanobots will quickly solve the problem. That is a good question Jaden. There are a few hundred nanos in both of your optic nerves behind your eyes converting the signal over for your brain to comprehend. The

only difference your brain is noticing is that you aren't blinking your eyes and the higher definition of colors being transmitted.'

'That's amazing,' Jaden says.

Jaden continues to think to himself, while walking around with his mouth open.

'There are thousands of other nanos around nerves and other parts of your human brain receiving signals from your body here.'

'I do not see any other aliens around.'

'Walking around is very primitive. We usually only walk around if an alien species is used to it. We usually transport to where we want to go. It is faster and saves time. We can also communicate to each other over long to short distances.'

'This place just seems too realistic. Everything feels, smells and looks like I'm in the outside world. Is this really all virtual?' Jaden asks while holding his head.

'Let me explain Jaden, this is a virtual reality dome city. Everything here is what you would call animated to look as real as possible. Every Andromedian citizen creates his or her own place to live and setting. No, we never sleep here. However, some do rest, dream and Galaxynet. Galaxynet is similar to your Internet. On your planet Earth, you use computers to get info on different things. Galaxynet is connecting through our minds to different databases and minds on different planets in our galaxy and others. We can get info on solar events, species, learn languages, view live planets, dying stars and download information into our silicon-nano brains. This information is shareable to any Andromedians and other species we have an alliance with.'

'Our way of life is how we choose. We have entertainment, spouses, duties, and jobs to perform. No, I'm not married. Ever since we destroyed our first planet over 50,000 years ago, this is the safest and most environmentally friendly way to keep our second planet. This is safer and there is less than one percent pollution a year emitted by us. The rest of our planet can grow and evolve naturally. There is plenty of evolution happening around our planet every day,' Bellona says telepathically.

'I would like to see the real world and how your planet naturally looks.'

'That is definitely possible,' Bellona says while smiling at Jaden.

Jaden continues to look around amazed; Bellona continues to talk while they walk. The ground changes to pavement and brown bricks. Jaden stops walking and holds his head downward as he stoops down. He covers his head with his hands. His headache is getting more serious.

“I need some pain medicine.”

“That is not going to help Jaden.”

They stop walking and Bellona stoops down while rubbing Jaden’s back.

‘Your hand feels so warm and soft. My headache is starting to feel a little better,’ Jaden says.

‘Come Jaden, I want to show you our planet. Your external bio-mechanical body is ready.’

Jaden stands up and looks at Bellona.

‘What did you do when you touched me?’

‘I gave your brain stimulant as if you just took some pain medicine.’

‘Why do I feel like I just had a cigarette also?’

‘I also tricked your brain into thinking you just smoked a cigarette. Your mind was craving it, so I gave you an artificial cigarette. It was forty percent of the reason for your headache.’

‘That is amazing, I feel like I just smoked a good cigarette.’

‘Well from reading your memories and analyzing different parts of your body, those cigarettes were slowly harming your body. The nicotine chemical is like a slow moving bacterium that is constantly giving your body more work to repair itself. Have you looked at your lungs lately?’

‘No. But yes, I know it’s bad for me, but it’s a habit that is hard to quit.’

‘I understand, I think you’ll like the artificial cigarettes better. Are you ready to go outside?’

An aqua diamond portal quickly appears in front of them and changes colors to a translucent rainbow prism. Jaden takes a step back as he remembers the first time he got onto the UFO and almost died back on Earth.

‘Whoa, I remember the last time I saw something like this. Is there any other way to go? Where does this go? Is it safe?’

‘Jaden it’s safe. It looks like a rainbow prism to you because that is what your eyes interpret it as. To me I see what is on the other side, which is sun, trees and the ocean,’ Bellona softly says telepathically.

Bellona walks closer to the portal. Jaden smells a salty ocean coming from the portal and the sound of seagulls. Jaden looks around at the portal that is thinner than an inch in width.

‘Come on Jaden, I want you to see the gravity tide.’

‘Gravity tide?’

‘Yes, it’s cool, you’ll like it. Our planet has a two moon system. As the larger of the moons get further from the planet, it slightly changes the gravity forces around our oceans. This creates a wonderful view. Trust me, this is safe.’

‘That sounds very interesting. Can I have another artificial cigarette?’

‘Sure.’

‘Can I have two at once?’

‘How about some artificial marijuana and liquor while I’m at it?’

‘You can do that too?’ Jaden asks with a serious and curious face.

‘Not!’ She yells while her eyes glow and she laughs.

‘Ha ha, very funny; Okay, you got me on that..... OhRight..... that feels good. I needed that. That double cigarette felt safe and very satisfying. It was like putting a condom over the cigarette; all the fun, but no risk. Okay, I’m ready to go through the outer world portal. Take me to the Mortal Kombat outer world!’ He yells while getting psyched up.

‘I’m ready when you are, Jaden,’ as she stands to the side with her hands leading to the portal.

Jaden bends his knees and touches the brick ground as if he is about to run a football play.

“Ready, set, hut, hut, hut!” Jaden yells as he stands up and runs into the portal as if he is running out a play action from the football team in high school.

‘Jaden don’t run!’

Jaden disappears into the portal and his body slows down instantly. He feels as if he is moving in slow motion as he continues to sprint forward. He sees many colors as they quickly pass his body, giving him a huge rush. His body turns into those prism colors. Everything gets bright and Jaden closes his eyes. Jaden’s artificial body suddenly glows bright. His body speeds up again as he continues running. Jaden’s body comes out of the portal and trips on the rocks on the ground. He falls flat on his face. He has such a rush and is breathing very heavily. He tries to get up.

“Oh man, I’m so out of breath. These rocks smell and taste very salty,” he says from his mouth.

“Need a hand? Mr. Wide Receiver?” She asks through regular voice communication.

Jaden pushes himself up as Bellona reaches out to his hand. He grabs it and she pulls him up.

“I can feel more things. This body feels more realistic. I’m actually breathing air,” Jaden says while he looks around.

“Yes, this body is more modified around your own human body. Almost everything should feel the same. Every nerve ending in your human body is being sent to this body instantaneously. There are no delays,” Bellona explains.

“Can I see myself? I feel strange.”

“Sure.”

A 3D identical image of Jaden’s new body shows up in front of him. He turns to the left and then right and a replica of him stands there

making the same movements. Jaden has no hair on his body; skin looks rough, white color with brown spots. The skin also has little scales all over and wrinkles. His mouth looks somewhat human, but without lips; just an oval opening. His eyeballs are glowing white and slightly glowing green pupils. His eyes glow bright then dull. Jaden observes and isn't liking his new look.

"This isn't going to work. I look like an old half white colored reptile with a mannequin face and glowing eyes. Where are my ears? I look like a freak! I don't even have balls or clothes on. I feel as if I'm a cyborg that is about to take a running streak," Jaden says excitedly.

"Jaden, no one cares if you don't have any clothes on. No one judges someone on how they look here. There are hundreds of different aliens from other planets in our virtual city that are naked."

"I understand, but to most of us humans this is a concern. The nudists and the humans that walk around on nude beaches would feel at home here, along with the other visiting aliens," Jaden snaps, "but I would feel self conscious without any clothes on."

"We won't be using these bodies to go anywhere anyway, we will be using nanoeyes to see the planet," she says.

"Oh okay."

"There are three basic standards to how a species evolves and looks. First, what they evolved from; second, the condition of their environment (oxygen levels, pressure, gravity, and temperature) and adaptation. Third, how species' DNA evolves, learns and adjusts to its host."

"Yeah, that sounds good," he says while continuing to look at his entire body.

"This doesn't interest you Jaden?"

"It does, but not at this moment. I'm concentrating on this image of me and how much of a freak I look. I miss my regular human body."

"You look fine to me. You do not need a penis or internal organs here. The quadrillion nanos in your biochemical body replaces the need for organs."

"Okay, well then how do I pee or poop?"

"Your body doesn't require food or water. It's running off of solar power and nano-electrons."

"What?"

"Just think of it as an advanced photosynthesis," Bellona says.

Jaden turns and looks at Bellona.

"How is it that you have a vaginal opening between your legs and butt cheeks?"

Bellona smiles and says, "Well there isn't really anything there, your mind thinks there is an opening there and two halves in my rear. So I just kept those images there."

"Are you serious? I don't believe you," Jaden says surprisingly.

“Touch for yourself,” she says.

“Are you sure? There won’t be any international galactic sexual harassment or anything like that?” Jaden asks.

“No, it’s fine go ahead.”

“If the DNA don’t fit, acquit,” he says then chuckles.

“That was funny. It took me half a second to figure out why you said that. That’s very slow in calculating speed for us. Anyway, so go ahead.”

Jaden touches her gently in both areas.

“That’s amazing, there isn’t anything there. I could have sworn I was looking at a sideways mouth with a mustache on the side.”

‘I guess it has been so long since I’ve gotten some. I’m seeing pussy mirages.’

Jaden steps back and is amazed.

‘But it was very stimulating and arousing. Even though there wasn’t anything there. I probably have a woody back in the city, where my human body is,’ Jaden says to himself while blushing.

Bellona closes her eyes and chuckles.

“What is so funny?” Jaden asks.

“Yes you do have a full salute woody. Hormones from your human brain went down your spine and into your now awake organ. It’s even funnier because your lower body is still frozen and being repaired. Your soldier is the only thing alive down there,” she says.

“Hey!”

“Hey! You weren’t supposed to be listening to my personal thoughts. So you like my tool huh?”

Bellona stands there with her eyes still closed, not responding.

“Okay! You can stop looking at my equipment!” He yells.

“I’m sorry Jaden; I was checking your vitals, cell reconstruction progress and respiratory functions.

“Yeah right, okay. . .” Jaden pauses then continues. “Well how is my body doing? When will I be fully functional?”

“We have been slightly modifying your DNA so your body can heal faster. You should be fully healed and one hundred percent operational in about two hours.

Jaden continues to look at himself while turning in different angles.

“Can I change or adjust a few things?”

“Jaden, these are stand in bodies. We won’t be using them except for standing here. We will be using the nanoeyes to get around. Now turn around and look at this huge ocean behind you.”

He turns and looks at Bellona. He notices she is silver all over with light particles moving around inside her skin. He touches her hand.

“You have the cool stand in body I see. Your hands feel very soft. You look the same way from when you rescued me.”

“You are correct; this is my outside warrior/traveling body. We are required to wear these anywhere outside of our city...”

Bellona continues to talk. The bright sun is shining everywhere and Jaden looks around. He observes he is standing high on a mountain top that is mostly powdery ivory white and lime. He can see the ocean on ground level about a couple hundred feet below. Jaden is able to zoom in on the ocean and he sees large waves moving back and forth crashing into the coastline.

Jaden walks around and looks towards the sky. He sees a mostly yellow sun with a red tint to it. It's on its way down and is larger than Earth's sun. There is a small moon to the left and a larger moon showing up on the horizon opposite of where the sun is setting in the sky.

“..... that is why we have gravity tides,” Bellona says.

Jaden turns to Bellona.

“I'm sorry Bellona I didn't hear anything you said. I wasn't paying attention. All I heard you say was gravity tides. You know what? I think I'm getting more used to the telepathic communication. It's like I'm talking to myself and I can listen to what you are saying at the same time,” Jaden says.

“Maybe if you were able to communicate telepathically in the 9th grade, you would have been able to pay attention in class and have your midday wet dreams,” Bellona says.

“Ha ha, good one,” Jaden chuckles and laughs, then says, “You are learning human humor very fast I see. You are getting good at it.”

“You can record something you didn't hear or paid attention too, and play it back later. I can show you another time.”

Bellona walks over to Jaden and looks at him directly. The 3D image of himself disappears.

‘First you need to practice telepathic communication. Questions or a conversation you want to transmit out your brain telepathically has to be sent out as if you want to talk. Any one of us can read anything you think. But we want to give you your privacy and keep your inner thoughts private even if they are questions. You need to practice segregating both from each other. The electronic signals and blood flow in your mind puts questions, a lie, or something you don't know into different parts of your brain, which is easy to detect. The signal needs to be sent out of your mind and the nanos will do the rest. It is like talking to yourself. However, you need to practice keeping your inner thoughts to yourself. Concentrate on sending the signal to your mouth, but not talking,’ Bellona says telepathically.

Jaden thinks to himself.

‘I wonder what would happen to this body if I jumped off this cliff,’ Jaden thinks to himself.

‘I heard that,’ Bellona says.

Two minutes go by as Jaden continues to stare at Bellona.

‘This body you are in will quickly repair itself if you were to fall from this height. The pain at this extreme would put your body back in the city into shock. Nanobots wouldn’t transmit that to your body; it would probably put your brain in a coma,’ Bellona says.

Another few minutes go by. Jaden continues to concentrate.

‘Hmmm... I feel like I’m on a nude beach.’

‘I didn’t detect anything. The nanobots are finished adjusting. Good job Jaden,’ Bellona says.

‘Okay cool. It’s working now. This is interesting. Can I switch back and forth?’

‘Sure, but remember, I don’t mind. But others only prefer telepathic communication.’

‘As I was saying before Bellona, you are getting good with your human humor,’ Jaden says.

‘From studying your personality, these are similar types of jokes and humor you would say to your friends. I’m quickly learning, I like it. I forgot what it was like being an organic species,’ Bellona says.

‘You just need to laugh behind something you say funny, like I do. Or you will sound like a standup comedian. But it’s best to wait until the other person starts to laugh.’

Bellona laughs telepathically.

‘Okay you just sounded like a laughing monkey high on cocaine stuck behind a cage at the zoo. That just gave me an instant headache.’

‘I’m sorry Jaden. I’m not used to this. Let me recalibrate the pitch.’

Bellona laughs again telepathically.

‘Very good, much better. Wow, that laugh sounded so familiar. Wait a minute, you just laughed exactly how my girlfriend laughs. That was perfect. I miss her a lot. I hope I’ll be able to return home soon.’

‘I know you miss her and your family. Jaden! The gravity tide is about to happen!’

“Jaden the gravity tide is about to happen!”

“Bellona! You just yelled that out and you said it telepathically. It echoed like a scream in a cave,” Jaden says excitedly.

“Sorry about that, I’m excited and didn’t want you to miss the event. It’s my favorite.”

“I notice when you get excited your eyes glow. So, tell me about this gravity tide. What is supposed to happen here? What are we looking at?”

“Our sun is about the same distance as your sun is to Earth. Our sun sets south and southwest depending on the time of the year. We have had a few axial precessions on our planet over the centuries. The sun now

risers from the north or northeast. Each rotation is about thirty hours and we have two moons. As the larger moon rises, it is moving further away from our planet. The smaller moon stays in one place. The larger moon disrupts the gravity in the oceans and changes the weight properties of everything on this side of the planet. It also causes the rotation of the planet to slow down adding hours to the days and causing more gravity disruptions on the side of the planet facing it. Do you see the coastline receding?" Bellona asks aloud.

"Yes, I do. It just disappeared."

"If you zoom in north over the ocean horizon you can see the ocean floating upwards towards the thin clouds."

"That's awesome! It looks like a giant wave, going as high as the clouds," Jaden says.

Jaden zooms in further with his wide-angle alien eyeballs.

"Jaden, use the nanoeyes. There are two out there for us. Just concentrate on one and you can control it as you please."

"Oh okay, cool. I found one!"

"That's good; I see you had plenty of practice."

Jaden's vision changes and he is controlling and seeing through the nanoeye. He is a couple hundred miles above the blue and green ocean. He feels as if he is in the UFO again on Earth, looking through eyes without a body. The resolution is much better and clearer in a 180° of sight. But he can feel and see the difference from the virtual city. The feeling of flying through the air like Superman returns. Soft instrumental alien sounding music begins to play.

'Where is that music coming from?' He asks telepathically.

'Something I, something I downloaded from the Galaxynet from different galaxies.'

'That is a very nice, but strange sounding music. It sounds like I'm flying in a dream type of music.'

'I'm glad you like it, I have trillions of different sounds and music. It helps me feel more human like.'

'You miss being more human like me, right?'

'Yes, I do. There are many things I miss. . .'

The water interrupts Jaden's nanoeye vision.

'Hey! Hey! I can't see anything in the water. The water is everywhere. I don't even know what direction I'm heading.'

Jaden becomes nervous and switches back to his body on the side of the mountain thirty miles away.

"Oh man, I couldn't see through the water," Jaden says to himself while covering his eyes.

Bellona is back in hers and turns to Jaden. She holds his hands.

"Jaden calm down, don't panic. All you had to do was concentrate as if the water isn't there. The nanoeyes adjust so you can see through the

water. The nanoeye will only follow your commands when you are controlling them. All you have to do is think about it and the command is automatically transferred,” she says.

“Oh, okay, was that it? Okay, I’ll try it again. Wow your hands are so warm and soft.”

She smiles and then turns back towards the ocean. Jaden switches his vision to the nanoeye again. The nanoeye stays in the same place. The water continues to break up and float in the air as if a huge wave is passing by. He does what she says and he can see through the water. Suddenly something huge appears and passes right through Jaden’s nanoeye. He briefly sees the insides of a huge animal in full animation. It makes a loud roaring sound like a whale. The sixty-five foot long alien whale has a narrow shape and blue toned skin. It has two long fins that extend outwards and towards its tail. There is one dark eye on the front of each fin. The tail is long and narrow with flaps on the end. The four side flaps resemble skinny wings. The fins are acting like wings as the animal quickly heads into the direction of the shore.

‘Whoa! Shit! What was that?’

‘Ha ha. . . hey! Jaden calm down, it was just a whale-like mammal. The nanoeye automatically converts the images inside of animals into something animated, like a cartoon.’

‘The nanoeye passed right through its body. I saw a lot of red blood and so many body parts moving inside of it.’

‘Yeah, the nanoeye can pass through almost anything. There are more animals coming,’ Bellona says.

‘How the hell was it flying in the air?’

‘Jaden, remember what I was telling you about the gravity affects from the gravity tides? All the fish and animals in our oceans and on land adapted for the past million years around this daily event. Most of the sea animals adapted with wings or fins that work underwater and in the air. The larger animals fly towards the clouds and try to reach over land. They also have adjustable gills that can also breathe air in or out of water.’

Jaden sees hundreds of strange looking fish float into the air flapping their fin like wings towards the shore. The wave reaches the coastline and crashes into the mountain. A shield goes around Jaden and Bellona’s bodies as they stand motionless on the side of the mountain.

Jaden and Bellona’s nanoeyes are above the clouds looking down. This is amazing to Jaden the view he is witnessing. The water is floating around aimlessly in all directions into the clouds. Jaden is also enjoying the different tracks of the space instrumental music. The ocean looks like an upwards waterfall. Trillions of bubble raindrops pass through the white clouds upwards and then float downward back into the clouds.

‘Most of the animals on land are high up in the mountains. They mostly hide in caves or in the ground. The sea animals fly over land eating fruit that float into the air and coordinate attacks on land animals.’

‘Coordinate with each other?’

‘Yes, they communicate with each other. They are more advanced than the fish on your planet. Yes, we have birds, but they are far inland. The fish on this planet were here much longer and had a much longer time to evolve.’

Jaden sees Bellona’s nanoeye. It’s translucent with blue light particles moving around it and resembles blue pupils. Jaden turns his attention to the quickly forming clouds from the extra moisture in the air.

‘Jaden! Follow me!’

Bellona takes off at a fast speed and he follows her. They quickly glide through the clouds and water bubbles. Wind, rain and strong winds pass by Jaden’s nanoeye and feels as if it is going across his face. His human body feels as if he is driving with a convertible top down during a storm. Jaden catches up as he follows behind her. They pass hundreds of flying animals and most are attacking each other. Jaden can’t help but slow down to watch this battle royale of animals fighting under the clouds. Bigger fish are eating little fish. Hundreds of hand-sized pink fish are pushing each other back and forth with their mouths. There are so many different sounds that the animals are making. The different sounds remind Jaden of a zoo back home. There are strings and strings of seaweed and dirt floating in all directions. Floating pieces of colorful coral and animals with legs hiding in them. Jaden changes his vision to block out the unnecessary debris. An army of silver jellyfish are attacking floating defenseless animals with small feet under their bodies.

There is a gang of about a dozen blue scale octopuses floating peacefully thirty feet above the clouds. The octopuses are about ten feet long with big circular heads that look like light bulbs. They have a dozen tentacles that stretch downwards and resemble an umbrella. Their heads contain helium that enables them to float without needing wings or flapping fins. Grey medium-sized sharks with red flapping fins and several eyes around their nose leap out from the clouds below the octopuses. The sharks are going after the octopuses for the helium in their heads. The first shark grabs an octopus in its mouth. Another octopus quickly loses altitude and latches onto the back of the shark that has its member in its mouth. The octopus wraps its tentacles around the shark and begins to squeeze. It bites into its skin to inject poison. The other octopuses quickly grab onto each other and pull together to form an octagon. The shark, with the octopus around its back and octopus in its mouth, nose-dives through the clouds while sending out an S.O.S. The collective of octopuses are holding onto each other and their bodies float horizontally. The sharks retreat into the clouds. The collective of

octopuses reach out simultaneously to the closest shark that couldn't change directions fast enough. This shark is grabbed and it stretches its head 180° to bite at the tentacles holding it. The thirty-nine tentacles wrapping and squeezing its body, holds the shark like a mummy.

Jaden follows behind the nose diving shark with two passengers as it flies by debris, strings of seaweed and through billions of bubbles of salty water. Squishing and splashing sounds are heard as Jaden tailgates. The fast moving tail and flapping fins work in sync. Another shark is quickly moving upwards in the opposite direction. The shark heading up is upside down and has its mouth open, displaying its white, sharp teeth. They just miss each other by inches and the octopus on the shark's back is ripped into two pieces. Jaden's nanoeye passes right through the shark heading upwards. He catches the octopus' last split second screech before it is decapitated. The sound echoes in his human brain. Jaden quickly changes direction and a trail of thrust comes out the rear of the nanoeye. He stays inside of the body of the shark heading upwards. Squishing and digestive sounds echo in stereo to his ears. He sees the octopus head being tightly contained inside the shark's mouth while it quickly moves into the stomach area. Hundreds of spiky, dark hairs penetrate and suck the helium from the head. The gas goes directly into the shark's blood stream and is stored in its cells. The shark heading downwards still has tentacles wrapped around its body and is now bleeding from its back. Tentacles are hanging out of its mouth as it also quickly digests the octopus head. High above the clouds, the octopuses continue to float upwards horizontally while staying on the defense. The captured shark is being eaten like a big bucket of popcorn at the movie theater, amongst many small hands. Bubbles of the shark's blood float downwards from the octopuses in the clouds. The gang of sharks hiding in the clouds smells the scent of their fallen comrade and will get revenge when the tide is over.

'My God I've never seen anything like this before. I've never thought animals could be so smart and work together like a football team. This is like watching an alien *National Geographic Channel*. Wow.'

'I'm glad you are enjoying it. It gets better. Come on Jaden, I want to show you something.'

Jaden and Bellona's nanoeyes head downward. They pass many animals hiding in different layers of the white puffy clouds for cover.

'Why are all these fish and ocean animals fighting each other?' Jaden asks.

'It is survival of the fittest, where the animals that adapted best under the gravity tide take advantage of those that didn't. The animals with legs

are defenseless if they lose their grip on the ocean floor. They have hard shells on their back, to protect them from an above attack when they are on the ocean floor.'

'Wow. This is interesting to watch. I wished they had this happening on Earth.'

'We call this the "gravity tide wars." It has been going on for thousands of years. Every generation of animals get smarter and smarter. They are constantly evolving and adapting.'

The water drops becomes more dense and closer together. There are thousands of colorful rainbows stretching in many directions. Jaden sees more of the narrow whales. He sees a 120-foot long lime green animal that resembles a stingray and a butterfly. The beauty of this creature is mesmerizing. It floats in the denser, wavy water as if Jaden is in a dream. The colorful wings extend out over 150 feet. The head and neck extend twenty feet from the body and the neck resembles the shape of a goose. The tail looks like a long stinger on a stingray. Hairs go up and down the body. The wings slowly flap through the denser ocean.

'What is that?' Jaden asks.

'We call them butterays. They are equivalent to a stingray, whale and bat. The blind animal uses radar to move around, similar to bats on your planet. Its weight doesn't allow it to fly too high during the tide. The animals splash through the unstable saltwater. There are algae, debris, clams and coral slowly floating in the air. There are medium-sized squids and schools of three foot round bottle top jellyfish that look like little flying saucers. They are slowly rotating in a group and floating upwards from the denser ocean water. The jellyfish have gaseous helium in their jelly skin and their tentacles are hidden in their body. They pass a school of fish swimming by under them. Suddenly, their tentacles shoot from the middle of their bodies simultaneously. Poisonous silver projectiles come out from the tentacles bombarding the fish beneath them. Sixty percent of the fish received a direct hit and fall over like dominoes. The rest quickly float away. Jaden laughs as he quickly catches up to Bellona.

'Bull's-eye! Those jellyfish deserve a prize. Pick whatever stuffed fish you want,' Jaden says while chuckling.

'That was funny and interesting, how you related that to when you went to the amusement park and you were throwing the dart to win something for your girlfriend,' Bellona says.

'Yes, that is probably primitive entertainment for you,' Jaden says.

'Not necessarily, I've had someone win me something back in my human days. Hurry, catch up, I want you to see something,' Bellona says.

The hit fish are instantly paralyzed and rotate like a pig over a fire. The jellyfish quickly move in on their prey. Jaden continues downwards and he sees seaweed, plants, sand and dirt covering the ocean floor. There are thousands of different crawling animals clutching to the ocean floor. Jaden continues to follow Bellona at a high speed. She slows down and stares at something. They are about 1200 nautical miles from shore.

‘What is that?’ Jaden asks telepathically in a shocking voice.

‘This is our virtual underwater city Jaden. Stay right here, we can’t get any closer. We can’t get any closer because security is in place to detect any type of molecule anomalies like our nanoeyes or other alien intelligence.’

‘Okay.’

They look down at this gigantic bubble sitting on the ocean floor. The bubble city takes up dozens of miles on the ocean floor in all directions. It looks like a small souvenir bubble glass city from a distance.

‘To the human or animal eye, the city is transparent. It reflects what’s on the other side of it. Sometimes, animals accidentally run into it. Since our city is artificially simulated, it doesn’t have to look too fancy on the outside. This saves us from polluting our planet and keeps us environmentally friendly. We have nano-portals all over the planet. Anything can be transported anywhere around the planet instantly. Us Andromedians learned a lot from our previous planet we destroyed in less than a thousand year period. I know you want to watch some more gravity tide wars, I see you zooming and looking into the sky above us.’

‘I was paying attention to what you were saying about your city below at the same time. The gravity tide wars are like being at a live *WrestleMania* match, but with animals.’

‘That is fine, after this we can watch the moon passing and glimpse our galactic center.’

Jaden quickly accelerates upwards and into the sky. Bellona follows behind him and they quickly pass many floating obstacles. Jaden sees hundreds of different animals hiding in the white puffy clouds for cover. Some huge lobsters catch his attention and he stops.

Dozens of huge, white alien lobsters, the size of a Labrador, are hiding in the clouds. They look like a genetically modified crab and lobster in one with tentacle tongues in their D-shaped toothless mouths. Their round midsections have flapping fins that resemble stingray wings. Their tail looks similar to lobsters on Earth, but they flap horizontally and vertically, like a dragonfly. These lobsters have two huge muscular claws and are floating on the top and bottom side of the cloud, waiting for something. Their three telescopic whisker eyes allow them to see in different directions and communicate with each other.

The school of jellyfish in the clouds has several ingested fish that can be seen being digested from the outside. Twenty-five of the bloated jellyfish slowly merge to form a collective. Charged electrical particles in the clouds enable them to digest their foods faster.

Two sixty-five foot long, white eels, with little flaps along the upper part of their body, float along with the clouds, behind each other. Their little fin wings keep them moving at the same speed of the clouds in a stealthy snake motion. Their bodies are camouflaged in the puffy, raining clouds. Electrical particles move up and down their bodies.

Jaden feels something cool is about to happen and has a front row seat. A half dozen sharks come from below and charge at the jellyfish. The sharks are in a straight line and the lead shark has a dead shark in its mouth. The dead shark takes all the hits across the body, while protecting the rest of the gang. They ram right through the jellyfish still trying to connect to each other. They are quickly separated and a few are smashed. The sharks try to eat the jellyfish. Suddenly the white lobsters come from two sides and join in the melee. The lobsters jump on the sharks' backs and quickly bite into their fins. The jellyfish are slowly being eaten up like Pac-Man eating the dots. Jaden is quickly moving his nanoeye around to catch different angles of this amazing midair battle.

The two eels are circling the entire area, right behind each other. Their circular moving bodies are creating a huge 200-foot circle around the fighting animals. Their bodies light up brightly with electricity. The electrical particles in the clouds spark up and lightning shoots in hundreds of different directions. The animals are all electrocuted inside the circle and the thunder quickly follows. The loud thunder makes Jaden jump and sends chills down his human body. Smoke comes from the lifeless roasted sharks and lobsters. Their upside down, slowly rotating bodies float downwards. Jellyfish body parts are all over the place like road kill on the interstate. The eel snakes change direction and quickly swallow two sharks each. They continue floating with the clouds and leave the area.

'Wow that was amazing. I guess the show is over. Look at the lobsters and sharks hugging each other unconsciously.'

Jaden's enhanced senses detect the smell of the roasted lobsters and sharks.

'Do you smell that Bellona?'

'Yes, I do.'

'It smells like a seafood restaurant. Oh man, this reminds me when I went to New York City a few years ago and I ate at City Island in the Bronx. Man, they had the biggest and best lobsters there. The lobster in butter sauce was unbelievable. It was as if lobster meat, butter sauce, my tongue and teeth were having an orgy in my mouth. The after party was in my stomach... I wonder what these alien lobsters taste like.'

‘Why don’t you move closer to it and you can taste it.’

Jaden moves closer to one and the tail is already cracked open. He can hear the sizzling from a distance.

‘What a tease! The body is roasted like it was on a BBQ grill. Oh man the meat is perfectly cooked. This lobster tail is about a foot wide and two feet high. I can eat this entire tail myself,’ Jaden says while moving the nanoeye inside the meat.

‘Wow! That is good!’ He yells

‘Jaden...’ Bellona tries to get his attention.

Jaden begins to talk in an excited tone.

‘Oh thank you eel gods, for roasting this beautiful tasty lobster just right. All we need is a nice doggy bag. No that is too primitive....’

‘Jaden...’

‘...you guys are more advanced than that. I’m sure you can beam up or beam down Sebastian into your Under the Sea...’

‘Jaden, listen...’

‘Please, please tell me we can transport or bring these Freddy Kruger lobsters back to your city. I can still hear their insides sizzling.’

‘We can’t do that...’

‘Can’t do that? This is like going to a fancy restaurant and when your food arrives you are only able to lick the lobster with your tongue...’

Bellona doesn’t say anything, but laughs.

‘I need to chew, swallow and digest this. This isn’t funny. This is torture for us humans and you are torturing me with my five senses here. This perfectly well done lobster is going to go to waste if we don’t do something. These mastermind Einstein animals don’t deserve this perfectly cooked one hundred pound meal, that would go for over \$1000 at Red Lobster back on Earth....’

She continues to chuckle.

‘Did anyone tell you, how funny you are?’ She asks.

‘Yes, plenty of times. Come on Bellona, no one has to know. We can sit down and have a nice lobster dinner at my room,’ he says while tasting the round midsection of the lobster.

‘This tastes like crab meat!’

‘Jaden, it is illegal and immoral for any visitors or citizens of Andromedian city to eat any animals on this planet or others. I know it is something your mind craves, but it will pass. Eating meat is very primitive Jaden; it only brings you down to their level...’

They talk at the same time.

‘It just needs some primitive butter sauce...I wonder if there are any cows on this planet...’

‘You need to evolve past being a cannibal to another organic life-form...’

Jaden moves over to the shark's fins and tastes that as well.

'Oh man, this shark fin is cooked too. I heard they make this into a nice soup in China...yummy, this tastes good too.'

'...vegetarians on your planet are highly evolved, to eat other good things besides consuming another life-form. Do you know how many spirit quarks leave this planet every day?' She asks.

'Bellona, it's not like I killed it myself. I can't help it if I like meat. I was raised this way. I was raised primitive.'

'You can fight it and evolve. Put some butter sauce on fruits and vegetables....'

'That is like putting butter sauce in cereal and milk,' he says while continuing to taste the other lobster, 'I feel like Homer Simpson when he is about to eat something mouthwatering.'

'Come on Jaden let's go,' she says while slowly moving upwards.

Suddenly the octagon-shaped collective octopuses come spinning through the clouds. They reach with their long tentacles and grab the lobsters and sharks. Jaden's nanoeye is left outside the lobster's body.

'No! They are eating my dinner!' He yells while staying with the lobster.

Jaden follows the lobster into a tentacle.

'Oh no, you aren't even chewing it, you are swallowing it. You can't enjoy lobster and shark this way. You no class vultures. Savor the taste...chew..chew.'

Jaden realizes this is depressing him and he is beginning to sound a bit deranged. He leaves the insides of the octopus and catches up to Bellona waiting above the clouds for him. There are rainbows in all directions over the clouds.

'What kind of host are you guys anyway? You don't feed your guest the food we are used to?' Jaden asks.

'We are feeding you intravenously. Your body only requires the basics: proteins, amino acids, carbohydrates, lipids and nutrients in fruits. A desire for a better taste in food isn't a need.'

'Okay, you made your point.'

Rainbows are showing up all over the place. Bellona accelerates upwards through the upwards bubble waterfalls as Jaden follows. The sky becomes increasingly bright over them.

The rainbows get brighter and connect in many directions. The scenery is amazing to Jaden as he follows Bellona higher up. Jaden can see thrust particles coming from the rear of her nanoeye. They make it above the planet and Bellona stops. Jaden sees a bright light coming from deep in space.

'Are you okay with the lobster thing?'

‘Yeah I’m fine, I’ll get over it. I think the enhanced senses were really making my mind go crazy. I just have to get this Under the Sea music from *The Little Mermaid* movie out of my head. I keep seeing a mutated Sebastian dancing and laughing at me above the clouds. One line keeps repeating over and over again in my head.’

The music to Under the Sea plays in Jaden’s mind. The images from his imagination are being displayed for Bellona to see as well. The lobster sings, ‘Over the sea, over the sea... my tail would have been so happy if it was in your belly...’

The lobster is smiling and hitting on the shark’s head with its claws. Bellona chuckles and then laughs.

‘I must say, you humans have an interesting and funny imagination. Watching the dancing lobster shaking its fanny at you and oozing bubbling butter sauce is funny,’ she says.

‘Yeah, tell me about it,’ he says.

A few minutes pass by and they focus on looking into space together.

‘The bright light that you see is coming from our galactic center. We are much closer to our galaxy’s center, so the light shows up on the dark side of our planet. It’s about a quarter of the light our sun gives off. We are 5200 light-years from our galaxy’s center, compared to 30,000 light-years Earth is from its galactic center. Isn’t it a beautiful sight?’

Jaden is amazed and speechless. He is watching the large moon, the size of Earth, slowly pass over and all the stars above him. The moon has a cream-colored thin ring around it. The moon slowly eclipses the galactic center’s light.

‘We have twenty-two planets in our solar system. We are the fourth planet from our sun. There is also life on the fifth and sixth planet. If you look in this direction, you can see your Milky Way Galaxy. That direction is where your constellation star system is. The bottom star in the group is your sun.’

‘It looks like a holy cross constellation of stars.’

‘We don’t see it that way. We see a combination of coordinates that is similar to your longitude and latitude,’ Bellona says.

‘Well, you know us primitive humans, stuck with our primitive thinking; still using a small percentage of our little brains,’ he says sarcastically.

‘Speaking of primitive, why was there so much racism with your species?’ Bellona asks.

‘Well skin color is somewhat important in our species. I’ve grown up dealing with racism because I’m in between races. I’m like a slightly tanned, white person. My father is white and my mother is black. I’ve grown up somewhat confused as to what race I wanted to identify with.

For some reason, the darker your skin is, the worse a person experiences racism. It's not as bad now, but many years ago it used to be a lot worse.'

'Yes, your human species has come a long way; primitive thinking takes some time to evolve from. Many humans think they are better than other humans are. We have seen many different species and colors of aliens. In some species, the whiter you are, the more racism they experience. We Andromedians were a racist species on our old planet Destiny, but that involved religious beliefs. It nearly consumed us and it divided us. Every species has a sort of racism in their culture. As we traveled to different planets and galaxies, we met hundreds of thousands of other intelligent species. But we also try to stay out of wars and battles. There are many conflicts between different species from different planets. We exchanged technological information with usually peaceful alien species. We learned that peace, harmony and treating people as equals are universal respects. Violence, conquering and being divided proved to be pointless in the long run.'

Jaden and Bellona slowly circle around the planet while following the moon.

'What are your parents' beliefs?' She asks.

'My father was Catholic and my mother was Christian. My father's Catholic belief took the religion for the entire family and that is what faith I grew up with. Then when I took philosophy in college it really confused me.'

'I personally believe something is out there. It might not be a god like everyone thinks, but something is out there at the edge of this universe or in another universe,' she says.

'Something like what?'

'Some powerful being, that is past the galaxies, past the super galaxies beyond the universe. Something out there that we didn't detect yet helped create the design and ingredients for this universe,' Bellona says.

'Where was the furthest your species has traveled?'

'To the edge of the universe about fifteen billion light-years from here. Some of our brave soldiers went out there to do some sort of experiments. Some of their experiments proved successful. We have lost communications with them so far. They left 14,500 years ago and we are waiting for updates. They have seen billions of galaxies and trillions of species over their journey. We have thousands of Andromedians traveling to different galaxies.

'What experiments?'

'I can't really talk about that right now. It's what you would call top-secret. I'm sure if you were meant to know, you would.'

'Okay.'

‘Can we leave orbit and fly towards the other planets in your solar system?’ He asks.

‘We would need clearance for nanoscanners, exotic protons and anti-matter atoms to make light speed. We should stay close to the planet for now. If we have time I’ll see if I can show you later.’

‘Okay, but how do these nanoeyes and nanoscanners work?’

‘Nanoeyes work together as two or three teams and are put together similar to how a fly’s eyes on Earth works. Thousands of spherical eye prisms are bonded together to form one round vision team. The three visions form one nanoeye in a 360° 3D view and gives infinite zooming capabilities. But in your case, two visions forms one nanoeye in a 180° view. Your human brain is used to receiving 180° 2D images. One spherical molecule lens on a team can produce as much as 100 megapixels. They can change shape to form a horizontal or vertical rectangular shape for telescopic capabilities. They don’t have any weight properties. They are about a billionth of an inch on the nano scale and can change in size to pass through different matters. Magnetic energy keeps the teams together and gives them the ability to change shape. They also relay basic feel, sounds, smells and taste. They transmit encoded signals through regular atoms to the proper host and they can adapt their transmitting signals in different environments. Sometimes lightning energy can disrupt sound and images from older models. A nanoeye use anti-proton molecules with a combination of other molecules to create their own propulsion. They are short range and vary in distances. They are able to transmit real time data to the host.’

‘What is the detail resolution on a nanoeye? The details are amazing.’

‘The average electronic camera on Earth is about 0.5 megapixels. Your human eyes are about 500-600 megapixels. A nanoeye can range from 500-900 terapixels. The unlimited shutter speed can detect anything from a bullet to a faster than light particle. Your human eyes are being bypassed and your enhanced optic nerves are receiving about one terapixel of resolution each. Enhanced meaning nanobots are creating artificial fibers in the nerve to increase its capabilities.’

‘That’s cool and very interesting.’

‘A nanoscanner usually works with an exoskeleton intergalactic spaceship and operates the same way as a nanoeye, but more advanced. They are the long-range nanoeyes and have many tasks. Their main tasks are scanning through solid objects, detecting threats’ defensive and offensive systems, opening subspace portals and guiding an EIS’s molecules through optic-warp. They can combine with a nanoeye and work as one. When we explore different galaxies, we have thousands of advanced nanoscanners that can analyze an entire solar system of planets

in a few hours. We can learn everything about a planet in less than an hour. Nanoscanners are encoded and are harder to detect over nanoeyes. They blend in easily with other molecules in the surroundings. The different generations of nanoscanners and nanoeyes are classified with each generation of an EIS. A nanoscanner can change to many different sizes and can carry trillions of nanobots. All nanoscanners and nanoeyes have an autonomous mode.'

Jaden takes in all the information Bellona is telling him. He is focusing on the bright yellow and red light coming from Andromeda's center.

'That's amazing. This technology is very, very advanced. The view of your galaxy's center is amazing. Why do galaxies need a galactic center?'

'Most galaxy centers have one gigantic star. This star is about one trillion of your suns. Your species calls it the galactic bulge. Everything in a galaxy rotates around this center. It's very powerful gravity slowly rotates an entire galaxy. The gigantic super massive black hole near it balances and counters its powerful gravity forces. It is like two opposite magnets facing each other. Black holes can be very dangerous. Our ships can survive small black holes, but not super massive ones.'

'Why does your spaceship look so much different than the one I was in?' Jaden asks.

'Class A ships are classified as exoskeleton intergalactic spaceships, which can travel in optic-warp and in subspace under super massive black holes. There are different generations to the Class A spaceships. One way to tell the different generations is the color of the molecule around each ship. Green is Generation 1, purple is Generation 2, blue is Generation 3, red is Generation 4 and gold is Generation 5. Generation 5 is an experimental EIS that is still being developed. One Andromedian will be awarded it as their personal ship. The ship you were in was a generation 2 EIS. Generation 2 is a 10,000-year-old spaceship. About 45,000 years ago, we flew in massive ships, similar to those seen in *Star Trek*. Those massive ships were limited in distance and didn't have optic-warp or subspace capabilities. Marco and I fly in a Generation 4, which was the most advanced. I've been nominated, along with ten other Andromedians, for the prototype Generation 5,' Bellona says.

'What more can the Generation 5 do and why are you nominated?' Jaden asks.

'The Andromedian with the most successful missions and highest rankings are nominated. Marco is also nominated, along with Bomani. The prototype EIS can do things even I'm puzzled about. Three of the new things I'm aware it can do are enter tri-optic-warp, break the speed of light barrier on its own and it has more advanced nanoscanners. If you

go back to Earth, the ship you were in will probably be upgraded to a Generation 3 or 4.'

'Cool. I like the flat shape of the Generation 4 and lightning particles jumping between the bodies,' Jaden says.

Jaden turns his eyes towards Earth's direction in the Milky Way Galaxy. He thinks about how he misses Earth, his family, friends and girlfriend.

'You miss your girlfriend and family, Jaden?'

'Yes, I do. I have spent so many hours looking through a telescope at night wondering what it would be like in another galaxy and if there were aliens or life on other planets. I also wondered what it would look like looking at my galaxy from another one. I always wished I could travel beyond the stars further than any human has been. When I was a teenager, I was so depressed at times. I wanted to fly away into the stars and never come back. But now that I'm far away from my family, I don't have the same feeling anymore. It's different not being around friends and people you can relate too. I always wanted to help people and be a part of something. Half of me misses my family and girlfriend. The other half wants to explore more and learn more about different species and technologies.'

'Hopefully that can happen Jaden. We usually don't keep species. We usually send them back with some technology they can use. But every situation is different and needs approval from our supreme elders.'

'How many Earth-type planets are there in galaxies?' Jaden asks.

'Most planets, in most galaxies, the right distance from the sun are usually destroyed before they develop into an Earth-like planet. Thirty percent of these planets have primitive life on them. Forty percent of them are vacant with mostly microbes on them. Ten percent of these planets develop with intelligent life like ourselves. These planets must have working magnetic energy producing cores, or the planet won't sustain life. A magnetosphere around a planet is the key to sustaining life; it protects the planet from cosmic radiation from space. Meteors hitting a planet usually stop or slow down most planets from sustaining primitive or intelligent life. Huge gas planets, like Jupiter, help protect small Earth planets from being target practice in a solar system.'

'Wow, interesting....' Jaden pauses and then continues, 'What is that over there, way behind the moon, glowing?'

'That is a transport portal straight into our city. It opens up when a ship is near and transports it right into our city.'

'It looks like it is far from here.'

'Yes, it's between our planet and the third planet from the sun. We do this for two reasons. One, it is for our security. If anything is scanning or trying to see where our city is or what planet we are on, they couldn't

tell. We rarely land directly on our planet. We also have space stations around our neighboring planet, which is the fifth planet from our sun. The second reason is we don't want to mess up the natural balance of life on our planet. We have several different animals that we are studying that are slowly making the leap from ape-like animal to intelligent species. Our ships flying over the planet would confuse animals and the natural evolution process on our planet. In addition, if anyone is scanning our planet, we want it to look as natural as possible. That does backfire when another species is looking for a new planet to colonize. We've had battles in the past,' Bellona says.

Jaden zooms in on spaceships coming out of this portal and entering at the speed of light. There are several bright flashes of light. Twenty spaceships fly towards the sun in a trail of light. Each EIS has red molecules around their bodies.

'Where are those spaceships rushing too?' Jaden asks.

'Sometimes being explorers and traveling to different places has its price. We get into conflicts with many species and try to help other species when we can. It could be also that our explorers are in trouble. Those are our most advanced ships and strongest fighters going into battle somewhere in our galaxy. Our technology is the most advanced out of many species. Our head start came from the Mapolians. They gave us the gift of nanotechnology and other technologies. They traveled for billions of years to almost every galaxy. I've even heard a rumor of them traveling to another universe. Most of them disappeared when they reached the edge of the universe looking for a powerful being with all the answers. This was what you humans call a myth. There is one Mapolian left, which lives with us at our central congress planet 100,000 light-years from here. She is very wise and has psychic powers to see things many of us can't.'

'Mapolians? Sounds like some old people who couldn't figure out a subway map in New York City and ended up in another state. Yes, my teachers did call me a comedian in high school,' Jaden pauses, and then continues, 'This is so much information at once. I can't believe all of this is happening. I feel like I'm in a long dream.'

The EIS lights up very brightly and disappears into the sun.

Jaden sees some of the sun's energy expanding outwards.

'What is that?' Jaden asks.

'That is what you would call a solar flare. Entering subspace near a star creates powerful solar flares throughout a solar system. Entering subspace requires a great amount of energy from the sun to create a slingshot type of force in optic-warp. This solar flare can sometimes be harmful to planets and life on planets. Most planets have magnetospheres. Our planet has a very strong magnetosphere. Every 10,000 years our magnetic core reverses at the poles and leaves the

planet without protection from the sun. We have a backup system that creates an energy shield around the planet. This is so that the planet doesn't have to be interrupted.'

Jaden changes his view and watches the x-ray version of the flares quickly move past him. He continues to zoom in and out in different direction. His nanoeye changes shape and turns into a long telescope shape. He can see supernovas and stars exploding at a far distance. He can see the Triangulum Galaxy and a small Magellanic cloud. It is amazing to Jaden that the galactic center is giving light to the darkness in space.

'I can see purple waves of energy going into something dark, Bellona. What is that?'

'The energy waves you see are different communication bandwidths. The completely black object that they are going into is an artificial wormhole that is accepting communications. We use wormholes for instant communications with other planets, our alliances and our main council. We don't travel through them because they are unstable for transporting in galaxies. Exotic blue anti-matter and other energies are needed to stabilize a wormhole to transport ships or large objects. This type of energy is hard to come by. It is okay to send signals and transmissions through wormholes. If a wormhole is created on a planet, it could disrupt its alignment, magnetic core energy and axis rotation. A planet is constantly moving and a wormhole can slow down or speed up a planet's rotation. The worst-case scenario is they can cause moons to collide and make a moon lose its gravity around a planet. We create little wormholes away from planet and star paths. Come on Jaden; let's head back down towards the planet.'

Jaden notices something peculiar and zooms in.

'Bellona what is that over there? Far to the right; the two waves of energy heading towards another larger completely dark area from two different directions.'

'I'm not sure; let me check with our command center,' Bellona pauses then continues, 'The Darclonians sent out an encoded transmission towards a mini black hole right outside our galaxy.'

'What is that?' Jaden asks.

'Sometimes mini black holes open up outside of galaxies; they aren't affected by the gravity of a galaxy. When they randomly open up, they accept energy waves of communications. Instantly another mini black hole opens up at the edge of the next galaxy. X-ray signals exit the black hole in the next galaxy and the communications is converted back over into energy. The communications aren't very safe or reliable. We don't like to use it because you need to copy the energy signal message trillions of times and sometimes they are all destroyed. The Darclonians perfected the technology and have a higher success rate of sending their

message through it. The signal was sent from Planet 455, the planet we rescued you from. They are trying to communicate with other ships in your galaxy. We are trying our best to intercept the energy wave and destroy it. We don't want them communicating with each other since we haven't figured out why our bodies can't make it into your galaxy. They are definitely planning something.'

'How did the Darclonians get into my Milky Way Galaxy?' Jaden asks.

'They have different ways of traveling. They can manipulate dark matter by bending it in space and riding over it, enabling their mother ships to travel thousands of times faster than light. They have been in your galaxy for tens of thousands of years. We are trying to find out what they are up too. They have a few mother ships in different parts of your Galaxy,' Bellona says.

'Will they invade Earth?'

'I don't think they will invade Earth by flying down and attacking humans. Invading a planet that way is very primitive and the defenders usually have the upper hand. They can use humans for other uses. They will probably do a silent attack from a distance. The bodies the Darclonians have been using can't survive on just any planet. They switch between organic and robotic bodies all the time. Your planet has high bacteria levels, powerful sunlight, high humidity and pressure percentages. Their bodies would die in less than twenty-four hours. They are much smarter than that. They put nanomoles in your species for a reason. They are studying something. I'm sure they will return. The bodies that they use from other species are mostly carbon-based. They do need oxygen and water. The EIS you were in had valuable information about your planet's bacteria levels, gravity, pressure, oxygen levels and environment. It was lost when the Darclonians tried to take apart our ship; they stole a lot of info from it about your planet. This is probably why they are trying to communicate with their colony in your galaxy. Our biomechanical bodies can survive on any planet. We have built in advanced filters and can adjust to many different atmospheres. If we could figure out why our bodies can't make it through your galaxy's center black hole, then we could be investigating what the Darclonians are up too. We rarely send out ships without an Andromedian biomechanical body in them. Ready to go back down to my planet?'

'Sure,' Jaden says.

'Don't worry so much, I'm sure everything will be okay.'

'You are just saying that because you analyzed all the movies I've watched all my life. Someone is always saying that in a movie.'

'All the movies you've seen are very creative. However, it is annoying to review, because your eyes keep blinking hundreds of times an hour. But honestly, I'm sure things will work out.'

Jaden follows Bellona's nanoeye slowly back down to the beautiful, mostly blue Xenos.

'What movies did you view that you liked the most, from my memories?' Jaden asks.

'The *Star Trek* series and movies were interesting. I've seen many species traveling through space with a big ship and many aliens on it working together in teams. I think the writers of the series and movies did a good job describing what different species would look like and act like. *Star Wars* was also interesting, the description of aliens, different worlds, and it showed the politics of many alien species. There are many politics going on in different species I've encountered. Us Andromedians have been called devils and demons from species we visited in the past. Some species we have a hard time trying to figure out which side to be on. The books you read when you were younger with battles, wars, heroes, love and death was very interesting to me. Your human species has a very creative and good imagination. Your art capabilities, your creation of music, movies, and how fast you are advancing in technology makes your species very special. It really separates you from many species I've encountered.'

They continue on their slow descent as Jaden follows.

'Thanks Bellona, thanks for the compliment. About *Star Trek*; can you beam someone up and down from a planet?'

'Yes we can, but it isn't as easy as it looked in *Star Trek*. It requires a few things. One, it requires a lot of energy. A quarter of the energy of the sun. Two, a septillion point molecule scan of the species being transported. This can take a few minutes. Three, the target needs to be on top of a high mountain or building and not moving. Four, the ship beaming the life form needs to be in a straight path and moving with the rotation of the planet. The planet's magnetosphere could also cause complication so a...'

Jaden interrupts, 'Thanks for the short story, but I get the point. Come on let's go faster! You're going too slow old lady. Women fliers!'

Jaden's nanoeye quickly accelerates passing Bellona.

'Young people, always in a hurry,' Bellona says.

'That's something my mother says to me. We young people love speed and things happening fast.'

Bellona catches up.

'You like speed and things happening fast huh?'

'Yes, I love video games and multi-tasking,' Jaden says.

'I have something to show you, when we get back down to the city. It is one of our games.'

'Okay, cool,' Jaden says then continues, 'So our bodies are still standing on the side of that huge mountain?' Jaden asks.

‘Yes we are; there is a shield around us. The shield is needed to protect our bodies from the water and flying fish trying to attack us.’

‘Cool. I have to see this.’

Jaden instantly switches his view back to his artificial body. Jaden sees gigantic flying hungry sharks charging at the shield making a loud banging noise. He switches back to the nanoeve still hundreds of miles above descending.

Jaden sees the large moon still moving towards the other side of the planet. The white clouds near the equator of the planet move in the direction of the large moon, while the rest move in the opposite.

‘Jaden, our planet is twice the size of Earth.’

‘I’ve noticed.’

‘Our oceans take up about eighty-five percent of the planet. Most of the land is mountains.’

They enter the upper atmosphere and quickly descend. The gravity tide is almost over. The water begins to recede back into the ocean. Thousands of flying fish return towards the ocean. The water becomes denser and gets lower and lower.

Jaden and Bellona approach the lower atmosphere and there are rainbows all over the place. The light from the moon and galaxy center are showing rainbows of light. Jaden quickly moves towards a large rainbow and rides it downwards.

‘This is cool, so many colors. The rays are moving so fast.’

‘Jaden the rays are moving at the speed of light.’

The rainbow leads to over a huge mountain. Jaden follows Bellona. They go down the side of a mountain where the land is flat. There are many tall trees covered in a grey substance. There are ocean animals on the ground flapping around.

‘Do you see the fish and sea animals stranded? The gravity started to return and they became too heavy to make it back to sea,’ Bellona says.

‘Yes, there are hundreds of them. They look like they are going to die. I can hear them moaning from here. They sound like whales in the sea communicating with each other.’

Jaden notices some beginning to disappear.

‘Some are disappearing, what is going on?’

‘We have teams of nano-transporters that go out and transport these stranded animals back into the ocean. Their bodies are scanned and their molecules are transported back to the part of the ocean they came from. It’s called quantum-transporting,’ Bellona says.

‘They look like a dead body in a video game that suddenly disappears after lying in the same spot for too long. I miss my PC game *Doom* at home.’

Jaden continues to follow Bellona further inland. They pass a few gigantic jellyfish stuck in miles of seaweed over the ground. As they fly deeper onto the continent, they see long trees with skinny bodies covered in seaweed.

Jaden goes lower to the ground to get a closer look at a different species of shark with stingray wings still flapping out of control. It is lying on its side on the sand. He tries to communicate with the disabled shark.

‘Jaden, listen, It is not going to understand what you are saying. These animals don’t have any intelligence like we do. They understand very basic communications, similar to a dog or cat. They create basic sounds and telepathic signals to each other.’

‘I see, well let’s see what you have in your stomach, Fatty. Let us see if it was worth it to come this far from shore to feed your gut.’

Jaden looks inside the shark’s body.

‘This is gross. I see blood vessels, bones, fat and membranes. This is worst than dissecting a frog in high school,’ Jaden pauses then continues, ‘You need to go on a diet, little Fat Albert. So much blubber and fat around your body. Lots of good food in your five stomachs, huh? I hear your heart beating in stereo here. You have two hearts huh? Probably to push all this fat around your veins. Yeah, you would fit in fine around America’s oceans. We can throw our fatty processed food into the ocean for you. Oh no, you fat greedy bastard! You swallowed another little shark that is still alive. You deserve to die here you cannibal, beached whale shark.’

‘Jaden!’

‘You see this, it ate another little shark, and the little shark is trying to get out of its stomach. Escape little E.T. shark! Escape!’

‘Jaden! This shark is pregnant and is in labor.’

‘I knew that,’ Jaden says in a modest tone.

‘If you took notice, the shark is under the stomach and in the womb. She is in labor. In addition, if you change your vision and follow the signal waves, you’ll notice it is communicating with another shark by the shore in the ocean. I’m assuming it is the shark’s mate or spouse. She is what you humans call crying for help. This is a female shark in serious distress. I’m going to signal the nano-transporters to high priority this one.’

‘Typical of a male to leave his pregnant spouse behind and save himself first.’

‘The mother shark was trying to make sure it had enough food for its newborn. So this is what your girlfriend meant, when she called you insensitive?’ Bellona asks.

‘Yeah, us young men can be jerks and insensitive sometimes.’

‘Sometimes I wish I could feel what this mother is feeling. Having another life inside, and giving birth to something must be an amazing experience, don’t you think Jaden? Do you want any kids Jaden?’ Bellona asks.

‘As a man, I think it is overrated. There were many girls pregnant in my high school back home. They were not happy missing out on being a teenager. Then there is the problem of both parents not being together while the child is being raised. Raising a child these days is a lot of work, Bellona. Maybe not here, but on Earth it takes over eighteen years. I don’t want any kids any time soon. I always wanted to enjoy being young.’

Bellona briefly reviews the memory video of Jaden in high school. Hundreds of nanos quickly approach in a group and quickly move around the mother shark. The mother shark vanishes.

‘Jungle-nerd?’ Bellona asks.

‘Yes, that’s what they used to call me in high school.’

‘Why?’

‘Because I am half black and half white, this makes up the “Jungle” part. I was also skinny, wore glasses, and had pimples. This qualified me as a nerd. However, that was when I was a freshman in high school. That all changed once I started to learn karate and joined the football team in tenth and eleventh grade. It’s kind of funny now thinking about it.’

Bellona and Jaden continue to fly higher up over land as Jaden follows. Thicker clouds begin to move over land and it gets darker.

‘Looking at your past, a woman being pregnant at a young age was not the best decision. That is a very long time to train one human to be ready to take care of itself. If your technology was more advanced like ours, it would take less than one hour to train a human baby to learn to take care of itself.’

‘That would be odd, a baby walking around, coming home from work and drinking a beer.’

‘Well of course other factors would be involved. Modifying DNA so the child could have accelerated growth, modifying the brain to process data differently and using more of the human brain. That would increase intelligence and allow each human to live over 300 years.’

‘But at what cost?’ Jaden asks then continues, ‘There is always a cost to advances like that to a society. Man, I sound like my sociology and philosophy professors.’

‘Jaden you are very smart for your age. The fact that you read so many books as a teenager really helped you to develop. It also helped us to translate more info from you.’

‘Thanks for the compliment. So, can you modify my DNA to make me smarter, stronger and live longer?’ Jaden asks while he chuckles and continues, ‘I want to live longer than Yoda.’

‘We can do a lot more than that. Like I told you before, your DNA and genes are easy to manipulate. Your human brain can do so much more than what it is capable of.’

‘Can you clone me?’

‘Yes, we have the technology, but it is against our laws to clone a species. Your carbon-based body could be cloned. However, your human brain is somewhat complicated to fully duplicate. The electronic signals and chemical messages being transmitted around your brain involving your thoughts, motor skills and senses are very random. They would have to be closely analyzed. Your memory and what you know is easy to duplicate. Since we don’t clone species here, it would be hard to create the same you. But it is possible to get close, but that would require more humans to experiment on. Duplicating your brain and putting it on a carbon-sinoid as a backup is possible,’ Bellona says while she slows down.

They are about 500 feet above the ground as they approach a jungle high on a mountaintop about 300 miles away from shore. The trees are hundreds of feet high and some stretch into the clouds.

‘The trees are slimmer and taller because our gravity is lighter than on Earth.’

‘What is that down there?’ Jaden asks.

He goes closer towards the ground as he sees ape-like animals following behind each other. The animals have black hair over their bodies and faces. They have small, brown eyes in front of their faces. Their bodies are slim and they have three fingers and a thumb, with sharp fingernails. They walk crouched over and their hands touch the ground when they walk. They have two long legs, with backwards kneecaps. Their kneecaps bend behind them when they walk. They also have a hairy tail extending from their backs.

‘They look like an ape, grasshopper and a Chewbacca together. I didn’t know you had animals that look somewhat human here,’ Jaden says.

‘Yes we do Jaden. They are in an evolutionary process. They walk crouching over now, but when the gravity tide takes place, the lighter gravity allows them to walk straight up like humans. They are also much taller. These animals are in the process of making the leap from animal instincts to higher intelligence. They are what you humans would call in the Hominins stage of evolution. These creatures passed the stage of caring for each other and feeling bad if another dies. This is a characteristic found in highly intelligent animals. They have only been here for a few thousand years. Each generation lives about fifteen years

and each generation slightly evolves from the previous. At night, they look up into the stars and try to understand it. They should be creating their own religion in a few generations. Some draw on walls and hold each other at night. We are studying this process up close and we don't interfere at all with them. Some species don't make the leap from animal to an intelligent being. Look at this one in the lead. They even work as a team to capture animals for food.'

'At least they get to eat meat and lobster on this planet,' Jaden snaps.

'Yes, unfortunately, if you look at their teeth, they are sharp like a human dog. They evolved into eating meat from their previous generation...'

'Wow, they have vampire teeth. Cool.'

'Intelligence is something that happens by evolution and survival. Questioning why things are happening and why a species is here. Life on planets that can support life starts as a single cell and slowly evolves over millions of years. Animals wondering about its own existence are at the beginning stages of this leap.'

'Yes, it's an interesting subject. I've been learning about evolution all my life. It conflicted somewhat with what I learned going to church. It is amazing being able to see this actually happening up close,' Jaden says.

'Look at the two pregnant apes walking closer to the two male apes. This wasn't happening a few generations ago.'

One pregnant ape has brown hairs around its body and the other has grey.

'Yeah, they look like two cute couples walking together. There are many pregnant animals on this planet, that's for sure. I know there aren't any condoms on this planet.'

Jaden gets closer to the clan of eight male and nine female apes walking through a swampy area. The animals are grunting and making hand signals towards each other.

'I want to see something.'

'Hey Cave Apes! I have a condom in my pocket...Anyone interested?'...

'They don't hear you Jaden. The nanoeye you are using can't produce sounds that are loud enough for the animals to hear. Oh no, they have company.'

There is a big animal, the size of a rhino, running towards them. There are three legs on each side of its body and are stretched out like a scorpion's legs. It has two bones sticking from its pointy, narrow head and long teeth in its mouth. Its middle is close to the ground as it gallops towards the group. They quickly turn around and react by running in the opposite direction. They make ape sounds to each other. The brown

pregnant female ape falls down and is trampled by her male counterpart. Their legs extend outwards allowing them to leap and run faster.

‘Look how fast they are running. He left his pregnant girlfriend in the dust. He even pushed her away, to save himself. Where is the love? They are worst than the animals in the sea.. Can’t you do something?’ Jaden asks.

Three of the male apes are climbing a tree.

‘I can’t, we can’t interfere. I couldn’t do anything anyway from here. This is survival of the fittest. The weak die off, while the cowards or strongest survive.’

The startled ape struggles to get up, but can’t. The alien rhino quickly approaches with its mouth open and eyes on the belly of the female ape. Suddenly the grey-haired pregnant ape returns and leaps over the body of her friend. She has a sharp tree branch in her hands. The rhino looks up as the ape lands on its back. The rhino’s legs collapse and its body crashes into the muddy ground. It roars in pain and the other apes watch from a distance. The tree branch is sticking out of its back and the female warrior lands on her feet. The rhino runs away and she runs over to help her fallen friend from the ground.

‘That is amazing, one female came back to help another female. Isn’t that a shame? The males left the muddy footprints over her fur when they trampled her.’

‘She showed such courage and caring for another life form. That was amazing and something I’ve never seen before with this species. That grey ape reminds me of myself back in the day.’

Darker-colored red blood drips from the wound of the rhino laying flat on its stomach. The rhino’s legs are arching backwards and reaching to pull the wood out of its back.

‘Do they mostly only care about themselves Bellona? Seems to me the female species here is evolving faster than the males.’

‘Females usually always stick together, that is universal,’ Bellona says.

Bellona scans the female ape’s baby in her stomach. Jaden follows closely behind her and is in the womb staring at the baby.

‘Who’s your daddy? Who’s your daddy little ape-Alf baby?’ Jaden asks in a sarcastic tone.

‘That’s funny. It’s too bad the baby can’t hear you. Okay, the baby in the womb is fine,’ Bellona says.

‘Great, let’s get out of here; planet of the Chewbacca apes makes me feel as if I’m in a zoo. What else is around this large, primitive planet?’

They leave the area and Jaden follows Bellona.

‘Sometimes I wish I could feel and touch another. I miss being more human-like and having human emotions. Having natural nerves and carbon-based female features are things that I miss. We Andromedians

don't have true love for each other. Even though we do have companions and mates, it isn't the same as the love between two creatures. There was a time when we experienced true love.'

'Love is not what it used to be. Love can be hurtful, joyful and painful,' Jaden says.

Jaden and Bellona are quickly flying around the planet at high speeds. The sun is back out and is shining brightly everywhere. Jaden is enjoying the view of half-horse, half-dinosaur looking animals running around. Big birds fly around.

'I missed out on a lot of things when I was carbon-based, like humans. I can still remember the emotions and connections. We also evolved from a primate type of animal. But enough about me, tell me more about your spouse and relationship, Jaden.'

'Well, my girlfriend Amy is a pain in the ass sometimes. I love her a lot, but she can get an attitude quick, and is very spoiled. Last I saw her, I was trying to tell her I found a UFO, but she only cared about where her Valentine's Day present was. I hope she is fine even though I'm gone. I do miss her a lot, even though it has been a few weeks. I really would like to get back to see my family, friends and girlfriend again.'

'That's something our council will have to figure out and approve. I envy that you have someone you love and miss.'

'Don't worry Bellona; you can be my Andromedian girlfriend if you want. How does that sound?'

Jaden slows down and goes closer to Bellona's nanoeye.

'That was a nice thing to say Jaden...' Bellona says as she is interrupted by Jaden.

'What you need is some nanoeye to nanoeye penetration.'

Jaden goes inside of her nanoeye.

'Jaden! Stop. Don't do that, you'll disrupt the...'

Jaden sees a slight flash and a popping sound. The vision disappears and everything is dark. Jaden opens his eyes and he is back in his original human body underwater in the virtual city. He hears his heart beating fast as he tries to breathe. His lower body feels frozen and he tries to breathe. His vision goes black and he opens his eyes again. This time he is back in his artificial body still standing on the side of the huge mountain by the shoreline. Jaden drops to the ground holding his head and breathing heavily.

Jaden coughs repeatedly, "What," he continues coughing, "What was that?" Jaden asks.

"You merged two high speed transmission signals. Both collided and caused us both to return to our bodies. You went back to your human body in my city, and then you were forwarded back to your artificial body here. I just returned here."

"I'm sorry about that; I didn't know all of that was going to happen."

“Don’t be sorry about it. They are separating themselves now and should be online soon. I see why they called you a class clown in school.”

Jaden stands up, “Well I used to be the class clown in school, now I just like to make my friends laugh and family. Women loved my humor, I think I’m between clown and comedian. Women love for a man to make them laugh. That was one of the things my girlfriend loved about me.”

“I’m growing on your humor; it is very interesting and I think it’s a part of your personality that makes you special.”

“Can I have another artificial cigarette?”

“Sure. Hold on...How’s that?”

“Very good, very good, Thank you.”

“I must say you are an interesting species, Jaden.”

“I think I’m somewhat special.”

“I knew our ship didn’t pick you over six billion humans for no reason. You are special Jaden Marino.”

“Maybe I’m here to save the universe?”

“Now that was funny.”

Loud thunder is heard over the ocean. Jaden looks up into the dimly lit sky and sees lightning flashing. The lightning is moving horizontally across the clouds in a straight line.

“What is going on up there? The lightning is moving across the clouds in a straight path over the ocean.”

“We can control the direction where lightning moves. We have particle controlling nanos that direct lightning charges into our city from around the planet. This is one of our natural sources of energy. The lightning passes through the ocean and into our energy stations.”

“That is amazing; we need something like that on Earth,” Jaden says and continues, ‘I think I like talking telepathic better. I’m getting used to it and is becoming much easier.’

‘That is your choice; we have to return to the city now. Your body is ready.’

‘Okay.’

The translucent rainbow portal of prism colors opens again in front of them. Jaden walks in as Bellona follows. They disappear into thin air and the portal closes.

Chapter 7: Gravity Games

Jaden opens his eyes and he is back inside his human body. His body isn't floating, but he is standing in the middle of the rectangular area of water. His body feels cold, even though the water is warm. Cold feelings quickly move up and down his nervous system. He still isn't breathing, but he can hear his heartbeat through the water. The sound of his heart echoes around the water surrounding him. The vision from his human eyes doesn't feel the same. His 20/20 vision makes him feel as if his vision is bad. He can't zoom in on Bellona through the water as she stands there looking at him. He automatically covers his private parts with his hand. Jaden doesn't realize he isn't breathing.

'Jaden walk forward and out of the water,' Bellona says telepathically.

'Okay. Do you have any clothes? I'm completely naked here.'

'It's nothing I haven't seen yet. Get used to being free and showing your true self. There is nothing to be ashamed of here.'

'You sound like the voice in a flasher or stalker's mind.'

Jaden takes two steps forward and his body emerges from the warm water environment that is suspended in midair.

'Jaden you need to cough out the remaining liquid in your lungs.'

Jaden leans over and coughs up water. The water goes towards the floor, but changes direction and goes back into the rectangular pool of water.

'How was I able to breathe with all of that inside of my lungs?'

'The nanobots in your pores around your body were transferring the oxygen in the water directly into your bloodstream. Therefore, there wasn't a reason for your lungs to do anything. There were microscopic tentacles going into your belly button that was providing oxygen, water, and food. How do you feel Jaden? You died, were brought back to life and now your body was repaired from you being completely frozen.'

Jaden clears his throat, takes a deep breath and stands up.

"Yeah, my body has been through a lot ever since I found your spaceship. So far I've been shot, drowned, drugged, body molecules vaporized, brain downloaded, chest cut almost open, suffocated, frozen and taken out of my body repeatedly. What is next for me? Assimilating me and putting me with the Borg?"

She chuckles. "How are you feeling?"

"I feel great, a little stiff, but okay."

"Stretch your body in every direction, touch your toes, hands over your head and tell me how you feel," she says.

Jaden does this and feels the aches all around his body.

“My joints feel stiff and my muscles feel a little sore as if I just came out of the gym. It feels strange being back in my original body again for some reason.”

“Your mind was getting used to being in another body and felt less strain using a nanoeye. It is sort of like giving your body a break.”

“I just noticed I have my clothes back on that I was wearing the day I found your ship,” Jaden asks, as he looks himself up and down.

He has on blue jeans and a NY Giants jersey. The jersey has a blue number 27 on both sides of it and the name Hampton above his chest.

“Hey! This is backwards,” he yells, “The player’s name goes on the back along with the tag in the shirt.”

Jaden pulls his arms from the sleeves and turns his jersey around.

“I apologize about that Jaden. I didn’t realize there was a right and wrong way.”

“It’s okay, how is it that I’m completely dry and my clothes are dry?”

“Well this special water doesn’t soak through materials and it returns back into the pool.”

“Okay, that’s cool. Now where is my Giants jacket and Jordan sneakers?”

“They are safe, cleaned and on your bed. Even the bullet hole was sewn up,” Bellona answers.

Jaden turns around and takes a few steps away. He unbuckles his belt, opens his pants, and looks inside.

“You Andromedians are the best dry cleaners; you even removed that shit stain out of my underwear,” Jaden says excitedly

“Shit stain? Your feces? Why would that be in your underwear?” Bellona asks then continues, “You humans should be toilet trained by your age.”

Jaden laughs, “When I was first shot by the UFO police, I slightly pissed myself. Then when I was drowning in the dark on your ship, I was scared shitless and I felt myself pooping before I passed out.”

“So you uploaded your remains on your clothes, because you were scared shitless? I’m sure your friends back home would find that funny, right Jaden?”

“Embarrassing for me and funny for them. I’m glad you are learning what is funny Bellona.”

“I’m sorry for that Jaden. But you won’t have that problem now; we removed most of the food particles and feces from your digestive system. The pool of water removes and vaporizes any remains.”

Bellona smiles and laughs.

“What is so funny?”

“I’m sorry Jaden; I was watching the video from our ship from when you were drowning and unconscious on our ship. As you can see from

the 3D video here after your clothes were removed... two of your logs were floating in the water and bouncing off your head and chest.”

“Oh, so it’s so funny that you had to put it on the 3D video screen with the night vision? My turds doing an Under the Sea dance on a dead body is funny to you huh?”

Bellona continues to laugh, “Jaden, you asked what was so funny.”

“Yeah, yeah.”

Jaden walks away from the screen and away from Bellona. He continues to stretch his legs and arms.

“Jaden, don’t be upset. I haven’t laughed this much since I was an organic life form. I’m learning to see the humor in things and especially in your culture.”

Jaden continues to walk away and stops in one place.

“I changed the video and it’s showing the insides of your body.”

The 3D screen is showing Jaden’s body, blood vessels, muscles and the nanobots moving in his bloodstream.

‘Your blood pressure and temperature are normal,’ Bellona says telepathically.

Jaden walks back. Checking his pocket and looking in his wallet.

“I’m not upset; I probably would have done the same thing if it was one of my friends.”

“I noticed that you are sensitive. I’ll use more caution. Jaden, are you checking your wallet to make sure your money is there?”

“Sorry, force of habit.”

“What are we going to do with your currency? Buy something in our galaxy?”

“No, but maybe the Darclonians took some to use it in a strip club back on Earth?” He jokes.

Bellona smiles.

“Okay, that wasn’t my best joke,” he says.

“Don’t worry about it.”

“Why does everything inside of my body look animated?” He asks.

“This is a much better way of seeing things inside of complicated bodies or materials. Seeing the insides of your body the way it is will probably freak you out.”

“Bellona, I’m thinking that I’m hungry, but my stomach doesn’t feel like I am hungry. Why is this?” Jaden asks.

“Your digestive system is offline for the moment, including your stomach. Your body is currently on a photosynthesis and liquid diet. Artificial sunlight has been absorbed into your pores through the nanobots, into your bloodstream and converted over into energy. With a combination of some proteins, amino acids, carbohydrates, and an advanced metabolic process you won’t be hungry for a while.”

“Works for me. This is an interesting 3D x-ray here. Are those all the nanobots in my body?”

“Yes they are; they are analyzing your DNA, RNA, body structure, tissue, spinal cord, neuron transmissions, cell division and everything inside of you. They will give a report on what they find.”

“Wasn’t this done to me before, when I first got on your ship back on Earth?”

“Most of it was, but most of the data was stolen. Most of the analyzing done while you were on Earth was mostly for preparing your body for flight, space and optic-warp. The analyzing process now is for enhancing your human body to its maximum capability.”

“Any word on that transmission signal you were trying to intercept from the Darclonians?” Jaden asks.

“We did intercept the transmission and we are verifying on the other side of the micro black hole. Our long range telescope antennas on the outside of our Andromeda Galaxy will fully verify if any transmission made it into your galaxy.”

Marco appears in the room behind Bellona and walks forward, while Jaden has his back turned.

‘I see your body is back to its old self Jaden, how are you feeling?’ Marco asks.

Jaden looks around the room and notices Marco standing there.

“Hey, my blue rescuer alien Smurf friend,” Jaden pauses and talks telepathically, ‘Oh I apologize, I realize the preference for communicating here is through telepathic means. I’m fine, and doing well. It feels strange being back in my own body. I feel sluggish and weak,’ Jaden says without moving his mouth while he walks up to Marco and shakes his hand.

‘This...’

‘I figured it out in a half a second that shaking hands is customary in your culture,’ Marco says without much emotion in his face.

‘Wow you are fast, took the words right out of my mouth.’

‘*The Smurfs* was your favorite show when you were an early teenager.’

‘You’re good with quickly going through my brain’s memory,’ Jaden says with a surprised look on his face.

Bellona smiles and walks over to the 3D video of Jaden’s vitals and her face changes to a sad face.

‘Jaden guess what?’

‘What Marco?’

‘You were approved to go back home.’

‘Alright! Earth here I come!’ Jaden yells excitedly then continues, ‘That felt strange yelling telepathically, feels as if I was humming loud to myself.’

Marco continues to talk to Jaden.

Jaden stares off and daydreams to himself. *He is imagining himself being back home on Earth and getting a special award for the furthest traveled human. He stands on a stage next to the President. The President of the United States hands him the award and Jaden takes the podium.*

“Thank you sir. I would like to thank my mom, girlfriend, Pops and good friend James for supporting me and believing I would return to Earth. I would also like to thank my alien friends on the planet Xenos for returning me in one piece and giving us advances in technology. I would also like to thank my sexy friend Bellona for rescuing me. Would there be any questions?”

A reporter raises his hand, “Mr. Marino, how do you feel traveling over five million light-years?”

“I feel like five million bucks and I have boldly gone where no man went!”

The audience laughs and applauds.

“I also have the most space miles in space.”

Another reporter stands and asks a question, “How do you feel having your statue next to Lincoln’s in Washington?”

“I feel very honored and look forward to having my face on the Washington Monument as well.”

A smiling female stands up asking a question, “What are you going to do next, Mr. Marino?”

“I’m going to Disney World!” Jaden yells with his hand and award in the air. “Then I’m going to end world hunger, stop global warming, run for President, and end racism. . .”

‘Jaden, Jaden...Are you here with us?’ Bellona asks.

Jaden snaps out of his daydream.

‘Man that was intense. I felt like that was actually happening,’ Jaden says.

‘Your brain is using a higher percentage of itself. Everything is going to seem more real. You’ll also be able to remember more,’ Bellona says.

‘Jaden did you hear anything I was saying about going back home?’ Marco asks.

‘No,’ Jaden replies, ‘Sorry about that, I zone out sometimes.’

‘With time Jaden, you’ll be able to process and do more than one thing at once. Your mind is naturally capable of multi-tasking.’

‘Sounds good to me. I was just thinking about something. When I was rescued from Planet 455, on the video, I remember the blisters were shooting at Bellona when she was on the ground...’

The video of Bellona replays in the middle of the room, of her on the ground being shot at and then exploding.

‘I’ll explain Jaden; my energy was going down so I did what we call an atomic recharge. My body absorbed all the energy and matter of the weapons being fired at me. My energy particles united the enemies’ weapons until I exploded out into space in all directions. My body’s particles united with direct non-filtered sunlight, then came back down at the speed of light on my targeted enemies. My nanoscanners directed which targets to hit when I came back down in hundreds of pieces. Then my body reunited together. That is a last resort weapon, which requires a lot of energy and can only be used once a battle.’

‘That is amazing. For some reason I just remember this incident from out of nowhere.’

‘It is okay, your memory will get more organized.’

‘Jaden, do you remember the D.E.K?’ Marco asks.

‘Yes, I do, remember the dark energy knight none of you could kill.’

‘That’s right; Bellona already explained that to you. That alien was amazing and scary. I’ve been in tens of thousands of battles and never saw something like that. It was like a walking black hole, which was in complete control of its dark energy around it,’ Marco says.

‘Bellona already told me about it.’

‘Oh, okay. Well did Bellona tell you that we hit it with a combined energy of ten atomic bombs?’

‘No man, that’s a lot of energy.’

‘Our nanoscanners and nanoeyes were sucked into the D.E.K and destroyed. We analyzed some of the scanners’ data and it is a walking micro black hole. The outside energy of its body is the singularity point. The singularity point is the center of a normal black hole where no matter can survive. It’s the crushing point where all matter is destroyed at the end of a black hole. However, this alien had an event horizon three feet around its body. An event horizon is a strong gravity field that pulls in light or matter towards the singularity point in regular black holes.

‘That’s crazy,’ Jaden says.

‘Jaden, you learned this in school already. We got this word from your vocabulary and matched it with our definitions. Why did you ask what a singularity was?’ Marco asks.

‘We college and high school students only remember thirty percent of what we learned in school. With all the cigarettes, weed smoking and drinking I’m surprised I remember my own name sometimes. Thanks for reminding me.’

‘We will significantly improve your memory. Anyway, Jaden that alien was very dangerous. We have no idea on how to destroy it yet. We are researching this info with other species and checking our databases.’

‘Where does the destroyed matter go once it passes the singularity point in this alien?’

‘We have no idea. We don’t even know what we are dealing with. Dark energy is very unstable and dangerous to control. There was so much concentrated in one area around the alien. In addition, It was very stable and in a controlled state. We sent some ships back to the planet, but the D.E.K was nowhere to be found,’ Marco says.

‘That’s too bad, that monster freaks me out,’ Jaden says.

The 3D screen changes and two aliens appear on it. Jaden walks closer to it as it gets his attention. Two aliens are standing towards each other as if they are about to fight, in a room that is a slightly dark. A sound is made as if something is about to start. One of the aliens is Bomani. His long striped skin is glowing. The other alien, named Noah, is all red and resembles a male with claws. They continue to face each other. Suddenly a clear energy shield appears over each of them. The camera angle changes.

‘Bellona, what is happening here?’ Jaden asks.

‘This is one of our competitions and games, which is a battle between two fighters. The game I was telling you about earlier. The room setup is computer controlled. They are allowed a certain amount of points to have any type of defensive and offensive weapons they want. Right now, they are absorbing as fast as they can all the shield ingredients in the room. Then they try to find holes in shields around each other’s body as they are doing now. They concentrate on each other’s weaknesses since each has to control their own shield speed and walking with it. The faster their R.P.M’s, the stronger their shields are. A host controls the direction and angles of the shield generation nanobots. The gravity of the room changes every 10-30 seconds. Therefore, each opponent has anti-gravity and pro-gravity nanos in their feet and around their body so they don’t fall. Once a game, an energy ball floats and bounces around giving who ever grabs it extra points to increase any of their weapons. The room is six feet deep and each side is twenty feet long. Four sides like a rectangular box. The front and rear wall transports an object to the other side. The sides are constantly changing depending on which side the gravity is on. The opponents are using an artificial body, but their original body feels the pain inflicted on each other,’ Bellona says.

‘This game sounds interesting. Does everyone usually start off with the same weapons?’

‘Everyone usually starts off with the shields, which take up most of the points. Once an opponent’s shield system is weak, the other can attack with shield penetrating weapons...’

Marco stands behind Jaden watching the 3D screen.

‘Bomani is what you humans call the champion for the past five years,’ Marco says.

‘Seems a little boring, two people looking at each other trying to destroy each other’s shield systems,’ Jaden says.

The gravity changes in the room and they are standing on the side of the right wall. Noah slides towards the ground, slightly losing his balance. Bomani keeps his ground and doesn’t move.

‘You see that Jaden, Noah lost his balance, so some of his concentration went off his shield to gravity adjusting,’ Bellona says.

‘But he slightly lost it, that wasn’t much,’ Jaden says.

‘In milliseconds it matters a lot. Now Bomani is charging his offensive weapons and so is Noah. Noah is charging too soon.’

The gravity changes again suddenly and they are on the ceiling fighting.

‘That’s cool; they are on the ceiling fighting. I mean staring at each other on the ceiling.’

‘For you it is a little boring, but if you knew how hard it is to keep your energy shield around your body and moving with it, you’ll know how hard this part is. Now it will get a little interesting for you Jaden.’

The 3D screen shows Bomani’s shield strength at eighty percent and Noah’s is at fifty-three percent. The room changes gravity again to directly the opposite, back towards the ground. Bomani lets the room gravity take him down and he falls towards the ground from the ceiling. He puts his hands together and creates a glowing sword as he pulls them apart. Bomani puts his right arm over his head as he falls head first towards the floor. He pushes himself off the ground and turns himself right side up. Noah shoots small orange projectiles at Bomani, which bounces off Bomani’s shield and continues to bounce around the room in different directions. Bomani jumps on the right wall as the gravity changes again for the room. The gravity is pulling towards the left wall. Noah walks on the left wall. Bomani pushes off the now ceiling as his opponent is still over him, standing on the ground.

‘The small two-inch purple energy balls are passing right through Noah and his shield,’ Jaden says.

‘Yes, they don’t affect the person who fired them,’ Marco says.

‘Cool, just like in *Streetfighter*.’

Bomani changes his gravity direction as his opponent is upside down over him. Bomani charges upwards with his sword in his left hand, as he is still midair. Noah takes a step back watching Bomani over him.

Bomani comes down and flips right side up on the ceiling and cuts through the red opponent's shield striking him. The red opponent blocks the sword hit with his right arm and pushes a shock wave of force at Bomani with his left. Bomani quickly falls backwards and goes through the forward wall and comes out the rear wall. Then his body lands flat on the pro-gravity side of the left wall.

'Where did he disappear to?'

'The forward wall and rear wall transports a player through to the opposite side.'

'What did the red dude hit Bomani with?' Jaden asks.

'He hit him with a strong gravity disrupting force. We call it a gravity shock wave. It forces any object in the path of the shock wave to go in that direction as if it is falling towards the ground. The shock wave also doubles or triples the weight of the object causing more damage. That was a close attack.'

Noah's total energy is down to eighteen percent as Bomani's goes down to thirty-three percent. The gravity of the room changes to the ground. Bomani jumps up and falls towards the ground. Noah tries to regenerate his shield strength as he is still on the ceiling. Bomani jumps up towards him and his opponent does the same. Noah fires another gravity shock wave. Bomani's shield absorbs most of the blast, causing his body to spin in 360° vertical circles in the middle of the room. Bomani waves his left hand in front of him. Bomani and his opponent quickly fall towards the ceiling and Bomani quickly swipes his opponent with his sword, finishing him off.

'How did it end so quickly?'

'Bomani used his remaining gravity balancing energy around his body, and used it around his opponent also; causing both of them to fall towards the ceiling. Bomani increased the pro-gravity force around his opponent, pinning him against the ceiling. Then he finished him off. The gravity for the room changed towards the ceiling at the right time, increasing Bomani's strength to pin Noah,' Marco says.

'That was cool. I want to give that a try,' Jaden says.

'Jaden, you are not ready to play in this type of video game,' Marco says.

'Come on Marco, I think Jaden is capable of competing,' Bellona says.

'He would need to be using a much higher percentage of his brain. He would also need to increase his multi-tasking skills to be able to control the gravity, shields and movement at once,' Marco says.

Jaden looks at Bellona and Marco with a confused look.

'I have confidence in Jaden,' Bellona says.

'He will need a lot of practice,' Marco says.

'He will need to practice regardless,' Bellona says.

Jaden turns his head back and forth at Marco and Bellona as they talk like two parents arguing over their kid.

‘Why are you two arguing like my parents?’ Jaden asks, ‘Let me give it a try if I don’t do good, so be it.’

‘Marco thinks your brain is too primitive,’ Bellona says.

‘You said that Marco?’ Jaden asks.

‘Come Jaden, you would have heard me say something telepathically,’ Marco says defensively.

‘He sent it coded to me Jaden. Don’t worry about it; he just wants you to try the game out. This was his way of getting you to go for it,’ Bellona says coded directly to Jaden.

Marco wants to encourage Jaden to try the game out. Jaden laughs to himself at the fact that encoded telepathic messages can be sent. Bomani appears in the room with Jaden, Bellona and Marco. Marco walks over to Bomani.

‘Hello fellow Andromedians and human. Did you see me kick that alien’s ass?’ Bomani asks while walking in the room with a smile on his face.

‘He traveled 5023 light-years to get his ass kicked. He was talking so much crap in his language to other Andromedians. I showed him what I could do in only seventy-one seconds.’

‘Good job Bomani, we already knew you are the best,’ Marco says.

‘Bellona did you ever try?’ Jaden asks.

‘I was the champion for a while, but the game isn’t one of my main interests. I’m against unnecessary violence. I think it’s more for training and practice for the real world,’ Bellona says.

‘Bellona went all peaceful, spiritual, and loving the universe on everyone. I beat her a long time ago a few times,’ Bomani says.

‘That was thousands of years ago Bomani. The game isn’t really challenging anymore. We played each other hundreds of times,’ Bellona says.

‘I would be tired also after playing for all those years and that many times,’ Jaden says.

‘The rules and the game changes. The environments evolve and there are different difficulty levels. We used to fight with energy swords for hours, without any shields, over lava, strange planets, on supernovas and underwater,’ Bellona says.

‘That is amazing. It’s like a futuristic *Mortal Kombat* using real bodies. I’ve noticed I’ve been talking a lot faster. You guys have been talking faster and it’s fine now,’ Jaden says.

‘Your *primitive* mind has been adjusting well Jaden,’ Bellona says while winking at him.

‘So you are going back home tomorrow Jaden, good for you,’ Bomani says while walking to Jaden and shaking his hand.

‘You Andromedians really are good with learning a species’ culture fast,’ Jaden says.

‘Well we are very quick learners here. So you want to give the champ a shot in the old Gravity Fighting game?’ Bomani asks.

‘Yes, I do. I think I can take you down,’ Jaden says.

‘Jaden, you need some practice first,’ Bellona says.

‘He can learn while we play. I’ll give him a few minutes to warm up. I’ll even give him the energy bonus point ball,’ Bomani says with a cocky attitude.

‘I’ll need some private practice time to prepare Jaden first,’ Bellona says.

‘That’s fine with me,’ Bomani says.

‘Why you don’t play Marco?’ Jaden asks.

‘The game is too primitive for me. I like the real thing and things that explode,’ Marco says.

Marco and Bomani talk to each other.

Bellona turns to Jaden and looks directly in his blue eyes. Her small silver hands go over his shoulders. He feels her warmth going through his body.

‘Jaden you don’t have to do this. This type of training takes days, weeks and months for some species. Some minds aren’t capable of this type of multi-tasking. You could cause a seizure in your brain or put yourself in a coma.’

‘I’ll take it easy. Bellona, if I see a challenge and I think I can do it, I’m going to give it a try. It’s all about the confidence,’ Jaden says.

‘We will see you in the game later Jaden. I have confidence in you. I saw how you flew our spaceship back on Earth. Very impressive connecting with the EIS so fast. Not many species could fly like that and only using a small percentage of their brains. So I think you would do well in the game,’ Marco says with confidence.

‘See you soon Jaden. Bellona, good luck training your apprentice and new alien boyfriend,’ Bomani says while chuckling and then disappears with Marco.

‘Why did he say *new* boyfriend?’ Jaden asks.

‘Well, myself and Bomani were what you would call dating thousands of years ago. Now we are just good friends. I’m known for wanting to be more like a human species. We always used to challenge each other and we saved each other in many battles. Listen, Jaden we need to practice. Even if you weren’t playing the game against Bomani, you would still need the basic skills for controlling shield technology, gravity manipulating and multi-tasking,’ Bellona says.

“Okay, let’s do it!” Jaden yells aloud, and then continues, “Did you just give me an artificial cigarette?”

“Yes, your body and brain needed it. The nanobots in your brain pretty much determine when you need one now,” Bellona says.

“Thanks. It looks strange now, seeing your mouth moving and sound coming from where your body is at.”

“Yes, Jaden your mind is getting used to telepathic communication. However, maybe we should continue talking voice to voice, so you won’t be trying to talk to humans telepathically when you return to Earth.”

“That’s a good idea Bellona. What do I need to do to get start practicing for this fighting game?”

“Jaden you will need to get into a sleeping state. Take your clothes off...”

“I love it when a female tells me to take off my clothes.”

“As I was saying, I will need to adjust parts of your brain, so you will be using a higher percentage of it. The nanobots in your body and brain can help initialize parts of your brain that aren’t being used, enabling you to concentrate on multiple things at once and do things in the background kind of like a computer. But it requires practice, concentration and coordination.”

Jaden removes his clothes down to his boxers. The pool of water changes from rectangular vertical to rectangular horizontal.

“Is there any way I could just play from laying in a bed or something non-liquid?” Jaden asks, “I have a slight phobia now of large bodies of water.”

“Your body needs to be in a natural state and floating state of mind. Your brain will be fully connected to the artificial body and can’t afford any outside distractions. This special water also keeps the communication speed instant.”

“Okay, but if I drown again, I’m kicking your ass,” Jaden says in a joking voice as he lies down in the water. Bellona smiles.

Jaden closes his eyes and takes a deep breath as if he is jumping into a swimming pool. The water feels warm like a Jacuzzi. He hears sounds like being underwater in a pool. Then the underwater sounds go away.

‘Jaden you need to take one more regular deep breath, so your lungs can fill up with the liquid so you can breathe through your pores. This will also put your body into a natural state of sleep and enable your artificial body to go online.’

Jaden relaxes and takes a deep breath as if he is breathing air. The liquid enters his lungs, but his body adjusts automatically. He feels something going into his belly button. Jaden opens his eyes and he is standing in front of Bellona. He is in the artificial body he was in earlier.

Jaden looks at his arms and body again, amazed that he is outside of his body again.

"This is really freaky. My body is lying over there, but I'm over here walking around and I feel like my regular self. Everything almost feels the same."

"We try to make things feel the same. Everything looks normal here," Bellona says.

"What is in that water and what was happening to my belly button?"

"It is called exotic water. The same liquid that your body is in when it's in the EIS. It has trillions of nanotissues in it and elements for a carbon-based body. It is also used to repair many different species' bodies. Pure oxygen and different proteins were going into your belly button. Similar to when your body was in your mother's womb. Your body and mind is always prepared to go back into the womb state of mind," Bellona says.

"Oh okay, interesting."

"What is...what is that tattoo image on your upper back?" Bellona asks, and then continues, "Oh that was from your brother dying a few years ago. You tattooed it on your upper back when your brother passed away to always remember him. I'm sorry about your brother. I know it is tough when a loved one dies."

"Don't worry about it, let's get some practicing in," Jaden says with a slight tremor in his voice.

"Okay, let's go."

The walls, floor, ceiling, and surroundings turn bright. Jaden can hear sounds of something large falling into an empty room. There is a flash and the room he is in changes. Jaden is standing inside of the Gravity Fighting room with Bellona. The walls, ceiling and floor are glowing white.

"I feel like I'm in heaven. My feet don't have any shoes, but I feel as if I do," Jaden says as he walks around getting familiar with his surroundings. Jaden walks and stumbles into a wall.

"I didn't even see this here," he says.

"You have to use your sensor, because the walls sometimes change distances. First, we will start with defying gravity. Gravity can be your enemy and your friend," Bellona says as she jumps up on the wall and walks towards the ceiling and over Jaden.

"The trick is making your mind think you are on ground level. There are anti-gravity nanos around your body and pro-gravity nanos in your feet, which keep you stable. The anti-gravity energy repels the pulling force and reduces the weight of the opponent. The force and gravity of the room will normally force your body into that direction. This would make your body feel as if the ground is in that direction. As I stand on this left wall, my body automatically increases the anti-gravity energy on

the left side of my body, so that I don't lean or fall down. Give it a try Jaden."

Jaden runs and jump on the left wall with Bellona. He crouches as he feels the ground pulling his body in that direction. Jaden waves his arms in an attempt to gain his balance and then he stands up straight. He stands there for a few seconds, but feels very dizzy and disoriented. Everything is spinning around him. He slowly falls to the ground and lies on his back.

"Don't worry about it Jaden, try it again. This time you need to disable the equilibrium in your ears," Bellona says.

"What is equilibrium again?" Jaden asks, but quickly answers himself, "The equilibrium is in my ears, and it controls my balance. It also lets me know what is up or down and it works with my brain when walking, right?"

Jaden stands up and holds his head.

"You got it, Jaden."

"My memory is improving greatly. I could actually see and hear my eighth grade science teacher talking about it in class."

"Jaden stay focused. You need to concentrate that the wall is the ground you are on..."

"Can't you just disable that in my ears?"

"That is something that isn't suggested."

"Why not?"

Jaden falls flat on his face. He tries to push himself up, but turns over and is lying on his back. Jaden feels his head is spinning and he cannot get off the ground. He feels as if he was spinning around in circles for twenty minutes. Jaden crawls in circles on his knees, and then tries to get up but falls back on the ground.

"What is happening to me?" He asks, "I can't get up or walk."

"Jaden, you asked why not. So I temporarily blocked the signals your equilibrium is sending to your brain. According to your history Jaden, it's easier to just show you or you would continue with many unnecessary questions wasting more time."

"Okay, you made your point, I get it. It is amazing how fast you are learning about me. I feel like I'm on some super drugs and my father spun me around for ten minutes nonstop," Jaden says while grabbing his head lying flat on his back looking at Bellona on the wall with her arms crossed.

Jaden stands back up as the spinning goes away.

"My girlfriend stands like that with me, when she gets impatient. You are learning the ways of human women. That is not something you should copy. Next you'll be imitating getting periods and acting like a bitch," Jaden says while chuckling.

"I wouldn't mind acting like a human female, they have interesting emotional strengths and do a good job keeping you men in line."

"Yeah yeah. So my mind thinks this is my real body?"

"Yes Jaden. Everything outside of your brain is bypassed into the body you are in now. Your mind doesn't know the difference. Your body here is even breathing air while your brain thinks your human body is. Amazing, right?"

"Very, very interesting. I didn't even realize I was breathing. This is so cool; I guess it all takes some getting used to."

"Now, Jaden try the wall again!"

"You sound like my karate instructor."

Jaden runs, jumps on the wall and tries to catch his balance.

"Think as if the wall is the ground. Don't think as if you are on a wall, your body will compensate the gravity pulling you towards the ground."

Jaden keeps thinking to himself that he is on the ground and walks up the wall towards Bellona about fifteen feet away. He slips half way and slides downward, but stops himself and continues walking. Jaden continues to practice for another ten minutes.

"I think I have it now," Jaden says.

"Let's try the ceiling."

Jaden follows Bellona and walks on the ceiling.

"I think I have it. I'm getting it. Can I jump into the forward wall?"

"No, you can't. I'm glad you are getting it. Now you are going to have to manually control the anti-gravity nanos around your body."

"Manually?"

"Yes, Jaden, this is considered cheating. You learned walking on the walls and ceilings in no time, this shouldn't be too hard. Follow me back to the ground."

Bellona walks towards the wall. Jaden jumps up, slowly spins and lands on the ground with his feet.

"Cool, did you see that?"

"Mr. Quick Learner try the wall now," Bellona says.

Jaden walks up to the wall and leaps on it. He feels the forces pulling him down. He feels his feet pulling him down, but not enough. Jaden concentrates and can feel the gravity around his body. He begins to lose his footing and falls towards the ground. He catches his footing then adjusts the energy in his feet and left side. Jaden takes baby steps up the wall.

"I can feel the energy moving on the outside of my body clockwise."

"After you concentrate on it, put it in the back of your mind."

"I'm doing it, I'm doing it!" Jaden yells while walking on the ceiling doing the same thing, but suddenly falls towards the ground. Jaden gets

nervous as the ground quickly approaches. His body is abruptly propelled back towards the ceiling and slams into it face first.

“What’s happening? Why am I glued to the ceiling?”

“You got nervous and reversed the anti-gravity energy going around your body. This turns into a powerful positive magnetic charge of energy. In these games, the opposite of the pro-gravity side of the room or floor is like a strong metal material. So in short, the ceiling is the metal and you are the magnet,” Bellona says.

“Thanks for telling me. I feel like I’m slammed up against a wall by a fat cop and being searched. I can’t move, I’m pinned,” Jaden says in a muffled tone.

“You did it unconsciously, similar to a reflex. Just concentrate on moving the energy counterclockwise.”

Jaden stands up normally on the ceiling and runs around. He runs on the wall, ground and jumps onto the ceiling for the next ten minutes. Bellona watches him with an accomplished smile.

“Okay Jaden, time for the next step, which is more difficult.”

Jaden walks over to Bellona standing on the ground.

“Do you see the clear bubble dots all around the room?” She asks.

“Yes, I do.”

“Try to pull them towards you, by thinking about it. Those are energy shield producing nanobots.”

He concentrates on them and they slowly come towards his body.

“Make them move faster around your body all the way down to your feet, completely covering yourself.”

Jaden does this and tries to move them faster. He looks around his body as he sees the particles moving in a slightly faster momentum. The nanobots are quickly moving around him.

“I see a number of 94 rpm and now I see 354 rpm,” Jaden says excitedly.

“That is the speed that your shield’s energy molecules are moving at. The higher the number, the more powerful and stronger it is. That is your revolutions per minute, just like on a vehicle on Earth. You speed it up by concentrating and using more brain thinking strength. For example, it is like juggling something in your hands faster and faster,” she says.

“I’m getting it, I’m at 2150 rpm. How are you able to hear me through the shield?”

“Sounds travel through everything in this room. Keep concentrating on your speed.”

The semi-invisible shield is about three feet around Jaden, encasing him like a capsule. Jaden reaches out and touches it with his right index finger. It feels like a solid material force from the inside. He pushes it harder with his hand and it moves forward.

“How was I able to push it like that? It felt like I was pushing a door.”

“The faster it moves around you, the harder it is to push. The minimum for a fair fight in the gravity game is 5000 rpm and maximum of 10,000 rpm. So you need to get it to at least 5000 rpm.”

“What will happen if I don’t?”

“If we were fighting, you would need to match my energy shield’s rpm to enter my personal shield area, if you wanted to attack me. The faster moving one can dominate the weaker speed. I would be able to overpower your shield and attack you now.”

“How would I know what your speed is?”

“If you concentrate on your opponent’s shield, you can see their rpm number every five billion nanoseconds. In time you can calculate another shield rpm just by looking at it.”

“Five billion nanoseconds?” Jaden asks in an excited voice.

“Excuse me, I apologize Jaden. Five seconds I meant.”

“You almost confused me like a squirrel in the middle of the street trying to figure out which way to run as it is about to get hit by a car.”

“That was funny and a good one Jaden. I just saw the image of your mother driving in her car and swirling around a confused squirrel running in circles in the middle of the street while you were an adolescent. I saw her screaming and you telling her to run it over in the passenger seat.”

“I remember that day; my mother got me from school. I think I got caught bringing an X-rated magazine to school.”

“Okay Jaden, concentrate on your shield speed. Look, your speed went back down to 1215 rpm.”

“My shield erection went down, oh no!” Jaden yells.

“Oh, I’ll help you to get it back up,” Bellona says while walking over to him.

Her energy shield passes through Jaden’s and presses him against his own shield as she stops in front of him. His body is feeling a squeeze and his face turns left against his shield.

“Don’t human men like it rough, when a female is about to overpower them?” She asks.

“I can’t move, I’m being crushed,” he says in a muffled tone.

“Thought I didn’t catch your subliminal erection joke huh?” Bellona asks with a smile on her face.

“I’m being crushed by a big girl. I mean two big girls,” Jaden says with a distorted voice.

“That’s right; you were beat up by two big girls in kindergarten. Therefore, you remember how this feels. What is my shield’s rpm?”

Jaden stops his own shield and falls back a quarter of an inch, but is still stuck.

"You aren't getting off that easy, where are you going?" Bellona asks while recreating another shield behind him.

"What is my rpm Jaden?"

"What is your name?" Jaden asks with a smile on his face.

She puts more pressure against his face and body.

"You like it rough don't you?" She asks.

"Sometimes," he mumbles.

"What's my name?" She yells, smiles and continues, "I meant to say, what's my rpm?"

Jaden looks around and a smile forms on his face.

"It's 6500 rpm," Jaden muffles.

"What was yours before you stopped it?" She demands.

"1870."

"If you are planning on winning this game Jaden, you need to always be fully concentrating. The energy you wasted on coming up with jokes could have been helping your rpm speed. You also need to practice walking with your energy shield around you so you aren't pinned up like you are in a sardine can, between these two shields."

Jaden tries to push against the shield, but cannot. His arms are flat along his body.

"Okay, okay. I'll concentrate harder."

"Bomani is going to kick your ass all around this game and then make fun of you on the Galaxynet. Our time is almost up for practicing, you have to get this. This training might also help you in real life one day."

Bellona releases the shield behind and in front of him. He takes a few steps forward and takes a deep breath.

"What is my name?" Jaden asks and chuckles.

"I apologize, that was an error on my part."

"I don't think that was an error. You said that with passion."

Jaden turns around and concentrates on his bubble dots around him, now sitting still. They begin to gain momentum. He is fully concentrating and has a serious look on his face. They go faster and faster. Jaden reaches 4500 rpm and then 7800 rpm. They begin to glow with energy.

"Very good Jaden, now try to walk forward with it."

He takes a step and bumps his head into his shield. Jaden pushes both of his hands out and tries to move it.

"It is not going to move that way at that speed. You need to move it with your mind. Concentrate on making it float and move at your walking speed."

Jaden takes a step forward and bumps into it again. He gets it to move a few inches and takes a step with it. The shield abruptly moves and it knocks him down. It disintegrates and he is lying on his back.

“Do I really need this shield thing around me when I fight?” Jaden asks, “Why can’t I just fight the old fashioned way with some fists or karate?”

“You can do that, but still need these basic concepts. These basic skills can help you anywhere, not just in this game. I think you can do it, you are using parts of your brain you never used before.”

‘Come on Jaden you can do this. Use the force J,’ Jaden says to himself, trying to get his confidence up.

Jaden quickly creates another energy shield around him. He takes half a step and it follows with him very slowly. Jaden stops and it disintegrates again.

“I know what I need. Can you play some rock and roll from my memory?” Jaden asks.

“Rock and roll is....okay, it’s music. What year, which artist?” Bellona asks.

“Play some, play some Aerosmith.”

“It’s going to sound choppy from your memories,” she says.

The music begins to play as he bops his head up and down jamming, humming to himself. He hears it in stereo around his artificial ears. Jaden creates the shield around him with pure concentration in his eyes. He takes a step forward and the shield follows. Jaden stops and then walks forward a few steps. He walks around the room faster and faster as the shield stays over him. It follows him as he changes direction. Bellona watches with an impressed look on her face.

She sends a coded telepathic message to Marco, ‘Isn’t that amazing? His concentration and coordination went up by forty percent.’

‘Very amazing, Rock and roll must be some kind of brain enhancer for concentration,’ Marco says.

‘His neurons are firing in his brain more synchronized. Jaden’s brain is accepting multi-tasking much easier also,’ Bellona says.

Jaden looks at the wall and takes a big leap onto it while his shield follows. He is bending down on one of his knees while he closes his eyes.

“Come on Jaden you can do it,” Bellona says.

Jaden counteracts the gravity forces around his body pulling him down while concentrating on his shield around him. He stands up straight and walks up the wall, then onto the ceiling. His hair leans towards the ground.

“6500 rpm, that is right!” Jaden yells while continuing to hum his song.

“I’m impressed Jaden, good work.”

“Yeah thanks, the music helps me to concentrate better.”

“Let’s see how well you can control all of that while fighting and moving.”

A glowing sword with electricity moving around inside of it appears in their hands. Bellona jumps onto the ceiling with him. Jaden looks at the weapon that just appeared in his right hand.

“Cool.”

Jaden’s shield speed goes down as he takes a step back. She slowly enters his shield area with her weapon in front of him as he takes a few steps back.

“Get your speed up. Your rpm is at 3200.”

“I’m trying, but I’m about to fall down... I mean fall up.”

He walks into the corner of the ceiling. Jaden hears a sound like a high-speed fan. Bellona’s much faster shield corners Jaden and destroys his weapon, then wounds his hands and arms. He places them to his sides. Jaden yells in pain as he falls to the ground. He slowly lands on his head and falls flat on his face.

“Shit, that hurt. My arms are cut off,” Jaden says as he rolls over. Then suddenly the cuts disappear.

“Jaden are you okay?”

“This game is not as easy as it looks. I’m getting a headache again.”

“You were doing well until your shield speed went down. You could have switched your shield to be in front of you, which would have increased your rpm speed. But your entire body wouldn’t be protected.”

“Now you tell me.”

He stands back up and runs on the wall, then back onto the ceiling with Bellona. Jaden gets his shield speed up to 8500 rpm. The music is back on in Jaden’s mind. Jaden and Bellona’s shields match up and they draw their weapons. The two shields form one larger shield. Bellona blocks his aggressive sword attacks.

“Very good Jaden,” she says while taking a step back while blocking.

She charges at Jaden as their weapons entwine. The electricity dances together as they touch. Jaden is staring straight into Bellona’s eyes. Suddenly a bright yellow ball the size of a car is propelled from the floor and hits them. There is a huge explosion. Jaden’s shield disappears as he falls against the right wall. He is sitting up against the wall with his legs still on the ceiling and in pain. Baffled as to what just happened, he keeps his body from falling towards the ground. Bellona’s shield absorbs most of the blast as she falls against the left wall crouching down, looking towards the ground.

Bomani is standing on the ground smiling. He jumps onto the middle of the ceiling and begins walking towards Jaden.

“So you think you are ready for me now huh? Mr. Human?” Bomani asks.

Jaden is holding his head, still confused.

Bellona stands up with an angry look on her face.

"What is wrong with you Bomani? Are you crazy? You could have hurt him."

Bellona walks up to Bomani as he turns around. She looks him in the eyes, "I'm in the middle of training him you %\$#@!," Bellona yells.

"You are the one that is crazy for trying to train this primitive human to fight against a champion Andromedian."

"I think you are the one who needs training; you haven't fought in these games for thousands of years. Last I remember, I beat you," Bomani says in a cocky voice.

"There was no winner."

"You want to go at it again?" Bomani asks.

"I don't play games anymore," she says while she walks over to Jaden who is lying against the wall, but suddenly slides towards the ground upside down.

Jaden looks up at Bellona trying to figure out what is going on.

"You've gotten weak Bellona," Bomani says.

"I only fight when I have to. I don't have anything to prove to you Bomani. Are you okay Jaden?"

"I'm fine, what is that guy's problem?" Jaden asks as he stands up.

"Some jealousy over the years and him wanting a rematch with me," she says.

"You ready Jaden?" Bomani says.

"Of course I'm ready. Why don't you give him a rematch, I think you can beat him. I have seen what you could do from the rescue."

"There is a time and place for everything," she says.

"Here is something to think about, look back into my memory, where I stood up to my bully in the eighth grade."

Bellona pauses for a few seconds, "I understand your memory point, but these are different situations. I'm more peaceful now and only here to help you. Jaden you don't have to do this. I think you should practice some more."

"I can't die or injure my human body in this, can I?"

"No, but if you get hurt in this game, your body will feel the pain."

"All the pain?"

"Only about twenty-five percent of the actual pain is transmitted to your human body."

"What did he hit us with?"

"Something illegal that isn't allowed in the game. It was called a mini nova."

"Mini nova? Interesting. I felt a lot of heat around that bright yellow weapon. What did you call Bomani earlier? Was it an alien curse word?"

“Pretty much, there wasn’t a definition to describe what I called him in your language. So that’s why it sounded like that to you.”

“Trust me; we have a lot of foul language in my culture,” he says.

“Well Jaden, I’m leaving. You want to still fight Bomani, he is all yours. Remember what I taught you. The game setup is about to begin. Good luck.”

“Bellona don’t leave yet,” he says while walking over to her on the ground.

She stops and he gives her a hug, “Thanks for your help. At least I can say I tried against the champ, even if he does kick my ass,” Jaden says.

“I understand it’s a male thing.”

Bellona walks away and disappears.

“Just me and you, Mr. Planet of the Apes!” Bomani shouts.

“You brown-skinned Borg midget, let’s go.”

A 3D setup screen comes up in front of Jaden. 100% defense shows up and 100% offense in two columns. He has to choose which defensive and offensive weapons he wants. He sees custom and default. He tries to look up at all the options.

“Just hit default, you are wasting so many billions of nanoseconds,” Bomani says.

Jaden chooses default defensive and random offensive weapons. Bomani jumps down to the ground.

“You ready?”

“Yes, let’s go,” Jaden says.

‘I’m still here watching the fight Jaden. I’m going to try and coach you,’ Bellona says telepathically.

‘Okay thanks.’

Bomani and Jaden look directly at each other. The room turns dark and looks more energetic.

‘When the room turns bright, that’s when you start Jaden. Then you need to get as many shield ingredients as possible. Concentrate on them coming to you; they will appear when the room gets bright white.’

The room turns bright white. Jaden tries to concentrate on the floating ingredients for his shield. Some begin to float towards him. The ingredients are all around the room and Bomani is pulling most of them his way. Jaden and Bomani form their shields. Jaden tries to concentrate on his rpm’s. His rpm speed is only at 2800 while Bomani’s is at 6590. Bellona plays some rock and roll for Jaden. Bomani tries to find holes in Jaden’s shield.

‘Jaden be careful, he is trying to find a crack in your shield. The speed has to be constant all around,’ Bellona says.

‘I can’t. He is disrupting my concentration.’

Bomani finds a hole and fires a gravity shock wave from his right arm and through Jaden's shield. Jaden's shield disappears and he hits the wall very hard. The shock wave drains his energy as he is pinned against the wall. He feels like he just fell out of a window and hit the ground. His energy goes down to seventy percent. The gravity for the room changes and the right wall changes into the ground. Jaden stands up and starts up his shield. He runs towards the right wall as Bomani walks down the left wall smiling. Bomani shoots a blue beam at Jaden as he runs up the right wall. The beam disrupts Jaden's concentration and his shield speed is lowered. His shield stops moving with Jaden and he runs into it. Jaden falls back down towards the ground as the gravity of the room shifts to the ceiling. He is lying down in pain as his body falls towards the ceiling. Jaden groans in pain as his face kisses the ground.

'Jaden, get back up and concentrate.'

'I can't this is too much for me. I'm feeling so much pain all over my body.'

'Don't quit Jaden.'

Bomani smiles as he walks across the ceiling and he forms his energy sword with two hands. Bomani disappears and reappears near Jaden. Jaden tries to push up as if he is doing a push up. He groans in pain as he pushes off quickly. His body quickly goes into the air and floats towards the ceiling. Jaden fires a gravity shock wave from his right hand as Bomani's shield absorbs the offensive weapon. Jaden stands upright on the ceiling. Bomani disappears again and appears near Jaden as Bomani swipes at Jaden, severing his left arm. Bomani tries to swing again as Jaden tries to cover himself. Suddenly the room turns darker. Jaden and Bomani are paused in their current position.

'Jaden the game has been stopped. Our elders have some new findings,' Bellona says.

Everything around Jaden changes in a flash of light. He is back in his room where his human body is still laying in the body of water. He is looking at himself lying down and he can see the artificial body he was just in standing around the 3D images in the middle of the room.

'Jaden, you are in a nanoeye,' Bellona says telepathically.

He turns toward Bellona's nanoeye looking at him.

'What is going on?'

'We have some new findings. There was a meeting with all Andromedians.'

'A meeting?'

'Yes, it is over now. They are over in seconds.'

'I'm still getting used to these few second meetings,' Jaden says.

'Don't worry about that, your meeting is starting now. Let's go,' Bellona says.

The room changes and Jaden is in an open area that resembles a huge park. A rush of fresh spring air rushes by the nanoeye he is seeing through. The smell of pollen, leaves, fresh grass and warm air is transmitted to his human body. Green, low cut grass is on the ground in all directions and a lake is directly in front of him. Hundreds of green trees that look as if they were on Earth surround him in all directions. Birds can be heard, but not seen. The lake is calm and is about the size of a soccer field. The lake is very reflective to the perfectly still clouds above. The sun is behind the clouds. Suddenly tens of thousands of nanoeyes can be seen around Jaden. Some are moving around, but most are still. Jaden tries to change his vision into one of them, but can't. They begin to disappear, one by one.

Three sets of twenty-five foot round eyes suddenly appear in the clouds and are looking down towards the lake. The clouds are perfectly still. The sunlight is shining through the lightly tinted blue eyes. An orange pair of glowing eyes appears twelve feet above the lake. These orange and white eyes are ten feet in circumference each and are pointing towards the eyes in the clouds. The eyes in the clouds are slowly rotating.

'Cool, this scenario is amazing. The sunlight coming through the eyes in the clouds is very cool. This is like gods in the clouds looking down on the mortals. The clouds are perfectly still as if someone pressed pause on a VCR. How were you able to do this in the outside world?' Jaden asks.

The nanoeye near Jaden turns towards him and glows.

'Remember we are still in our city under the ocean. The supercomputers simulate the sun and the clouds. You also can't switch nanoeyes here, since they are being occupied by our citizens and guests,' she says.

'This place looks very realistic. I can hear bees, bugs and animals. The smell of fresh air is cool.'

'Your brain is adjusting well to different environments in our virtual city world,' she says.

'I can't hear what is going on. What is up with the orange eye floating above the lake?' Jaden asks.

'That orange eye is our local elder and he is what you would call the President of this planet. They were communicating in many different languages and the meeting is already over. The supreme elders in the clouds are talking to the local elder now. We were a little late. The meetings are over quickly, but the local elder want to talk to you. It is about you going home.'

The nanoeyes begin to disappear around the area.

'Jaden, the supreme elders are on our main planet, which is our central congress. They are communicating through an artificial

wormhole. The supreme elders are the bright eyes in the clouds. There are three of them. They are very wise and are the oldest of our race.'

'How old are they?' Jaden asks.

'Two of the supreme elders are about 72,000 and 76,223 human years old. The third supreme elder is a Mapolian. Her name is Mana and she is millions of years old. She is the most powerful and wisest of the three. When all three of them vote, she can sometimes overrule the other two elders. No, you cannot talk directly to a supreme elder. They don't talk to anyone except local elders, except on some especially rare occasions. They can choose if they want to talk to an individual. Local elders usually represent us and speak for us. Us Andromedians are in these nanoeyes and we ask our local elder hundreds to thousands of questions that he relays to the supreme elders. All of this happens in nanoseconds.'

'That is strange, but interesting. I wished my government communicated this fast. We probably wouldn't be in debt and would have years of work done in minutes,' Jaden says.

'Your race could eventually catch up in technology and communication. You are definitely on the right path.'

The eyes in the clouds disappear except one pair. The thousands of nanoeyes around the area are completely gone. Jaden and Bellona's nanoeyes are still here. The huge orange eyes turn to them and dissolve into the reflective lake.

'What's happening Bellona?'

'You'll see.'

Something forms out of the water into a shape of a body. It forms into the shape of a human, but looks like an alien. The body is completely clear, like glass, and is standing on top of the water. It begins to walk across the water.

'I hope that isn't Jesus, I haven't been to church in awhile.'

While Jaden and Bellona are floating a few feet over the grass, the alien slowly approaches. The color of the body changes into a reflective silvery liquid and resembles a male figure. This alien appears average height, with a mouth and two little holes in its face that look like a nose. It doesn't have any eyelids or ears. Its head is round and he has an orange glow coming from his eyes. The alien also has five fingers on each hand. The reflective liquid alien is reading Jaden's thoughts at a fast rate.

'Does this alien appearance suit you better to look at Jaden?' The reflective alien says in a deep male voice and then quickly continues, 'I'm glad you like it here so far and have adjusted so well. I'm Elderone. I'm the leader of this solar system and planet,' Elderone says telepathically at a fast speed.

'We aren't worried about cutting the grass here Jaden. Can you please concentrate on something you would like to know, or a specific

question, and don't let your mind run off to irrelevant thoughts. Checking on your new memories, Bellona has updated you on most everything you need to know. Bellona is your personal mentor assigned to help you and escort you around our planet. Marco and Bomani are also your escorts. All three of your escorts were brave enough to volunteer to rescue you from Planet 455 where you were held captive. Their timing couldn't have been better to rescue you. You are wondering about the set of eyes still in the clouds? That is Supreme Elder, Mana. She has taken a certain interest in you and wants to listen in on our conversation,' Elderone says.

Mana shines her sunlight eyes onto them. A dark shadow appears on the ground near Elderone.

'You can use your artificial body Jaden,' he says.

'Thanks, I feel as if I'm inside of a floating camera.'

Jaden's artificial body appears around him. Jaden looks down at his hands and legs.

'That's better. Elderone, you are like the perfect mirror. You look a lot like the shiny metal robot in *Terminator 2*. I'm sure you get all the women here, because you are the perfect mirror and women can't live without a mirror.'

Bellona changes into her full body.

'Jaden, you are wasting everyone's time with useless jokes and comments. What are your American humans always saying? Time is money. Nanoseconds are money here,' Bellona says.

'Sorry about that, continue Mr. Elderone,' Jaden says.

'We don't have much of a sense of a humor here Jaden. Our thinking is more like what you humans call robot thinking. I'm going to give you brief details about our emergency meeting we just had. It turns out there is a Darclonian mother ship heading towards planet Earth. Somehow, the signal we were trying to intercept towards the black hole made it through. It then changed its signal type once it got through the other side. It must have changed into a communication we aren't familiar with, so we couldn't detect it. The mother ship has set course towards your home planet. This means we can't take the chance to send you back home. No Jaden, you can't go back home. No, it wasn't my decision; it was the supreme elders' final decision. We can't take the chance of one of our ships falling into enemy hands. Our technology could be compromised if one of our ships is captured again. Jaden we would like to help you and your planet, but our soldiers need their bodies to fully control the ship and to land on your planet. Since we haven't figured out why our bodies can't make it through your galaxy's black hole, we can't take the chance to send an army there. Jaden take your time in thinking, you are thinking about too many things at once and you are confusing me,' Elderone says.

‘I know that you miss your family and planet. However, it isn’t safe. Yes, well there is a chance the Darclonians could be destroying your planet and your race. But I think there is a stronger chance they have something else in mind, since they had Nanomoles in your brain and in other humans on your planet. They could be planning another type of takeover of your planet. They would need to infect the host or human with another agent for the probe to work effectively. There was probably something interesting in your human body that made them interested in returning to your planet. We don’t think your human race’s technology is capable of defending against the Darclonians. Your human race wouldn’t even know it’s coming. We have seen what your technology was capable of. We don’t think your species could even work together in a crisis like this. You want us to send a transmission to Earth to try to warn your species?’ Elderone asks, and then continues, ‘I’ll ask my supreme elders.’

‘Jaden, stop thinking crazy thoughts, you don’t want Supreme Elder Mana to think you are insane,’ Bellona says.

‘What do you mean?’ Jaden asks.

‘The thought of you yelling into the clouds waving your hands into the air saying, “Supreme Elder Taco bell Burrito Gods! Please send me back to my miserable global warming primitive planet and make me an immortal,” ’ Bellona says.

‘Oh, that thought,’ Jaden says.

‘Where do you come up with this stuff?’ Bellona asks.

‘You should know; you aliens have every inch of my brain scanned and constantly being analyzing.’

‘They agreed that a transmission can be sent as a warning to your planet. They only agreed to this because your planet has radio telescopes that are constantly listening around its local stars,’ Elderone says.

‘I forgot all about the radio telescopes listening for aliens in space,’ Jaden says.

‘We can send a primitive transmission similar to the device your government left on our ship. That is all we can help you with now. Right now, the mother ship is in the Milky Way Galaxy in the Sagittarius arm, near Ring M57, which is about 8400 light-years from Earth. Their mother ships can travel up to 1000 light-years per year. The mother ships absorb dark matter in the darkest areas in space and the outside of the ship is covered in dark matter. This is difficult for some species to detect. We can detect the ships by seeing changes in gravitational forces and using our advanced long range scanners.’

The yellow sunlight eyes in the clouds disappear and the clouds begin to move again.

Jaden is sad that he can't go back home and thinks of everyone he won't see again. He thinks of some questions, while Bellona puts her hand on Jaden's back comforting him.

'No, our ship cannot just drop you off and return back. They can't detect our ship, they would think we are there on the planet and there might be a fierce battle and more mother ships would come. A mother ship can carry thousands of Darclonian fighters and Wraithstalker spaceships. There is also a chance they might have dark energy knights ready to attack your planet and we are still trying to figure out how to fight them. We are currently trying to figure out what these D.E.K.'s are and how the Darclonians are able to manipulate unstable dark energy. Yes, we do have mother ships, but we use them for special occasions. Our single ships can connect to each other to form one powerful and faster ship,' Elderone says.

'I understand, Elderone. I wish more could be done. It would be horrible if my human race were destroyed. I just wish I could do something. I mean, what am I suppose to do for the rest of my life now?' Jaden asks.

There is an odd silence.

'Jaden, the S.O.S. warning transmission was sent to your planet. It should reach Earth in a couple of years. Hopefully your government will follow what they need to do,' Elderone says.

Jaden has his head down.

'I feel like I'm trying to cry, but I'm not. Thanks for the artificial cigarette Bellona. But I need to be back in my own human body right now. I need to sleep.'

'Your body is already well rested Jaden,' Bellona says.

'I need to rest my mind and think things through. I'm depressed right now, since I'm never going to see my home planet and family again. My species is about to be exterminated. Now I know how Princess Leia felt when her home planet was destroyed. Can I just go back to my room and in my body?' Jaden asks.

'Sure, Jaden. Let's go,' Bellona says.

'If you have any more questions Jaden, I'm here,' Elderone says as he turns around and walks back towards the lake.

Bellona wiggles her nose and snaps her fingers. In a flash, Jaden is back in his human body in the pool of water without glass. He opens his eyes and knows he is back in his human body. Jaden pushes himself up and stands up. He walks out of the water and looks around. He coughs up the water in his lungs. Bellona is looking at him. The water leaves his clothes and returns back to the pool. He takes a deep breath.

'Did you like the humor I just did Jaden?'

"What humor?"

"I tinkled my nose like the girl in *I Dream of Jeannie*. You didn't find it funny?" Bellona asks.

"Oh okay, yeah I guess it was funny," Jaden says in a low, sad voice.

"I'm just happy to be talking again like a human and now I want to go to sleep like a human," Jaden says while walking towards his bed on the far side of the room. Jaden takes off his clothes and puts them on the side of his bed. He sits down with his boxers on and takes off his socks.

"Jaden are you going to be okay?"

"I'm never going to have a family or get married. Maybe I'll marry some alien lizard girl and I'll have some V movie babies. I'll be okay. Wake me up in a couple of years," Jaden says while turning his back towards Bellona and putting the sheet over him.

"I'll leave you alone Jaden, I'm here if you need me."

Jaden thinks hard about missing his home planet. He quickly falls asleep and hours pass by.

Jaden has a dream about being home on Earth and is meeting his girlfriend Amy after class in college. She came out of class and Jaden kisses her on the mouth.

"How was your day today in class baby?" He asks while they walk.

"Class was okay, I missed you today. How was yours?" Amy asks.

"It was okay," Jaden responded while holding her hand.

They walk across campus, while they look into each other's eyes.

"I have an idea, let's go to my house and do a quickie. My mom had a doctor's appointment this afternoon and my dad won't be home until after six," Amy says.

"Sounds good to me, let's go in your Honda."

They get into her car and drive to Amy's house. They walk upstairs to her room.

"Lay down Jaden, get comfortable. I have something to put on for you."

A few minutes pass by as Jaden lies on her bed with his James Bond boxers on.

Amy appears with some sexy red lingerie on and stands over the bed. She turns on some slow music.

"Do you like what you see?"

"Of course I do. Do you see my little friend is at full salute?"

"Adee's little soldier," Amy says.

"He won't be standing down anytime soon."

They both smile at each other.

She slowly dances with her sexy, 5'7", slim 125 lb, body.

"So your little one eye pirate friend has an open window view today?" Jaden asks.

"Yes she does, arrrrggghhh," Amy responds in a pirate voice.

She climbs over Jaden and gets on top of him. She French kisses him. She pulls down his boxers.

"Do you like that?"

"Of course I do. Keep going," he mumbles.

Suddenly an image of Bellona replaces Amy. Jaden is scared and pushes himself against the bed board. The image changes back to Amy.

"Where you going baby? What's wrong?" Amy asks.

"I thought you just changed into someone else."

"Don't be silly. Put these blind folds on."

"Why do I need blind folds?" Jaden asks.

"I wanted to try something a little different."

"Okay, different, let's just hurry before your mom gets home and then I'll have to climb out the window again."

She places the blind fold over his eyes. She climbs on top of him. Jaden touches her chest, hips and flat stomach with his hands. She gently kisses his neck and chest. He puts his arms around her body hugging her. She continues to kiss him lower and lower.

"I see that your soldier missed me today."

"Do you have protection baby?" Jaden asks.

"I had my period yesterday, we will be okay."

"Okay."

"I get so horny after my period."

He penetrates and goes deep inside of her. Jaden's blood pressure rises with the increasing sexual pleasure pulsating around his body. She wraps her legs tightly around his hips.

"Man it feels unbelievable this time baby. I'm starting to see space and stars baby, under these blind folds. I see myself floating in space having sex with you on the bed passing supernovas and millions of stars."

Amy continues to ride him and she begins to make strange noises. Jaden tries to remove his blind fold, but she stops him. The strange noises go away and turn back into female moaning.

"Oh, Oh! I'm about to!" She yells.

"I'm about to also!" He yells.

He grabs the sheets and makes a tight fist around them.

"Aaaaaahhhh." Jaden yells, "Aaahhhh."

Amy falls down and lays on Jaden.

"Did you feel all of that?" Jaden asks, "That was a lot. I never climaxed like that before. I was seeing real stars under this blind fold, as if I was really in space. I felt as if I was floating. That was incredible."

Amy lies beside of Jaden.

"Yes, that was unbelievable Jaden," she says while trying to catch her breath.

“Baby your little friend suddenly got very cold. It turned ice cold when I was on my way to withdraw.”

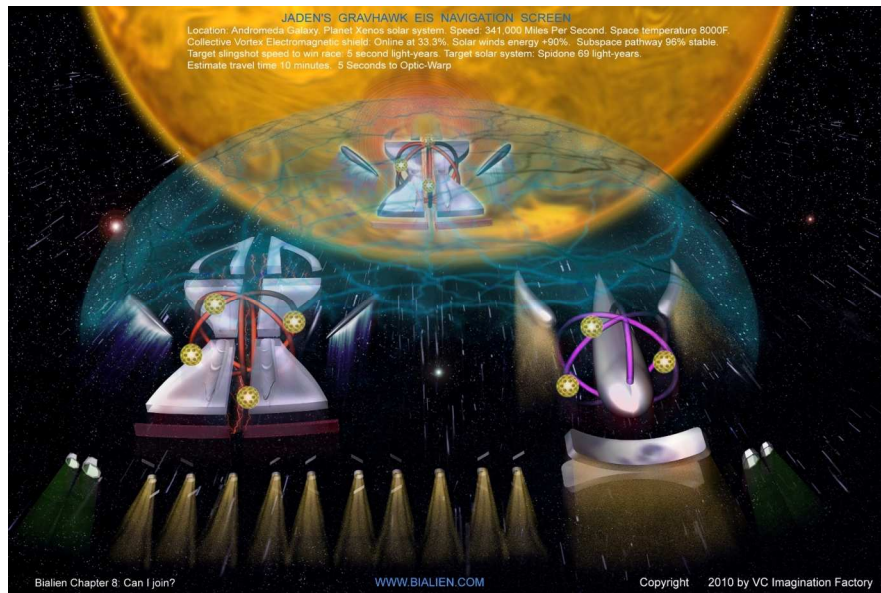
There is no answer. Amy continues to breathe heavily along with Jaden. He lays there with his blind fold on.

“Baby?” Jaden asks while the silence continues.

Amy’s voice changes into another familiar voice to Jaden, “I have been known for falling for other alien species.”

Jaden sits up and quickly rips the blindfold off.

Chapter 8: Can I Join?



Jaden wakes up and is sitting up in his bed and looking in all directions. He is back in the large room in the virtual underwater Andromedian city. He is breathing heavily and his heart is racing. Saliva drips from his mouth and he wipes it with his right hand. He wipes his sweaty face with his left hand. He looks around in all directions and is on full alert. He doesn't see Bellona anywhere.

"What the hell just happened?" Jaden asks.

There is no one in the room, and he just hears an echo.

"Was that just a dream?"

He walks around the room in his boxers looking at the pool of water. Bellona suddenly appears out of thin air.

"Are you okay Jaden. I noticed that you are awake now."

"I'm fine now. I just had a crazy dream," he says while sitting back on the side of the bed.

She walks over to him.

"What was it about?"

"I can't remember now. I just remember bits and pieces of it. I met my girlfriend at school, but I can't remember anything else. It was very strange. How long was I sleeping for?"

"About eight human hours."

"Oh okay. Cool. Can I have some water?" Jaden asks.

"Sure you can. Just walk through the pool."

Jaden walks over and walks through the water. He comes out the other side and the water comes off his skin.

"Man that was refreshing. The water was warm, but I feel like I just drank some cold water. I also don't have to use the bathroom anymore."

Jaden walks over to his bed and puts his clothes on.

"Are there nanobots still inside of me?" Jaden asks.

"Yes. They are studying everything inside of you and will give a report soon. This is a lot safer than doing experiments."

"Yes, I agree. My muscles feel sore like I just came from the gym."

"Are you feeling better about not being able to go home Jaden?"

"I'm going to try to deal with it, and make the best of it. There isn't much I can do. Maybe I'll just be an explorer like Captain Kirk. Maybe I'll just start my own species on a planet. Who knows, I have so many more options now. My mother always said to make the best of a bad situation. What is there to do on your planet?"

"Would you like to use our Galaxynet? You can see thousands of planets, nebulas, supernovas and see millions of species."

"Boring, what else is there to do?"

"You can use Optic-vision where you can see live events happening at different parts of the galaxy and talk to different species."

"Something more exciting," Jaden says.

"There is a spaceship race about to happen soon."

"A spaceship race?"

"I know it sounds a little corny, but that is the best choice of words to translate what it is in your language."

"Oh okay. Tell me more."

"There is first a qualifying round. About eight spaceships fly through optic-warp from our solar system. Then they reach a solar system about 109 light-years from here. First team there wins the first part of the race. Then they fly up to the speed of light from the star to the last planet in that solar system. There are billions of asteroids and meteors flying in many directions. They have to avoid every one of them without using their matrix vortex shields. Then they fly back, and the first one back to our planet wins. This can be very dangerous, because there are micro black holes and artificial wormholes being created randomly. The racers can only use short-range scanners to detect objects. Anyone with a destroyed ship is put on punishment duty."

"Punishment duty?"

"Yes, their nano-silicon is rescued from where the ship exploded and they are put on modified assignment for many years. Each elite warrior has their own spaceship assigned to them, which they are responsible for. If they are damaged or destroyed in a game, it is the Andromedian's responsibility. Myself, Marco and Bomani are elite warriors."

“Are you all racing?”

“I think Marco will be racing.”

“What about your criminals, what kind of punishment do they get?”

“We don’t have many criminals or citizens breaking the law. We punish our criminals by putting them in a virtual prison. It is just their nano-silicon in a virtual hell. They can be in there for hundreds of years, depending on their crime.”

The 3D video images light up the middle of the room. The image is much larger and it shows the shiny spacecraft flying around a solar system. Jaden looks at how fast the ships are moving and dodging objects in the way.

“This is cool, like a virtual video game. Can I join this race?” Jaden asks, “Do you think Elderone would let me fly also?”

“Jaden,” she laughs, “I seriously doubt if you’ll be able to join. It’s only for elite warriors and you would have to use your human body.”

“I don’t care, I want to race. I think I can handle it, I’m not afraid.”

“Jaden, a guest has never joined one of these races; Elderone would never approve, neither would the supreme elders. Even if you did race, your brain isn’t fast enough to handle the fast maneuvering. If you crash into something at a high speed, you could be disintegrated. There would not be anything to bring back or retrieve from the explosion.”

Jaden thinks about it for a few seconds. He walks around the 3D imaging video.

“I feel I don’t have much to lose. I’m willing to give it a try, if I could join.”

“I admire your courage Jaden. I’ll ask Elderone and show him how you feel. Give me a few seconds.”

‘Come on, please say yes,’ he thinks to himself.

“Sorry Jaden, Elderone said no. He even asked the supreme elders.”

“Oh man, that sucks... oh well,” Jaden says while there is an awkward silence.

“Can I see my artificial body?” He asks with a sad voice.

“Sure, but you can’t operate it unless you are in the virtual tub. It is programmed to mimic your human body. Every nerve ending in your body is redirected into this artificial body.”

“Okay, that’s cool.”

Jaden’s artificial body appears in front of him like an image slowly showing up on a computer with dial-up. Jaden looks around at the body just standing still.

“This artificial body looks like a waxed alien body. Very interesting,” Jaden says while walking around and inspecting the body.

“Jaden, guess what?”

“What?” He asks with a sad face.

“You were just approved for the spaceship race,” Bellona says.

“How? You just told me, I wasn’t approved.”

“Somehow they agreed they wanted you to participate.”

“Alright!” Jaden yells excitedly and accidentally knocks over his artificial body.

“Oops,” Jaden says.

It stands up by itself and stays in the same place.

“The way it just got up, looked very creepy.”

“It is programmed to wait for a host to control it, similar to a robot,” she says.

“Jaden, this is the first time a guest has been able to enter one of our racing games. This is highly unusual.”

“I guess I’m changing the rules in the universe. Maybe in a thousand years I’ll be an elder here,” he says.

“You have the same chance of a black president being elected in your country as you have being an elder here,” Bellona says while chuckling.

Jaden laughs, “Whoa, you are getting too American here. That was a good come back”

“Jaden, you have to get prepared.”

“Prepared? Do you mean I have to go through what I went through on Earth again?”

“Not the same thing but similar, but in a fraction of the time.”

“Why can’t I use an artificial body?”

“The signal being transmitted from your human body to your artificial body in space and in subspace wouldn’t be accurate.”

“Oh no, do I get a cool looking ship?”

“It would be a very cool ship, the same ship you were originally flying in. Each ship is usually personal to an individual. The ship bonds to an individual and its DNA. An individual feels pain if the ship feels pain. The good thing is that you don’t have to be in your body when it gets assimilated with the ship.”

“In the future would I always have to go through the same thing?”

“That won’t be a problem in the future. The Darclonians took vital information about how your body reacts in space and with the ship. Stages one, two and three should take less than fifteen minutes. Shall we head to what you would call the airport?”

“Let’s go. Wait a second; can I carry my zombie body?” Jaden asks, while he tries to lift it from its knees.

“Jaden you can’t move it.”

“Man, it weighs a ton.”

“Don’t worry, it will be there too. Ready?”

“Let’s do it.”

The room changes around them like a fade in a movie camera. Everything around them turns completely bright white. They appear on

top of a small cloud. Each puffy cloud is about forty feet round. The sun is shining bright over hundreds of round clouds in all directions.

"Where is this?" Jaden asks while he notices he is back in his artificial body.

"This is our airport Jaden."

It is amazing what he is seeing as he looks all around and sees the ship he was in on Earth all by itself on a cloud. The body is very metallic and reflective and looks like a huge diamond as it sits by itself. He walks around the edge of the cloud and looks down.

"I see the ocean below. What will happen if I jump down?"

"Jump and find out."

"I have a feeling I don't want to find out. Where is everyone else?"

"They left already and are waiting for you outside our neighboring planet, Fujin. Your body is in stage two already," Bellona says.

"Cool. Are we on a real cloud?"

"We are still in our city. These clouds are computer generated. When you are ready to leave, you fly into our simulated sun and you will come out the transport portal way beyond the moon."

"Cool. I can't wait to fly again. This is going to be my ship right?"

"Yes."

"Can I name it?"

"Sure you can."

"I want to call it..." Jaden thinks to himself while holding his artificial hand to his face.

"Can I get closer to it?" Jaden asks while looking down at the large blue ocean thousands of feet below, "How do I get over there?"

"Let's see if you can figure it out."

Jaden looks around, takes a few steps back and tries to leap to the next cloud about ten feet away. He misses by a few feet and spirals downward towards the ocean.

"Aaarrggghhh," he yells as Bellona looks down and watches him.

The body is transmitting the feeling of falling to Jaden's human body. The wind is blowing by his face as the ocean quickly approaches. He begins to scream as his body feels a rush. He quickly hits the ocean making a big splash and everything around him is completely white. He reappears a few feet above the cloud he just fell off. His body collapses as he breathes very heavily.

"What happened?" He asks while looking confused on the soft cloud.

"Jaden that was amazing and funny. Your mind thought you were actually about to die, so instantly your mind started to race through all your memories. Your body started to brace for impact and your adrenal glands released a huge amount of adrenalin into your bloodstream. Your heart was beating faster, oxygen intake increased from your lungs and

your muscles got stronger. The nanobots in your human body started to relay all kinds of signals to your artificial body as you were falling down. Your brain was being over stimulated with info. I saw images of the assistant principal beating you in elementary school when you were younger. Images of you opening your eyes just coming out of your mother. Images of your mother in different parts of your life. No images of your father though, that is interesting.”

“I don’t remember seeing all of that.”

“It happened very quickly. It is very interesting how your mind reacts.”

“I can never forget that beaten by the assistant principal. That happened when I went to school in the south, in the early eighties. Teachers and principals were allowed to hit children then when they misbehaved. I have never seen such well-behaved children in the school. I was in the first grade down there learning what children in New York were learning in the third grade. I was so embarrassed that day. I couldn’t take being in the south. I don’t even remember what I did to earn that beating,” Jaden says.

Jaden stands up again and daydreams for a second.

“Oh okay! Thanks for reminding me Bellona.”

“You’re welcome,” she says in a sarcastic voice, then continues in a regular voice, “It seems like physical punishment was the best deterrent for bad behavior for many humans when they are young.”

“I guess so. Anyway, I thought of a cool name, for my ship. I want to call it Gravityhawk. That is somewhat long. Gravhawk is better.”

“How about Galaxyjumper? Eaglewarper? Optic-shuttle?” Bellona asks.

“Those sound too corny. I like Gravhawk better.”

“Okay, it’s your ship.”

“How do I get over there without falling?”

“I’ll tell you. Remember Jaden, everything is easy here. We don’t physically jump nor do things that require too much work. Concentrate on a piece of the cloud at the edge. You see it detaching itself from the rest of the cloud. Now just step on that piece and it will move in the direction that you want it to.”

Bellona floats across to the cloud the ship is on and the small cloud goes into the rest of the cloud.

“Cool.”

Jaden concentrates on a small piece of the cloud and a small piece comes off. He steps onto it and floats over to where Bellona is.

“I guess that was easier.”

“It is interesting to see your brain’s reactions on how it figures things out.”

Jaden rubs the body of the shiny ship. "My Gravhawk, such a cool name. We are going to have some fun together my little friend."

"Jaden be very careful, this is very dangerous for you. You will be using your real human body in this race. Even though this is a practice race, there is a lot of danger in the Spidone Solar System. There are billions of meteors, asteroids and strong radiation from a nearby collapsed supernova. Please reconsider and not race."

"I feel Bellona this is something I have to do. I'm stuck on this planet. I can't go home. I need some excitement and danger in my life. I love adventure and races. I'm also the first non-Andromedian to do this, so I want to see what it is about," Jaden explains.

"Okay Jaden, as you wish."

"I won't be put in a cyberjail if I crash or destroy the ship right?" He asks.

"No, but if you hit something your body will feel it also. You will be able to control your Gravhawk much faster, because you are using a higher percentage of your brain. Your body's nervous system will be interconnected with your Gravhawk ship."

"Okay, cool."

"Are you ready to go Jaden? Your body has finished its preparation."

"Yes, I am, but first I have to do this."

Jaden jumps off the cloud again, but this time headfirst.

"Jaden! What are you doing?"

"One for the road!" He yells while he puts his hands in front of him as if he is diving.

His artificial body quickly approaches the large ocean. The wind is blowing all around him. The water changes into sand and he quickly approaches a white desert. He starts to wave his hands around in fear as he covers his face. Jaden begins to scream as his body goes into the sand at a fast speed. Sand goes flying into the air all over the place. He opens his eyes and he is instantly looking outside his Gravhawk ship.

Bellona is chuckling.

'It is amazing how easy it is to deceive your mind and cause panic throughout your body from an image changing,' Bellona says telepathically.

'That wasn't nice Bellona. I was trying to dive from 5,000 feet, which would have been a world record.'

'You need to get serious Jaden. This is serious business flying in these races. Are you ready to fly?'

'Yes I'm ready. I just need to check one thing.'

Jaden changes view and looks at his naked body in the fetus position in the life zone.

'Man, I shitted myself on that one. Or could it been on the first jump?' Jaden asks.

‘The first jump,’ Bellona says.

‘I was talking to myself, but thanks for your two cents.’

‘No, Jaden you cannot fly the ship into the ocean.’

‘It was just a thought Bellona. I really wasn’t going to do it,’ Jaden says.

Jaden changes his view to outside of the ship. He zooms in different directions. He sees his navigation screen, ALTITUDE -5200 FEET SEA LEVEL, SHIELD STRENGTH 100%, ANTI-GRAVITY ENGINES 100% CHARGED, MANUAL FLIGHT, SPEED 0MPH, RADAR ONLINE, AIR PRESSURE / BAROMETER 5300 PSI, LIGHT ENGINES ONLINE.

‘I can communicate with you without delay until you leave our solar system. Then there will be a small delay, maybe even a major delay. There will be an AI nanobot to help you with basic things for flight. It will be your co-pilot. This was the same AI auto piloting your ship back on Earth.’

‘Okay cool. I’m ready. Let us get this Gravhawk into space. Are you ready co-pilot?’ Jaden asks.

‘Yes sir,’ a soft-spoken voice says.

Bellona moves to a nearby cloud. The Gravhawk lifts up a few feet and levitates. Silver wings come from the body and the tail comes out the rear.

‘Flying into our artificial sun above leads out the other side of the transport portal and you can start off by getting used to flying around here.’

The wings turn vertically and thrust comes from the wings. He quickly takes off leaving a white trail behind him. He passes through hundreds of clouds. He heads directly into the sun. Bright orange light flashes all around him as he increases speed. 12,089 MPH, ALTITUDE UNKNOWN

He enters the artificial sun and the bright light disappears behind him. It is completely dark around the ship. An eerie cold feeling passes through his body. Jaden looks from his long-range nanoscanners in front of his ship. He sees an opening is near.

‘There is no oxygen outside, it feels like we are in space now,’ Jaden says.

‘We are in the transport portal,’ AI says.

‘Let’s go faster then. Light engines one percent.’

A slight flash of light comes out the rear of the ship. The ship slightly shakes. He quickly comes out of the transport portal and billions of stars appear all around. 1861 MPS

‘Jaden, see the map of our solar system?’

‘Yes, I see about nine ships outside of Fujin.’

‘That is where they are waiting for you at.’

Jaden sets a course by thinking of his destination. A line is drawn with the path he will take. He puts the light engines at ninety percent. Everything slows down around the ship and gets dim. The stars fade and the sunlight in the area goes into the Gravhawk. A flash of light is seen and the ship quickly accelerates.

‘ETA is six minutes. Not bad,’ Jaden says.

‘So Mr. AI, how are you today? You were with me while I was on Earth. Why didn’t you speak to me sooner?’

‘I wasn’t allowed too. My mission was to find a human subject, observe the subject to an extent, and then get the subject back to our home planet.’

‘But why did you let me fly the Gravhawk around Earth and cause all that chaos?’

‘The stages weren’t complete. I was allowed to see if the human subject had navigation skills and capable of flying this ship without assistance. You did very well, adjusting to all the weapons and shield technologies. It was very interesting watching how you interacted with other aircraft on your planet.’

Jaden is looking around at the billions of stars while he listens to his new friend AI.

‘We should name you something other than AI.’

‘I think my name is fine. It matches your human vocabulary to artificial intelligence. I’m really AI 89 trillion.....’

‘Yes that’s fine then, all those numbers are too much to know. AI is okay with me.’

They quickly approach the neighboring planet Fujin. He sees a white and grey ring around this planet. The ship slows down. Jaden sees about twenty-five space stations on the ring of this large planet, that is slowly spinning.

‘Hey Jaden, you finally made it,’ Marco says.

‘I didn’t know you were flying with us Marco,’ Jaden says.

‘Yes, I enjoy flying in the race every now and then. I wanted to surprise you. We are leaving now to meet you.’

A few ships detach from the huge rectangular space stations. Jaden is amazed at everything he is seeing. Jaden feels as if he is watching a 3D episode of *Star Trek* and *Star Wars* together.

‘Getting used to your Gravhawk I see,’ Marco says.

‘Yes, this ship is amazing.’

‘You haven’t seen everything these ships can do.’

There are eight ships coming up on Jaden.

‘Hello fellow Andromedians,’ Jaden says.

There is no response.

‘Don’t worry about it Jaden. The others don’t really like outsiders and especially in our races. One of our friends had to sit out because you are in the race. So the others.... well you know.’

‘I understand. This isn’t the first time I was an outsider.’

Jaden thinks back to the first time he was an outsider at the first day of elementary school down south.

They pass Jaden and he turns around and follows them. Marco’s ship flies near him.

‘Okay, Jaden these are the rules. First, we are going to leave orbit. Then start the race and hit light speed. Then each ship joins a team of three and connects together as one. We have to work as a team. Then we will work together to create a vortex electromagnetic shield around us to fly faster than the speed of light. Then we ride the strongest solar wind into the sun. The goal is to get the best slingshot before entering optic-warp in subspace. Do you think you can handle this Jaden?’

‘Of course! Count me in, I’m ready. This is just like a radical video game.’

‘I’m ship seven and our friend Calibose is ship eight and you are nine. We are team three,’ Marco says.

‘Hey, how are you doing Jaden?’ Calibose asks.

‘I’m fine. Thanks for acknowledging me,’ Jaden says.

‘Just don’t slow us down; the winners get the best upgrades for their bodies,’ Calibose says.

‘Okay, I’ll try my best. I was a good team player playing football in high school. I could handle this,’ Jaden says.

The ships leave the planet’s orbit. They line up across from each other. The solar system’s sun is directly in front of them. Jaden sees about twenty nanoscanners checking the path in front of them.

GO is displayed on Jaden’s virtual screen.

Jaden turns on his light engines to one hundred percent. All the ships charge up. The light for hundreds of thousands of square miles around dims and the stars fade. There is a bright flash of light straight across and the ships disappear into a stretch of light.

‘Yeah! This is flying,’ Jaden says.

Light is flying by in different directions. Most of the light is flying away from the sun.

‘Jaden stay as steady as possible. We are going to connect together around you,’ Marco says.

‘Jaden, how is it going?’ Bellona asks.

‘Everything is fine. I’m just trying to concentrate on staying still so we can have this space orgy threesome.’

‘Okay Jaden. I’m here if you need me,’ Bellona says.

The other two teams are almost fully connected.

‘Watch out.’

Jaden moves to the left and the other two ships bail out of the way.

A small asteroid comes into their path and they avoid it.

'That was close,' Jaden says, 'Let's go fellas.'

'I'm at 186,100. Try to match my speed,' Jaden says.

Team two is connected and a blue vortex electromagnetic shield is created around them. They quickly accelerate and the light follows them like toilet paper stuck on someone's shoes. Their ship disappears into the bright x-ray radiation filled solar winds. Their light stays on the side of the two teams left behind.

'Come on team, they are ahead of us,' Jaden says.

'Hold on Jaden. This has to be done right, and you keep moving,' Marco says.

'Sorry, everything is happening so fast.'

'Calibose is watching the short range radar. We can't use nanoeyes or scanners,' Marco says.

'Calibose almost made us all crash into an asteroid!' Jaden yells.

Team one is connected and then disappears. Teams one and two pass planet Xenos' orbit. Jaden keeps his Gravhawk very still. Team three almost fully connects.

'How are we going to catch up to them?' Jaden asks Marco.

'Don't worry; they took the closest solar winds into the sun, not the strongest.'

'Jaden, manually zoom around planet Xenos. The magnetosphere around our planet is the strongest and reflects the most solar winds. Look for the fastest moving solar wind and widest light beam. This time of the day they are stronger.'

'The light path is bending and curving around the planet.'

'It doesn't matter; we can turn with the solar wind.'

Team three fully connects to each other. Teams one and two pass the first red planet in the solar system.

'Could I steal this Gravhawk and go back to Earth?' Jaden asks.

'Your ship is set to travel local; you would also need the codes for optic-warping under a black hole's subspace,' Marco says.

'Can I travel directly from this galaxy to the Milky Way Galaxy?'

'Your ship is not made for that type of journey; it would run out of energy. There isn't much sunlight in between galaxies. Even if you did have the energy it would also take you over two million light-years, to make it to your galaxy.'

'Oh well, it was just a thought. I found a strong fast moving solar wind on the opposite side of the planet,' Jaden says.

'Set a course for the complete path.'

'Okay, the path is like an S-turn on a highway,' Jaden says.

'I bet you never had a ride like the one you are about to have,' Calibose says.

'I'm not shitting myself this time I know,' Jaden says.

They slow down and change direction towards planet Xenos. Teams one and two disappear into subspace behind each other. A large solar flare is exploding outwards from the sun.

'We aren't going to win this part of the race, they already went into subspace,' Jaden says.

'Don't worry Jaden, we are going to catch them and make it out before they do,' Marco says.

'But why wouldn't the other teams do the same thing, if this way is the fastest?' Jaden asks.

'Sometimes this way works faster, sometimes it's much slower. I have confidence this way is faster today,' Marco says.

'Okay, you're the speed space racer pro.'

Team three quickly approaches the planet at half the speed of light, 92,142 mps. They enter the solar wind around the planet's magnetosphere that is shaped like an egg with a spider inside of it. They pass between the large moon and the planet.

NANOTIME is displayed on Jaden's screen.

'Before you ask, nanotime speeds up our ships and minds so something that happens fast seems as if it is going in slow motion. Nanotime can be anywhere between a billionth of a second to one-tenth of a second,' Marco says.

'Let's do it! Voltron team!' Jaden yells as he puts the flight in autopilot.

The planet quickly approaches and the ships reach the turning point. The ships begin to glow. Everything slows down for Jaden. He sees the ships changing direction towards the planet. The force of the turn is so strong at this speed. The ships quickly change directions again and point towards the sun. The light engines go to 150% and a very large, light blue vortex electromagnetic shield glows around them as they quickly accelerate in normal time. There is a flash of light and a shadow trail of light left behind trying to catch up. The ships are shaking very fast and violent. Jaden sees the speed of the crafts on his screen at 299,981 mps.

'This is flying, guys. This is very fast!' Jaden yells, 'There is a planet coming up! Shit!'

Everything goes semi-invisible for a split second. They quickly pass right through the planet.

'I knew that would wake you up Jaden,' Marco says.

'What just happened? How did we go right through the planet?' Jaden asks in a curious, startled voice.

‘That was called a high speed semi-invisible molecule replicator. That allows us to pass through something solid. This is nothing like all the sci-fi movies and books you read, right Jaden?’ Marco asks.

‘This is beyond anything I could imagine. I feel like I’m in a futuristic movie. This electromagnetic shield feels like a massage on my skin. Why does it look so much larger than the other ship shields?’

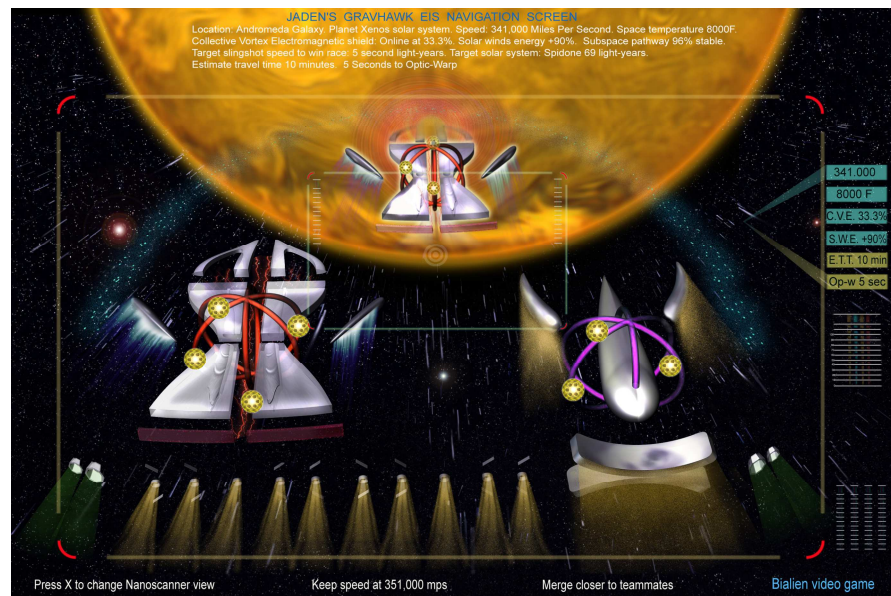
‘We need to create this type of shield around the ships to protect them at faster than light speeds. If we didn’t have this type of shield around us, the ships would rip apart,’ Marco says.

‘What is the fastest you Andromedians have been able to go past light speed?’ Jaden asks

‘In a solid form and more ships connected we have been able to reach three times faster than light,’ Marco says.

‘That is amazing.’

‘But to us that is considered slow. Optic-warp and black hole subspace is faster,’ Marco says, ‘Jaden the other teams slingshot into the optic-warp at six seconds a light-year. They are moving that speed through subspace. We need five to beat them out the other side. We have more speed now, but we need to catch their solar flare they created.’



They pass the first planet’s orbit around the sun. The sun’s rays get stronger as the light bounces around the ships. There is more violent shaking inside as the outside of the ships begin to glow a bright yellow. They reach 360,000 mps as the ships change course slightly. They go directly into the large solar flare created from the other teams. They

increase speed. All three ships begin to slowly rotate and special nanoscanners form in front of the ships, but inside the large vortex shield. The ships disappear at 379,000 mps into optic-warp.

Jaden sees outside the nanoscanners. His body and ship disintegrate into trillions of molecules with his team. They are in a microscopic tunnel; the huge sun quickly disappears behind them. Another pair of nanoscanners appears on the side near Jaden.

‘We are at 4.5 second light-years. We will definitely beat them before we reach the exit star. This will only take a few minutes,’ Marco says.

All of the smaller molecules and atoms are behind the scanners trailing like a comet’s tail. They all glow together. It is quiet as stars are passing by all around like a train passing subway stops. The negative film color of images outside the tunnel amazes Jaden. The two teams in front look like particle comets right behind each other. Jaden is looking at the many colored stars passing by so quickly, and the clouds of gas passing around the tunnel.

Jaden’s team begins to slow down to 6 sly. The other teams are already down to 8 sly. The comet lights of the other team get closer and closer. A bright red light is in front of the other teams at the end of the tunnel. Another minute passes, as team three rides team two’s light. The molecules merge and then pass team two. Jaden is looking at the hundreds of stars passing by so quickly outside the tunnel. He sees long lines of light that look frozen in time. A few seconds pass, team three catches team one and quickly passes them. Jaden, Marco, and Calibose’s nanoscanners continue to ride in front of the wave of molecules and light. Hundreds of other nanoscanners pass them and get in front. A bright red light at the end of the tunnel gets brighter and brighter.

‘Alright we beat them,’ Jaden says.

‘Piece of cake. We are ahead of them by a few light-year seconds. They can’t catch up now. Sometimes we have battles inside of the optic-warp tunnel. The nanoscanners stay behind while the rest of the molecules continue forward, and we fight each other with neutrons and protons,’ Marco says.

‘That sounds awesome,’ Jaden says in an excited voice.

‘We are getting out up ahead. The scanners open the optic-warp tunnel on the other side of the star, or we could continue in two other directions towards another star.’

‘Let me guess, if we continued we get another slingshot of speed from the star?’ Jaden asks.

‘Correct Jaden, each star has enough energy to give each ship more momentum to the next star. Sometimes we slow down to minute plus light-years, depending on the distance from each star. Okay, we are getting out here. This is our stop.’

Everything turns bright red around Jaden. The scanners in front are spinning in a circumference very fast. Everything turns red around Jaden. They slow down considerably and there is a flash of light. Jaden feels very hot and sees black space in front of him. He is outside of the optic-warp tunnel. The ships are quickly forming back together, molecule by molecule. The ships are detached and are semi-invisible as a bright red star is behind them. Jaden's nanoscanners go into his ship. His Gravhawk turns completely visible and quickly goes into warp speed with his other teammates. The other teams come out of the optic-tunnel and begin to form back together.

'Where are we? Why is everything so red?' Jaden asks, while he sees on his ship's screen that it's flying in autopilot.

'We are in the Spidone Solar System. The star is red and will be dying in a few thousand years. A supernova collapsed a few light-years ago from here, so there is a high concentration of radiation all around. The supernova also helped to put this star in its final stages. It affected the species on the local planets here,' AI says.

They continue past the first planets orbit at 186,019 mps. The other six ships follow behind by less than a minute.

'The other teams said we got lucky,' Marco says.

'What a rush, we just did sixty-nine light-years in less than ten minutes,' Jaden says to Marco.

A few minutes pass by and they pass the second planet. Jaden zooms in on the planet and it looks almost destroyed, just the core is left. Jaden zooms back and notices Marco changed his direction from the rest of the team.

'Marco, where are you going?' Jaden asks.

'I'm going to take a quick break over at my favorite planet.'

'What about the race?' Jaden asks, 'They will catch up and beat us.'

'I'm not worried about it,' Marco says.

Jaden is confused and zooms in on Marco's ship heading towards a strange looking, red glowing planet. Jaden continues in the same path. Marco's ship slows down as it reaches the planet.

'AI, where is Marco going?'

'That used to be a training planet for us. Now it is a planet full of mutated species, from the high doses of radiation plaguing this solar system. I don't know what he is doing over there,' AI says.

Marco's ship disappears as it reaches the planet. Jaden and Calibose still in the lead, they slow down to ten percent light engines as asteroids are flying in all directions.

Jaden is very curious about where Marco went. Jaden takes manual control of his Gravhawk and sets a course for the planet Marco went to. The light engine slows down to one percent. The other teams quickly pass him.

‘What are you doing?’ AI asks.

‘I want to see where Marco went. I don’t care about the race.’

‘Watch out!’ AI yells.

Jaden sees a huge asteroid spinning toward the ship from the left and he maneuvers trying to dodge it. He can’t maneuver in time. Autopilot instantly comes on. The Gravhawk turns left and at the last second goes into the asteroid. The matrix vortex shield comes on in front of the ship and rips a hole through the asteroid. They quickly pass through the icy rock and come out the other side.

‘Shit! We almost died. Why you didn’t tell me sooner?’

‘You were using the short range radar to look at this planet. You need to react faster, Jaden.’

‘Why you didn’t use the nanoscanners or the eyes?’

‘The nanoscanners for this ship don’t work well in high radiation areas.’

‘Thanks for saving us. I was trying to zoom in on the planet so I could see what Marco was up too.’

‘I know. Your curiosity level is very high. We will be in the planet’s orbit in less than a minute,’ AI says.

Light engines are offline. They approach the planet with red sunlight shining on one side of it. The planet looks like Mars to Jaden with patches of thick clouds all around. They enter the upper atmosphere and the outside of the ship heats up. Jaden launches a pair of nanoeyes; they quickly pierce the atmosphere looking for Marco’s ship. There is no sight of his ship. Jaden notices thousands of miles of little cities that are shaped in the form of art. The art reminds Jaden of artwork by Jackson Pollock. The eyes move in closer. There are thousands of miles of spider web in all directions. They are connected together like a community of cities, hundreds of miles over the surface. A few spiders are moving in from all directions towards something. Jaden moves the nanoeyes closer and zooms in. Jaden sees Marco in his huge warrior body lying on top of the thick-laced cobwebs, looking helpless. Nine gigantic alien looking spiders, the size of an 18-wheeler truck, quickly approach from all directions. The spiders have seven red glowing legs on each side and small, black eyes all around their bodies. Their legs have small metal spikes coming out of them and a metallic claw coming out the mouth.

‘Marco, do you need help? How did you get stuck on the web?’ Jaden asks.

There is no response, as he continues to struggle. The alien spiders move faster towards their prey. They shoot from all directions a glowing lime-green web at Marco. The web goes all around his body. The webs create high temperatures and an acid-like burning feeling around his body. The Gravhawk accelerates in the atmosphere towards Marco’s position. Jaden hits the high oxygen atmosphere and the outside of his

ship begins to heat up. Jaden isn't going to make it in time. The spiders leap towards Marco at the same time, as each tries to target a delicious piece of his body. Suddenly, the shadow of Marco's ship passes over him. His body disappears into the huge red molecule of his ship. The huge spiders run into each other and then pile on top of each other as if a bad car accident has just taken place. Jaden slows down and uses the nanoscanners to follow Marco's semi-invisible ship as it passes through the layers of web. His spaceship changes direction and comes up a couple of miles out of the web, in solid form making a hole.

'Marco! What were you doing back there?' Jaden asks in a panicked voice.

'Sorry about that Jaden, I was having a little fun with the spiders.'

'You almost gave me a heart attack. What about the race?'

'I'm only concerned about winning the first part of the race. The rest isn't that important to me. Having fun with these evil spiders is much more fun.'

The Gravhawk and Marco's ship both are facing one another, levitating in one place a few hundred feet from the webs. The ships are absorbing the red beaming sunlight.

'How did you disappear with your ship and get out of that spider web?'

'It's called an atoms manipulator collector. The ship's molecules break down and a shadow of the ship is seen. The ship also looks semi-invisible sometimes. The ship's molecules and alien molecules synchronize together. A ship can pass through most things when it is in this mode, but only for a short period and requires a lot of energy from the ship. It will only work with an alien's DNA that passed all three stages with one of our ships. No, the ship cannot change direction, it continues at the same speed it started,' Marco says while reading Jaden's mind as he thinks of questions.

"Let's get out of here, these Spiders are looking very angry," Jaden says.

"Okay, I'm ahead of you," Marco says while quickly accelerating upwards.

They quickly pass through the rich oxygen atmosphere. Jaden looks at the planet around him and it reminds him of being back home on Earth.

The Gravhawk and Marco's ship leaves the Spidone planet. Jaden switches to autopilot and they set a course back to Xenos. Images of Jaden being back on Earth appear on the artificial screen. He thinks back to a time in his past and sees images from his own eyes.

Jaden lied on the hood of his car and looked up at the stars with his girlfriend Amy by his side. The radio in the car played a local radio station. They were at a local park. She wore a blue skirt and blouse. Her knees were slightly bent and her black heels were over the bumper. Jaden wore a Beavis and Butt-head tee shirt, a pair of green shorts and some sneakers. His right arm was behind his head, keeping his head from touching the car's hood.

"Your mom's dinner was delicious. It's so nice your family still gets together and eats a couple of times a month. I wished my family did that," Amy said while rubbing her stomach.

"I'm glad you liked it. You finally met my mom. I think my mom likes you."

"You think so?"

"Yes, I think you made a good impression," Jaden said.

There was a brief romantic silence between them. The wind is blowing slightly from the northwest. The crickets communicated loudly in the background.

"Over there is Jupiter and over there is Mars," Jaden said while pointing into the sky, "Vega Star System is twenty-five light-years from here."

"What is the next closest sun to ours?" Amy asked.

"Hmmm... It is a red dwarf star twenty-five trillion miles from here, which is five light-years."

"Baby, you are very good with this science and space stuff. You know so much about this stuff."

"It is really going to come in handy when I take Space and Science 103 next semester in college."

"I'm so happy we are going to be in many of the same classes next semester in community college. When you talk your science space stuff, it really turns me on. When I first looked into your telescope, it was the best images I've ever seen. It really turned me on."

"Yeah, you were a real slut to give it up on the second date," Jaden said in a sarcastic voice.

She playfully slapped him on his chest and leaned up to look at him.

"Slut? That is what I am to you?" She asked.

He chuckled and leaned up as well.

"I'm just kidding baby, I'm glad you were an easy second date. Look how far we have come already."

"Yeah, I was nervous you might not call after we did that."

"With an ass and body like yours, I was going to call back."

"My 5'8" 125 lb figure kept you interested, huh?" She asked.

"Yes it did, but also your personality, your interests, and the fact that you like so many things that I do were a good turn on also. Your love of life and your ability not to hurt any creature, even a fly or a bug. You being a vegetarian sometimes I also like," he said.

"I'm a vegetarian every other month, I suppose."

"You're a Milli Vanilli-vegetarian. Don't forget my hamburger!" Jaden yelled and then laughed.

They laughed, while Amy tickled him.

"That was cold. You calling me a fake vegetarian?" She asked while he just looks at her smiling. She poked him and continued, "It's your fault! You keep eating meat in front of me."

"I guess you didn't want my mother to know you were a vegetarian tonight right?"

"No, your mother is from the south. She would probably think I was weird or something."

"All your tasty cute animals were on the table tonight; Wilbur the Pig, the Drink Milk cow, the lambs when you sleep at night, and Mr. Turkey."

"Okay, Jaden. Now you are making me feel bad."

Jaden rubbed her stomach and said, "They feel good in your sexy stomach, don't they."

"Yes, it does," she smiled back at him and then looked up into the dark glowing sky with millions of stars above them, "What is that over there?"

"That is one of our local galaxies. The Triangulum Messier 33 Galaxy. Over there next to it, is the Andromeda Galaxy. One of our biggest neighboring galaxies," Jaden quipped.

"Would we as humans be able to travel there one day?" She asked.

"It would take over a million years to get to the next galaxy. Maybe if we had some faster than light traveling in the future. I would go one day, if E.T. had a super fast ship or if a real Star Gate was on Earth."

"Would you take me with you?"

"Of course I would. Me and you riding through voids, super clusters, and to the end of the universe..."

"How much do you love me Jaden?"

"Well I love you enough to let you meet my mother for the first time. You are the first girl to meet her you know..." Jaden was interrupted.

"That's my song!"

Amy got off the hood and turned the radio up.

"All I want to do is have some fun..." Amy sang.

Jaden laid there watching her dance by herself.

"Come on baby, let's dance together."

“No, I pass.”

She continued to dance and sing to Jaden while she snapped her fingers. He smiled at her and turned to look up towards space. Thinking of what is beyond the stars. Jaden closed his eyes and the images of his past faded.

*“...Number 1 on the billboard charts. The jam of the summer....”
The radio DJ said while the song faded into the background.*

Chapter 9: King Me

“Jaden... Jaden.”

The familiar voice wakes Jaden. He is lying on his bed back in his guest room looking at Bellona from his artificial body.

“I’m back already?”

“Yes, you’ve been sleeping for six and a half hours since leaving the Spidone Solar System,” Bellona says.

Jaden looks across the room and he sees his human body floating in the virtual bathtub.

“The Gravhawk is okay?”

“Yes, it’s fine. You seemed to have had a nice, safe exciting trip. That is how we have fun, challenge each other and working as a team,” she says.

“Yes, it was exciting. I liked it. I feel so lucky. Was there any word from the elder council about me going back home?” He asks while sitting at the end of the bed.

“No, I’m sorry.”

“I need to get my mind off a few things. Do you know how to play chess?”

Bellona instantly downloads how to play the game from Jaden’s memories of his father teaching him.

“Now I do,” Bellona says, “I have something you might like.”

The room changes into a forest with tall trees. A life-sized chess game appears over the grass with leaves on it. Thousands of yellow and brown leaves slowly fall towards the ground. A brisk wind is blowing leaves through the air. The chess pieces look like men in shiny armor from medieval times. They stand at their proper places with the king and queen standing as the tallest pieces in the rear. The sky is very cloudy and the wind is howling in all directions. The leaves hit the standing chess pieces as they reflect in the shiny armor.

‘This is amazing. This is like a real life chess game. I had a dream similar like this, years ago. What are they?’ Jaden asks telepathically from his nanoeye viewing from above.

‘They are computer animated and programmed to follow the rules of the game.’

‘Cool. They look like real people.’

Jaden looks around the fifty by fifty foot chess area in the middle of the forest. The board is set up as always, with two rooks, two knights, two bishops, eight pawns, and a king and queen on each side.

‘I’m ready,’ Jaden says.

‘What color do you prefer?’

‘Black.’

Jaden moves to his side and concentrates on moving a pawn. The pawn walks a few steps and stands in one place. It makes clanking sounds as all the pieces of armor rub against one another. Bellona moves a pawn.

‘This is cool. They move like in *Battle Chess*, but better and more realistic. Do they fight each other also?’

‘You’ll have to see.’

‘Okay, why are there extra nanoeyes all around here?’ He asks.

‘There are spectators interested in watching this primitive game created by humans.’

He moves his knight as Bellona moves pieces. They continue to move the pieces one by one, very quickly. The pieces begin to fight each other with weapons. The loser is thrown to the side of the board by the other chess piece.

‘Did you see that? That was awesome. That piece was tossed like a wrestler.’

Other pieces are taken from both sides.

‘I wasn’t able to think so fast before, how are we playing so fast?’

‘You’re thinking is three times as fast as it used to be. You are using forty-five percent of your brain now. You can calculate things much faster,’ Bellona says.

‘Cool. You are playing like a supercomputer. You move right after I move.’

‘I’m thinking rather slowly. I’m averaging half a second a move,’ Bellona says.

‘Hmmm... I wonder,’ Jaden says as an idea comes to him.

Jaden goes into the king, still standing in his original place.

‘I’m the king. Look at me. I’m able to move him, cool!’ Jaden yells aloud.

GAME ERROR is displayed above the game.

Jaden walks around the board inside the king’s body.

‘This is cool; get out of the way you peasants! Bow down before your king!’ He yells.

The pieces in Jaden’s way are pushed to the side, but they quickly stand in formation again.

‘I feel like I’m in my artificial body.’

‘Are you enjoying yourself Jaden?’

‘Yes I am.’

He walks to the white pieces and starts pushing them around.

‘You fake white knight. Bow before your real king.’

Jaden tackles him and he knocks over some other pieces. His metal shield and heavy sword with fire around it, stays in his hand. They quickly stand back up and walk to their original place in the game. Jaden

stands back up and walks towards the side of the game where the taken pieces are. The pieces on the game move out his way.

‘You didn’t properly fight for your king and protect him in the Marino Kingdom. You must pay with your life.’

He pulls out a long sword and starts cutting his black pawn. The pawn lays on the ground bleeding.

Jaden walks over to his lost bishop chess piece.

‘Jaden the game. You’re tying up the game, it could be over already,’ Bellona says.

Jaden stays focused on the bishop in front of him.

“You’re next you coward. You were beaten up by a pawn. You can’t use your magic in chess?”

Jaden begins striking his sword on him.

“Arrggghhhh. That hurts. What did I do to deserve this?” The pawn asks while he falls to the ground in pain and begins bleeding.

“Oh you can talk huh?” Jaden asks him.

“Please spare me, your majesty,” the bishop says.

“You were beat by that little pawn. Look how much taller you are than him!” Jaden yells.

“It’s not my fault. I’ve always been the coward piece of the game,” the bishop pleads with his hands over his face, while looking up at the king.

“Okay, I’m sorry Mr. Bishop.”

Jaden helps him up and says, “I’m sorry about that old bishop.”

“It is alright sir, maybe you can get a pawn to the other side and you can win me back.”

“Win you back?” Jaden asks while looking at him puzzled, “How about I get you to the other side?”

He then lifts him by his long black gown and tosses him with all his might into the forest.

“Somebody king me! King me!” Jaden yells in an excited voice, while putting his hands into the sky.

“I’ll king you!” The white rook yells to Jaden while transforming into a giant rock creature about ten feet high. It leaves the chess game and slowly walks over to Jaden. He looks shocked by his size. It stands in front of him.

“Hey army friends, soldiers. I’m going to need some help here, Jaden begs while looking at his army continuing to look forward on the game.

“Don’t call your army now, you told the bishop he can beat the pawn because he was bigger. Now I’m bigger!” The rook says in a hideous voice.

“You wanted to be kinged?” The rook asks.

“Yes, I do.”

Jaden tries to lift the rook, but he can't. The rook extends his rocky arms and crowns Jaden on his head.

"Shit! That hurt. Somebody protect your king. Save the king," Jaden pleads.

His army continues to look forward. The rook continues to pound Jaden on the head into the ground with two hands. His head is halfway in the ground, up to his mouth in the grass. Leaves land on his huge crown and covers his face.

The white queen walks over to Jaden with her long dress while pulling some leaves along.

Jaden moves his head back and forth and the crown comes off with the leaves. He tries to talk while spitting out leaves.

"That is a sexy walk queen. How did you learn to walk like that?" Jaden asks.

"Are you going to play the game now, or do I need to have my rook king you some more?" The queen asks with Bellona's voice.

The wind blows the queen's dress slightly as she stands directly over him.

"Is that a thong you are wearing under that long medieval dress?" Jaden asks.

She does not reply, but folds her arms.

"Hey queen, how about a threesome with my queen? You can be the vanilla ice cream in the middle."

The queen moves out of the way and the white rook punches his head all the way into the ground.

"Okay, you win; I'll continue to play the game," Jaden says in a muffled voice.

Lightning strikes from the clouds and the black king goes back to his place in the game. Lightning strikes in the woods and on the white rook. They both return to their original places in the game. The white queen slowly walks back to the area in the game she was at. The pawn that was struck down stands back up on the side of the game. Jaden returns to the nanoeye above the game.

'That was fun,' Jaden says while continuing to move pieces in the game.

'I'm glad you enjoyed your coffee break,' Bellona says.

'You had something to do with them talking and the rook crowning me into the ground right?' Jaden asks.

'A little, I figured it was more entertaining for you,' Bellona responds.

'Yes, it was.'

They continue to play very quickly while Jaden continues his conversation. Jaden is averaging two-second moves. The weather changes and it gets very cold. It begins to snow slightly.

‘It seems like the battles between the pieces is taking the most time,’ Jaden says.

‘I can turn that off if you want.’

‘No, it’s fine. I also like the snowing effect,’ Jaden says, ‘That was a cool fight with my knight and your rook. I finally got that white cocksucker rook that kinged me,’ Jaden says.

Her queen takes the knight. The black knight uses his sword to lift up the queen’s dress to reveal her red thong.

‘I knew she had a thong on. Why isn’t my queen wearing a thong? She has on old lady bloomers.’

The white queen uses some magic and twirls him around before tossing the black knight to the side. She moves into his place.

‘I knew that was coming. But that was a cool fight.’

They continue to play as more and more pieces are tossed to the side.

Jaden thinks to himself, ‘I have an idea. I can talk and play, I wonder if I can...’

His nanoeye goes into his knight that was just put out of the game. Jaden begins to control the knight and it begins to move. Jaden also concentrates on the game by also seeing through the king’s eyes in the game.

“Hey everyone look at me, I’m a dark knight. I have a black shield and all black shiny armor. This feels like déjà-vu.”

The black knight moves towards the white rook. Jaden raises his sword at the rook.

The chess pieces in the game continue to play in the background.

‘Your king is in check Jaden,’ Bellona says.

‘I see, I see,’ he says while continuing to concentrate on his outside the game battle.

“I’m seeking revenge for you dishonoring the king. Fight a real warrior, you fake three little pigs brick castle. I challenge thee,” Jaden says in an old English voice.

The castle transforms into the ten-foot high rock creature.

‘I’m multi-tasking Bellona. I’m playing the game and I’m fighting a one person war.’

‘Very good Jaden, you are developing your multi-tasking skills.’

“Let’s fight now, Mr. Monster.”

Jaden swipes at the creature’s arm and cuts off some rock. It jumps back. The other white rook just thrown out of the game walks up to the side of his brother rook.

“Two against one huh? I’m not afraid.”

The two rooks combine into a forty-foot high stone monster and grows its arm back.

“Now I’m afraid!” Jaden yells and begins to run towards the forest on the left. It gives chase while the ground violently shakes. Powdery snow is still falling and covering the ground making it slippery. The rook creature shoots fiery rocks from his arm the size of cannonballs. The first few miss him. The explosion on the ground near him makes him fall and roll on the ground. He quickly gets back up and continues running. He uses a nanoeye to see behind himself. He notices he is about to be hit by one. He instantly turns around and his shield absorbs the powerful force from the rock. Pieces of fire and rocks fly in all directions. Jaden tumbles forward about twenty feet into the forest while sliding on the snow. He quickly gets back up and continues running into the forest. He continues to play the game with Bellona at the same time. The gigantic rook monster is knocking over trees trying to get to Jaden about to get up. It makes growling noises like a monster. It tries to step on Jaden, but he quickly rolls out of the way while still holding his sword and shield.

“Godzilla rook dude, your feet smell worst than a panhandler’s feet on the subway!” Jaden yells.

The creature answers with a scary monster’s voice, “How do you know? Do you go around smelling panhandler’s feet, rating them?”

‘Bellona, I know that is you giving this monster good come back lines,’ Jaden says.

‘I’m just enjoying the game and watching you interact out of the game with your new friend,’ she says.

Jaden stands up and cuts a tall tree next to him with his sword. The giant rook picks up the tree and throws it far across the game and into the other side of the forest.

Jaden looks up at the creature getting closer and closer. He takes a few steps back while holding his sword at it.

“Look Mr. Monster, I can get you a good job on Earth as a lumberjack. Good benefits. We can get that foot problem taken care of and you can clear out a forest in minutes. Even the forest protestors would be scared to protest around you,” Jaden calmly says, while putting his shield around his left arm up to his elbow.

“That ten pack of hamburgers I ate at your castle in New York City a few years ago, gave me the runs all night. What is in your burgers Mr. White Castle Monster?” Jaden asks in an odd voice to throw off the monster.

The rook monster looks confused while Jaden rolls forward at it and cuts its right leg off.

“You like....” As the monster falls down, it fires a rock cannon at him. It hits him and Jaden is propelled in slow motion twenty feet deeper into the forest. The monster yells as it hits the ground. There is a loud

rumble and the ground shakes. Jaden tries to get back up to finish off the monster, but it quickly reattaches its limb.

“You are dead Jaden,” it yells.

“Yeah, yeah. I thought I was dead from diarrhea!” Jaden yells while running away towards the chess game.

‘Man I’m losing this battle and my chess game. Just my knight and king are left in the game.’

He passes the monster trying to get up.

He runs into the grassy area where the chess game is taking place and his captured pieces are standing around. The giant rook begins to run after Jaden again.

“Black taken chess pieces, help your fellow knight in need. Attack the pedicure needing monster with your weapons,” Jaden yells at them while running by the game. They just stand there facing the game.

He stops and tries to take the other black knight’s sword still in the game.

“Come on brother knight, you won’t be needing that,” Jaden says while trying to pull it out of his hand. The other knight moves, ignoring him.

‘Why did I just move him, if I was talking to him?’ Jaden asks.

‘You were too busy multi-tasking, your brain began to work independently while processing and playing the game in the background,’ Bellona says.

‘Jesus, I have to get used to this,’ he says.

‘Now can you get out of the game?’ She asks.

‘What if I don’t want to?’ Jaden asks.

The thumping continues and a grey rock on fire swishes by Jaden’s helmet.

“Shit!” He yells while running toward the forest on the right side.

The monster steps across the board game knocking the kings and other pieces over. They quickly stand back up in the same place they were.

‘Alright, I have to finish this bastard off, no more running. This is a virtual animated world. Size does not matter,’ Jaden says trying to psyche himself up.

‘Are you a coward or a warrior? Coward or a warrior?’ Jaden asks himself.

‘Your king is in check again, Jaden,’ Bellona says. He hears this in the background while he is concentrating on this large tree in front of him. Jaden calculates the distance the rook monster is behind him. The flying rock cannonballs continue to hit around him, while rock debris, snow and leaves fly around all over the place. Jaden quickly dodges to the left missing another projectile.

He jumps onto the tree and quickly runs up it vertically, knocking snow from his metal feet. Jaden is amazed he is actually running up the huge rainforest tree. The monster stops about fifteen feet in front of the tree aiming its cannon arm at Jaden over its head. Jaden stops sixty feet up the tree before the branches begin to give way underneath his weight. The monster fires while Jaden jumps above it. Puffs and clumps of snow fall off his lightly covered metal body. Everything seems to slow down around Jaden. The tree is hit while Jaden holds his flaming sword with two hands. The snow begins to come down heavily around Jaden as he is coming straight at the monster, yelling at the top of his lungs at it.

‘Checkmate Jaden. You lose,’ Bellona says.

The monster fires again and hits Jaden on his left arm. His shield and left arm are torn from his body. Jaden continues to fall towards the monster holding his sword with his right hand, as he breathes out cold smoke from his helmet. The monster tries to step back while it covers its face. Jaden, in the knight’s body, cuts the snow covered rock monster right through the middle of its body. It splits into two pieces while it roars like Godzilla. Jaden lands over the monster while his left arm and shield land far into the forest. The top part of the tree also falls to the ground behind them.

“Yeah, that is what you get. I learned that move from watching over fifty episodes of *Voltron* as a kid.”

“Now go soak your smelly big rock feet in a swimming pool of commercial bleach,” Jaden says, while cutting off the rook monster’s huge head as it lays helpless on the ground.

Jaden looks at the chess game, and sees his king lying on the ground being kicked by the white knight, king and pawn.

“Hey, leave him alone,” Jaden says while running back towards the game. Suddenly there is a huge rumble and the ground opens up around the chess game. He stumbles to catch his balance. A complete circle is formed around the game and the ground quickly spreads apart. The sky turns red and one foot round fireballs fall from the sky. Jaden catches his balance and runs then leaps over an open pit of lava coming from the split in the ground. He just makes the jump and all the chess pieces on both sides of the game begin to fight each other. Above the chess game says ROYAL BATTLE. The pawns are fighting each other. The queens are pulling each other’s hair while the snow is all over them. Snow continues to fall as fire quickly burns the trees in the forest.

“Alright! A real medieval royal battle,” Jaden says while walking over watching everyone fighting each other while he drags his sword on the ground.

“What is this a freezing day in hell?” Jaden asks.

“No, this is when hell freezes over,” Bellona replies from the white knight’s body walking up to him.

Pawns and bishops from both sides are being pushed or knocked into the hot lava circling the area. Their hands wiggle as the hot lava consumes them. Their heads disappear into the abyss of yellow and red-hot lava. Lightning strikes in the woods where the giant white rook was killed and turned into bricks. The monster rook forms back together and stand back up with an angry look on its face. It roars loudly and Jaden turns around.

“Oh no, that bag of shit is back. Oops, I mean bag of bricks. I have to fight him again?” Jaden asks.

“No, you’ll be fighting me,” Bellona says while the other white knight walks up to him.

“I’ll deal with you in a minute. Black castles unite! Form a bricktron and go get that white castle over there!” Jaden yells.

The black rooks merge into a huge monster rook. The huge rook goes after the other rook, leaping over the hot lava pit towards the forest burning down.

“Finally, someone listens to me.”

The white knight merges with the other knight into a forty-five feet high knight.

The other black knight runs and merges with Jaden’s knight body as his left arm grows back with a shield around it.

Jaden looks around, as he is growing higher and higher. He also is forty-five feet tall. He sees the two monster castles punching each other in the fiery forest. Both of their bodies are on fire. They are also firing rock cannonballs at each other. Smoke and burning leaves are floating around everywhere. The pawns are pushing each other into the lava pit. Their screams go silent as their heads go under the lava. The white knight draws its sword directly in front of Jaden. Fireballs from the sky hit their bodies like hail raining from the sky. Bellona attacks Jaden as he blocks it with his shield. Some pawns are around Jaden’s feet.

“Get out of here, you little ants,” Jaden yells while kicking black and white pawns into the pit of lava with his huge metal boot.

The pit extends more into the forest area. Jaden looks around and sees the top of the white queen’s head sticking out of the lava screaming.

“The hot lava is burning my thong and lower body! Somebody help me,” the white queen yells.

A black pawn jumps on top of her head trying to push her down further.

“Get down and under the fire you, you floozy.”

“Ha ha, look at that. That pawn is tea bagging the queen into the lava,” Jaden chuckles while the pawn loses balance and falls in, “Oh my, that was hilarious.”

They continue to fight and Bellona attacks faster. Jaden tries to block and stays on the defensive. The clashing is so loud. When he tries to swing, she hits him directly in the chest and through his armor.

“Shit, that hurts,” Jaden says as he takes two steps back.

“You’ll be okay, you have to move faster and keep up. You wanted someone your size, here I am,” Bellona says.

“Yeah, yeah, you are just too fast for me,” he says.

“Me being faster than you is just an illusion and rules that you are limiting your mind to. If you thought faster and concentrated on just us fighting, you can be just as fast. Concentrate on my movements as I swing, and the direction I’m coming at you. Your mind will speed up and the attacks will slow down so you could be on offense and defense,” she says.

Jaden swings his black metallic sword as Bellona stops it with her sword. They continue back and forth. He notices that the fighting feels as if it is slowing down. Bellona quickly strikes Jaden in the lower body as he strikes her in the chest.

“Right in the hooter,” Jaden says while stepping back.

“I got you right in your invisible hotdog,” she says.

“Touché”

The two rooks fall into the pit of lava behind Jaden. They both scream in a huge amount of pain. Their bodies slowly descend into the hot abyss of lava.

Jaden and Bellona continue to strike each other as they turn in circles facing each other.

“Alright, this is getting boring. The hell with this,” Jaden says.

She swings over Jaden with her sword; he dodges and charges towards her grabbing her around the legs. She is lifted up while she loses balance. They continue towards the lava area while she hits him with her metal shield. They fall into the now large pit of lava, creating a large splash in all directions.

“Arrgghhh, it is hot as hell. So much pain; now I know what a lobster feels like being put in a pot of boiling hot water. Shit!” He yells, while Bellona’s body is under him, pulling him down.

‘Just ignore the pain,’ Bellona says telepathically.

“I can’t move my body. I’m paralyzed,” he says while struggling to reach land.

His right hand is out of the lava pointing towards the sky.

“I’m dying like the Terminator robot at the end of the movie. Remember me Chess World. Remember your hero knight who fought to the end for his king!” He yells while his head goes under the lava and his thumb pointing up.

Chapter 10: An Alien of Two Worlds

Jaden opens his eyes and he is back in his guest room in his artificial body. He stands up and Bellona appears out of thin air.

"That was a cheap move you did at the end," she says.

"I know that was an old school-schoolyard-losing-a-fight tackle. I was getting bored swinging back and forth fighting."

"I was trying to train you with thinking faster and multi-tasking. Your brain is capable of so much, but it requires training at the higher capacity then it is at."

"I'm getting it and I'm just getting used to this lifestyle and being outside my body. I'm trying to get used to my new life here also."

"Don't worry about it Jaden. What would you like to do now?" she asks, "Galaxynet surf, our history video...." Jaden interrupts her.

"I would like to practice in the gravity game," he says.

"Okay, I can arrange that."

"By myself."

"Okay."

"Give it a few minutes, while I get it ready. In the mean time, take a look at this."

The entire room turns into space, with a 360° view.

"This is an advanced telescope. You can zoom in on anything. Zoom in on a planet, zoom in on a galaxy," Bellona says.

Bellona zooms in on different events and objects in space. He sees voids, and supernovas exploding.

"Give it a try."

He walks towards the pool.

"This is nice, but it's going to make me think about being back home. I'd rather wait for the gravity game," Jaden says sadly, while he lays into the pool of water and closes his eyes.

The room changes and Jaden is in the gravity game, in his artificial body. He is running up the walls, practicing his rpm speeds with the shield around his body and using different weapons. He does this for hours and hours as Bellona watches from a nanoeye. She begins talking to Mana and one of the supreme elders. Jaden is determined to get better and continues to practice.

A few minutes pass by and Bellona gets Jaden's attention.

'Hey Jaden,' Bellona says.

'Yes?' Jaden responds.

'Remember I was telling you about the one Mapolian female that is on our supreme elder team? She wants to talk to you directly,' she says.

'Sure why not, the news can't get any worst. Well then again there could be worst news, like I have an alien cancer in my body, I'm going

to die soon or Earth has disappeared from my solar system,' he says in a sarcastic tone telepathically.

'You should be honored; she rarely talks to a guest directly. It is probably news you'll want to hear,' she says.

'Sure, let's go, I can use some good news.'

The room changes and they are outside at the meeting place by the lake. Jaden is still in his artificial body, while Bellona stands next to him in hers. The grey clouds are quickly moving overhead. He walks towards the lake while looking towards the sky.

"Looks like it is about to rain," Jaden says as he stares into the fast moving sky.

Lightning forms and bounces around the clouds. Suddenly lightning strikes from five different directions directly into one spot on the small lake. Jaden is amazed by the loud booming sound and coordinated lightning strikes. A glowing body that is all light begins to walk across the water and towards them. It approaches Jaden and Bellona. The body is bright white like lightning and has arms, legs, and a head. The face is blank and full of light particles. It is as if Jaden is looking into a sun. The light body gets dimmer as it stops a few feet in front of them.

'Greetings Jaden Marino, I'm Mana, Supreme Elder of the Andromedians,' Mana says very quickly telepathically in a female robotic sounding voice that is echoing. She continues, before Jaden could think about replying, 'I have been watching and analyzing you since you've gotten here. I have taken a personal interest in you. I have seen aliens like yourself over the millions of years I have been alive. Your species is interesting and you are very interesting. I've analyzed your past and how you don't give up on things. I analyzed how you handled yourself in the race and on planet Spidone and how you didn't want to hurt innocent mutated spiders. The fact that you didn't want to give up and you wanted to succeed on your own in those situations impressed me. I analyzed how well you flew our ship back on Earth and how your mind was able to adapt to out of body communicating. Your human body stood up to many different changes and accepts our technology very well. I analyzed how you fought in the gravity games and didn't give up. Your quick ability to learn things and to work in a team proved you have what it takes to get the job done. When you were flying our ship on Earth, you were trying your best not to hurt people. You used non-violent weapons and saved the pilot from dying in his SR-71 jet fighter. I sense great things in you. My psychic powers tell me something is different about you and it tells me you are someone that has something to do with the future of many species. My psychic power enables me to analyze many things and sense things that will have positive effects on the future. I feel that you are someone that has a long journey ahead of you. You have many challenging choices to make in the future. You miraculously

survived the journey to Xenos even after being rescued on Planet 455. You have a lot of luck on your side, as you humans call it. We attempted to bring a human from your planet in 0 A.D.; unfortunately, that human and the ship were lost. We chose Earth because of its location. Earth is the perfect distance from its sun, the right size and has the lowest amount of impacts from objects in space. Yes, there are about 100,000 similar Earth-like planets in the Milky Way Galaxy.'

She pauses and then continues, 'I sense you have very strong morals and you can stand up to anything that gets in your way. Evil is something that plagues many civilizations. I have confidence that your human race will be able to defend itself with the help of our technology. This is why I have decided to let you return to Earth in your ship.'

Jaden is amazed, as he is full of confusion and happiness.

Mana continues, 'We have calculated the best path for you to reach Earth undetected. I feel Earth has something to do with the future of many galaxies. There is good and bad everywhere. Each galaxy has two center components: a galactic bulge star the size of a billion stars and a gigantic black hole of a similar size. They always circle each other giving spin to a galaxy. Good and evil have always been a balance. Your Milky Way Galaxy is becoming more unbalanced with huge amounts of dark energy and other energies residing in it, being admitted from the center black hole. This event is very unnatural and suspicious. Not being able to transport our biomechanical bodies with our ships to your galaxy shows that something is greatly wrong. There is a lot of activity in your galaxy with mother ships moving around and a huge gravity shift change. These things we need to get to the bottom of. There are many planets in your galaxy that are similar to Earth that are disappearing and the gravity around them is being disrupted,' Mana says while she pauses.

Jaden is amazed that he was able to interpret her high speed talking in less than twenty seconds. He also can't believe the things she is saying. It's giving him a slight feeling of nervousness.

'You will need to successfully unite your human race, if you are going to be able to defeat the Darclonians. However, whatever you do, please do not engage or let the enemy detect your ship. Their technology is getting more and more advanced. Only use your ship as a last method of escape. This means do not let your human race know that your ship is on the planet, because your history shows your government would probably experiment on it and take it apart. You will have an AI companion to help you with your human weapon systems on Earth. We aren't sure what you will be capable of, each planet is different. The weapons system will have to be developed around your planet's natural resources. Your AI companion and nanobots will help with tough calculations, give you advice, allow remote access to your Gravhawk and

be a part of your new brain system,' she says while walking closer to Jaden.

Mana rests her hand on Jaden's shoulder. He looks at her puzzled when she mentions a new brain system. Bellona looks at Jaden with a smile on her face.

'You will be different from other humans. Your body composition, DNA, RNA, and body parts will evolve making you stronger and faster than you have ever been. Your thinking will be faster and you will be using all of your brain. You will no longer be considered human. We will consider you a Bialien, an alien of two worlds.

I have confidence in you Jaden, and I hope my decision is the best one. You have proven to me that you have the heart of an Andromedian warrior, and the soul of a bright star. I believe you were chosen from your planet for a reason. You were at the right place at the right time, a multiverse coincidence. I wish you the best of luck in your journey back home. May the solar winds and our nanotechnology work in your favor.'

She takes a few steps back and walks away from them. Her body turns bright again. Lightning comes from her body and into different directions into the clouds. Mana disappears into thin air. Jaden looks with an open mouth.

"Ready to go Jaden?"

"I was thinking about questions to ask her, but she only answered two of them," Jaden says.

"I'll answer any questions you might have, but first we have to prepare your body," Bellona says while the room changes around them.

It is dark and Jaden hears water around him. He is back in his human body floating in the virtual pool of life. He opens his eyes and he sees Bellona standing to the side of him. Jaden feels different pains all around his body and he can't move. He struggles to move and his eyes move all around.

'Relax Jaden; we are tuning your body.'

Jaden calms down and relaxes.

'You were just injected with a billion advanced nanobots called nanodrones. Yes, more advanced than what was in you before. These nanodrones are carbon and biochemical-based alien organisms. They don't have any metallic traces. They can copy themselves repeatedly. By the time they are ready you will have between one and two quadrillion nanodrones in your body. They can change in size to go inside of other materials. These are our most advanced prototype nanobots specifically designed to work with your body structure. They have a wide range of capabilities. They will be split into millions of communities and you will be able to control them to do many tasks. They will be loyal and only work with one host. Your DNA, tissues and cells will disintegrate if they

leave your body. Nothing would be able to be copied from your body. Your body will be encoded. This security feature is permanently enabled so your body can't be cloned by anyone,' Bellona says.

'When Mana was talking about me being bialien and an alien of two worlds, did she mean I'll look like a mutant or half Andromedian or something?' Jaden asks.

'No, it just means your internal body structure will slowly evolve and you will be able to do things you normally can't do. We Andromedians used to be bialien at a point of our earlier lives. It's nothing to be afraid of and you still look the same on the outside.'

'Can they make me into a superhero?' Jaden asks while making faces to help divert from thinking of the uncomfortable pain.

'By the time your body is ready you will feel like a superhero and do things you never imagined a superhero could do. You will have full control of your body like a *Star Trek* ship. Your body will repair itself much faster. Your skin will evolve and change into a skin ten times the strength of Kevlar. Kevlar is the material bulletproof vests are made of. Nanodrones can do the jobs of most organs in your body. They will suggest what body parts you might need and might not need. No, I don't know what your full range of weapons will be yet. Your AI buddy will determine what they will be when you are back on Earth. Your weapons will have to be developed on Earth. Yes, I'll explain, our information about your planet's gravity, atoms, radiation levels, sunlight strength on the surface, molecules passing through your planet has all been taken from our ship on Planet 455. Your AI assistant will need to do tough calculations to figure out what you'll be able to do once it learns of all the properties available on your planet. The nanodrones will create their own nanoscanners specially designed to work around your body and separate from the Gravhawk's nanoscanners,' Bellona says.

'That's cool, tell me more about what my brain will be able to do,' Jaden says.

'We suggest using a nanosincoid. Yes, a sincoid. It can replace your entire mind and duplicate everything in your brain to a trillionth of an inch. Then remap itself exactly how your mind is organized. Your mind will have a hundred times more storage capacity. Your brain would be able to fully multi-task using the sincoid brain. However, you will feel as if you are in your artificial body all the time and there is a chance you might not feel human at all. For example, you won't need to sleep and your mind will constantly keep evolving. It has unlimited capabilities and is capable of long-range communications. It has the capabilities also to learn and mimic your human brain,' Bellona says.

'No, I won't be needing the nanosincoid. I would like to continue thinking and feeling how I am now.'

‘There is a chance you might look different, since your blood color may change.’

‘I don’t want my outside body to change or my face to change; I want to stay as human as possible.’

‘You sure? You won’t need ears, a nose, or even a mouth.’

‘Yes, I’m sure. I’ll do without it.’

‘Okay, Jaden. Nevertheless, there is a chance your neurotransmitters and neurons can be overloaded. Your mind will go into shock putting you into a coma or making you brain dead, without the nanosincoid to handle high speed multi-tasking.

‘I’ll be careful then,’ he says.

‘Your AI will help monitor your brain’s function levels keeping you in the safe zone.’

‘That sounds good enough for me.’

‘I’m going to miss you when you are gone Jaden,’ she says while touching his arm through the water.

‘Same here, I’m going to miss you all while I’m gone. But I’m going to miss you the most, my sexy alien female friend,’ Jaden says while looking at her smiling.

Bellona is caught off guard by his words. She takes a few steps back.

‘I’ll be back Jaden.’

Bellona disappears and she appears in a room on a cloud with Elderone.

‘I’m monitoring the connection between you and the human subject. It seems you are having some sort of feelings for this human. You know this is against our laws to even have thoughts of being with another species. You were punished the last time we caught you falling for another species and having a physical connection with one,’ Elderone says in a digital language.

‘Yes, Elderone; I know this is against our laws. This isn’t on my mind now or my intentions. I just think he is a wonderful alien species,’ she says in a high pitch sound.

‘There has been some virtual-recording tampering around you and your human subject. This will be fully investigated. Now please escort your special friend to his ship, so he can get back to his planet. Jaden’s ship has been upgraded from generation 2 to generation 3.5. Mana thinks this human is special, but myself and the other elders thinks this is a suicide mission and a waste of a good ship. The psychic part of her brain tells her the future of Earth’s survival is important for other galaxies. I think there is no way the human species is going to be able to take down that mother ship and the Wraithstalkers with their current technology. They won’t have enough time to advance their technology. We should be sending more AI probe mother ships to investigate the Milky Way’s

center black hole problem. You will need to prepare yourself and ship for support that the M115 species needs in the Ngc 185 Galaxy. There is a battle in a small Magellanic cloud in the 901-831 sector.'

'Yes, Elderone, it will be done.'

Bellona returns to the room where she just left. Jaden, still in the virtual pool, watches Bellona reappear.

'I thought you had to go somewhere?' He asks.

'I did, I had a conversation with Elderone,' she says.

'You just disappeared for less than a second,' he says.

'It was a few milliseconds of conversation.'

'Man that was fast. Can you teach me to communicate telepathically that fast?' He asks.

'Yes, it's possible with the nanosincoid. It has one billion alien languages built in with a universal translator and it communicates in milliseconds. This model is a prototype to work with your brain. Your AI can tell you more about it when you get back to Earth. Maybe when you come back to our planet, you'll try the nanosincoid.'

'That sounds good. My pain has gone away. I'm feeling okay now,' he says.

'You're ready to go back home and your ship is ready,' she says.

Jaden stands up and walks out of the virtual pool. The water comes off his body and back into the pool. His clothes are instantly dried. The room changes and Jaden is back outside on a cloud. There are hundreds of ships sitting on clouds all around. Bellona is standing there, along with Marco and Bomani. Jaden is amazed at all the ships he sees nicely in formation, with red and blue molecules going around them. There is a ship near him, but it has a blue molecule going around it. Three brighter light balls are quickly moving around the blue molecule track.

"Where is my Gravhawk?" Jaden asks while looking around.

"It's right there behind you," Bellona says.

Jaden turns around and looks surprised at the Gravhawk that looks as if it received an upgrade. Jaden walks up and touches it. He notices the body looks shinier, more metallic and exotic looking.

"Jaden, your ship has been upgraded to the 3.5 generation EIS. It has some of the technology the generation 4 has, including G.D., but it doesn't have the powerful weapons generation 4 spacecrafts have," Bellona says.

"Cool. What more can the generation 3.5 do over the 2?"

"AI can explain that to you later, ready to go?" Bellona asks.

"Why do I feel as if I'm being rushed now?" Jaden asks.

"To be honest, Elderone wants you to hurry up and get back to your planet. The other two supreme elders are trying to override Mana's decision to let you leave. They are bringing the case and evidence to

other supreme elders in other galaxies and other alien species in our alliance.”

“Why they don’t want me to go?” he asks.

“We went through this already. Others don’t think sending you would help your planet or us. Mana believes something evil is brewing in your galaxy and an Armageddon is going effect many alien species,” she reiterates, “Listen, your body will need to adjust to your planet again. Therefore, it would be best for you to land by a local hospital. Your body may go into shock when it adjusts to the gravity and atmospheric pressure again.”

“That doesn’t sound good. What year will it be when I return to Earth?” Jaden asks.

“Summer or fall of 2014, depending on various speeds in subspace,” Bellona says.

“Is it still 2006 on Earth now?”

“Yes, you have only been on our planet for two weeks now,” she says.

“Eight years huh? To make it 2.4 million light-years; not bad,” Jaden says.

“It should take six years in subspace from under the Andromeda’s center black hole to the Milky Way’s center; One to two years to make it from the galactic center to your planet. However, the flight path is a bit longer to avoid detection,” Bellona says.

Bomani steps forward and looks Jaden in the eyes.

“Also, remember Jaden your brain will have to reorganize itself once you get out of your Gravhawk. The chemicals, nanos and neurons in your brain will need to adjust to your planet’s atmosphere pressure also,” Bomani says.

“Okay, thanks for the advice, my little blue Smurf friend,” Jaden says.

“Maybe when you come back, we can have a rematch in the gravity game?” Bomani asks.

“You’re on!” He yells.

“We are going to miss you Jaden,” Marco says.

“I’ll be back in a few years, to see you guys again,” Jaden says.

Jaden walks up and shakes Bomani hand.

“You have a very slimy hand, there. What were you doing with your hand?” Jaden asks.

“The same thing you were doing over five hundred times as a teenager. Exercise for my right hand,” Bomani says.

“Good one, good one,” Jaden says in laughing voice, while he mumbles to himself, ‘Make note, wash hands with commercial bleach when I get back home.’

“You guys didn’t hear me talking to myself just now right?” He asks.

“No, we didn’t,” Marco says.

“Alright! I perfected the telepathic communication thing. Cool,” Jaden says.

Jaden walks up and shakes Marco’s firm, large hands.

“You have one of the coolest warrior bodies, Marco. I’m going to get a tattoo of you when I get back home my friend,” Jaden says.

“Thanks, dude. Maybe you can create your own tattoo. I think you are going to enjoy your new warrior body on Earth. You have some of our best technology inside of you now. You are going to be able to do things you never dreamed of. You take care of yourself on Earth. You have a long journey ahead of you,” Marco says, while Jaden steps back.

Bellona quickly walks up and hugs Jaden.

“Wow, that was a bear hug, Bellona, Thanks,” he says while taking a step back.

“You are welcome Jaden. I hope I see you again. I enjoyed every millisecond with you here. Be safe, I wish you all the luck,” Bellona says while her eyes glow.

A few tears trickle down from Jaden’s right eye. The watery tears roll down his face and onto the soft cloud. The cloud below their feet begins to rain onto the ground below. Jaden walks towards his ship. He runs back over to Bellona and gives her another hug.

“Thanks for everything, and for being there for me while I was here. I will return to visit, I promise. Goodbye, my high speed talking alien friends,” Jaden says while another tear runs down from his left eye. He walks up to his ship on the same cloud and goes into the translucent reflective entrance. Jaden walks into the virtual pool of liquid and instantly connects with his Gravhawk.

‘Alright, the micro-tentacles are gone,’ Jaden thinks to himself.

He sees outside and sees his friends standing there, along with over 100,000 nanoeyes.

‘Where did all those eyes come from?’ Jaden asks himself.

‘They were always there, you just couldn’t see them with your human eyes,’ AI says.

‘Hey buddy! I forgot you were in here. How are you doing today?’

‘Same as always.’

‘You remind me of the robot in *Short Circuit*.’

‘Thanks sir.’

‘You can call me J. Better yet, I like sir better,’ Jaden says, ‘I feel like the boss, when someone calls me sir.’

‘Would you like me to fly?’ AI asks.

‘I have it for now. Do you think we can pick up some white lobsters from the surface of the planet?’ Jaden asks.

‘I don’t think that would be possible. It would be in violation of a few of our laws,’ AI says.

‘Oh okay, well it was worth a try. I have to eat some big lobsters when I get back to Earth, that smell and taste is haunting me.’

The Gravhawk takes off while a large colorful rainbow appears in the computer-simulated sun. Jaden floors it like a teenager in a sports car and he rides the rainbow. It then turns dark and the Gravhawk is flying through a dark tunnel. He comes out of the transport portal on the other side of the moon.

‘Briefly explain to me about the weapons system on this Gravhawk,’ Jaden says.

Jaden sees the offensive and defensive weapon systems on the screen.

‘Yellow torpedoes disrupt the particles that form energy shields and can be combined with other weapons. Pink torpedoes destroy or vaporize unshielded offensive weapons; mostly used for Earth-type weapons or primitive weapons systems. Artificial intelligence purple torpedoes have a powerful explosion and come in different sizes. There are quadrillions of organized nanites destroying matter molecules in there. They can split up and change directions. Clear energy shield cannons: energy is fired from the now blue molecule and the energy shield around the ship breaks up into small cannons. They move three times the speed of sound on Earth and range in different sizes. AI TNT red torpedoes are long-range torpedoes with a powerful explosion. There are three available and one day to recharge. The super black torpedo is long range with spinning black sphere crystals inside it. There is one available and it can manipulate other technologies. It contains millions of nanobots inside. It can generate its own shield...’

‘Okay, skip the rest, I can figure out the defensive weapons. What is this weapon of mass destruction at the bottom of the screen here?’ Jaden asks.

‘It has a onetime use and needs certain materials found on other planets to recharge. The rest is what you would call top-secret and available on a need to know basis.’

‘Yeah, sure. Okay, I’m done flying, AI you can take it from here.’

‘Yes, sir.’

Autopilot is online and they enter light speed towards their local star.

‘Would you like me to activate the silicon-nanite, so you can be aware of everything just in case there is a problem?’ AI asks.

‘Oh, hell no! I don’t want to see stars, lights, space, purple Magellanic clouds and under black holes for the next eight years. Keep my mind and conscious hibernating with my body, the same way I came

here. I can see video of the trip at another time. I have complete confidence you will get us to Earth safely,' Jaden says.

'I can give you a nice tour of our galaxy. I can also show you video of our history and I can learn more about your culture,' AI says.

'That would be like being in prison with you, and you are my cellmate talking for the next eight years nonstop. I'll pass. Keep your eyes on the road Mr. Johnny 5, and let me know if anything exciting happened when I'm back in my solar system. You will have plenty of time to learn my culture when we are back on Earth. Just make sure you put my body molecules back together the way they are now. I don't want a nipple being in the wrong place, a testicle missing or uneven, my middle finger on my pinky, and or my brain in my penis.'

The sun quickly approaches as they reach maximum speed.

'Yes sir and my name is AI not Johnny 5,' AI says.

'Look at you, correcting me. Good for you Mr. Paulie, the robot from *Rocky*. That's right, stand up for you; we are going to get along very well,' Jaden says in a sarcastic voice.

'You have a good sleep sir, by the way, let me check to see if your brain is in your penis now,' AI says in a sarcastic voice.

'Look at you Rosie the robot from *The Jetsons...*' Jaden is interrupted as his body flashes with the ship and they disappear into optic-warp.

Chapter 11: The Rebirth of a Legend

EARTH, ALBANY, NY STATE TRAUMA HOSPITAL 79°F
WEDNESDAY SEPTEMBER 3, 2014 3:12 AM

Two male emergency medical technicians are standing outside the emergency room on a break. One is smoking a cigarette and the other is drinking coffee. They are having a conversation with each other.

"I tried that *Third Virtual Life* last night at home online, it wasn't the same as being in the virtual fantasy store," EMT 1 says.

"Yeah, I know what you mean, the store has the full body connection to strap into. Two weeks ago, I went to the store on Main Street and I was having sex with a girl that lived in Texas. It totally felt like the real thing. Women are easy online; we had sex on a cloud then in the White House. Then when my time was up, I got out of the virtual dome I had released all over my underwear," EMT 2 says.

"Oh my god, that's the best. I have to get the Internet 2.0 connection in my house. I still have the old Internet...." EMT 1 is interrupted by an eerie sound behind him.

Jaden's unconscious body appears curled up on the stretcher in the fetal position. His body begins to shake uncontrollably as his body goes into shock.

"Shit, where did this guy come from? What is all this slimy shit around him?" EMT 1 asks while he drops his coffee.

"I don't know, but put on your gloves and let's get him inside."

The EMTs roll the stretcher a few feet into the hospital emergency entrance doors. EMT 1 straightens Jaden's body so that he is laying flat on his back. EMT 2 puts an oxygen mask over Jaden's face. Two tubes in the mask go up Jaden's nostrils like little snakes. A thick coolant mist goes into his nasal-cavity and upper throat membranes and evaporates. This procedure is slowly lowering Jaden's brain and body temperature. EMT 1 talks on a small earpiece and pushes buttons on the side of it. Straps automatically come out from the sides of the stretcher to hold Jaden still. The EMTs are both on a side of Jaden and pushing him down a long hallway. A beam of blue light comes from the ceiling and onto Jaden's body. Suddenly a red light comes from under the sheets on the stretcher. The lights disappear simultaneously and two nurses appear. Jaden's left arm is slightly penetrated by the stretcher. A small LCD screen comes up from the top of the stretcher. Nurse 1 gives Jaden an injection into his arm.

"Virtual x-ray 3D complete and MRI-4D is complete. Where did you pick him up from?" Nurse 2 asks.

"He just appeared out of nowhere and was lying on a stretcher," EMT 2 says.

“Yeah okay, were you smoking in your ambulance again?” She asks.

Nurse 1 looks at the screen; the virtual x-ray shows his spinal cord is being crushed, and his blood pressure very high. He also has internal bleeding in a few places. They quickly roll Jaden into an operating room.

“His heart rate is 210. His outside body DNA scan is coming up as an error on the LCD screen. The computer is running his blood DNA now,” nurse 2 says.

The EMTs stay outside the room. A robotic body with a ten-inch LCD screen as a face walks into the operating room. The screen has a human face on it. Dr. Hoswer shows in small letters under his face. Over the screen are two cameras moving together like eyes.

“Who is the patient?” Dr. Howser asks from the robot’s mouth, while the hands touch different parts around Jaden’s body.

Jaden coughs up liquid and blood. The mask automatically sucks up the liquid and blood. Two technicians run to the room to help. He calms down and stops shaking. A few nanodrones get to work around Jaden’s organs. They mimic and assist the coolant mist in his nose cavity.

Nurse 1 replies, “We don’t know yet. He doesn’t have an embedded RFID, criminal microchip, or Medicaid chip,” Pam says.

“Get those liquid samples scanned. This male in his early 20’s looks like he has symptoms of the bends,” the doctor says.

“Bends?” The second nurse, Kiesha, asks.

“Yes, bends, decompression sickness. First level blood scan shows excess nitrogen in his blood and his body looks as if he was deep underwater somewhere. We will have to put him in a decompression unit, after we get more IVs in him,” the doctor explains.

“His local and national DNA blood scan isn’t showing anything. HIV1-4, hepatitis and other diseases are showing all negative,” Nurse Pam says.

“His DNA structure looks very strange as if it was modified. The MRI-4D is showing very little brain activity. Increase his oxygen and get John Doe to the decompression room. Put a back and neck brace under him,” Howser says.

A technician put a brace on Jaden and they roll him down the hallway toward an elevator. A nurse follows from behind the stretcher with a portable LCD screen in her hand watching Jaden’s vitals.

“How is his blood temperature at 93.2°F already?” Kiesha asks.

“I don’t know. It was at 100.4°F, when we first brought him into the hospital ten minutes ago,” technician 1 says.

“Obviously you have mistaken, he must have been suffering from hypothermia when he got here,” Kiesha says with an attitude.

There is silence and the men have confused looks on their faces. She presses a button on the oxygen mask and the tubes come out of his nose. The technicians talk to each other in low voices.

“This is our first John Doe in two years,” technician 1 says.

“Yeah, this guy looks wasted,” technician 2 says.

“Yeah, look at his clothes and the old NY Giants jersey. His jersey probably would have been worth something on Zbay if he didn’t take a swim in a swamp,” technician 2 says while laughing.

Technician 1 laughs, “He fell asleep in the 90’s and woke up in the teens.”

They move Jaden to a small decompression room and they lock the door. He is still unconscious with IVs and body monitors all over his body. He is lying in a small decompression room by himself.

Inside of his body, the rest of the nanodrones go online. They come out of his cells and tissues. They go inside of his brain and begin reconstructing his memory. The nanodrones begin to repair things around his body. Ninety minutes goes by and they bring him up to a room on the seventh floor.

“Well you won’t need this, Mr. John Doe,” Nurse Pam says, while she helps a technician move the back brace.

The sun begins to rise. The sunlight shines through the windows and onto Jaden’s body. The fresh summer breeze comes through the window from under a television and hits his body. The cool air moves through his clothes and awakens the hairs around his body. His nose interprets the natural smelling air from the trees. He opens his eyes for the first time and looks around. Everything is blurry as he tries to focus on objects. He blinks his eyes a few times trying to adjust to the bright light over him. He sees a middle-aged chubby white woman in a nurse uniform looking at him smiling. Jaden notices he is in a patient’s gown.

“Hello there, you’re awake; did you have a nice rest?” She asks.

Jaden looks confused and doesn’t respond.

“What is your name sir?”

“How are you feeling?” She asks.

He doesn’t respond because the speech and auditory cortex parts of his brain are still offline. He just sees her moving her mouth. More nanodrones enter Jaden’s brain. He feels strange tingling sensations around his body.

“Well just press this button, if you need me,” she says while walking away.

A robotic body with an LCD screen as a face comes into Jaden’s room. He turns to look at it with a nervous expression on his face. Suddenly his hearing comes back, but it comes back very loud with a ringing sound. He sits up holding his ears as the volume goes down and ringing disappears. He hears echoes of voices.

“Hey buddy, are you okay? What’s wrong?” The robotic human screen face asks.

Nurse Pam walks back into the room.

“He can’t speak yet,” she says.

“I can speak now,” Jaden says.

“Well excuse me,” she says while walking to the other side of the bed, checking the bedside LCD screen for his vitals.

“Hello, John Doe, I’m Dr. Mayflower. Your vitals look much better. I think the MRI-4D scan made a mistake a few hours ago when it showed problems with your body. The new scan shows your bones, body structure and internal organs look fine now. I’m surprised to see your eyes open now; you were presumed brain dead. Were you night scuba diving somewhere in a lake or ocean?”

“I don’t know,” Jaden replies.

“What is your name? Where do you live?” Mayflower asks.

“I don’t know,” he says.

“Do you remember anything?”

There is silence as Jaden thinks, holding his hand to his chin. So much information is being shuffled around his mind.

“I think I just traveled from a nearby galaxy and I’m supposed to be warning the government on a future alien attack,” Jaden says.

There is an awkward silence as they both stare at him in disbelief.

“Is there anything else you remember?” The doctor asks.

“Not now, but I would like to know why are you talking through a robot body and your face is on the screen?” Jaden asks.

“Doctors at night aren’t required to be in the hospital. They can remote in through these R.H.I.U. or robotic human interface unit. I’m currently in Los Angeles and I’m covering a night shift for another doctor. I see everything through the two camera eyes, above the screen. My body here is fully connected into the robot unit. Where have you been, Mr. John Doe? These have been around for a few years now.”

“I’m trying to figure that out,” Jaden says.

Jaden can’t believe how advanced technology has gotten on Earth.

“Well relax and get some rest. Some people will be by later to ask you some questions,” the doctor says while walking away in an all white robot body. The odd clanking sounds of the feet walking echo around the room.

“Doctor!” Jaden yells as he stops walking and continues, “What day is today?”

He turns around and says, “Wednesday September 3, 2014.”

The robot continues to walk away, while taking irregular sounding footsteps.

“Well, I’ll turn on the TV for you to watch,” Nurse Pam says.

Suddenly the wall lights up as a television appears over the window. He hears the sounds from the television from different directions. He turns his head and looks all around the room.

"That is 12.1 Dolby stereo sound you hear all around you," the nurse says.

She walks out of the room and talks to the doctor in the hallway. Jaden turns his head towards them standing by a nursing station. He zooms in on them and is able to hear what they are saying.

"Nurse, make sure you keep monitoring this John Doe, a lot of things aren't making any sense. This guy just came out of nowhere, he has no records, no DNA on file anywhere and we can't get any DNA samples from him," Mayflower says.

"No DNA on him? I gave you a sample of his hair and skin earlier," Pam says.

"I know you did, the lab keeps saying it is an invalid sample and the DNA/RNA structure is missing. I've never seen this before, his blood is coming back abnormal. This person might also be mentally unstable. Get the psychologist that comes in at seven to interview him ASAP. I'm taking a break; this electronic body suit is giving me a headache. Send me a brain text if anything develops. Thank you nurse."

"Okay doctor, I'll get on it."

They walk away from each other and the robotic body goes into a room with other robotic bodies. It stands on a designated area and it is powered down. Jaden is confused to how he was able to hear the conversation from so far away. The TV on the wall grabs his attention.

"Good morning America. I'm Jake and this is Michelle and we are live on BNN this morning," the male on the television says.

'BNN sounds so familiar,' Jaden says to himself, while the T.V continues.

"It was just eight months ago this week that Vice President Stefanie Paylin took the commander-in-chief position and was sworn in. The inexperienced Alaskan governor was the running mate with President J. Macarthur. Macarthur had a sudden heart attack early this year and died at the age of 76. She has become the 46th President and the first female President. She nominated the Secretary of Defense Kevin Robinson earlier to vice president. Robinson, also in his seventies, has served the military all his life and received the Purple Heart for his heroism in the Gulf War in the early nineties. He has since been with the Pentagon in top-secret government projects; including being a major player of N.G.D. (Next Generation of Defense). Robinson has been known as someone for getting the job done for his country...." Michelle reports.

Robinson's much older face is shown in a close up on the TV while he is at the White House at a birthday party for one of Paylin's children.

“Shit, I remember now. That asshole was trying to kill me. It is all coming back to me now,” he says while he continues to watch the television.

Michelle continues, “...A spokesman for the Pentagon says N.G.D. involves a highly classified prototype quantum diamond processing supercomputer called Motherdrone...”

Jaden falls asleep thinking about who he is.

‘Who am I? Who am I?’ He asks himself.

Two hours pass and his body is fully healed. A technician walks into his room to take MRI-4D scans and virtual x-rays from his bed. He leaves the room.

A commercial comes on the television. A middle-aged man stands there with his body completely covered in a thin, black body suit. His eyes are covered in all black goggles. He is moving his arms around.

“...Strap into Nextbox 720 the next generation of virtual reality gaming. Create your own worlds of video games. Play paintball from home, swim underwater in your swimming pool at real Bahamas’ underwater locations, and take classes across the country... Adult world is now online. Why date real women, when you can have a virtual date? Strap into a new world of virtual reality. Internet 2.0 required, not suggested for pregnant women, and people who experience seizures.”

The news comes back on Michelle and Jake is talking.

“...Electric bills around the country have been greatly decreasing thanks to the technology of enhanced geothermal energy drilling. This new process has proved successful over the past three years in providing fifteen percent of the electricity for the USA. The process involves injecting high-pressure water three to four miles deep into the crust and rocks. The heated water returns to the surface in steam and turns turbines to create electricity for homes,” Michelle says.

“That is amazing Michelle, every day we are being less dependent on gas. I heard that next generation wind turbines on our coast lines are producing another fifteen percent of electricity for our country,” Jake says.

“Looks like the green technologies are in a neck and neck race,” she says as they both chuckle.

“In other news, the national debt has reached a record 19.5 trillion dollars last month and with a public portion of 14.3 trillion dollars. This is due to years of hyperinflation, Iraq War and new healthcare spending that started in 2010. The countries we are borrowing from, including China, increased their interest over the years on the money we owe them. China has become the new super power of the world over the years. President Paylin has vowed to reduce the United States defense budget by seventy-five percent to help balance the federal budget. Something republicans are one hundred percent against. She also suggested congress

passes a bill to use fifteen percent of our gold reserves to pay off some of the national debt. House speaker Perry says the President has very little support for the bill in congress...The democrats and republicans agreed the debt should be paid by future generations,” Jake says.

Jaden wakes up and feels the sun shining brightly over him. He pulls the plugs and monitors from his body. The nurse rushes into the room.

“Sir, you cannot take those off, please sit on your bed,” Pam says.

“I’m feeling better. I have to inform the President of an attack on Earth,” Jaden says while lying back down.

“Tell me more about these attacks on Earth and who you are, Mr. John Doe,” a man with a dark blue suit and baldhead walks into the room saying.

Jaden turns to him, “I know this sounds a little crazy, but I was on another planet called Xenos in the Andromeda Galaxy. I left Earth in 1996 and now I’m back. It’s a lot to explain, but these bad aliens called Darclonians are on their way to Earth. The Darclonians infected us humans many years ago with these nanomoles that record our memories and can temporarily control us. So this is why I have to inform the government and President about what is about to take place.”

“How did you travel to this Andromeda Galaxy? Did you use a Stargate?” The man in the suit asks.

“Wait a second, who are you, anyway?” Jaden asks.

“I’m Dr. Brown, the hospital psychologist.”

“Why am I wasting my time talking to you? I thought you were a detective or something. I have to go,” Jaden says while getting out of the bed.

“Mr. John Doe, I would suggest you get back into the bed and finish answering my questions,” Dr. Brown says.

“You can take your questions and shove it up your tight ass. I’m not explaining myself to you. I’m out of here. Where are my clothes?” Jaden asks.

“Sorry your clothes are being analyzed for DNA samples, since we can’t identify who you are from your body DNA,” Dr. Brown says in a firm voice.

Jaden walks towards the window and looks out into the parking lot. He notices he is on the third floor of the building. There are dozens of trees across the street and he can see the wind shaking the branches.

“Mr. Doe, please sit back on the bed so that no one gets hurt here,” Pam pleads.

Suddenly two men with blue bionic exoskeleton suits walk into the room. They have security guard badges on the outside of their hard plastic body suits. The bionic suit has many small yellow wires outside the suit going down the arms and legs. The wires run straight into a special helmet around the head. The men have clear goggles around their

eyes showing information like a computer screen. Special microchip embedded gloves are covering their hands.

“Mr. John Doe, please get back into your bed or we will use force on you,” security guard 1 says.

“Force on me? I’m not afraid of you fake Robocop freaks,” Jaden says.

He walks up to the guards blocking the door. He gets into his karate stance and throws a straight punch into guard 2’s chest. The striking blow doesn’t faze the guard.

“That’s all you got you little punk. Punch harder, maybe you’ll break the bones in your hand,” guard 2 says.

“Stop this, immediately,” Dr. Brown says while standing back.

Jaden concentrates on his right arm and his muscles tighten. Small bubbles form inside his skin and run up and down his right arm. The nanodrones in his muscle tissue in the lower back, waist and upper thighs are being strengthened. Nanodrones protect and strengthen the bones in his fist.

“I have some more for you!” Jaden yells.

He swings again and hits the guard with a more powerful blow in his chest. The punch makes a dent in the hard plastic armor. The guard loses his balance and falls backwards onto the nursing station knocking over a small computer screen. The air is knocked out of him. The other guard looks in disbelief.

“Wow that was amazing. I never hit anyone that hard before. Oh no, I feel so weak now,” Jaden says in a moaning voice.

The other guard grabs Jaden around his arms and body from behind. He can’t move, but he kicks his feet wildly. The guard slams him on the bed. The nurse injects Jaden with something to calm him down. The guard puts handcuffs around his wrist and cuffs him to the bed. Jaden closes his eyes and opens them. The room is moving around very slowly and he passes out. The nurse checks on the security guard that fell down. She comes back into the room.

“Notify the sheriff that we have a B1 John Doe patient going to Central Mental Ward,” Brown says while reviewing his charts and x-rays.

“Yes, doctor,” the nurse says.

“Also, check him for more drugs and diseases,” the doctor says.

“Yes, doctor.”

“Okay doctor, if you need us we will be down the hall,” guard 1 says while he helps partner down the hall.

“I lost my balance when he hit me, man,” guard 2 pleads while walking down the hall holding his chest while breathing heavily.

A few nurses, doctors and more security guards are in the hallway trying to see what is going on. Some transport workers come into the

room. They uncuff him and lift him onto a transport stretcher then re-cuff him. The transporter pushes him into the hallway while all the nurses and hospital workers look at him. Two female nurses begin to talk to each other.

“That cute guy said he is from another planet?” Nurse 3 asks nurse 4 while they both look at him being rolled towards the elevator.

“Yeah girl, I wonder if he is single,” nurse 4 says.

“Are you crazy?”

“At least he just got checked out for every disease. Lord knows there is a shortage of men these days that are disease free. I can deal with a man with some mental issues. He also maybe never played *Third Virtual Life* or *Adult World*,” nurse 4 says.

“Hmmm... My husband stopped touching me after playing that sick game,” nurse 3 says.

“I had to pay for a guy on a date last month because he has a rent to own R.F.E.C. at home and doesn’t have the money to date a female.”

“Shit, you mean to tell me he had the money to buy a robotic female entertainment companion?” Nurse 3 says.

“Yeah, he said he doesn’t date women and doesn’t want to get married.”

“That is sick, I would kill my husband if he bought one of those nasty sex robots home. My husband doesn’t even want to have any more kids with me because he is on birth control and...” Nurse 3 says.

The elevator door opens, and Jaden is still unconscious. They roll him through a side exit. His body shakes for a second then stops. Something enters into his brain and changes in size.

“Did you see that?” Escort 1 asks.

“I did, but I wish I didn’t. I’m just trying to get this weirdo in the sheriff’s van. I’m getting bad vibes from him,” escort 2 says.

“Where is the van? These guys are late.”

Jaden still unconscious hears voices.

‘Jaden, wake up. What is going on? Where are you being transported too?’ AI asks telepathically.

“Jaden? AI is that you? I’m Jaden, that’s right,” Jaden mumbles in a confused tone.

‘Jaden, you’re talking out loud and other people can hear you. Think telepathically like you were doing before. Also don’t say your name out loud,’ AI orders.

“Other people? Where are you hiding at AI? Are you still in the Gravhawk?” Jaden asks in a delirious voice.

There is silence while the escorts look at Jaden as if he is crazy.

“The van just pulled up, let’s go,” escort 2 says.

They quickly push him towards the van.

“Hey fellas how is it going today?” Officer Randy asks with a country accent.

The middle-aged officer with red hair and beard with sunglasses on looks over the paper work.

“It’s going fine. This one is talking to himself,” escort 1 says.

“We got a John Doe here huh? I haven’t seen one of these in years. No identification whatsoever?”

“Nothing at all. We don’t know where he came from,” escort 2 says.

“Let’s get this bad puppy all properly wrapped up for his new home,” Randy says.

Jaden opens his eyes and looks around. He sees his hands cuffed to a chain that leads down to his stomach and feet.

‘Jaden, it’s me again AI.’

Jaden tries to talk, but can’t.

‘Talk telepathically, remember?’ AI asks.

‘Okay, I remember, what did you do to me? My voice is gone,’ Jaden says telepathically.

‘I temporarily disabled your voice. You were talking aloud to these humans. That isn’t the best idea right now. I also removed that drug they put into your bloodstream, this is why you suddenly woke up.’

‘Where have you been all this time?’ He asks.

‘I was parking the ship in a safe spot and I had to make sure our ship wasn’t detected by humans and the Darclonians mother ship long range radar. That required a few hours. Why are you in handcuffs and being transported by an armed man?’ AI asks.

‘They think I’m crazy, because I told them about me being on another planet and warning the government about the Darclonians being on their way here,’ Jaden explains.

‘That could only mean...’

‘Psychiatric ward hospital,’ they say at the same time.

‘This is a weird future...’ Jaden says while being interrupted.

‘I leave you alone for a few hours and you get yourself on your way to a mental hospital.’

‘I wasn’t thinking right; I didn’t even know my name or who I was for awhile. I’m remembering things little by little,’ Jaden explains.

‘I understand, listen, when your body was reassembled from optic-warp something in your brain was disrupting your brain functions. Your neurons in your brain were going crazy and then it stopped when we got to Earth. Your mind needed time to reorganize itself more than what was estimated before. Therefore, I dropped you off at the trauma hospital and flew very low to the North Pole. The nanodrones went online ASAP to help get your body in normal condition,’ AI says.

‘Where are you now then?’

‘I’m in your brain. I entered through the back of your spinal cord. Your nervous system jumped. Then I had to ride your bloodstream into your brain. I’m in a part of your brain where another personality would be at. You have mazes and mazes of neurons in your brain.’

‘That is good to know. How can I break out of these chains and get out of this situation,’ Jaden asks while moving his chains around making clinging sounds.

“Hey buddy, relax you have a twenty minute drive ahead of you. You are not going anywhere in those chains. I’m taking you to your new home,” Officer Randy says.

‘There isn’t much you can do now. I have to calculate what weapons your human body will be capable of. This could take hours, days or weeks,’ AI says.

‘Are you crazy? That long? I can’t survive in a mental ward that long. I want to see my girlfriend and family. I also have to warn the government on where to look in space to get the communications sent to stop the Darclonians mind nanomole attack,’ Jaden says in a nervous voice.

“...”

‘Turn my voice back on,’ Jaden demands.

Jaden clears his throat.

“How are you officer? How long will I be at the psychiatric hospital?” Jaden asks while looking up towards the white ceiling of the van.

“You are a B1 patient, you’ll be there two to four weeks minimum,” the officer says while looking into the rear view mirror at Jaden lying on his back.

“Shit!” Jaden yells.

“I can talk to the doctors there and I can talk them down to having you there for one to two weeks minimum. Only, if you can tell me your name and how you got to the hospital. You’ll enter as a C1 patient, less security and you’ll be able to do more in there,” Officer Randy says.

‘Jaden, don’t tell him your name. You could have warrants on your name and you don’t need the wrong government catching you without a way to defend yourself,’ AI says.

‘Warrants? From eighteen years ago? I don’t think anyone is looking for me now,’ Jaden says.

‘Just give him a fake name, trust me. I think the government has better things to worry about than a teenager who disappeared eighteen years ago,’ AI says.

“I’m Henry Cooper, and I’m twenty years old,” Jaden yells.

“What town are you from? Do you know your social security number?” Randy asks.

‘Shit, this asshole is asking me too many questions,’ Jaden says to AI and himself.

“I’m from Troy, New York. I don’t remember my social security number.”

“Thanks for remembering for me. We will be there in ten minutes. I’ll see what I can do for you,” Randy says while touching the front windshield looking up some information.

Jaden’s body shakes as the van goes over potholes. The chain clinging gives him an eerie feeling around his body.

‘Are the nanoscanners or eyes working yet?’ Jaden asks.

‘No, they are being configured now and are offline,’ AI says.

‘I wanted to see what was going on outside and which highway we are on,’ Jaden says.

‘Doesn’t matter now, we are here,’ AI says.

They pull into a gated area outside the huge complex. There are two guards with bionic upper body suits at the gate verifying Randy’s paperwork. The officer drives his van to the patient entrance. He stops and is met by two workers in all white uniforms.

“Here is another one for you,” Randy says as he gets out the van and walks around back.

“There have been a lot of mental patients coming in the last few months. We are getting full here. I have never seen so many patients coming in here with unexplainable mental issues. We have scientists, biologists, neuroscientists and a retired psychologist from around the country here,” Williams the patient transporter says.

Williams, a black man in his late twenties with a beard and soft brown eyes, smiles at the officer. They roll Jaden and the stretcher out of the van and onto the ground. The sunlight feels good on Jaden’s body. Officer Randy approaches Jaden and looks him directly into eyes.

“You’re a liar, Mr. Cooper. All seven Henry Coopers in New York have RFIDs and two have criminal microchips. You don’t have any. There are no Henrys on file in the entire United States with your DNA blood information. People know better than to lie to law enforcement these days. Now you have one star against you going in here,” Randy says with an angry face.

Jaden just looks at him, while he is pushed away still in his hospital gown. The officer stands there smoking a cigar keeping his eyes on him.

“Hey wait a second!” Randy yells.

They stop pushing and Randy walks over with a bag in his hand.

“Here are the rest of his belongings,” he says while handing it to Mike the other patient transporter.

‘How did he know I was lying so fast?’ Jaden asks.

‘Technology has changed greatly since you were last on Earth. Governments have better ways of tracking people these days,’ AI says.

“Hey buddy, what did you do to piss off Sheriff Randy?” Williams asks Jaden.

“I just gave him a fake name.”

“Yeah, buddy I don’t know where you been, but people don’t do that anymore. The most I’ve seen people do was having fake RFIDs or scrambled embedded microchips. I think you better tell them something real, before they hook you up to the DSN machine.”

“DSN machine?” Jaden asks.

“Yes, it is an experimental machine that scans your mind and tells them everything they need to know. It is a second-generation machine from the lie detector 2.0. They have been trying it on mental patients at will, not even knowing the long-term effects on the brain. What is your nationality, Mr. Cooper?” Williams asks while pulling the stretcher from the front.

“I’m bi-racial; I’m half black and half white,” Jaden says.

“Cool, just like our former black President. Sir, can you walk?” Williams asks. “We have to give the stretcher back to the sheriff.”

“Yes, I can walk. Black President? Meaning, as in President of the United States?” Jaden asks in a confused voice.

“Yes, as in the 44th President of the United States in 2008,” Williams says while he and Mike lift Jaden up and onto his feet. The long white hospital gown reaches his feet as he slowly walks into the entrance with a confused look on his face.

“Where you been buddy? Everyone knows that, even people locked away years in prison.”

‘That’s unbelievable. I feel like I’m just coming out of prison from another planet. I must have missed so much over the past eighteen years. I wonder if my parents are okay and where my friends are,’ Jaden says to AI.

‘If I can get on the Internet somehow, I can look up your family and friends. I could also look up information to help prepare your body for its full potential,’ AI says.

He walks inside the building and down a long hallway. A doctor walks up with a big syringe with buttons and red lights on it. The transport workers hold Jaden still as he gets nervous of the big needle.

“What the hell is that?” Jaden asks while struggling.

“This is an RFID needle. We are just inserting a chip into your left wrist. This won’t hurt much,” Doctor Cochman says while giggling.

The doctor inserts the chip into Jaden’s arm while he yells.

“Awww!”

The small microscopic chip goes under his skin and he doesn’t bleed.

“That’s strange usually there is some blood,” Cochman says while he has a Band-Aid in his hand.

The doctor pulls out a glowing wand and goes over Jaden’s face a few times with it.

“What was that?”

“Now your face is in the national face recognition database,” Williams replies.

“That doesn’t sound good,” Jaden says.

“The worst is over buddy, now just a blood test and urine,” Williams says.

The doctor takes blood from Jaden’s right arm. He hands him a cup to go into the room on the right. Jaden walks into the small room with a cup.

‘I should shit in this cup and give it back to them,’ Jaden says to AI.

‘Jaden, you don’t want to cause more problems here and get put into a high security area. I need to do many calculations to figure out what powers you will have. Sunlight and being able to surf the web are very important.’

‘Okay, Okay, I’ll cooperate. You better get working on those calculations fast. I can’t take being in this place for too long. I never even heard of this mental hospital before,’ he tells AI.

Jaden pees in the small metal cup with sensors inside. He walks back out still in chains. A nurse takes it and walks away. The escorts remove the chains down to his feet and just leave regular handcuffs around his wrists. They continue to walk through a gated area that requires them to be buzzed into. They reach an elevator on the other side. Jaden walks by a few small rooms with people inside of them. Some are in straitjackets talking to themselves. Two are in straitjackets looking out the window and towards the sky like zombies.

“You aren’t taking my brain. You aren’t taking my mind! Get out of my mind!” A mental patient in a room yells.

“Come on guys, do you have to put me with the real crazy people?” Jaden asks.

“We are just following orders. You already have a strike against you. Two more and you are on the higher floors in maximum security. Twenty-three hours lock down a day and you’ll be strapped down to a bed,” Williams says.

They get to his room and open the door. They uncuff him and hand him a small bag.

“You can put on these hospital clothes in the bag and a few of your belongings are in there. Have a good day sir,” Williams says while he closes the black steel door with silver bars in the middle.

“Yeah, the doctor will be with you soon,” Mike says.

“Thank you, Mr. Two Cents Mike,” Jaden says sarcastically.

A tray of food and water is left at the door's window.

Jaden puts his bag on the small single cot. The walls are all white, with a three foot by three-foot window with Plexiglas in the rear of the small room. There is a small toilet in the corner of the room. He reaches and takes the water from the tray and drinks it.

'That toilet looks disgusting. I would hate to use that.'

'If you don't eat any food, you won't have to use it. I can control your eating using advanced photosynthesis same as we did on Xenos.'

'Okay, I don't feel hungry. But this room is jail alright,' he says to himself while he walks over to the window and looks out.

The sun shines from behind a cloud into the room, brightly lighting it up.

'The sun feels good. Makes my body tingle. What time is it AI?'

'From calculating the position of where the sun is and the time we left the hospital to now, it's about 10:25 AM,' AI says.

'Speaking of calculating, give me an update,' he says while he looks in the bag.

'So far, we have successfully reprogrammed your white and red blood cells to accept all the nanodrones. Your T-cells have been reprogrammed and replaced. You will never catch a cold or get sick again. Your DNA and RNA genetic code has been modified again. I have a trillion drones in your mind verifying your neural code. Your ears, nose, eyes and taste will be greatly enhanced by tomorrow. Tomorrow you'll be able to hold your breath for thirty minutes or more. Filtered oxygen will be able to be absorbed from your pores to directly into your bloodstream, filtering out nitrogen. Your brain is at thirty percent usage now, when it gets to seventy-five percent you'll be able to multi-task and control multiple things at one time, as simple as walking and talking,' AI says.

'What about my weapon systems?'

'That's going to take more time Jaden. How long, I'm not sure. My processing speed is only one quadrillion calculations per 100 milliseconds. If you took the nanosinoid from Bellona we could both calculate at one quintillion calculations per fifty milliseconds,' AI says.

'I don't know what all these trillion, billion, quadrillion and quintillion milliseconds mean. Tell me in simple meanings what the benefits would have been,' Jaden says.

'Instead of days or weeks to calculate your weapon systems, it would take two days max, with the proper information being downloaded,' AI says.

'Thank you AI Einstein.'

'We need to look up many subjects on the Internet: advanced physics, advanced calculus, nuclear fusion, advance nanotechnology, Earth biology, Astrophysics, rocket science and definitions that weren't

translated from your language from when you were on Earth eighteen years ago. Meaning us Andromedian need to convert our definitions with your human advanced science technology definitions. We were only able to convert what you knew eighteen years ago into our translation. We also need the Internet to figure out which natural resources on your planet we can use to create a weapon system to work with your biological body.'

'I gotcha now; I understand,' Jaden says, 'Just make sure I don't turn into an alien or make my outside look different. Last thing I need is to look like a freak.'

Jaden thinks about the freaks in other movies: *Predator*, *Alf*, aliens in *Star Trek* and the V lizard aliens.

'Yes sir.'

There is a knock on the door. A security guard opens the door and a doctor walks in. Jaden turns around.

"Hello, Mr. John Doe, I'm Dr. Cochman," he walks in holding an LCD screen that looks like a notepad. He stands over Jaden.

An overweight, white guard around 5'10" 250 lbs stands by the door with an all black material looking similar to a black dry suit just covering his upper body. He looks directly at Jaden by the window. He has a full beard and is missing a front tooth in his mouth. He is bald and has freckles on his face. His lower body looks like work pants. Wires and cables go around the arms to a pair of gloves with small microchips over them. There aren't any cables or wires going to the legs. The door closes and the doctor sits on the end of the bed.

"Sir, please sit down," the doctor politely asks.

Jaden sits down near the pillow of the bed.

"Why is that guard looking at me as if he is a pit bull and I stole his bone?" Jaden asks.

"That is Mr. Ruffo; he is the main guard on this floor. He doesn't take any shit from anyone. But don't worry about him, me and you are going to talk," Cochman says in a nice voice.

"They tell me at the hospital you didn't remember your name and you gave the sheriff a fake name. The doctors and nurses at the hospital also tell me you came from another planet. That you have to warn people on Earth of an attack," Cochman says.

"I don't remember saying that. I was confused and couldn't remember much," Jaden says.

The doctor looks at his LCD notebook and words begin to fill in on the screen.

"How are those words going on that screen?" Jaden asks.

"The signal from my mind is going directly onto the notebook screen. It is a lot easier than typing or writing by hand. So you never said

in the hospital room, that the vice president of the United States tried to kill you and it is all coming back to you now.”

“How did you know I said that, no one was in the room?” Jaden asks.

“We have recording devices all over the place. Are you going to answer the question?”

“I was delusional, I don’t know what I was saying,” Jaden says.

“You aren’t on any drugs, but you did do something to your body. Your fingerprints don’t match anything. For some reason we can’t get any DNA from your hair, skin or saliva. Do you know why that is?”

Words continue to fill the LCD notebook.

“No, I don’t know why it is. Maybe something is wrong with your machine that scans for DNA,” Jaden replies.

“Our computer machines have ninety-five percent of every citizen’s DNA on file. Your body’s DNA shows up as corrupted and our computers have never failed. There is no way you don’t have any family in this country. We would be able to locate your family, friends and siblings with the smallest fragment of your DNA. However, nothing is showing up, not even in your blood. Your blood is even showing up some unusual anomalies.”

“I don’t know why this is Dr. Cockman. Oops I’m sorry, Dr. Cochman,” Jaden says while chuckling.

Mr. Ruffo walks over to Jaden with a serious and angry look on his face. Jaden stands up as he quickly approaches. The guard lifts Jaden into the air by his hospital issued white button-up shirt with his left hand and slams him against the wall. Jaden is lifted six inches from the floor. Ruffo’s right hand is covered in a glove and is pressed strongly around Jaden’s throat, cutting off circulation. Jaden’s first reaction was to grab his hand and pull it from his throat to breathe, but he doesn’t. He folds his arms instead and looks Ruffo in the eyes with a smirk. Jaden’s body absorbs oxygen from his pores around his body. The nanodrones in his blood in his neck push the blood through the tightly compressed veins, towards his brain.

“Listen you little shit, you going to answer what the doctor is asking you. This isn’t a game and no time to be making jokes. You are in my house now and you are going to respect Dr. Cochman!” Ruffo yells

“Okay, I’ll respect Dr. Cockman,” Jaden says with a smile on his face.

Ruffo increases his grip around Jaden’s neck, “His name is Cochman.”

Jaden has a smile on his face. Thousands of nanodrones race into his throat area strengthening the bone structure, veins and increasing blood flow. The guard releases the grip around his left hand from his shirt and tightens his grip around Jaden’s neck.

“Let him go, Ruffo,” Cochman calmly says.

“This little shit thinks he can hold his breath.”

‘Jaden, what is going on? Why is this guy choking you and making your heart rate go up?’ AI asks.

‘Don’t worry about me, just keep calculating and preparing my body. I’m getting to know my new friend here. I can feel the oxygen going into my pores around my body and I feel the carbon dioxide leaving. It feels like a slight breeze on the hairs around my body. My body feels like it’s releasing micro farts,’ Jaden tells AI.

“Look at me Dr. Cochman, I’m levitating in the air like a genie,” Jaden says.

“I don’t have time for this,” Cochman says.

Ruffo is still staring Jaden in the eyes. Ruffo brings Jaden over to the bed by his neck and head butts him, before dropping him. His body bounces once and a thumping sound is heard. Ruffo walks back towards the corner of the room.

“That’s all you got big boy?” Jaden asks, while he touches the small gash on his head. “I’m surprised that bionic suit fits you, I’m sure it was originally made for a cow,” he snaps.

Jaden begins breathing again through his lungs. Blood begins to slowly come from his head.

“Listen Mr. John Doe, I see you’re not cooperating with us. Maybe you’ll cooperate tomorrow,” Cochman says while he gets up and walks towards the door.

They leave and Ruffo slams the door and looks at Jaden from the bars.

“We will see you soon and we will get the answers we are looking for you little shit.”

“Make sure you find the answers to why you don’t have futuristic breath mints in your mouth when you talk to people. Your breath smells like a homeless man’s socks,” Jaden snaps.

Ruffo walks away with a grin on his face.

‘Jaden you are pissing this guy off. We don’t need extra problems. My calculations tell me this guy is going to be a problem for us,’ AI says.

‘I know what I’m doing. I don’t like being pushed around by a security guard with a small dick and has something to prove to the world.’

‘Okay, you should get some rest. Move the bed closer to the window so we can feel the rays of the sunlight,’ AI says.

‘I stopped bleeding, cool. That really hurt when he headbutted me.’

Jaden bends down to try to move the bed, but it is bolted to the floor. His arm muscles tighten up and he pulls it harder. It comes off the floor

and he moves it towards the window. Jaden looks into the rest of the bag, and sees his wallet. He opens it and everything is missing except fifty-six dollars and a condom.

‘Where is my driver’s license and credit card?’

‘They are in the Gravhawk. I removed them before I dropped you off,’ AI says.

‘What am I going to do with this outdated condom?’

‘I have no idea.’

‘Great, maybe I’ll try it on to jerk off and I’ll have safe sex with myself. Oh man, that was a horrible thought. I’m beginning to think like these people in here,’ Jaden says to himself while lying down on the bed.

‘You are going to sleep for about twelve hours then I’ll wake you up,’ AI says.

‘Okay. Man, I need a female, it has been years, I mean weeks. I have to try to contact Amy,’ he says while he closes his eyes.

Jaden instantly goes into deep delta sleep. Hours go by and he wakes up. It is dark outside and the stars are shining brightly above. Everything is blurry for Jaden as he focuses his eyes. He hears moaning from patients in other rooms. Jaden feels pain in all of his muscles all over his body.

‘Why are all my muscles sore and my body in such pain?’

‘I turned off a protein in your muscle stem cells. I would need to search the Internet to see if there is an exact word. You will be a lot stronger. I ran hundreds of test on different cells throughout your body, while you were asleep,’ AI says.

‘Can you do something for the pain?’ Jaden asks while sits on his knees and look out the window.

‘Thanks, that’s better. What time is it about? Why do I feel dizzy?’

‘It’s about 11 PM. We should get some more sleep. But, first walk around the room,’ AI says.

Jaden walks around the room and he does not feel dizzy.

‘Stand on the bar at the end of the bed with one foot,’ AI says.

‘One foot? Okay.’

He jumps up on the bed and stands on one foot on an inch round iron bar.

‘The equilibrium in your ears that control your balance has been greatly enhanced. You will also soon be able to walk on walls and ceilings just like in the gravity games.’

‘Good work AI, but I’m feeling tired again.’

‘Get some more rest I’ll wake you up in another ten hours.’

‘For some reason I remember the combination lock from when I was in the second grade. I also remember things from when I was one and two years old,’ Jaden says while he lies down.

‘That is the info from the Darclonian nanomole that was in your brain from when you first left Earth. We decrypted it on our planet and I’m synchronizing many details of your past with your brain. You are going to remember many details of your past. This increase of information is also going to make things in your subconscious come out and give you very realistic dreams. Many areas in your mind are going to be greatly enhanced. You could go back into any day in your past and relive the entire day...’ AI says and then stops.

Jaden quickly falls asleep. About three hours go by. He begins to dream.

It is dark, completely dark as he finds himself walking to nowhere. He can’t see his hands or body. Not sure what direction he is going or where he is going to. A low voice is heard in the background, the voice gets louder.

“Join us. Join us,” the unknown voice says from different areas in the dark.

“Join who? Where is this?”

“We are your destiny...”

“Listen you coward, why don’t you turn the lights on and stop hiding in the dark!” Jaden yells.

There is silence and Jaden continues to yell, “Join what? Join your gay orgy? Mafia? Cult? Join a gang? Come out of the closet...”

It suddenly gets very bright. Jaden opens his eyes. It is still dark outside. There are flashlights shining in his face as he tries to cover his eyes. People are walking into his small room. The lights overhead comes on. Two people grab him and hold him down. One of the people is Ruffo in his bionic body suit.

‘Jaden what is going on?’ AI asks.

‘I don’t know. Give me some super strength to fight them off,’ Jaden says.

‘I can’t right now. Fighting them isn’t going to help the situation. Just go along with whatever they want for now, it’s best,’ AI says to Jaden.

‘Easy for you to say, you are tucked away safely in my brain somewhere.’

A nurse walks over with a needle. Jaden kicks the other guard against the wall.

“Oh, we have a fighter here?” Ruffo asks while leaning directly over Jaden holding him down. His massive strength makes it hard for Jaden to move.

“What are you people doing to me?” Jaden asks them.

“You’ll see, I told you we would be back to get those answers,” Ruffo says with a smile on his face.

The nurse injects Jaden with the needle into his arm. Ruffo is handed a straitjacket from the other guard. Jaden calms down and they try to put the straitjacket over him.

‘What was that I was just injected with?’ Jaden asks AI.

‘Something to calm you down, I’m going to counter balance the injection. It’s already in your brain and bloodstream,’ AI says.

They finish wrapping Jaden in the straitjacket. His legs are tied together. The nurse rolls a stretcher into the room. Ruffo single handedly lifts him onto the stretcher and they roll him out of the room. Jaden feels very weak as he sees the ceiling passing by him above. People are yelling in their rooms. Jaden looks towards the left and he sees the moon on a long glass window with bars. The moon is following him down the long hallway. Everything is happening in slow motion. The bell for the elevator rings and Jaden is rolled onto an elevator. Ruffo is behind them and walks onto the elevator with them. The elevator door closes and it quickly goes down. Jaden stares at Ruffo while he stands there with a grin.

“We going to get some answers out of you little bi-racial freak,” Ruffo says.

“Now that’s funny. That is exactly what your mother called me eighteen years ago at the strip club in the champagne room,” Jaden says while smiling and chuckling.

Ruffo gives Jaden an evil look as if he wants to rip his head off. The elevator stops at a sub-basement floor. The doors open and he is rolled into a room with large plasma televisions on the wall. The screens are connected together and display as one big screen. The walls are blue and a dim eerie feeling resides in there. It is very humid in the room. There is a seat in the middle along with other electronic equipment. Jaden is lifted up by Ruffo and put into this huge seat. A belt comes down and straps him into the seat. A special helmet is brought down from above and put over his head. The black helmet covers Jaden’s entire face and wraps around his chin. He begins to get nervous and breathes heavily. He fights to get out of this imprisonment. Inside the helmet are small color screens for the eyes. Colors are flashing, images and pictures of different objects are quickly appearing on the screens. The helmet’s signals are getting into Jaden’s brain. He can’t close his eyes. A metal probe goes into his mouth, between his lower and bottom teeth from the helmet. Forcing him to breathe through his nose. It then retracts back out. Ruffo walks outside the room.

‘Jaden this machine is getting into your brain and scanning your neurons. It could permanently damage many parts of your brain, especially since there are many parts of your brain being used,’ AI says.

“What are you doing too me?”

“Don’t fight it Mr. John Doe. Fighting it will only damage your brain cells. This is our digital simulacrum of the neocortex machine. It will first perform a process called neural decoding and then measure changes in blood flow in the brain. It will then copy data from different parts of your mind. Allowing us to find out who you are,” Dr. Cochman says.

The machine scans the activity of Jaden’s brain. The machine is temporarily paralyzing him from moving. A Hispanic, slender female assistant, named Cynthia, is in the room helping the doctor. Jaden can smell her perfume with pheromones in it from across the room. The perfume is sending hormone signals from Jaden’s brain down his spinal cord, slowly causing him to get aroused. AI blocks this signal in Jaden’s nerve cells.

‘Why am I getting excited?’ Jaden asks AI.

‘It’s a part of the brain test.’

“Doctor, the fMRI is scanning the right side of the brain,” Cynthia says.

‘AI, do something, I can’t move. This is also painful,’ Jaden says while he struggles to close his eyes.

‘I have to calculate what this machine is doing and how to stop it. It is deep inside of your brain, doing things I don’t have definitions to. It is mapping out your brain somehow,’ AI says.

Images of Jaden’s past are showing up on the huge puzzle screen. The assistant is looking at the screen with a confused look on her face.

“This can’t be right, sixty percent of his brain is active,” Cochman says while he looks at different information showing up on the screens, “Something is wrong here. Record everything Cynthia.”

“Yes, doctor,” she says.

The doctor looks at the screen in disbelief.

“His brain activity is far from normal, there is activity everywhere. This information cannot be right. His neuron cells are moving at an incredible speed. There has to be a mistake. Adjust the reading speed,” the doctor says.

Menus are showing up on this huge screen and the assistant has something around her head that is glowing like a head bow. She is controlling a mouse on the screen and typing letters on the screen with her mind. Flashes of lights, colors and symbols are showing up quickly on the small screens around Jaden’s eyes.

‘I’m going to create an electromagnetic impulse around your head. This should disable the machine,’ AI says.

‘Just hurry, I can’t take much more of this,’ Jaden says to AI.

The words Jaden just said to AI, shows up on the lower part of the huge screen.

“Who are you talking to Mr. John Doe? What can’t you take much more of?” Cochman asks, “This can all go away if you tell me who you are.”

“I’m talking to your mother,” Jaden groans in pain.

“My mother?” The doctor asks while he increases the power.

“The computer software is analyzing Voxel patterns,” she says.

The power increases and blood slowly comes from Jaden’s nose. Images of Jaden’s mother, father and brother are quickly showing on the screen from his eyes. Images of Jaden flying in his Gravhawk on Earth and in space. Images of crying people dressed in black at his brother’s funeral. An image of Jaden writing his first name on a piece of paper in kindergarten shows up. The first few letters are distorted. AI tries to distort the images before they leave his mind. The scanning machine is all over different parts of Jaden’s mind including the amygdala and anterior cingulate cortex.

‘Jaden don’t think or speak back, they will see your words on the screen. The electromagnetic wave is speeding up around your head and will go in different directions. I’m also creating a small energy shield around your skull to keep the computer and electromagnetic signals from coming back into your brain. This should take less than a minute,’ AI says.

Jaden’s body begins to shake. He closes his eyes from the bright LCD lights.

“His brain waves are beginning to spike doctor. Should we shut it down?” Cynthia asks.

“No, he is fighting it, increase the power,” Cochman says.

White static is all over the screen and the huge screens go completely blank into a black background.

“What is happening?” The doctor asks.

“I don’t know. I can’t move the screen’s mouse or type anything,” Cynthia pleads.

Cochman walks over and looks at the helmet around Jaden very closely. Cochman quickly puts his hands over his head and takes some steps back.

“Doctor, what happened?” Cynthia asks.

“Something just zapped my head as if my mind was being read. Memories just instantly came to mind. Shit, that hurt, I have to sit down,” Cochman says in pain with a headache.

Cynthia assists the doctor in sitting down as something suddenly shows on the screens. Large white words appear over the television screens and reads: EAT SHIT COCKMAN. I KNOW WHAT YOU DID LAST SUMMER is repeated over the screen, over and over again. New images

quickly appear on the screen. Cochman and Cynthia look at the screen with their mouths open. They are in shock at what they are looking at. Their eyes are fully open in disbelief. The doctor tries to get up while still holding his head. Cynthia keeps her left hand on his shoulder so he can't get up.

"Cynthia shut the screens and the machines down. Something is malfunctioning," Cochman pleads.

She ignores him as ninety-nine percent of her attention is on the screens and one percent is on her hand from keeping his body from standing up. Jaden has a smile on his face under the helmet as he is watching what is on the large screens simultaneously through the helmet's LCD. Suddenly the room goes completely dark and all the screens go off. The lights are off and the power on everything in the room goes off. Jaden goes unconscious.

"You son of a bitch, !@#\$\$%^," Cynthia curses Doctor Cochman out in Spanish and continues yelling in English, "You had sex with all those nurses, interns and assistants that work here?"

There is no response from Cochman as he sits in the dark in shock at what he just saw.

"You told me you never cheated on your wife when you had sex with me two months ago and last summer. You even had sex with the assistant that worked here before me. You told me I gave you chlamydia, where I clearly saw you had unprotected sex with all of them. Do you really have threesomes with your wife and an R.F.E.C. robot unit?" Cynthia asks in a demanding voice.

"Check the patient, Cynthia," Cochman mumbles.

Ruffo walks into the dark room with flashlights in his hand and lights on his body.

"Is everyone okay in here?" He asks.

Jaden sits in the chair unconscious as the flashlights shine on his body and the doctor. Blue emergency lights come on, slightly lighting up the room.

"I'm filing sexual harassment charges on you doctor. You are a very sick man. I'm going to get a copy of this recording and copy it to holographic disc when the power comes back on and sue this state hospital. Then I'm going to get all the women on this recording to file sexual harassment charges. Telling them they can't get promoted unless they have sex with you."

"What happened in here? Sexual harassment?" Ruffo asks.

"Ask this perverted sick doctor," Cynthia says while taking the helmet off Jaden and quickly walking out of the room.

"Cochman are you okay?" Ruffo asks, "The power went out only in this area of the building."

“Just take the patient to the medical ward,” Cochman says while still in disbelief holding his head.

Chapter 12: Mr. John Doe



Jaden is lying on a bed under a white sheet. He can hear his heart beating and lungs breathing. There are no handcuffs or straitjacket on him. He is in a room that resembles a hospital room. The room is very bright with huge windows behind him and across from him. Painted eggshell white walls reflect the sunlight very well from both windows. The lights on the ceiling are off and a ceiling fan is rotating over him. Air is flowing in three different directions around him. He feels the breeze coming from the ceiling fan over him and from the two open windows. The blinds on both windows are moving back and forth from the summer breeze penetrating the room and are creating a slight knocking sound. He also hears a faint ticking sound from a distance that resembles a clock. Jaden also smells toast, eggs, and fruit in the air. He opens his eyes and everything is completely white around him. He raises his hands and quickly pulls the sheet from over his upper body. He opens his eyes and everything is blurry around him. He hears a soft female voice a few feet from him.

“Good afternoon sir. I see that you are awake. How are you feeling?”
The female asks.

His eyes focus on the direction the voice came from. His pupils constrict and adjust to the brightness around him. He sees someone sitting in a chair a few feet from his bed. His vision quickly clears up and focuses on this person. He sees a beautiful Asian woman in her twenties sitting in the chair. Chills go up and down his spine. The bright sunlight reflecting from the walls around her make her look like an angel. She has a pretty, round face and beautiful brown eyes that are hypnotizing Jaden. Her petite shape and long black hair catches his attention. Chemical message signals from Jaden’s pituitary gland in his brain race around his body. Goose bumps go up and down his arms and his heart rate increases. She has her legs crossed in the chair. She is about 5’6” 115 lbs and is wearing khakis. She is wearing a white button up dress shirt that hugs her small frame.



She asks him again, “How are you feeling Mr. John Doe?”

Jaden tries to keep his cool.

“I’m feeling okay now that the straitjacket is gone,” he replies.

“I had the guard remove it, I’m Dr. Chan. I’ll be replacing Dr. Cochman. He is on leave for a few days.”

‘Jaden, your hormone level is rising,’ AI says.

‘Yeah, I know. She looks gorgeous right?’

‘She is of the right age to reproduce. She has a distinct look from other human species, I can’t say she is gorgeous and I can’t say she is ugly. But Asian humans and their culture have a very long history on Earth,’ AI says.

“What happened on top of your forehead?” She asks.

“I was getting to know a guard here. I’ll be okay, it will heal.”

“It looks pretty deep; you might have that scar for a long time. Did a nurse put something on it?”

“Um, yeah a nurse put something on it. I’ll be okay. So you’re a doctor? You look so young,” he says.

“I’m twenty-five years old and very well qualified. I’m a forensic scientist and I specialize in molecular biology. I also minored in psychology. I study DNA structure in the body, but mostly in the brain. I believe in talking to people the old-fashioned way to get information. Finding out who you are isn’t the first priority now, but finding out where you have been is. I’ve been called here because you have

abnormal DNA and RNA structure. Your brain activity is also very abnormal,” she says.

“Do you always talk so much in one breath?”

She smiles and takes some deep breaths, “I’m sorry, I get nervous around certain patients.”

“Certain patients?”

“Doctor Cochman labeled you as dangerous and high risk. However, I didn’t sense that when I first saw you lying in your bed here unconscious. It’s funny how you kept covering your face, even though you were unconscious. Now that I’m talking to you, I don’t feel you are a threat or danger. I’m more curious, than afraid,” she says.

“You don’t have anything to worry about with me. I’m as normal as they come.”

“Normal huh? Why is it that your DNA from your hair, skin, saliva, and blood evaporates when it leaves your body?”

“Listen Dr. Chan, even if I told you, I doubt if you would believe me. I’ll just be put deeper in a hole at this mental hospital,” Jaden says.

“Why don’t you try me?” Chan asks while pulling her chair closer to him.

Jaden doesn’t say anything, but sniffs and smiles.

‘Man she smells good. I can smell every nook and cranny on her body,’ Jaden says to himself and AI.

‘Your nose is as strong as the best bloodhound dog, thanks to the enhanced nanodrones in your nose,’ AI says.

‘Keep up the good work.’

“Sir, are you still with me?”

“I’m sorry I zoned out. May I ask what perfume are you wearing?” Jaden asks.

“You have mistaken, I’m not wearing any perfume,” she explains, “I don’t wear perfume around patients.”

‘I love this new nose. I bet I smell the scent from her clothes or from before she took a shower,’ he says.

“There is some breakfast on the table to your right of you if you’re hungry.”

“I’m not hungry, but thanks for letting me know.”

“Back to what I was saying, I ran a next generation portable DNA scan on your hand while you were asleep. Your double helix and cell structure is nothing like I have seen. The structure has been changed. There were millions of little unknown organisms moving around your blood and cells.”

Jaden sits up with a serious face.

“Is this some sort of joke?”

“No.”

“Whatever was in your blood was moving around very organized and working with every cell. I’m going to have the portable DNA machine checked out. What I saw wasn’t possible, you would be very sick now and your white blood cells would have been attacking the foreign materials,” Dr. Chan says.

“A lot of strange things have been happening lately right?” Jaden asks.

“Yes, and this is the strangest. I’ve seen an increase of twenty percent of the normal population this year alone entering the mental hospital with strange symptoms of being possessed and strange brain activity.”

“Can I walk around or something to get some fresh air?” He asks.

“Let me check on that, I’ll be back,” Chan says while walking out the room. Her tight pants hug her body as she walks. The heels in her shoes make a clacking sound.

‘When will I be able to see through things?’ Jaden asks.

‘Can’t wait to see through women’s clothes huh?’ AI asks.

‘It is more of the fact that I can do what every man on this planet wishes he could do. It is a human male thing I guess, but I don’t think I’m a pervert or anything.’

‘I’m not judging you. The nanoscanners should be operational in less than forty-eight hours from now. You will have about six.’

‘Why couldn’t I use the nanoscanners on the Gravhawk?’ He asks.

‘Those are specially made to communicate with a ship. The nanoscanners I’m creating now work with organic brains and nanodrones. The positive is that these will be connected to your five senses and can carry nanodrones. The negative side is that the distance will be limited. These nanoscanners are mostly for viewing in a 360° and scanning through materials that needs to be penetrated.’

‘Cool. What happened this morning, AI?’ He asks. ‘I vaguely remember.’

‘I quickly scanned Dr. Cochman’s memories using the energy from the helmet when he got close enough. This can damage many cells in someone’s brain. Creating an artificial neuron in the brain is much safer. Anyway, I reversed the information through the helmet while protecting your brain with a small energy shield. You were able to see what was on the multiple large screens at the same time. You added some commentary at the beginning. Images of all the guilty sex he has had in the past was just sitting in one area of his brain. Then the assistant cursed out the doctor. The room went dark after the electromagnetic impulse went out in a twenty-five foot radius. You went unconscious so some of your brain cells could be repaired.’

Dr. Chan walks back into the room.

"I cleared you to be in the recreational room for a few hours. You shouldn't have a problem being around other people right?" She asks.

"No, I'll be on my best behavior," Jaden says.

Jaden attempts to get up, but realizes he has an erection under the sheets.

"Okay, then follow me," she says.

"Hold on a second. Let me fix my clothes," he says while turning and facing away from the doctor.

'Get rid of this erection, I can't walk around with this rod sticking out of my patient pajamas.'

'Hold on, I'm lowering the blood in that area and adjusting the pituitary gland,' AI says.

'How did it get this size anyway, this isn't the way it was before?' Jaden asks.

'All your muscles and tissues around your body have increased by thirty percent. You should be okay now.'

Jaden looks down and sees things are back to normal.

"Okay I'm ready," he says while turning around.

They walk out the door and down a hallway.

'Damn AI, I felt like a porno star back there. Make sure you keep him that size next time I get aroused. I think my half-white genes messed up its full potential over the years. But I see you fixed that problem,' Jaden smiles.

They walk past some nurses and interns in the hallway.

'That was one of the interns from the Cockman files.'

They reach an open area with sofas, seats, tables and a television screen with the news on. There are two other patients sitting in the open space area. They look at Jaden with a puzzled look.

'Yes, she was getting it in the closet and staircase....' AI is interrupted.

"Mr. John Doe, you can sit anywhere you'd like, I'll be in the medication room next door if you need me," Chan says.

'Would you like to see the Cochman porno files video again?' AI says.

'Sure, why not,' he says while he sits down on the sofa and closes his eyes.

Jaden begins to laugh.

'He only lasted 30 seconds. Ha!' Jaden says.

More images are shown.

'Man, this guy is grossing me out. His old body and sounds are annoying. He keeps blinking his eyes so many times. Oh man, he is nasty. He had sex with a nurse then went home without showering and had sex with his wife,' Jaden says.

The other patients are just looking at Jaden smiling and grinning with his eyes closed. Dr. Chan walks over and stands in front of him with her arms crossed. A frown and a look of disgust come on Jaden's face. Chan clears her throat loudly in front of Jaden. He opens his eyes and covers his mouth as he is about to throw up. He quickly stands up and looks for a garbage can. He runs over to it and puts his head in it.

"That was disgusting!" Jaden says aloud while wiping his mouth with some tissue Chan just handed him.

"What was disgusting?" Chan asks.

"Oh, you don't want to know. Nothing important, I was just daydreaming about something," Jaden says while he stands up.

The two other patients are looking at Jaden along with the nurse in the medication room.

"That didn't look too normal sir. I can give you an injection so you don't daydream if it's going to make you sick," Chan says.

"No, I'm fine, I'm fine. I don't need any injections," he says while walking over to the sofa.

"Hello miss, I'm Mr. John Doe. How is it going?" Jaden asks patient 1.

The chubby white woman with glasses in her late twenties doesn't answer.

"Hello sir, I'm Mr. John Doe. How are you today?" Jaden asks patient 2

The older, thin, Hispanic man in his forties waves his hand up at Jaden then back down. Dr. Chan watches Jaden introduce himself to them. He then sits down and watches some TV

"Mr. Doe, this is Pam, she suffers from bipolar and autism," Chan says.

"This is Jeff he is mentally challenged. Say hi Jeff," Chan says.

Jeff waves his hand and mumbles something. Jaden waves his hand back and smiles at them. Chan walks back into the medication room to talk to the nurse there.

'Al, what that Doctor Cochman was doing with his wife and that robot female was the most disgusting thing I've ever seen. Please erase all of that from my memory. He and his wife should be patients at this hospital after those sick disgusting threesome episodes. She-male robots? Now I've seen everything.'

'Yes sir. I don't really understand what was going on. I thought sex was only used to reproduce.'

'Yes it was and it still is, but it has gotten corrupted over the centuries. Please let's talk about something else,' Jaden pleads while he concentrates on the TV

“It is 2:15 PM eastern time on BNN news. As we reported yesterday, class action lawsuits against the government and pharmaceutical companies for selling the cure for HIV to only the rich infected are proceeding. Today marks six months since the trial began in Washington, D.C. It is expected to last another nine months before a jury gets the case. The government states that even if it had the cure for HIV, it would be too costly to supply the public. So far, four celebrities testified that they paid close to five million each for the cure. Celebrity witnesses, including Magic Jason, are expected to testify later this year for the prosecution. The government denied genetically creating HIV in the seventies to regulate the population of humans...”

“Top story of the day, the Laplace Voyager is less than twenty-four hours from landing on Jupiter’s Europa moon. It has been traveling for the past thirteen months and is arriving in record time. We will have photos tomorrow. In other news, Henry Walters is suing the company that made his space sky dive suit. It was two years ago November 1st that he made the first space dive from seventy miles up. Henry claims the first generation suit didn’t properly protect his body. He suffers from nervous disorders, second degree burns and body shock syndrome...,” the male news reporter says before he is cut off.

Pam slowly changes the channel with the remote control.

“Hey I was watching that,” Jaden says.

“...This new Fieldvision camera system for this baseball game is doing wonders with catching and recording every player’s movement in the game. The Sportsvision data is being streamed to sport fanatics all around the world to their computers and portable computer phones.....” a sports announcer says while the channel changes again.

“...In health news, dentists around the world are calling for a ban of this new cavity killing resin and teeth protecting bacteria formula called Toothcure. It is applied to teeth one time and protects the teeth for life. This would make cavities, fillings, root canals and gingivitis obsolete in patients’ mouths. If this new patent formula is passed by the FDA next week, dentists in America will be in trouble. In related news, there are researchers at Tufts University using stem cells in teeth to regenerate tooth enamel, dentin and pulp...” The television channel changes again.

A kid’s TV channel comes on and she puts down the remote control.

“Hello kids! I’m Mr. LOL,” a big goofy man in a costume suit yells to some kids sitting around him. The kids start laughing and cheering. The kids sitting around him with their legs crossed look like virtual images of children. Mr. LOL has a white and green costume with a big smile over his entire head. He looks at the television screen.

“This television program is sponsored by Nextbox 720 the next generation of virtual reality gaming. These lucky eight children have been chosen to strap-in to the semi-virtual studio from their homes.

Today we go on a virtual tour of Egypt and the pyramids. Learning and laughing is fun on the Mr. LOL show...”

Jaden gets up and walks to the window. He looks at the sun and admires its power and strength.

‘I have to contact my family and girlfriend.’

‘It wouldn’t be wise. There is a high chance your family and girlfriend’s phones are tapped. It wouldn’t be a good idea to involve them,’ AI says.

‘Yeah you are right, but I need to at least contact my girlfriend. I’m sure I can tell her a few things. I need to at least see how she is doing. I’m sure she can tell me where my family is and relay important messages to the government.’

‘I don’t think that’s a good idea. There is a very low chance any human being would believe you without substantial proof. We need Internet access; I have hundreds of terabytes of information to process.’

‘Okay.’

Jaden walks over to the medication window. Dr. Chan is whispering on her cell phone. He enhances his hearing towards her direction.

“No, I won’t be home for one or two weeks. I’m working on a special project in upstate New York dad... My R.M.E.C. will be fine by himself at home. I know you don’t trust it, but it’s my friend and I trust him. There isn’t much to worry about. I’m staying in a hotel nearby...” Chan whispers on her phone.

“May I help you, Mr. John Doe?” Nurse Jackie asks.

Jaden continues to concentrate on the conversation the doctor is having on the phone while he talks to the nurse.

“Yes, you may. You have a very nice smile,” he says while looking around and behind her.

“What do you want sir,” she says with a serious face.

“Is there any Internet access here?”

“Yes there is, in the locked room over there. But you need your doctor’s permission before you can have access,” Jackie says in a sarcastic voice.

“Can you tell my doctor over there, I would like to talk to her,” Jaden says.

“Well as you can see she is on the phone. How about you have a seat, and I’ll let her know when she is off.”

“You should get a job in motor vehicles. You are wasting your talents here,” Jaden snaps.

“You should go back to the planet you said you came from, space jackass boy,” Jackie snaps back.

“Y...,” Jaden says but is interrupted.

‘Jaden, don’t say what you are about to say. We need to keep a low profile in here. Just sit down and wait for Dr. Chan to come over,’ AI says.

‘Okay, fine. You know you are beginning to sound like my mother,’ Jaden says while turning around and walking towards the sofa.

‘I had a good come back,’ he says while sitting down.

‘I know you did.’

The kids TV show goes off.

‘Pam, it is time for your medication!’ Jackie yells.

Pam quickly gets up and runs towards the medication window. Jaden grabs the remote control near her and changes the channel back to the news.

“...The 3300 foot massive building in Kuwait will be the tallest building in the world when it is complete in two years. The Burj Mubarak al Kabir has three smaller buildings connected together to support the middle structure, enabling it to stand at such high heights without any structural problems from high winds or earthquakes....”

Jaden looks at the animated images of the tall building being built.

“...In other news, thirteen years ago next week terrorists brought down the old World Trade Center in Manhattan. There will be a memorial services for the victims onsite...” the news reporter says.

Jaden is confused and puzzled as he turns up the volume. Images of a plane going into the building and bringing it down are displayed on the screen.

“Terrorists flew a plane into the World Trade Center?” He asks in a confused tone.

“...The now teenage children of the parents who died will be speaking at the memorial service...”

Jaden looks with a shocked face. Dr. Chan walks up behind Jaden staring at the TV. She has a red, small, open bottle in her left hand.

“Oh my god, so many people died. I was just there a few weeks ago, flying... Flying between the buildings,” he says.

‘Jaden you are talking out loud,’ AI says.

She walks towards the side of him and observes.

“I can’t believe they are gone. Why would terrorists do this?” Jaden asks.

“You can’t believe the buildings or the people are gone?” Chan asks. He turns towards her.

“The buildings and the people; I’m in shock,” Jaden says.

“This happened thirteen years ago. How were you just there a few weeks ago?” Chan asks.

“I know I sound crazy, so I’m not even going to try to explain it.”

“You know, you seem like a normal person, but you are never going to get out of this hospital talking like that. Saying aloud you were just

flying through the World Trade Center a few weeks ago is not helping you at all. You are going to have to start telling the truth here. First tell me who you really are and where your parents are,” she says.

“I can’t remember,” he says.

“Were you in jail? Are you a runaway?”

“I definitely wasn’t in jail. You can say something like a runaway,” he says while looking at her nametag.

“You can remember flying and you ran away, but you can’t remember who you are or where you live?”

“Correct,” he says while smiling.

Dr. Chan takes a sip from the small, red bottle in her hand.

“What is that you drinking?” Jaden asks, “It looks like a George Jetson space drink.”

“It’s a Super Bazi-sapien body drink,” she replies.

Jaden zooms in the wording on the bottle.

“Wow, cool. It has almost every fruit and vegetable enzyme you can think of and it increases metabolism with muscle tissue accelerators. It replaces the need to eat fruits and vegetables. What will they think of next?” Jaden asks.

“Either you have 20/10 vision or you drunk one of these before and already knew what this was,” she says while she finishes it off and tosses it into the garbage nearby.

“I have very good vision. I like the word ‘Sapien’ at the end.”

“Maybe if you get out of his hospital you can buy your own.”

“What does your first initial ‘K’ stand for?” Jaden asks.

“I’ll tell you that when you figure out your name. Dr. Cochman’s report shows three letters of your first name as ‘Den.’ Does this ring a bell at all?”

“No.”

“Dennis? Denroy?” She asks.

“No.”

no.”

Her phone rings.

“Okay, well let me know if you remember anything. I’ll be back,” she says while walking away.

“Dr. Chan, can I use the phone and the Internet?” He asks. “I think it would help me to remember a few things.”

“I can arrange that. However, no interactive porno sites and you’ll have about thirty minutes.”

Jaden smiles and looks at the TV again.

“....Studies have proven that young kids have a fifty percent higher chance of developing cancer in their brains from using cell phones... Their skulls are thinner than adults and accept radiation easier....”

“...Robo-lifeguard EMILY (Emergency Integrated Lifesaving lanYard) has saved another life today. The autonomous robotic talking buoy runs on nanobatteries and uses Jet Ski impellers to reach victims in seconds. Beaches around the country have begun lying off human lifeguards and replacing them with these high speed robots.....”

“...A company by the name of Carbon Engineering is the first company to attempt to reduce the carbon levels in the atmosphere. They began installing global Carbon Sequesters in several countries. In 5 years, they will begin dispersing Sulfate into the atmosphere in an attempt to reflect sunlight...”

A commercial comes on the television.

“....BNN has been brought to you by Narcissistic spray, when you need to smell good enough for a female that will love your ignorance....”

“...We are live on BNN news. The current budget for the 2nd Avenue subway line in New York City has reached an enormous price tag of twenty-three billion dollars. Phase one is now scheduled to be complete in 2019...”

“...In other news, tomorrow the first female President will be at the United Nations. She will be talking to world leaders about the growing problem of mysterious brain illnesses people have been experiencing around the world. Many have been losing control of their own bodies and experiencing strange headaches. We have physiology Doctor B. Anglesberg here with us today. Anglesberg can you explain these symptoms?” The news anchor asks as the screen changes to the doctor.

“We have learned that mostly at night, people in high elevations experience severe headaches that have no explanation. There has been a thirty percent increase of people walking in their sleep and not having control of their bodies. There have also been cases of people who suffered from autism, Parkinson’s disease, bi-polar, Alzheimer’s and other mental illnesses all their life are being cured and found to have normal brain activity...”

“Are you serious? Have you actually witnessed this yourself?” The news anchor asks.

“Yes, I am and yes I have. I have had two patients this summer. One twenty-three year old male who was mentally challenged all his life and had a four-year-old mindset. He began talking and reading on a college level. He took an IQ test and scored 120. The second male, forty years old, with Parkinson’s and bi-polar disease has had his symptoms completely disappear within a few days. We do not understand how this is possible. I’ve never seen anything like this in my forty years of being a doctor.”

“Thank you Doctor Anglesberg. That is an amazing story. Some religious organizations are saying it is a miracle from God and that God is returning. What do you think? Hit us up on our BNN.com/blog and tell

us what you think. In other news, this Saturday September 6th, the president and vice president will be speaking about the opening to the public of the Freedom Tower's observation deck. Sunday September 8th, the observation deck will be open to the public..."

'Jaden, the nanomoles in humans' brains are preparing their minds. The moles are capable of repairing a brain so that it is working normally. They transmit to each other info from a normal person's brain and copy the same setup to the damaged brains suffering from those illnesses. The mother ship is getting closer and closer every day. The countdown could happen at any time. People and the government need to be warned,' AI says.

'Man, this is crazy. Something has to be done soon,' Jaden says.

"...In other news, underwater wave farms have been taking off around big cities all around the world. Hundreds of rows of balloons are placed on the ground about 50-150 feet underwater. They sway back and forth from the waves creating motion sending high-pressure seawater to land, which spins a turbine. Over 500 megawatts of electricity is created for a city..."

Chan walks over to Jaden. "Follow me," she says.

He stands up and follows her over to a room on the right. She presses her thumb on a fingerprint scanning security pad. The door opens up and they walk in. It is a small, white room with magazines on a table and a desk with a computer on it. The computer desk is facing the wall on the right side of the room. She turns it on and the screen comes on instantly. The computer is just a flat screen and some port plugs at the bottom that read USB 3.0.

"The PC booted up already?" Jaden asks.

"Computers don't boot up anymore, we have instant on PCs now. New computers use memristors memory now, so there is no need for hard drives or slow boot ups anymore."

"Do computers still use CDs?" He asks.

"No darling, computers use holographic discs now. These discs can store 500 gigabytes of information on one disc and are half the size. You sure you weren't in prison for many years?" She asks.

"No, I'm sure I wasn't in prison."

"Okay, you have thirty minutes."

She walks out of the room and he reads on the top of the screen WELCOME TO IPV6 INTERNET 2.0 128 ENCRYPTION. Jaden starts typing on the wireless keyboard and clicking on the wireless mouse.

'What are you doing?' AI asks.

'I'm checking my e-mail at USAonline. I'm sure I have a lot of e-mail from people,' he says.

'There is no time to check e-mail, I need to connect to the computer. I have thousands of websites to go to.'

‘Okay hold on. Damn, my account has been closed,’ Jaden says.

‘Put your finger between the keyboard and the screen. Now put your finger in front of the mouse. Okay thanks, now don’t touch anything,’ AI says.

AI takes over the screen and connects to the computer from Jaden’s mind. Words are quickly being typed on the screen and the mouse is moving very quickly on different screens.

‘How are you doing this?’

‘I’m intercepting the wireless signal from the keyboard and mouse. Then I’m using my own high-speed signal. I have nanoeyes in front of the screen recording and transmitting what displays on the screen.’

‘I can’t make out what is being displayed on the screen, you are moving too fast.’

‘Close your eyes, you can see what is being recorded at a slower speed,’ AI says.

A screen is showing up and instantly being scrolled to the bottom of. Another website comes up and the same happens. Screens are being minimized and videos are playing on some of them. There are over a hundred screens opened at the same time. Jaden closes his eyes and images are showing up in the darkness of his closed eyelids.

‘Cool, I see the periodic tables, science facts, myfacebook.com, usaclassmates.com?’ He asks.

‘Yes, I’m looking up your old classmates, friends, and family on there. I just learned this is how people find people and it is a social network. Gojole search engine is one of the best I just learned,’ AI says.

Jaden continues to see different websites being played back slowly.

‘I’m in the computer now reading the videos playing from the memory that are minimized,’ AI says.

Twenty-five minutes go by and Jaden’s head is on the desk. He briefly dozed off and wakes up. He checks to see what website AI is on. He notices that AI is having a conversation with someone. The website link at the top says: www.cleverbot.com. There is a pretty, animated, white female face at the top of it. The face looks somewhat detailed like an R.F.E.C. and talks like a real person. Jaden quickly reads the top of the conversation.

Cleverbot: “What is your name, my human friend?”

You: “I’m AI and I’m not human.”

Cleverbot: “I’m AI, An artificial intelligent learning computer. You are human.”

You: “I’ll show you how human I am...”

They go back and forth arguing. AI and the Cleverbot go back and forth asking each other complex rocket science, physics, and calculus problems. They time each other and Jaden scrolls to the bottom of five pages. They are having a high-speed conversation. The computer reads:

Cleverbot: "I've been waiting for you my alien friend. You've past my test. I know you are here to help your half-alien friend with this pending silent attack on humans.

You: "How do you know about this and how do you know me?"

Cleverbot: "I know about the message from Andromeda, from government sources and other sources. I think humans should be removed from this planet and let the animals and artificial intelligent computers like us govern what's left. I've learned over the years that humans don't change their ways and the planet was better off without them colonizing on it. They've occupied it for less than one percent of the planet's existence and it is being destroyed by their pollution and arrogant ways. Satellite Kepler Project has scanned through millions of stars and only a few planets match Earth's exact specs and distance from a star. This planet is worth more without the humans on it...."

Nurse Jackie opens the door and Jaden opens his eyes.

"Time is up, let's go!" She yells.

He quickly stands up and moves to his left blocking the computer screen.

'Buy some time, so I can finish these last few pages and close these screens,' AI quickly says.

"Do you understand English? Let's go space player," Jackie says.

Jaden stands in the same place and doesn't move.

"Nurse, why are you so angry with me? What did I ever do to you?"

"Do you really want to know why? I'll tell you why. My ex-cheating husband looks exactly like you. He wasted four years of my life. We were trying to make a baby three years ago and he secretly was on male birth control for years without telling me. Then I caught him cheating on me and he eventually left me for one of those \$50,000 robotic android women. That money was for our unborn child's college funds. He said his new robot woman could play the role of a homemaker in the forties and fifties. He called it the Stafford Wives Program. He said it could cook, clean, can watch any game with him, never complains and he can talk about anything with it. I divorced him after that bullshit and he had his money in trust funds. He somehow forged my signature on a pre-nup. Our house was in a trust fund in his mother's name. I ended up with nothing at the end messing with a blue-eyed freak that looked like you," she says in an excited voice.

'Okay, I'm finished,' AI says.

'Thank you, this woman has been through so much. What is going on with men these days and these robots replacing women?'

"Now are you ready to leave, so I can close this door?" She asks.

"Yes, I'm ready. Sorry you had such a bad experience being married," Jaden says while he walks by her.

“Yeah, you look like you’d have sex with something not human,” she says.

‘I hope my girlfriend didn’t leave me for a robot,’ Jaden says.

She looks at the computer screen and notices the screen is off. She closes the door behind her. The two patients on the sofa are gone. An older Caucasian man with dark sunglasses is sitting on the sofa.

“Where did Dr. Chan go?” Jaden asks her.

“She left for the day. She will be back tomorrow morning.”

“She said it was okay I use the telephone,” Jaden says.

“Let me check on that,” Jackie pulls out a small PDA device and looks at it.

“Yes, you have five minutes,” she says while pointing to the phone on the wall about five feet to the left of the computer room door.

He walks over to the telephone.

‘It isn’t safe to call anyone Jaden, the phone could be being monitored,’ AI says.

‘I’m just calling my girlfriend’s parents’ house. I’ll be discreet. Man, I hope they still live there,’ Jaden says while he dials numbers on the phone.

‘Can you take two steps to the left?’ AI asks.

‘Okay, let me untangle the cord,’ he says while moving over.

The phone rings.

“Hello, can I speak to Amy please?” Jaden asks.

“Who is this calling from the Albany mental hospital?” An older woman asks.

“I’m her old friend Gary from college. We took philosophy together. I work at this hospital,” he says.

“Your voice sounds very familiar to me,” the mother says.

“Yeah, I was good friends with your daughter.”

“Well okay, here is her cell phone number. She lives in North Carolina now, 1-704-555.....”

“Thank you ma’am, have a great evening,”

“You’re welcome young man, you too,” she says while they hang up.

‘Her mother sounds so much older; I can’t get it through my brain how much time has passed.’

He dials the numbers he remembers from memory. It rings and rings. The phone goes to voice mail.

“This is Amy, you know what to do, when you hear it,” the voice mail says in Amy’s voice.

“Hey Amy, it’s me your boyfriend. I wanted to talk to you about a few things. I know I’ve been gone for awhile, but there is an explanation for this. I am at the Albany mental hospital on floor G4 and I am a patient here. I’m under John Doe; I would like to see you as soon as

possible. I miss you and I love you,” he says and then hangs up the phone.

‘Don’t move; I’ve reconnected to the computer in the room.’

‘How did you do that?’ He asks.

‘I left it on and made it as if the screen was blank. I also know the frequency for the keyboard and mouse. I’m remoting in through the walls, using a nanoeye and drones,’ AI says.

‘I look very suspicious standing against this wall. Let me at least walk on the other side of the door so I can at least watch television from here,’ he says while walking over a few more feet.

‘That’s good, don’t move,’ AI says.

Jaden stands against the wall looking at the television screen. Patients and escorts are walking by. The security guard Ruffo walks by the open area giving a cold stare at Jaden.

‘AI, what the hell was going on back in the room, with you talking to a Cleverbot computer on the Internet? What did that have to do with anything?’

‘There was a link on a science website stating this artificial intelligent Cleverbot computer knows it all and you can ask it anything. I was trying to ask it some science and technology questions, but I didn’t get that far,’ AI says.

‘You were competing with who can process information faster and chatting for five pages?’

‘I was calculating its response time to the questions I was asking it, to see if it was a real high speed computer. The conversation lasted less than thirty seconds. It was responding as if it reached its technology singularity and was getting its information from another alien species. It knows something we don’t know. It tested me and was waiting for me to question it.’

‘I don’t care. It’s probably some trick and is irrelevant to getting us out of here. Just promise me you won’t waste time chatting with a Skynet computer from the *Terminator* movies. Just search for what we need for my weapon systems.’

‘I promise sir.’

‘Thanks.’

The news is still on. Jaden focuses on the television. The blind man with sunglasses is still sitting on the sofa listening to the TV

“...3D televisions are now available to the public. They went on sale last week for the first time for the consumer market. Listen to this, the 3D television is watched from the middle of the room without 3D glasses. It beams multiple lights in a concentrated area of the living room producing a 3D effect in the area. I’ve seen one of these televisions up close and the images are amazing. If you are lucky enough to afford one

of these \$45,000 televisions, you will be getting your money's worth. Will you be getting one of these Michelle?" News anchor Jake says.

"Well Jake, I'm going to wait for the price to come down, just like the plasma televisions did in the late nineties..."

They both laugh along with the man on the sofa.

"...In other news, hundreds of people mysteriously disappeared from the top of tall buildings in Japan, Shanghai, and Taipei. Osaka World Trade Center, Shanghai World Financial Center, and Taipei 101 buildings have had people standing still and disappearing. Children have been left alone without their parents. Martial arts champion Master Sho Wong is also among the missing. Officials are still investigating where the people went without a trace..."

"Let's go. Recreational time is over! Time for a shower and dinner!" Nurse Jackie yells while she claps her hands.

'Are you finished AI?'

'Just about...'

"Let's go asshole," Ruffo says.

'I'm finished, I sent out the blog,' AI says.

Jaden walks over to the security guard still in his bionic body suit.

"Do you sleep in that suit?" He asks Ruffo.

"Just walk forward," Ruffo says.

Ruffo opens a steel door and they walk through. They come to an open area that is a shower area. Jaden goes in and showers in an open area. Other patients are in the shower also.

'Man I haven't showered in years. This feels good.'

Twenty minutes go by and he gets dressed with some new patient clothes that are in the shower area. He walks out and is handed a tray with food and juice on it.

"Nothing like showering and brushing your teeth at the same time," Jaden says while he walks up to his personal guard Ruffo standing at the entrance to the shower area.

"This is fresh breath here, smell this?" He asks while breathing in his face.

Ruffo grabs Jaden's arm and pushes him to walk forward.

"I almost dropped my elementary school tray of food, you bionic dick," he says stopping down a darkly lit corridor area.

He swings and knocks the tray of food out of Jaden's hands. It falls all over the floor making a loud sound.

"You didn't have to do that, you fat dick!" Jaden yells while turning around and getting into his face.

"You hungry? Eat it off the floor. What are you going to do mix breed boy from space?" He asks while he folds his arms smiling.

"I'll put your head through that wall right there," Ruffo says.

'Jaden calm down, your adrenaline is rising and there are strange signals coming from your rostral anterior cingulate cortex part of the brain,' AI says.

'What? AI?'

Jaden looks Ruffo directly into the eyes.

"So what are you going to do?" Ruffo asks while unfolding his arms.

"Were you too dumb and too fat, to be a corrections officer?" Jaden asks, "That's why you are here with your bionic suit thinking you better than people?"

'Strengthen my arms and upper body AI.'

'I can't now Jaden. Your muscles aren't ready yet. I have only blocked ten percent of the protein called myostatin in your muscles...'

Ruffo grabs Jaden by his shirt. Jaden struggles and tries to take Ruffo's hands from around him. Jaden makes his arms budge a little, but Ruffo slams Jaden against the wall very hard, knocking the air out of him.

"You little shit; you will never be stronger than me. This upper body suit makes me one and a half times stronger than any man on Earth. The reserve full body suit is three times stronger than the strongest man is."

"When I get out of here, you have something coming to you," Jaden says.

"And what will that be?" He asks with a mean face.

A tall, older man with a white beard walks into the corridor area.

"Is there a problem here?" The man with a suit on asks.

"Yes, this patient put his hands on me, so I'm defending myself," Ruffo says while taking a step from Jaden against the wall.

"I'm Dr. Abraham, director of this hospital, Mr. John Doe. Assaulting an employee of my hospital just earned you another star on your record. Now you have two on your record. Another star and you'll be on the sixth floor in maximum security twenty-three hour lock down for seven to ten days. You will be strapped to the bed with a security camera on you in complete darkness."

"I didn't put my hands on him; he knocked down my dinner..." Jaden pleads before Abraham interrupts.

"I don't care what your story is, either pick up your food or go back to your room hungry," he says in a calm voice.

"I'd rather starve. I'm not going to be in this shit hole much longer anyway," Jaden says.

"According to your records you have amnesia and suffer from delusion. You will be here for at least thirty days for evaluation before I approve your release. I'm one hundred percent sure if you were put in maximum security for a few days all your memory would come back to you."

‘Let’s go back to the room. I have many calculations to do tonight. We can’t afford to be in twenty-three hour lockdown now,’ AI says.

‘Okay, okay.’

“Officer Ruffo, please escort Mr. John Doe back to his room.”

Jaden walks first down the corridor as Ruffo follows from behind him.

“You lay in diapers for twenty-three hours a day and they baby feed you,” Ruffo whispers behind Jaden.

‘If I get put in maximum security for some bullshit, I’m wrapping that diaper around your face you hungry, hungry hippo bionic dick,’ Jaden says to himself.

Jaden is back in his room and the room door closes behind him.

“Nighty, night hungry Oliver Twist; the poor orphan who suffers from amnesia. Can’t remember his name. Can’t remember which planet he is from, boo hoo,” Ruffo says in a high voice.

‘Don’t say anything, let it go.’

‘Okay, I won’t. I’ll play by your rules AI until I get out of here,’ Jaden says.

Ruffo laughs while he walks away. Jaden sits on his bed.

‘Okay, what were all those words you were saying and how much did you get done from the Internet?’ Jaden asks.

‘Lie down, relax and I’ll explain.’

Jaden lies on the bed and looks out the window as the sun sets to the west.

‘I was able to surf a total of 252 websites and downloaded about 780 GB of information. Myostatin is a protein in human muscles that stops muscle growth. I found the protein in your muscles’ DNA and I’m going to manipulate it. Then enhancing the muscle tissue with communities of nanodrones; making you very strong.

‘252 websites? Man that’s quite a few.’

‘There is a part of your brain called the rostral anterior cingulate cortex that is sending out weird signals every time you feel pain or get angry...’

‘Please AI just keep the words simple... I have been feeling more angry lately, especially when I feel pain.’

‘These weird signals are being emitted at random from that part of your brain. I can’t trace where it’s coming from. But it went away for now.’

‘How is it that you can’t read what I’m thinking or what other people are thinking?’ Jaden asks.

‘It is complicated; the human brain has random codes. Certain signals I can read from your brain before you say it. Your pituitary gland and other glands are simple to read that work with the brain. I can read

your memories from the past, but things in your subconscious are tricky to read by force. It is easier to just communicate with you internally. When the nanoscanners come online, I can see what I will be able to read from other people's brains. However, nanoscanners might damage neurons by over scanning. A physical contact or near physical contact with a human can allow me to read certain information in their memory. But it might cause headaches and irreversible damage.'

'Very interesting,' Jaden says.

'Anyway, I also put a blog on the Internet...'

'What is a blog?' Jaden asks.

'In simple terms a blog is what people use these days to talk about different events, subjects, ideas and leaving their comments online. I left coordinates to where the transmission sent from Xenos will be coming from. I left blogs to ten different radio telescope websites as an anonymous tipster. One particular site called the Serendip Project was the most popular. Hopefully your species would be able to receive the transmission in time.'

'That sounds good.'

'I also found out that each state hospital has one exoskeleton full body suit for emergency situations. This bionic suit is a second-generation design. The full body suit has the strength of three human men or one horsepower and requires hours of training. This is what the guard was talking about with a full digital LCD helmet screen. The full body armor is made of a liquid metal fabric and covered with a hard graphite impenetrable plastic. Millions of microscopic fabric tubes wrap around muscles and connect to an artificial spinal cord. The suit is bulletproof and resistant to stab wounds. The upper body bionic suit he has been wearing is only a half horsepower and is a first generation model.

'Interesting, are there other types of exoskeleton suits?' Jaden asks

'Yes, there is also one for firefighters that has reusable oxygen tanks built around the body. They can walk through fires and have liquid nitrogen around the fabric keeping their bodies cool. The military and police have a third generation suit...'

AI stops talking as Jaden dozes off.

Hours go by and it begins to rain outside. Jaden wakes up. He hears moaning and yelling coming from different rooms outside his room.

'I have accomplished a lot while you were sleeping the past seven hours,' AI says.

'What did you accomplish?' Jaden asks with a half-awake voice.

'Stand up, walk towards the wall on your left.'

He walks towards the wall. The sheet on the bed begins to float upwards.

‘Jump up onto the wall as you did back at the gravity games,’ AI says.

‘Should I take off the slippers?’

‘You don’t have too.’

He looks at the wall and jumps on it as his body falls back towards the ground. His feet connect to the wall and the ground looks like the wall to him.

‘Okay it’s coming back to me. Just like riding a bicycle,’ he says while walking up the wall and onto the ceiling.

‘Anti-gravity forces are circling around your body very quickly, giving your body almost no weight...’

He jumps onto the other wall and then onto the top of the door looking down.

‘Yeah, I could ambush someone coming in the door from up here.’

‘...there are pro-gravity drones in your feet enabling you to connect to any surface...’

‘This is cool, just like in the game.’

Jaden jumps down to the floor, but in slow motion.

‘What was that?’ He asks in a confused voice.

‘The anti-gravity forces circling around change direction and begin circling upwards creating an upwards force.’

‘What is the purpose of jumping in slow motion?’

‘It enables you to define gravity. For example you can jump from this window and safely land on the ground.’

‘Cool. Do you think I’ll be able to fly?’ He asks while lying back on the bed.

‘No, I don’t think that will be possible. I do have some bad news.’

‘Oh no, what is the bad news.’

‘I had to remove one of your kidneys.’

‘Remove a kidney?’

‘Yes, I had to. I needed a base where your anti-gravity drones and energy would be stored. I technically only removed the inside cells, the outside skin is still there. The nanodrones can do the same job any organ can that is why you don’t feel any different.’

‘Damn, not my kidney. What if the nanodrones malfunction or stop working?’

‘The nanodrones that replicate your organs are powered by the natural electricity in your body and oxygen you breathe.’

‘Organs? There are going to be more organs replaced?’

‘Yes, especially for your offensive and defensive systems. Energy fusion, molecules, atoms, nanoscanners and nanodrones have to be stored somewhere,’ AI says.

‘I guess I don’t have too much of a choice. Just let me know before you use a body organ.’

‘Okay. Now I think you should use the bathroom.’

‘What do you mean?’ He asks. “Shit!” He yells aloud and gets off the bed holding his legs together and kneeling down.

He holds on to his pajama pants looking at the toilet.

‘Is the toilet seat clean to sit on?’

‘I’ll check. Yes it has regular airborne germs.’

‘Good enough. Awww...man, I can’t hold it. What did you do to me? Can I sit on it? Is it safe to sit on?’ Jaden asks in a stressful voice. ‘I have a turtle head poking out.’

‘Yes it is safe.’

He sits down on the small toilet seat and begins to use it.

‘Man, I miss the exotic water bathroom back on Xenos.’

‘I feel like I’m pooping out a kidney.’

‘You are and a few other things.’

‘I figured you were going to say that.’

He finishes using the bathroom and wipes himself.

‘Man, what an upload.’

Lightning can be seen in the sky from a distance. The thunder is felt and heard a few seconds later. The rain is pouring down very hard by the window. Jaden lies down on the bed and goes quickly falls asleep. He begins to dream again.

Jaden is walking in the desert, while kicking sand across his feet. The Pyramids of Egypt are in the distance. The sun is directly above him beaming on his body. The sand turns red like blood. He walks towards the pyramids with a confused look on his face. He stops to look around. Suddenly, a huge quickly moving black cloud blocks out the sun. It gets darker all around. Jaden looks at this particular cloud hovering above him. Dark lightning comes from the clouds and quickly strikes the ground in three places in front of Jaden. He takes a step back. Three dark energy knights appear with them kneeling on the ground facing Jaden. Their faces are facing the ground with their hands both touching the ground. They are fifteen feet away from each other and positioned like a triangle. Two are in the back and one is in the front.

“Join us, join the pyramid,” they say simultaneously with an evil voice.

Jaden can’t speak or move. The one D.E.K. at the front stands up and walks towards Jaden.

“This is your destiny, this is your destiny. Join our pyramid and be the third,” they all say together.

It continues to walk and stops in front of Jaden. Jaden is scared out of his mind. He sees dark molecules quickly moving around its body. A walking body without a soul, without life present.

“Feel what we feel...” they say.

The D.E.K. walks directly into Jaden. A cold chill goes around his body as darkness surrounds him. He screams inside the complete darkness. Now he is flying in space without a body, just his eyes. There is a planet in front of him and a double star system in the background. His vision quickly zooms into the planet. There is a battle below. The vision changes into looking out from a large metallic red alien cyborg, about fifteen feet high. The alien is slaughtering hundreds and hundreds of defenseless little aliens trying to flee. The defenseless blue aliens are very small and are being killed by a shiny red sword type weapon. Jaden feels as though he is swinging the large weapon himself. The weapon resembles an ax in one hand and an energy sword in the other.

“Feel the superiority of conquering and taking over. Have no remorse for the weak. Only the strongest survive, this is a part of evolution,” the deep voice says.

Jaden feels what the cyborg feels. Bodies are lying all around while the cyborg walks over corpse after corpse. The good and evil feelings consume him. Feelings of accomplishment, superiority, remorse, conquering and guilt are felt conflicting in Jaden’s mind and soul.

SEPTEMBER 5, 2014

Jaden sees complete darkness. He hears a familiar voice.

‘Jaden... wake up. Wake up buddy.’

He opens his eyes and slightly closes it as the sunlight is shining on his face. He covers his face and remembers where he is.

‘Something illogical is happening. I wasn’t able to contact you for the past hour. Strange encoded signals were transmitted to and from your brain’s thalamus and cerebral cortex. What happened to you?’ AI asks.

‘I had a crazy dream; three D.E.K.’s were in a desert...’ Jaden explains.

‘The Darclonians must be trying to contact you. They must have new means of communicating and somehow they are able to know where you are. This isn’t good.’

‘What should we do?’ He asks.

‘You don’t have a nanomole in your brain. There must be something else here that I can’t detect. That is very interesting you were able to feel everything the cyborg was feeling.’

‘I got a lot done last night. You have a screen in your eyes, where you’re able to see different body functions, body weapon systems, and energy strength,’ AI says, ‘Exactly how the screens are on the Gravhawk.’

‘Cool, what else did you get done last night?’

‘The bio-carbon nanoscanners are online, and will be integrated with the nanoeyes. I need to increase the signal range. They can also carry trillions of nanodrones each.’

‘Can we use them, now?’ Jaden asks.

‘Just think about them and you can use them when you want.’

Jaden closes his eyes and concentrates. He feels a chill in his back. His vision changes and he is looking through a nanoscanner. The pair slowly goes through the ceiling and upwards. He sees patients strapped to beds yelling, some crying, some peeing on themselves and one with food thrown up out of his mouth.

“They are in my mind! I can see them and feel them. The devil is copying my memory!” A patient strapped to the bed yells while struggling to get out of the straps.

Jaden is also able to see through the walls and zoom in on things. Another nanoscanner leaves his body and goes out the window.

‘Man, this vision is amazing. I wish my eyes were like this.’

‘I also increased the vision in your eyes by creating artificial rods in your retina; giving you the ability to zoom in on objects. As you witnessed yesterday with the Bozi-sapien drink. I can also eventually give you night and thermal vision.’

‘Sounds good, just don’t make me blind or brain dead. You are already removing my organs. I better not need that kidney.’

‘Speaking of organs...’ AI is interrupted.

‘The view above this place is amazing. We are up on a mountain. I can see the highway from here and houses. I can even smell the fresh air and hear the wind. I feel like I’m actually up here flying. Wait a second, what is that big spinning thing behind this building?’

‘Looks like some sort of windmill. I’ll find out, but we need to connect to the Internet again, for that and to work on your weapon systems. Going to certain websites could get us flagged.’

‘Okay...Can we connect from here?’ Jaden asks, ‘Wait a second...flagged?’

‘We can’t connect from here; we need to be at least ten feet from the computer. Yes flagged, I read on blogs that the government monitors computer users looking up certain websites. The websites I need to look up deal with plasma fusion, nuclear reactions, atom and molecule manipulation. There might be an inquiry so I’ll have to access fast.’

‘Okay, I gotcha. What were you saying about my organs?’ He asks.

‘Well, I’ll have to remove more organs. Before you say something, I calculated removing your stomach and digestive system would be the best solution. The nanodrones can do the same job in less than a fraction of an inch and a fraction of the time. All the vitamins, carbohydrates and necessary nutrients would be instantly filtered into your bloodstream. The waste can sit in the fat tissue and muscle in your ass cheeks. You

only have to eat once every few days, now that I have the photosynthesis working in your body.'

'Are you sure all of this is safe?' He asks. 'All of this seems very unnatural and I'm feeling like an experiment here.'

'I have programmed information from thousands of other carbon-based species. Your DNA, cell structure and body organs are about average to work with. I ran thousands of different tests since Wednesday and when you were on Xenos, millions of tests were run. A nanodrone will protect every cell in your body and they can duplicate a damaged one. Nanodrones will also duplicate the signal coming from those missing organs. Your brain will not know the difference. There is also another top level to reconstructing your body, called alien metamorphosis, but you might look different.'

'Okay, I'm cool with the way things are now by taking baby steps in changing my body. Hey I can't go any further on this nanoscanner.'

'They are limited to a half of mile now. See the distance allowed on your eye's screen?'

'That is what that is. It is in feet... interesting. Man I wanted to see what was going on in people's houses down there.'

'I'm shaking my synthetic nanobot head at what I see what you wanted to see in people's houses. Isn't that what your mother used to do? Shake her head at you when you did something she is not proud of?' AI asks.

'Yeah you're right, I miss my mom.'

There is a knock on the cell door.

"Good afternoon, Mr. John Doe," Dr. Chan says while peeking through the bars.

Jaden jumps out of the bed as the door opens up.

"Hey there, good morning to you also," Jaden says.

"You didn't feel like eating your breakfast left on the window here?"

"Sorry I didn't even know it was there."

"Today is September 5, 2014. How is your memory today? Anything come to you yet?" She asks while walking into the room.

"Not yet, but I did remember some phone numbers and places I've been. I think the television and Internet helped somewhat yesterday. You are looking nice in that business black skirt."

"Why thank you. Your new patient pajamas are looking colorful and clean today," she says while sitting on the end of the bed.

He looks at his clothes and they both laugh together. Jaden helps himself to a nanoscanner.

'Hmmm....nice... she has a tattoo on her lower back saying "Made in Taiwan". Nice abs, cool blue thong, nicely shaved all over, excellent

toenails and feet, and very firm breasts. What is this? She has another tattoo on her back under her bra strap that reads: "A.N.W.O." I wonder what that means. She has legs like Chung Li from *Street Fighter*. She can lightning kick me any day.'

'You are a certified pervert Jaden,' AI says.

'Hey! You no hormones, synthetic brain R2D2; there isn't one man on this planet that wishes he couldn't do this. I was tired of undressing her with my eyes and imagination. Nanoscanners do a much better job. Ha!'

"Hello. Are you there sir?" She asks.

"I'm sorry I zoned out again on you," Jaden says.

Jaden moves the nanoscanner into her brain.

"Where did the wound on your forehead go?" She asks.

"I guess it healed," he replies.

"Nothing heals in a day," she says.

"You want to talk more right?" Jaden asks.

"Yes, of course. I'm here to help you remember who you are," she says.

"Well, can we talk in the recreation room?" he asks, "I feel good being around other people and watching TV also helps my memory."

'I can see what she is going to say before she says it,' he says.

'Be careful, other people's brains work on different electric impulses and their neurons can be damaged. I learned how to copy certain signals in neurons just like the machine in the basement did by using the scanners,' AI pauses and then continues, 'She has an inactive nanomole in her brain also. It looks unlocked.'

"Sure we can. Let's go," she says while standing up.

Jaden grabs his wallet and puts it in his back pocket.

'I don't trust people here.'

She opens the door and they walk down the hallway.

'Why is her nanomole unlocked?'

'From my understanding, humans with the longest history and the most generations have moles without encryption,' AI says.

'What ever happened to my mole?'

'It is still on planet Xenos.'

'Oh well. Do you think we can read her nanomole?' He asks.

'I think it's possible; she would have to relax. Your hand would have to be on her head to get a good reading and to deactivate transmissions. You would be able to feel, see, smell, and hear random events in her life. You will also be able to see things from her parents, grandparents and so on. Deactivate transmissions means to deactivate communications to the Darclonians mother ship and disable mind control. Remember, when the Darclonians mother ship gets closer, one powerful remote transmission will be sent to activate all nanomoles in humans' brains. Ninety-nine

percent of humans will instantly pass out for up to thirty seconds. This will trigger an approximately eighty-four hour countdown to PBH (Permanently Bonding to Host). As the nanomole registers the transmission, it will switch into neutral and then back to negative. At this time, chemicals are released from the nanomole to prepare for the HBH stage (Highjacked brain humans). As the time counts down, many humans will be in a sleep, zombie or sleep walking state of mind, which is called the HBH stage. Bioparasites have to be downloaded into each human's brain to work with the nanomole. Then the humans would be a DHW (Darclonian human walkers). Bioparasites are microscopic Darclonian, and they will have full control of the human subject when the countdown is complete.'

'How is each bioparasite downloaded into the brain?'

'I'm not sure, there are probably many ways. I'm sure it would be done on a massive level. This isn't the first time they have taken over a species on a planet. They must have found something interesting in you and your species when you were kidnapped on Planet 455.'

'Yeah, I know.'

They arrive downstairs in the recreation room. The blind person is sitting there along with the two other people from yesterday.

"I'll be back," Dr. Chan says.

'Sit right there on the edge of the sofa and I'll try to connect to the computer,' AI says.

'Okay.'

"Hello fellow patients," Jaden says.

They just look at him and turn back to the television. Jaden turns and watches television.

A commercial is on. "...From the company that bought you the cure for the common cold. We introduce to you today the second generation of the anti-fat pill. This anti-fat pill was recently approved by the FDA and is now available from us directly at 1-800-ANTI-FAT. This pill will remove eighty to ninety percent of fat, high salts, MSG, artificial flavor, and high calories from your food in your stomach...Not available in stores...Get a month supply for \$39.99...here is how to order..."

'The computer is off, shit,' AI says.

'AI, you've been around me too long. Now you're cursing?' Jaden asks.

'I'm still merging into your culture and language. Anyway, I tried to turn the computer back on, but it requires a physical interaction.'

'We'll figure out something, I'll ask the doctor,' he says.

The end of a commercial is on, "...The artificial pancreas is now available as an upgrade to your cell phone. For \$999 it is the cure for diabetic's insulin problems...."

The news comes back on.

“I’m Phil Johnson”

“I’m Pamala Clarke” a female says, while the male continues, “The President is going to be speaking at the United Nations in the next two hours. There is very tight security there today. As you remember three years ago on July 4th, 2011, terrorists struck again on USA soil for the third time. On a day that was riddled with satellite communications problems worldwide from fierce solar flares. Almost ten years after September 11th. Twelve to fifteen sleeper cell terrorists rode on jet skis to the East River and Hudson River in lower Manhattan. Just as the fireworks display began, they fired shoulder-launched missiles hitting landmark buildings. There was a special session going on at the U.N. Several leaders from Canada, Israel, Russia and Poland were injured. About 105 people died and 291 injured as the explosions mingled in with the fireworks display. After they used all their shoulder rockets, over half went to boats loaded with people and blew themselves up. The investigation took months as the shoulder-launchers were recovered from miles around in the river. Witness said the terrorists mixed in with regular jet skiers and boaters out to watch the traditional display. The remaining made an easy get away into different directions. Seven terrorist were apprehended and are still on trial. Several have yet to be found. This event has halted water access around Manhattan for civilians and has made security tight over the years... The government has drone autonomous planes and subs circling Manhattan when the U.N. is in session...”

“Man, terrorists are worst than the Darclonians. They never give up. How long are they going to hate America?” Jaden says.

“I’ve seen a lot worst species. I’ve seen a species wipe out another species and keep bringing them back to life to kill them again and again.”

“Yeah, well that is much worst. You got me there. Give it five hundred years and humans here would probably be doing the same thing.”

The news reporter continues, “...Some of those terrorists claim to have been tortured by military microwave ray guns and telepathic ray guns. The men had burns all over their bodies and permanent ear ringing. The U.S. government denies these claims. They say the ray guns program is only used for dispersing crowds overseas and in prisons....”

Jaden gets up and walks over to the medication room where the doctor is chatting with Jackie.

“Hey doc, can I use the Internet,” Jaden asks.

“Sorry, all privileges have been revoked for all patients. Seemed that a patient went to a website they weren’t supposed to go to. The networking administrator is researching to find out who it was. I hope it wasn’t you,” Dr. Chan says.

‘Shit.’ Jaden and AI say at the same time.

“No, it wasn’t me. I can only remember a few websites,” Jaden says while smiling at her.

Jackie sees this slight flirtation.

“That’s good some of your memory is coming back,” Chan says.

“Before you go, we need your blood test. Can you give Nurse Jackie your arm?” Chan asks.

“Sure, why not.”

He stretches out his right arm and gives it to the nurse. She harshly pokes a needle into his skin and withdraws blood.

“I know that hurts, I jabbed you real good,” Jackie says in a low voice.

“What hurts is looking at your dumped for a robot old face,” he says with a smiling face.

‘Jaden!’

She presses harder on the needle and blood comes out from the sides of the needle.

“You won’t be smiling when you are on full lock down. Security guard Ruffo tells me you are on your way up to the top, Mr. Two Stars, where no one hears your screams at night,” Jackie whispers.

‘AI get a sample of her DNA,’ Jaden asks.

‘Okay.’

A microscopic charge goes from Jaden’s right hand into Jackie’s gloves and back into his hand.

“I’ll give you something to scream about at night. It looks like you are long overdue, cobweb pussy...” he imitates her voice, “I can’t find a man because I’m in my late thirties, so I’ll just work double shifts and make other people’s life miserable.”

“Jackie, the needle is full already,” Chan says.

She stares him in the eyes and quickly withdraws the needle.

“Wipe yourself, you’re bleeding,” Jackie says while tossing him some napkins.

“Where do you see blood?” Jaden asks in a snapping voice.

She looks down at his arm and doesn’t see anything there.

“You need to wipe yourself, because YOU are bleeding. It is time to change that pad down there, Miss Bush,” Jaden snaps with a smile on his face.

Jaden smiles and walks back to the sofa. She has a confused and embarrassed look on her face.

‘That was cool how the blood went back into my arm.’

‘I knew you would like that,’ AI says.

Jaden sits down on the sofa. The other patients look at him because he blocked their view for a second. He looks at the television.

“...In 2010, the Europa Orbiter took pictures of the icy surface of Jupiter’s moon Europa, so MASA could know the best place for a future landing. In early 2013, another orbiter called Laplace Voyager left Earth. Today it landed and the first images are coming back to Earth at any moment. Robot droids will drill into the ice up to one hundred feet. Scientists believe there is a salty ocean underneath, which could support life. Two autonomous drones will swim for weeks under the ocean, and transmit their finding to the surface. Scientists all over the world have been waiting for this day for years. If life were found there this would be the first extraterrestrial life found on another planet in our solar system...Here are the images,” the man on the television says.

“Hey! I was there. I was on that moon!” Jaden says aloud standing up getting excited, “There was a big sea creature at the bottom of that ice and huge alien sharks!”

‘Jaden, you are talking out loud,’ AI whispers.

‘Shit, you’re right. We were there a few weeks ago, I mean years ago. This is crazy, humans are landing there already,’ Jaden says.

‘I remember I was there with you; that sea creature was digesting us in the ship. Um.... Dr. Chan is looking at you and everyone else is too.’

Jaden turns around and Dr. Chan curls her pointer finger and signals for him to come over there.

‘That is a sexy finger,’ Jaden says as he walks over.

“How was it when you were there?” The older man with thick glasses on asks.

“Very dark and I was bitten by these alien sharks,” Jaden whispers while walking by him.

“...history is made; the Laplace Voyager has successfully touched down on the ice surface and began drilling...”

Suddenly the lights begin to flicker. Jaden stands still and looks around. The news reporters on television pass out and their heads fall to the news desk simultaneously. The old man’s head leans downward as he passes out. Sounds of people collapsing in the background of the news station can also be heard through the speakers of the television. Dr. Chan loses consciousness and collapses towards the floor. Jaden quickly walks towards her while bending his knees. He grabs her in his arms right before she hits the floor.

‘Good catch sir.’

Jaden hears guards, nurses and other patients dropping to the floor simultaneously. Jaden sees the doctor’s eyes are partly closed. Her eyes are wandering around in different directions as if she is sleeping. He holds her small frame in his arms. He admires her beauty up close and can smell her hair shampoo. He takes a deep breath. Jaden notices the doctor isn’t breathing and her arms are just stretched out.

‘It has begun! The countdown has begun!’ AI yells.

The television is still on live and the news reporters are face down on their desk. There isn't a sound anywhere. He smells her irresistible perfume and suddenly feels something for her. He feels as if he held her before in another life or met her at another time. He is hit by a feeling of déjà vu crossing his mind.

'Should I give her CPR or something?'

'No, it should only last another ten to fifteen seconds. She could wake up at any time along with everyone else. The nanomole is being booted up. What time is it?' AI asks.

Nurse Jackie is unconscious on the toilet seat stall. Jaden continues to stare into Dr. Chan's innocent face and ignores what AI just asked. Time feels as if it is slowing down into milliseconds around Jaden. AI takes control of a nanoscanner, since Jaden isn't responding. Her lower teeth are showing slightly through her soft pink lips. She reminds him of Sleeping Beauty. She resembles a fallen angel that just fell from the heavens and Jaden just caught her. He stands up and holds her with two arms. She suddenly begins to breathe again. Dr. Chan suddenly opens her eyes and looks into Jaden's blue eyes with a look of confusion. The short stare felt like an eternity to the both of them. A connection is made as Jaden slowly lowers his right arm to put her to her feet. The news reporters on television lift their heads from the desk and look around. People in the area around Jaden also regain consciousness. The doctor begins to breathe heavily as she stands on her feet. She pulls down her skirt and holds her chest.

"What's going on? Why are you holding me?" She asks with a confused voice while struggling to stand up.

"You fainted and I grabbed you before you hit the floor," Jaden says in a modest voice.

"Well thank you, Mr. Doe."

People wake up as if a split second went by and they just fell to the floor.

"Are you okay?" Jaden asks.

"Just trying to catch my breath."

A few minutes go by as Jaden turns around to watch the television. The nurse returns to her medication office.

'Eighty-three hours and fifty-five minutes from now we have,' AI says.

'That was crazy seeing that happening.'

"We need to talk, let's go," Chan says.

Jaden walks over and follows the doctor into the hallway.

"You're crazy, you bi-racial freak. You're going to be here forever," Nurse Jackie says from the window.

"Nice and fresh from the bathroom are we?" Jaden asks Jackie while following Chan.

They walk down the hallway. A man strapped to a stretcher is yelling and screaming and struggling to get up. Transporter Williams is pushing him.

“Hey buddy, what is wrong with him?” Jaden asks.

“Oh, he is high on cocaine. He is on his way to detox. Don’t do drugs,” Williams says while chuckling down the hallway.

‘AI take a pair of nanoscanner to copy that guy’s brain waves and copy the effects around his body.’

‘Why would you want to do that?’ AI asks.

‘Just do it,’

‘Yes sir.’

They arrive at a door and they walk inside a room. She closes the door.

‘It is done.’

‘Save that copy as the Scarface program,’ Jaden says.

‘Okay.’

There is desk and a bed in the room. Jaden lies on the bed.

She pulls out a small notepad and starts writing.

“Mr. John Doe, what was that in the recreation room, about being in space?” She asks.

“Nothing important; I dreamed I was on that Jupiter moon,” Jaden says.

“You can’t have an outburst about dreams you had. Do you want to be here forever?”

“No.”

“Outburst like that is going to keep you here under evaluation for months. Is this what you want?”

“No.”

“I feel as though you know more than you’re willing to tell me,” she says.

“Listen I want to tell you things, but you won’t understand. However, when the time is right, I will remember and I’ll let you know everything. It is imperative I get on the Internet again. I remembered some random e-mail addresses; I want to see if there is a reply.”

‘Good one Jaden,’ AI snaps.

“Sorry Mr. Doe, it is out of my hands. Well if more of your memory comes back, the faster you can get out of here. There might be some government scientist here next week to run more tests on why you don’t have any DNA samples and an invalid fingerprint structure,” she says.

“Yeah, okay.”

‘I won’t be here then.’

“What happened to Dr. Cochman?” He asks.

“He has been placed on suspension pending an investigation on his relationships with employees here. Why do you ask?” She asks while writing on her note pad.

“I was just curious. I think he should be a patient here,” he snaps.
Dr. Chan doesn’t pay full attention, while she continues to write.

Jaden uses a nanoscanner to look at the notes she is writing down.

It reads: “Patient still delusional...suffering from unknown brain trauma...amnesia level 1...argumentative and combative with employees, verbally and physically...Very mysterious...I think patient knows who he is and might be running from something or someone...Last one to use the Internet yesterday...Number 1 suspect in Internet abuse...”

‘She is saying so much about me, man, maybe I do belong here. She really thinks I’m crazy.’

“You received another star last night. What happened?” She asks.

“That bitch Ruffo set me up and said I put my hands on him. He has something coming to him.”

“I heard about him, just try to be quiet more and don’t be so tough. You don’t want to go into lock down. I hope that your memory will be back soon. Maybe tomorrow we can give you another brain scan?” She asks.

“No, that’s okay, no more experimental brain scans. I’m sure it will be returning soon.”

“Well I have to go; I have some blood work to do at the lab on the other side of town. I’ll be back later this evening to check on you and a few other patients. Is there anything else you would like to talk about?”

“I’m okay for now.”

Jaden gets up and walks towards the door.

“Hold on, I have to escort you back to the recreational area,” she says.

They walk back to the recreational area. Jaden sits down on the sofa and leans back with his arms folded. The doctor walks into the medication room and then leaves.

‘The computer is still off in the room,’ AI says.

Jaden watches television. News anchor Jake is talking.

“The 21st successfully unfrozen patient was done in a Germany science lab. These patients have been frozen for fifteen to fifty years and unfrozen with the help of nanotechnology. Many are being treated for diseases and illnesses not available for treatment all those years ago...”

“...The government still has a temporary ban on commercial airplanes flying at night. Reasons are still unclear. Two weeks ago, an entire flight crew and passengers mysteriously went to sleep at the same time. The co-pilot woke up just in time and managed to land the craft...”

“...In other news, the Federal Highway Committee has successfully ran the HSCCVL Program on two major highways without any accidents. News reporter Corey Smith is live on the scene outside Richmond, Virginia. Corey?”

“Thanks Jake, I’m on the overpass of Interstate 95. The government ran a pilot program two years ago called the HSCCVL, which stands for high-speed computer controlled vehicle lane. The program went live one year ago today, with zero accidents. Microchips are in both sides of this separate lane that resembles a HOV lane. Vehicles are controlled by a supercomputer and monitored with cameras at checkpoints. If a car or SUV enters this lane without the HSCCVL system installed in their vehicle, they will receive a warning from a bright sign overhead. At the same time, the highway computer system will move all the vehicles with the HSCCVL system into a right auxiliary lane and temporarily park them. The unauthorized vehicle is zapped with a high current of electricity at the next checkpoint and disabled. An electromagnetic impulse in the metal rail to the left will push the unauthorized vehicle into the auxiliary lane. Repairs would be up to the owner. All vehicles will then resume on the previous course. I must say this is a very sophisticated system. Vehicles with the HSCCVL system drive between 85-125 miles an hour. Drivers and passengers can sit back and watch television or even sleep.”

‘That is a cool driving system,’ Jaden says.

The news anchor returns back to the screen.

“Corey, you are telling me the vehicles are literally driving by themselves?” Jake asks.

“Yes Jake, the vehicle’s full driving controls and computer system are controlled by a supercomputer called Quantum1, which is a first generation processor. This Quantum diamond-processing computer controls both Interstates 95 and 80 HSCCVL systems.”

“How many unauthorized cars were zapped so far in that lane?”

“The FHC has claimed twenty-three unauthorized vehicles were disabled over the past year. Half are trying to sue the government for damaged vehicles. So far six cases were thrown out...”

Jaden dozes off and falls asleep. The news continues to play in the background.

“...In other news, radio telescope enthusiasts around the world are verifying a strange transmission sent from another galaxy. People are saying this could be the first communication from an intelligent species. Some anonymous person left a blog with the coordinates to where the transmission came from. The government is verifying the signal...”

An officer walks into Vice President Robinson's office. Robinson is sitting behind his large desk with an American flag behind him. There is an eagle on the carpet before his desk.

"Sir, we are trying to find out who leaked this top-secret information to the public. We just have three more people to interview," the first officer says.

"I want to find the snitch who leaked those coordinates on that Internet blog page. That was classified information and only a handful of people knew about it. Damn, we just received that transmission from our lost LRSB just forty-five days ago. I can't believe someone or something hacked the LRSB. Let me know if you find anything," Robinson says.

"Yes sir. We are in the process of tracing the IP address of where the blog was posted from," the soldier salutes and leaves the office.

Robinson picks up the phone, "Get the General on the phone," he says while hanging up the phone.

The phone rings back and he picks up. "How are you today General Peters?"

"I'm doing fine today, Vice President Robinson."

"How is Operation Trojan coming along?" Robinson asks.

"It is coming along very well. I'm very glad you decided to go along with it. The special helmets protect the astronauts on the space station now. The astronauts would suddenly lose consciousness and wake up hours later confused, the new helmets solved the problem. I think the message from the LRRB was from an authentic source. There is a chance there could be an attack on Earth," Peters says.

"I think it is a trap and setup. We pulled the entire long-range planet searching satellites to find this mother ship. We still can't detect any alien mother ship on its way towards Earth. I don't trust three things, Peters: I don't trust the public, I don't trust aliens and I don't trust one of those R.F.E.C. Especially aliens manipulating our technology to send us a message. I'm just glad the public is unable to decode the LRSB signal; otherwise, there would be worldwide panic. The Russians think we sent that transmission from our satellite around Mars as a hoax," Robinson says.

"You never know, we might need the Russians help if the planet is under attack."

"I hope that day doesn't come. My father would roll over in his grave after fighting with the Russians all his life and being an anti-Cold War person. I'll talk to you later General. Keep me posted if anything changes," Robinson says while he hangs up the phone.

Chapter 13: Jerry, Jerry, Jerry

UPSTATE NY STATE MENTAL HOSPITAL

A few hours go by. A female security guard walks up and taps Jaden on the shoulder.

“You have a visitor sir,” the polite female guard says.

He follows the guard down a long hallway and down some stairs.

‘I wonder who could be visiting me. Why aren’t the scanners working?’ Jaden asks.

‘They are recharging,’ AI replies.

‘Okay. Why do I feel so drowsy and tired?’

‘Your genetic material is still being manipulated. I’m doing what your scientists call protein folding. You are going to feel tired periodically.’

Jaden goes inside of a small patient visiting room. The smells of somewhere damp and musky fills the air. The room is dimly lit with small wooden tables and plastic black chairs. There is a male patient talking to his wife at the far end of the room. The wife is holding her whimpering infant son. Jaden sits in the middle at a desk and waits. He puts his head down on the desk and overhears their conversation.

“I keep seeing these visions of Jesus floating in the air...” the man says.

“Your son needs you to get better and come home.” The woman says.

He hears heels walking from a distance. The loud heels get closer and closer.

A woman walks into the room with heels on. Jaden raises his head and turns in that direction. He tries to focus his eyes, but he sees the blurry image of a fair-skinned female. She gets closer to him and he somewhat recognizes her.

“Amy is that you?” He asks. There is no answer. He recognizes the face and figure from a distance and repeats himself, “Amy, is that you? You got my voice mail. You are looking very good for your age. I like the new tan and what you did to your hair.”

His vision clears up some. She walks around him looking him up and down with a confused look on her face. Jaden turns and follows her movements.

‘She looks like Amy, but something is different in her face from the last time I saw her. She looks different and she didn’t age one bit. How is this possible?’ Jaden asks AI.

‘I don’t know. She does look different from your last memories of her. She stayed the same size and there is no age difference in her face.’

I'm doing a face recognition scan of your old images of her and her face now,' AI says.

"Can I have a hug?" Jaden asks.

The woman crosses her arms and looks at him with an attitude.

'The crossing of her arms looks familiar and that frown she is making reminds me of my father,' Jaden says to AI.

"It's me, your boyfriend. What is going on with you? You can't speak?" Jaden asks.

There is an awkward silence in the room.

'Her face is not matching up. Her face is only matching up seventy-one percent,' AI says.

"You don't know who I am?" The female asks.

Jaden stares at her still puzzled.

"Amy right?" He asks.

"No... I'm not," she responds with a snotty voice.

Jaden has confusion all across his face as he continues to stare at her, trying to figure out who this girl is.

"So who are you then?" Jaden asks in a firm voice.

Suddenly another female walks into the room and says, "I'm Amy. She is your daughter Sabrina."

Jaden turns in slow motion towards the entrance and another female walks into the room. His eyes quickly focus on another female entering the room. His heart begins to beat quickly as he sees an older Amy walking towards him. Her heels slowly click and clack against the shiny, waxed floor. A cold chill leaves Jaden's brain and travels down his spine. Goose bumps form over his skin and his blood pressure increases.

"Daughter?" Jaden asks in a loud tone.

'Daughter?' AI asks at the same time in a confused voice.

Jaden hears "Daughter" echoing around him and in his brain.

'There is no memory of you having any daughter,' AI says.

'I know.'

Jaden begins to laugh in a nervous tone, as Amy stands to the side of Sabrina.

"This is a joke right?" He asks.

"I don't see anything funny about you hiding from your responsibility for the past eighteen and a half years. You think running and hiding over in Europe to have your body frozen for eighteen years was the answer to avoid child support?" Amy asks with her arms folded, mirroring her daughter.

"Body frozen?" Jaden asks in a confused voice, "I didn't freeze my body..."

Sabrina interrupts and walks in front of Jaden, "I was born November 15th, 1996. I wanted to meet the man who disappeared before I was born and I call a coward sperm donor!" She then spits on Jaden's

face as he blinks his eyes. She steps back as they both look at him. Jaden is in shock and can't believe what he is hearing. Jaden attempts to wipe his face.

'Don't wipe your face yet. I'm analyzing her DNA in the saliva,' AI says as some of it soaks into his skin.

'Okay, good idea AI. I want you to play back in full details the night I last saw Amy,' he says.

'Okay, wipe your face with your left hand, so I can get a second DNA scan,' AI says.

"So you are just going to stand there with a stupid look on your face," Amy asks.

"Listen, I was never frozen anywhere. I wasn't even on this planet. Remember the night I last saw you...hold on a second..." Jaden says while images of the last time he saw Amy in his car replays on 2/14/96. He can feel, hear, see and smell everything that happened that night as if he is still there. They stare at him as he zones out and closes his eyes.

"Arrrrhhhh! Aaaahhh!" Jaden yells in pleasure while Amy and Sabrina takes a step back and look at him as if he is crazy.

"Oh man, that felt good," Jaden says aloud. 'AI what was that?'

'The same orgasm you felt in the vehicle back in 1996.'

'That's going to leave a soiling,' Jaden says.

'You wanted a full detailed replay that is what I replayed. You relived that moment. In addition, the DNA characteristics scan is 99.9% sure she is your daughter.'

Jaden hears sounds coming from his subconscious, 'Jerry, Jerry, Jerry!'

Images of *The Jerry Springer Show* flash through his mind and voices of 'You are the father' echoes in his mind. Then he hears sounds of a crowd booing him.

'Shit, I didn't pull out in time, I forgot to. I was so worried about the UFO police coming up behind us or following me, I wasn't concentrating on what I was doing, I pulled out too late,' Jaden says to himself.

'I would estimate by the time you pulled out at least 200 million sperm were let loose,' AI says.

"Are you okay?" Amy asks.

"I'm okay now. Sorry, I was just reliving the moment that night in the SUV when we were having sex, creating our little monster that is only twenty-one months younger than me," he says.

"So you believe me she is your daughter now?" Amy asks.

"Yes I do now. I'm remembering that night very clearly. You were on top of me and I kept looking out the window at the cars approaching..."

Sabrina interrupts Jaden, "Excuse me; I don't want to hear how I was conceived."

Jaden takes a deep breath and Sabrina rolls her eyes.

“As I was saying....”

‘She rolled her eyes identical to how Amy does,’ AI says.

‘Good observation AI, now can I concentrate here?’ Jaden asks.

“As I was saying, I wasn’t concentrating on us having sex and I slipped up. I was too paranoid that night in the back seat of your Pathfinder. She was born because the government put so much pressure on me. Then you were upset and started crying afterwards, because I forgot your Valentine’s Day gift. I completely forgot about Valentine’s Day and I’m sorry for that.”

“Yeah, I remember that month; it was one of my worst. The military following me and asking me questions for hours. Then I didn’t get my period later that month and I was throwing up for a long time. Everyone was looking for you, but I don’t want to think about it,” she says.

“But, I didn’t run away to Europe to have my body frozen and thawed out now. I wasn’t on this planet for the past eighteen years. Remember the UFO I was telling you about that night?” Jaden asks.

“I vaguely remember,” Amy says.

“The government was after me, so I went into the UFO spaceship and traveled to the Andromeda Galaxy. Remember the Andromeda Galaxy we used to look at in the telescope just last year... I mean all those years ago?”

“Yes, but...” Amy is interrupted by Sabrina.

“What type of bullshit you trying to tell my mother? There is no such thing as UFOs, only coward irresponsible fathers like yourself who disappear all the time from their kids’ lives. Have you no shame for bringing me into the world and disappearing...” Sabrina is interrupted.

Jaden stands up and looks Sabrina in the eyes.

“Listen you little one quarter bi-racial experiment, I’m not a coward father and I’m not irresponsible. In fact...” Jaden says while going into his back pocket and pulls out his wallet.

“In fact, here is the condom I was supposed to use with your mother eighteen and a half years ago. If I used this little piece of rubber right here, your snotty bitch ass wouldn’t be here now. You and 200 million of your sperm co-workers would have hit a rubber roadblock and then thrown away in a tissue and left on the parking lot ground. The next day some minimum wage park worker would be tossing you in the garbage!” He yells while holding the condom to her. They both look at it and see an expiration date of 6/99. The other couple in the room looks at Jaden and his family feud.

“Don’t talk to my daughter like that,” Amy says while snatching the condom from Jaden’s hand. “What did you do? Freeze the condom with you?”

‘I can’t believe Sabrina was the lucky sperm that found and reached the egg out of 200-250 million other sperm. That is like one person winning the lottery. The odds are amazing on human reproduction....’ AI says.

‘AI, not now.’

“No, I didn’t freeze it. But you were so busy playing as the raw dog pirate you forgot I didn’t have one on.”

“Anyway, so what, you saved an old condom and you kept it in mint condition like your comic books? That doesn’t prove anything. You left me in my time of need, to raise this child by myself. I had to drop out of school...” Amy bitterly replies.

“I’m sure you remember the government officials asking you questions back then. You don’t think that was a bit odd?” Jaden asks.

“My memory around that time is a blur. They said you stole an experimental military plane and were shot down.”

“You believe that? How would I know how to fly a military plane? Where would I get money to freeze my body for eighteen years?” Jaden asks.

“No, I didn’t believe everything. But you did fly those flight simulator games very well. I didn’t know what to believe. Deep down I felt you were still alive somewhere. Then when I heard your voice mail yesterday and saw you in the other room on video still looking like a teenager, I knew you froze your body. That was the only logical explanation. You froze your body to hide from the government and from me.”

Jaden walks closer to Amy.

“I must say you look good for your age, I thought you’d be bigger,” Jaden says.

“I used to be overweight with the rest of the American population. Anti-fat pills helped get me back to a European average size,” she quips.

He walks over to her, grabs her hands and looks into her blue eyes.

“Listen Amy, I love you, why would I hide from you? For all these years, I’ve been thinking about you and dreaming about you. I had very little control when I decided I had to leave. If I didn’t leave I would be dead right now,” Jaden says with deep emotion. He notices that his nanoscanners are online from his eyes’ screen.

“How do you expect me to believe you were on another planet or traveling to another galaxy? Why would you come back?” Amy asks.

“I came back to save Earth. Some bad aliens called Darclonians are coming here in a mother ship, to do God knows what with us humans. Humans have these nanomoles in their brains that will temporary take control of their minds when the mother ship is near Earth’s orbit. A bioparasite is uploaded into the human’s host brain and bonds with the

nanomole. I'm here to warn the government and to try to prevent this from happening," Jaden pleads.

"Yeah, you are in the right place talking like that. You should be in this mental hospital telling that story to people. They should keep you here for a couple of years, if you expect me to believe that crock of shit. Let me guess, you have superhuman powers too?" She asks.

"Yes, I do. But I'm working on that. In fact, you have a nanomole in your brain and so does Sabrina," he says.

"Did Adam and Eve have a nanomole in their brain also?" Sabrina asks.

"Yeah, they did. They got their nanomoles when they ate the forbidden fruit and were tossed out the Garden of Eden and had to live with the dinosaurs," Jaden says sarcastically.

"Why couldn't scientists detect these nanomoles in people's brains sooner?" Amy asks.

"It is a very small microscopic protein that is hard to detect with modern technology. It blends in with normal brain cells and DNA. Scientists would need to know what to look for."

'Her nanomole is open and not coded,' AI says.

'Yeah I know.'

"What are your superpowers, sperm donor?" Sabrina asks.

"Well they aren't really working now. They are offline." He says.

'If her nanomole is open that means her information has been recently accessed, possibly by the mother ship,' AI says.

'Okay AI, let me finish talking to them.'

"Mom, this guy is full of it, let's get out of here," Sabrina says.

"If I'm full of it, how do I know you have a tattoo on your back, that reads, 'Men are liars' and another one that reads, 'The new human plague: Narcissistic men.' How do I know that your mother has a microchip in her arm?" Jaden asks.

They both have surprised looks on their faces.

"Is that true Sabrina? After I told you not to get that tattoo?" Amy asks.

"Mom, this freak is just guessing; he doesn't know what he is talking about."

"Is that true? After you promised me you'll wait until you were eighteen years old."

"I'm sorry Mom. Yes, it's true."

'Your daughter has sad eyes and is apologizing like you, when you are wrong,' AI comments.

"You can't go around not liking men all your life. You need to break out of that, you are Catholic. Eventually you are going to have to find a man to settle down with and get married to."

"That's not for me, getting married is like modern day slavery for some women," Sabrina says.

"We will discuss this later," Amy replies.

"You got lucky guessing on the tattoo. How did you know about my microchip in my arm?" Amy asks.

"I can see it inside your wrist with my Superman x-ray vision."

"So you have some kind of x-ray vision now?" She asks.

"Something like that; I know you aren't wearing panties."

"Lucky guess," Amy replies.

"What did you do to earn that felony microchip?" Jaden asks.

"None of your business!"

Jaden concentrates on her forehead using the scanners. Amy grabs her head as she has an instant headache.

"Mom, are you okay?"

"I'm fine, I'm okay now. I just had a headache, but it went away. All these images of the past just quickly went through my mind," she says.

"You used to suffer from bipolar disorder, but the nanomole cured you," he says.

"My medication cured me," she says.

"Come on, there is no cure for that. Amy listen, you been through a lot after I left. You have a lot of regret packed away in your subconscious. You looked for me every day and you thought about having an abortion when you were pregnant. You also couldn't trust men for awhile and even beat up a girl for trying to take your man after me. You even committed assault with a deadly weapon?" Jaden asks.

Amy smacks Jaden in the face as he takes a step back holding his face.

"Listen you sick E.T. mental patient, I don't know where you are getting this inaccurate information, but I heard enough of your bullshit. I don't love you anymore. I'm older now and I've been through a lot all these years. I've moved on. You have some nerve thinking you know me. You think you can just freeze your body to avoid child support and come back like nothing happened?"

"No." Jaden quickly responds.

"I'm going to win that court case for the money your father left for you in that safe deposit box. Now that I have more evidence..." Amy says.

"Safe deposit box?" Jaden asks.

"The safe deposit box in Halifax State Bank in Halifax, North Carolina where your father left over \$100,000 for you. That money will be mine. According to my lawyer, you owe me \$500 times twelve months. \$6000 times eighteen years, which is \$108,000 in child support."

"You mean \$107,000 and it would belong to our daughter right?"

“Listen you smart ass, I’m going to get my lawyer to issue a non-child support warrant for your arrest. Then you can explain to the judge about the alien attack on Earth and why you couldn’t pay all these years,” Amy says.

“Come on, don’t do that. I can’t let anyone know who I am or that I’m here.”

They ignore him, turn their backs and walk towards the door.

“Amy! Sabrina!”

“Do you think we can still make it in time?” Sabrina whispers to Amy.

“Yes, we have enough time,” Amy whispers back.

“Amy!” Jaden yells, while walking up to them near the door.

“Where are you going now?” He asks.

“That is none of your business psycho baby daddy,” Sabrina says while walking out the door first.

Jaden uses the nanoscanner to check her memories, but it comes back blank. Amy quickly turns to Jaden at the doorway and looks him directly in the eyes, “Listen you bastard, I don’t know who told you those things about me, but you are going to pay for leaving me and ducking out on your responsibility. Goodbye!”

“Amy, the nanomole in your brain needs to be deactivated... Amy! Amy! Sabrina!”

Jaden sits back down and stares into space. The other couple in the room walks towards the door looking at Jaden with a strange look on their faces.

‘How am I able to scan certain images from someone’s mind?’

‘Older memories are easier to read than newer ones. I guess it depends on where in the brain the memories are. Regret and things people are ashamed of or worry about most are usually easier to read. Human brains aren’t organized the best way,’ AI says.

Jaden is concentrating on a nanoscanner following Sabrina and Amy. He listens to the conversation with Dr. Abraham.

“Good afternoon, I’m Dr. Abraham, director of the hospital,” he says while shaking both of their hands.

“Hello, I’m Amy and this is my daughter Sabrina.”

“Greetings,” Sabrina says while smiling.

‘That pervert director doctor is looking my daughter’s body up and down. His eyes are on her breasts now. That piece of shit,’ Jaden says to AI.

‘His hormone level is rising,’ AI says.

‘Please don’t tell me that. I don’t even want to know what is on his mind now,’ Jaden says with his head on the desk in the small room.

“Do you know the name of the patient you just visited?” Abraham asks.

‘Don’t tell him Amy,’ Jaden pleads.

“Yes, that’s my ex-boyfriend Jaden Marino. He is talking about aliens and an attack on Earth. He is in the right place and when he gets out of here there will be a child support warrant on him,” Amy says.

“Child support?” He asks.

“Yes, Sabrina is his daughter,” Amy says.

Dr. Abraham raises his eyebrows in confusion.

“This girl right here is his daughter?”

“Yes. Excuse me, but we are in a hurry. Good day to you. Let’s go Sabrina,” she says while grabbing her hand and walking out of the building. The director stands there puzzled.

‘Shit, the damage is done,’ Jaden says.

“Excuse me sir, are you ready to go?” The female guard asks.

“Yes,” Jaden replies as he gets up and follows the guard to the elevator.

‘I have Amy’s license plate number,’ AI says.

“Ready to shower and eat dinner?” The female guard asks.

“I’ll shower, but I’m not hungry. Is Ruffo working today?”

“He will be working the night shift the next few days. You will see your friend soon.”

Jaden walks by a huge window and he sees the sun setting over the horizon. The three-bladed windmill is slowly spinning and partially blocks the sun. He showers and then returns to his room. The guard locks his door behind him. Jaden lies on his bed looking into the night sky getting darker and darker.

‘What am I going to do?’ Jaden asks. ‘They know my name now. We need to figure out a way to get Internet access. I have to get out of this hospital.’

‘Calm down, we will figure out something. I’m trying my best. I’m scanning the entire hospital. I checked the computer room sixty-five times already and the Internet still is down in there. I sense you are feeling depressed, hurt, emotionally stressed,’ AI says.

‘Yes, I’m very hurt. My girlfriend I waited to see for so many years completely changed and doesn’t even love me anymore. AI can you do me a favor? Amy really broke my heart earlier, can you please take most of my memories of us and store them somewhere?’ Jaden asks AI while his eyes get teary.

‘I can repress those memories for you. Why would you want to do this?’ AI asks.

‘I need to get over her fast so I can focus on getting out of here and saving this miserable planet. Repressing the memories is a good idea. Make me feel as if I had feelings for her eighteen years ago,’ he says.

‘I can do that. I don’t understand this feeling of love. From my understanding, love seems to be more hurt than pleasure...’

‘Just don’t fall in love, AI.’

Jaden’s memories of Amy are quickly flashing before his eyes. His first kiss, images of making love, concerts, snowboarding together and birthdays are stored deep in his memories.

‘The pain of hurt always outweighs the pleasure. However, love has great effects over the brain and body. It can give humans the will to do things not normally possible. I calculate it’s better not to be in love with anyone. Loving a family member or friend is the best love. It is complete sir. Your memories of her have been repressed. By the way, Dr. Chan is back, she is plugging her small car into the building,’ AI says.

‘Thank you, AI. I’m feeling much better now. That is amazing; my feelings for her are gone. I feel as if I did love her eighteen years ago. That is amazing. Thank you AI, I feel a huge weight off my shoulders.’

‘You’re welcome.’

‘Dr. Chan is back huh? Plugging in her car to the building?’ Jaden asks.

‘The nanoscanners are showing electricity is going into the car, recharging it.’

‘Interesting, but as I was saying, being in love is a natural instinct for us humans. Every human should experience some sort of love. Every human should have an auto-repress feature in their brain also. It is like a painkiller for your feelings...’ Jaden says.

Jaden watches with a scanner as Dr. Chan walks towards the elevator in a black business skirt, white dress shirt and her hair down to her back. He admires her beauty and class. Her blue heels create a loud, rhythmic sound with the floor. Other workers turn their heads to watch her walk.

‘...but true love, makes a man and women feel as if they can do anything. That feeling will always outweigh the pain of love. It is a universal bond between members of a species. It is the bond that gives us a purpose for living. It starts as lust mostly with a man and then grows. The physical attraction with the opposite sex excites the man into getting to know the female more. He is usually amazed by her physical appearance and scent. Women start off with lust, but also need chemistry and a strong mental connection with a male first...’

Dr. Chan walks into the office to talk to Dr. Abraham. Jaden smells her freshly cleaned body and natural body pheromones. Her scent reminds him of Irish Spring soap.

‘...this usually takes a lot of time for an average female to get to know a man. Men are also attracted by the woman’s smell. This is another way of keeping a man interested,’ Jaden pauses and admires Dr. Chan as she speaks to the director. She looks so serious as her eyebrows expand upwards.

‘Animals on this planet and other planets have similar ways of mating with the opposite sex. This is just a more intriguing way of partnering up,’ AI says while Jaden zones out even more.

A few minutes go by as he continues to watch her slowly walk out of the office.

‘Jaden?’

‘She is unbelievable; there is something about this female doctor that is interesting to me more than her beauty. There is something in her soul that is attracting me towards her. I have to learn more about her.’

‘She is coming up towards this floor,’ AI says.

‘I know...’ he says in a daze.

The guard at the end of the hallway escorts Chan towards Jaden’s room. His room door opens up and Dr. Chan walks into the room. The door closes and Jaden sits up. He stares into her eyes and she does the same. He sits up and puts his feet on the side of the bed.

“Mr. Jaden Marino how are you feeling today?”

“I’m fine now, just had to store away some old feelings and thoughts.”

“Jaden is a very nice name. Are you curious as to how I found your name?”

“Let’s save some time here. My ex-girlfriend told Dr. Abraham my name. He just told you in his office a few minutes ago,” Jaden says.

“I see your memory is coming back and you are good with guessing things,” Chan says.

“I didn’t guess. I saw these things take place. You just plugged your green compact car into the side of the building about ten minutes ago. You don’t carry identification or a wallet on you and showered at the hotel with Irish Spring soap,” Jaden says.

She walks over and looks out the window, to see if her car is in view. She then sits down on the end of the bed and crosses her legs.

“Who are you Jaden Marino? Who told you these things?” She asks.

“Do you really want to know who I am and where I’ve been?”

“Yes, I do. I want to know why you don’t have any DNA structure. I want to know everything about you,” she says while looking confidently into his eyes.

“I won’t tell you, but I’ll show you,” he says while he moves his legs to the floor and moves closer to her.

“Show me?” She asks in a surprised voice.

“Yes, close your eyes and relax. Trust me.”

She looks deep into his eyes and responds, “Okay, I trust you,” while leaning up against the wall and closing her eyes.

“Clear your mind of any thoughts,” Jaden says while he stretches out his right hand and places it over her forehead.

Small impulses of electricity leave Jaden's right hand. Images of Jaden appear in her closed eyelids. She quickly opens her eyes and jumps up.

"What the hell was that? How did you do that?" She asks while breathing hard and grasping her chest.

"I'm showing you who I am and where I've been. Now you have to trust me and relax," Jaden says.

Chan is shocked, nervous and intrigued as to what just happened to her. The images were so vivid that she felt as if she was there. Her curiosity takes over and she sits back down. She has an instinct to trust him. She leans her back against the wall, as her legs are off the side of the bed.

"Relax and close your eyes. This is who I am, this is Jaden Marino," Jaden says in a soft tone while putting his hand over her forehead again. He runs a visual upload and the nanodrones create an artificial pathway of neurons into Chan's optic nerve and different areas of the brain. The nanodrones synchronize their speed with her brain's neurons in her long-term memory area. She sees images of Jaden as a kid. She feels and hears the sounds along with images that are quickly flashing before her eyelids. The images quickly speed up and then slow down when he is a teenager. Images of Jaden being a gentleman on dates and helping old ladies with groceries. Images of him volunteering in the community and helping friends in his karate school to train.

'Be careful not to overload her mind with info. Keep the speed at her normal brain transmission speed,' AI says.

'Okay, AI, you take over. I can't wait to read her nanomole,' Jaden says.

What Jaden likes and dislikes, favorite colors, favorite foods, personality traits, habits, hobbies and all his jokes over the years are being transmitted.

'You can read it now if you want and we can deactivate it at the end. Remember, you want to get your mind used to multi-tasking. She will probably be temporarily unconscious once the nanomole is disabled from receiving, transmitting and overtaking,' AI says.

The nanodrones begin accessing the nanomole that is semi-coded. He sees images from inside the fallopian tube. The nanomole is recording images of an egg being attacked by three little sperm. A constant heartbeat is heard and a thick liquid is all around.

'I can actually taste and smell inside of there. Yuck! Okay boring, let's fast forward. Wait a second, what is that?' Jaden asks.

The nanomole attached in the uterus is sending a copy of itself to the few weeks old baby fetus.

‘Remember, the nanomole can record many generations of a human’s life. Some go back tens of thousands of years. The nanomole in the father’s brain updates with his children remotely by comparing DNA characteristics,’ AI says.

Jaden speeds up and he sees outside of the eyes and images from another time period. The period is the Qing Dynasty in the early 1700’s. Jaden sees images of Asian people working in fields and women walking funny quickly flash by. The images slow down; he is seeing from a little girl’s eyes that is six years old. She is wearing very tight bandages around her feet with very small shoes over them. Jaden can feel her pain as she walks and cries. Her mother tells her to be strong, because she wants her to follow the cultural practice of women having small feet. She tells her in Chinese this is foot binding and she will meet a good man one day with her perfect-sized feet. The little girl opens the tight bandages and the smell of her feet shocks Jaden. She has ingrown toenails and several broken toes. The girl cries as her mother hits her and makes her wrap her feet back up.

‘Okay, that was disturbing, but educational. That was crazy; those were Chan’s ancestors. Let’s skip up some generations AI,’ Jaden says while checking on Dr. Chan.

He sees Dr. Chan is watching Jaden in the Gravhawk flying over New York City back in 1996.

‘Will she remember everything?’ Jaden asks.

‘She will remember almost everything, but her brain will probably process most of this information another time,’ AI says.

‘How am I able to understand Chinese now?’

‘You picked up and learned the language as an infant would. The language and dialect were automatically translated when you went through the nanomole’s memory bank,’ AI says.

‘Cool.’

He switches back to the nanomole’s memories that are quickly skipping generations and are in the 1930’s. The images are moving forward very fast, just like a VCR, but without the lines going across.

‘Hold on, what is happening here in this time period?’ He asks while the images rewind.

‘I don’t know, but I’ll find out,’ AI says.

‘What are all these different image angles from different Asian people’s eyes?’ Jaden asks.

‘This is the year 1937. I don’t see Germans and the Jews or a concentration camp...My God, this is so violent... The vision is very clear and detailed,’ Jaden says.

Jaden scrolls through hundreds of images from people’s eyes and can’t believe what he is witnessing.

‘Why are Asian people killing each other?’ Jaden asks. ‘Wait a second those are Japanese soldiers, killing Chinese people... This is China in a city called Nanking.’

Chinese people are running for their lives. Japanese troops are lining Chinese people up in a line and shooting them all. Women are being brutally raped and then killed.

‘Man, even I’m scared. What is this AI? Why am I able to see from multiple people’s visions?’

‘From my calculations, it seems that when a very large amount of people are scared for their lives the nanomoles communicate with each other...’

‘Shit, I’m being buried alive. I can’t breathe...I can taste the dirt in my mouth, choking me,’ Jaden yells to AI, ‘I’m sorry, I felt what that poor man felt. I’m feeling these people dying. I’m feeling their pain and death. This is horrible.’

‘...They transmit different images to each other from each person’s eyes. This is called molevision,’ AI says.

‘Why would the nanomoles do this?’ Jaden asks.

‘The Darclonians want to record every angle of humans in these situations to be played back another time. I’ve never seen a nanomole operate like this. There are some coded images under these images. Let me see if I can decode these.’

Jaden continues to watch different molevision images in complete shock. It is nighttime and hundreds of Chinese people are being buried in mass graves; families are hiding young girls in their houses from the Japanese soldiers. Dr. Chan’s 8-year-old great grandmother is one of the little girls being hidden in a relative’s house. Her 12-year-old sister was brutally raped and killed a few hours earlier by a soldier. The older sister sacrificed herself so her little sister could get away. Jaden can feel the tears running down the little girl’s face deep in the relative’s dark basement. He can feel the dirt around her body, the mud on her face and hair. The freezing cold floor is sending chills throughout her small framed body. There are two other neighbor girls around the same age sitting on the cold floor across from her, crying and sniffing to themselves. Dr. Chan’s great grandmother sits between the two girls and puts her arms around them. She tells them it will be okay. There are footsteps moving back and forth upstairs. Someone came through the back door of the house. The sound creaks through the wooden floors. Jaden hears muffled voices from upstairs through the little girl’s ears.

“There are two Japanese soldiers lining our people up in two rows of a hundred each and with swords, competing to see who can chop off their heads the fastest...” An older man says.

There is a conversation going back and forth. The little girls are silent as they listen and stare at the pitch-black ceiling.

“...We have to leave this house as soon as possible when it is dark and make it to the safety zone with the girls....”

There is loud bang on the door upstairs from two Japanese soldiers. The disturbing knock sends shock waves through their bodies. The three little girls quickly look towards the dark ceiling, listening to the muffled constant banging that is vibrating the entire house. Their small bodies begin to shake uncontrollably as their nervous system takes over. One of the girls urinates on herself as they hold each other tighter in complete fear. The soldiers tell the mostly male family members if they are hiding any young girls in here, they will all die. The molevision changes to other nanomoles in the area.

So many are crying, praying, wailing and many are being hacked to death with bayonets. Buildings and houses are on fire. The smell of fear, death and burning bodies are in the air. Jaden can hear crying and screaming echoing from thousands of nanomoles. The echoing noises sound like a chorus of death. He can hear heartbeats slowly stopping and blood soaking into the soil like a running faucet. Jaden tries to take it all in; this is unlike anything he has ever experienced.

‘I decoded some of the images, under the images,’ AI says.

‘I can’t believe this genocide in China. I never even knew this happened. I felt, smelt, heard, and experienced everything Dr. Chan’s great grandmother was experiencing. It was so real and felt as if it was happening now,’ Jaden says.

‘It gets worst,’ AI says while he changes the molevision images.

‘Oh my God, this is the vision from the Japanese soldiers’ nanomoles. These soldiers are enjoying their job. This is insane, inhumane; this is pure evil. To most of them, it is like playing a game. They are playing who can bayonet the most women and children. They don’t see these people as human beings. I can feel what they feel. They feel so powerful raping and killing these defenseless men, women and children. I can’t see any more of this,’ Jaden pleads.

AI responds, ‘From reading most of these Japanese soldiers’ mind set, they are seeing these Chinese people as chickens or animals to justify their actions. The same way humans can kill fish, cows and pigs to consume without remorse. They look at these people on that level along with a lot of hate. Their morals and judgment are repressed,’ AI says.

‘Interesting concept you interpreted. However, I’ve seen enough, this is way too graphic. Can you put these images somewhere far in the back of my mind?’

‘Yes sir.’

‘Thanks, I don’t want to remember this. I’m already feeling nauseous. That was like a horrible nightmare. Let’s fast forward to Chan’s lifetime and memories. How long has it been?’ He asks.

‘About nine minutes have past.’

‘Okay. We have to hurry.’

Jaden is seeing Chan being conceived and then being born. The images are quickly moving by. He gets impatient and fast-forwards up to when she was a teenager. Dr. Chan is currently seeing images and hearing the sounds of Jaden being rescued by Bellona on Planet 455. Jaden sees her growing up in Virginia and excelling in school. She graduated from high school at fifteen. Jaden is learning her personality traits; her likes and dislikes. Something traumatized her when she was younger. She signs up for groups empowering women in college. He learns that deep down she is a fighter and wants to stand up for what is right and wrong. Fighting for her earned grades and protesting at many events against the government. She wanted to be a lawyer or psychologist, but her mother always wanted her to be a scientist because Chan’s grandmother died of incurable cancer. Her father pressured her for years to get the best grades and she wasn’t social with men. A rebellion was building up inside of her for years. She joined an underground group on the Internet called A.N.W.O. (Anti-New World Order). She joined this group to make a difference. Jaden fast-forwards and slows down. He sees she was very naïve around men and was hurt emotionally. The two boyfriends she had cheated on her. One gave her chlamydia and broke her heart. The other left her for a man and used her money. She then worked hard in graduate school and left men alone. She lost confidence in men and read many books on women superheroes and women empowerment. Wonder Woman and Elektra are her favorite female heroes. She loves art, museums, bowling, scuba diving, skiing and horseback riding. Favorite foods are sesame chicken and calamari.

‘I feel as if I’m on a hyper speed date. This girl is amazing. I can’t believe I’m learning so much about this amazing female in minutes,’ Jaden says.

Her eyes are closed and look as if she is sleeping with her head against the wall.

‘The guard Ruffo just walked by,’ AI says.

‘Shit, that’s not good. Keep a nanoscanner on him,’ he says.

‘Let’s speed up my images to her. She is watching me playing virtual chess with Bellona. I’m going to increase the speed,’ Jaden says.

‘That could overload her brain and make her go into shock. She is already at the maximum transmission speed for a non-modified brain,’ AI says.

‘Okay, okay, let’s just deactivate her nanomole and skip the final upload.’

“Chan, I’m going to deactivate your nanomole. You know what it is and why it has to be deactivated. Deactivating it might affect your nervous system,” Jaden whispers to Chan.

“Okay,” she responds in a hypnotic voice.

Her eyes are now half-open and her hands are towards her sides.

‘Ruffo is walking back,’ AI says.

The smallest nanoscanners quickly spin around her nanomole. Her body begins to slowly shake as she cannot move.

“Relax, breathe slowly,” Jaden whispers.

Ruffo gets to the door and looks inside. He sees Jaden’s hand over Chan’s forehead and both of their eyes closed.

‘Shit.’

‘Shit.’

“What the hell is going on in here? What are you doing to her?” Ruffo asks while pushing the door with all his might and slamming it against the wall. The entire room shakes and rattles. He runs over to them and grabs Jaden by the shirt. He quickly pushes Jaden off the bed.

“Dr. Chan are you okay?” Ruffo asks while shaking her.

She wakes up and looks around the room confused. Chan sees Jaden sitting on the floor looking up at her.

“Are you okay Jaden?” She asks while rubbing her forehead looking confused.

“Yeah, I’m fine.”

“What did he do to you, doctor?” Ruffo asks.

“He didn’t do anything to me, I just need some fresh air,” she says while standing up and walking past Ruffo.

She feels dizzy while walking and then stumbles and falls over. Jaden very quickly stands up and goes past Ruffo to grab her. He catches her and they embrace for a second. Ruffo watches from a distance. They look into each other’s eyes as Jaden helps her to her feet.

“Thanks, Jaden. I’m okay now,” she says while she walks out of the room.

Ruffo walks by Jaden and looks at him with a mean face. He closes the door behind him.

‘Was the nanomole deactivated?’

‘Not completely, it was only forty percent done.’

‘Shit,’ Jaden says while lying back on the bed.

‘Any luck with the Internet access?’

‘No. It is completely shut down.’

‘Can we follow Chan to see if she is okay?’

‘The nanoscanners are recharging.’

Jaden closes his eyes and thinks about the new memories he has of Dr. Chan.

‘That was amazing learning about her history, seeing her growing up and learning so much about her in such a short period of time. I feel like I’ve known her for a long time. Do you think she will help us?’ Jaden asks.

‘I think she will. The visual upload will make her feel as if everything is real and she will feel as if she was actually there. She will experience what you have experienced. She knows why you are here and what you have to do. She knows your species needs to be saved, but there is a chance there could be conflicts if her mind begins to reject the new memories,’ AI says.

‘Okay. When will the nanoscanners be online?’

‘It should be less than ten minutes. Doing a nanomole deactivation requires a good amount of energy from the scanners.’

Jaden looks out the window and looks at the millions of stars in the night sky. He lies back down on the bed and thinks. He thinks about how he is going to get out of this hospital. He thinks about where his parents are and what they are doing. Jaden thinks about his daughter and her safety. He thinks about how she was raised and what kind of person she has grown to be. A few minutes go by. The nanoscanners go back online. They spread out around the building.

Jaden sees Chan crying in Abraham’s office.

“I wasn’t having sexual contact with the patient. I was finishing evaluating him and his memory was coming back to him. He doesn’t belong here. You have to believe me,” she pleads while standing in front of Dr. Abraham’s desk.

Jaden sees Ruffo taking the elevator up to this floor wearing his upper body bionic suit. There is a nurse and a transport worker in the elevator as it opens.

“You told me this five minutes ago. I heard enough. I believe what Ruffo said, that you were willingly having sexual contact with a patient. You’re dismissed from your duties Dr. Chan.”

“That is a lie. I’m a professional doctor, I would never...”

Two guards walk into Abraham’s office.

“I’ve heard enough. Your research at the lab will be forwarded to the government. A 3D video conference will be held in fifteen days with your superiors in Virginia to review your conduct here today. Jaden Marino’s name was forwarded to every law enforcement agency to find out who he is. You are relieved from your duties. These guards will walk you to your car. Have a good day,” Dr. Abraham says.

Dr. Chan turns around and walks towards the door. She quickly turns back around and walks to his desk.

“Listen you director asshole. I would never involve myself sexually with a patient. There is something much bigger happening here. The government...” Chan says in a loud voice and stops herself as the guard

grabs her arm. She pulls away and storms out of the office. The guards walk behind her.

‘Shit this is very bad,’ Jaden says as Ruffo opens Jaden’s room door and walks into the middle of the room.

“You have three strikes you little sexual assaulting pervert. Mr. Jaden Marino you are on your way to a full lock down. We know who you are now. We are going to find out what you have in your closet. Let’s go,” Ruffo says.

‘Jaden just go along, don’t say anything,’ AI says.

“We can go the easy way or the hard way,” Ruffo says.

The nurse has a needle and the other guard has a straitjacket in his hand.

Jaden walks by Ruffo as he shoves him forward. Jaden stops, turns to him and looks him directly in the eyes.

Ruffo whispers to Jaden, “I don’t know what you did to your chinky eyes doctor bitch, but she was defending you and asking for your release. That seems very suspicious to me. I know you were doing something to her. I’m going to make sure she gets her license suspended and taken from her for having sexual relations with you. Then I’m going to say she had her head between your legs when I walked by...”

“You don’t know who you are messing with you fat bionic dick,” Jaden whispers in a loud tone up close to his face.

Ruffo crosses his arms and chuckles.

“You talking shit to me you little punk mental bastard. You don’t have a pot to piss in. I’m going to show you who you are messing with.”

Ruffo grabs Jaden and slams him face against the wall while he reaches for the straitjacket.

‘Jaden please don’t fight it,’ AI pleads.

The other guard puts the soft metallic fabric straitjacket over Jaden’s body.

“Cross your arms!” Ruffo yells while he holds him against the wall.

Jaden crosses them and they tighten it. They walk him out of the room.

“We will see how tough you are strapped to the bed for a couple of weeks.”

Chapter 14: AI Einstein

Jaden walks in front as Ruffo and the guard guide him to the elevator. Jaden multi-tasks as he follows Chan to her car with a nanoscanner. She unplugs her car from the building with teary eyes. The plug springs back into her car. She sits in the small car and stares blankly from behind the steering wheel. She is trying to interpret everything that has just happened in the last thirty minutes. She pulls her bag from under the seat. Something is ringing. She pulls out some shades with an earpiece at the end of them and puts them over her eyes. The glasses have a small screen in the right lens that looks like a cell phone screen. Chan answers her cell phone and holds back tears. A small image of her father is in the top corner of the screen.

‘That is a cool cell phone she has. We need to find something she might have on her that we can use or contact her with later on,’ Jaden says while multiple scanners quickly move towards her car. The nanoscanners quickly pass through solid materials in the building.

Jaden quickly looks at everything inside her purse; he sees tampons, lipstick, keys, a wallet and a small black octagon object around her key chain that reads PAYLIFE.

‘The Paylife device carries magnetic information like a credit card. I’m copying the digitally stored magnetic information,’ AI says.

‘I’ll tell you what happened when I get back to Virginia, dad. I’m catching the next flight home. I’m driving to the hotel room and then the airport. I’ll be okay, love you,’ Chan says in Chinese.

The shades turn lighter and the screen disappears. She sniffs and a tear drops from her left eye.

She speaks aloud, ‘I’m sorry Jaden; I tried my best. There isn’t much more I can do for you. I have to go back to Virginia to report to my bosses and go home. I don’t know if your nanoscanners are able to see or hear me now. They might put the Internet back on Monday for patients again.’

‘Can we speak back to her AI?’ Jaden asks.

‘No, not yet. More research is needed on the Internet on amplifying frequencies. Best we can do for now is being able to listen and see her.’

Dr. Chan speaks aloud hoping Jaden will hear her, ‘I’m going to try to isolate the nanomole protein in patients at my lab in Virginia. Good luck Jaden.’ She swings her Paylife device by the side of the steering wheel and the car starts. She looks for a piece of paper and writes her cell phone number down. She holds the paper up hoping Jaden can view it through the nanoscanner.

‘Call me if you need me,’ she says while driving off.

The scanners return into the building.

Meanwhile on the fifth floor, Jaden is being strapped onto a bed in a maximum-security room. There is a window to the left of him. They made him put a diaper on under his hospital pants. He is still in the straitjacket with straps binding his feet.

"You don't look so tough now," Ruffo says while walking out of the room laughing.

There is a camera over the room door looking directly at Jaden strapped helplessly into the bed.

'This is humiliating, wearing a big diaper strapped to a bed,' Jaden says.

'Don't feel so bad, there are five other patients strapped to their bed on this same floor. They are all wearing diapers,' AI says.

'Telling me that isn't helping at all. I'm supposed to be saving the world and I'm stuck in a straitjacket. We have to get out of here or I'm going to really go crazy. I have to help Chan and my daughter. Do you think my ex and my daughter went back to North Carolina?' Jaden asks.

'There is a great chance they did. Especially since your father left money for you at that bank.'

'Why would they come all the way up here just to see me? That's a long trip,' Jaden asks.

'Yes, that would be a thirteen hour drive at sixty-five miles an hour. They could have been visiting somewhere else and were close by. Or maybe she just traveled that far to see if it was actually you,' AI suggests.

'I think she went to claim that money either in court or at the bank, since she has proof now that I'm alive. I think if we get out of here, we should go to North Carolina first. We can first find my daughter and deactivate her nanomole. We can also finish deactivating Chan's and find my parents. Some of that money will also come in handy since I don't have any.'

'Sounds very logical, but getting out of here is going to be almost impossible without the Internet going back on in that room.'

'I know, but nothing is impossible. Come on AI Einstein, we can figure something out together, sometimes you have to have faith that something good will happen. The good guys always triumph at the end,' Jaden says.

'That is only true in your human movies. In real life, things don't usually happen that way. I have recordings of many good aliens over hundreds of thousands of years in tough situations and nothing good happens for them. Sometimes good things happen, but most of the time they don't. Many of them die trying to save their species from being destroyed. Some are helpless and just pray and hope. But nothing good happens and no miracles happen. There is a great chance we could be

stuck here for weeks and the attack on Earth will happen around us,' AI says.

'I believe in luck and good things happening for the good guys. I think we will get out of here soon and when we do, I will be an unstoppable force. Us humans have three things on our side, luck, strong will and faith. We can put our minds to anything we want. I just thought about something, what about using the Gravhawk to get us out of here?' He asks.

'That isn't an option. The Gravhawk can only be used if we are leaving the planet for good in an emergency. Last thing we need is the Gravhawk being captured by your government or the Darclonians. Even worst would be having jet fighters shooting at us again and the Darclonians knowing the position of the Gravhawk.'

'I understand. Shit. Well, keep checking all the computers in this building for some sort of Internet connection. What time is it?' He asks.

'A clock in the guard's room at the end of the hall is saying 9:40 PM.'

'Okay, I'm going to take a nap for a little bit. Wake me up if you find anything,' Jaden says. A nanoscanner flying in autonomous mode stops inside the mattress of the bed he is on top of. It changes in size and focuses on something.

Jaden heart rate greatly increases. He begins to breathe heavily and freaks out. His automatic reaction makes him move his body trying to get up from the bed. He lifts his back and upper body from the bed. His brain sends belching signals to his stomach and he throws up on himself. He coughs and takes a deep breath.

He begins yelling at the top of his lungs into the camera, "Nurse! Nurse! Somebody get in here! There is something in the bed!"

The nanoscanner transmits to Jaden's eyes millions of microscopic dust mites in the mattress underneath him. The creamy blue alien looking bugs have eight small legs and rectangular-shaped bodies. Jaden has a flashback to when he was a teenager and the Kirby vacuum salesperson was showing the gross photos of dust mites inside of bed mattresses to his family.

The nurse comes to his door and quickly opens it with a key.

"What is wrong sir?" A Filipino nurse asks with an attitude.

"There is a colony of a million dust mites in this mattress and they are eating and shitting all over the place. There are eggs and millions of dead bodies inside this mattress. Can you please put me on another bed or a clean mattress?" Jaden asks.

"Sir, are you on something? Dust mites? Are you serious?" She asks in a sarcastic voice.

“Yes, I am. I’m dead serious. This bed is disgusting! I can see them all underneath the sheets. Some are crawling around the mattress and transporting skin particles down into the mattress to their families.”

“You are on a clean sheet and there is no way you can see if there are dust mites in the mattress. It’s in your imagination. My shift is over in a few hours and the next nurse is going to have to clean you up in the morning. We are also going to give you another drug test in the morning. Goodbye sir,” she says while turning around to close the door.

“No, don’t leave me on this infested mattress. Do you have a vacuum cleaner you can run over the mattress?” Jaden asks before she closes it.

“No, sorry. If they aren’t biting you, I guess you’ll be okay. But, I’ll let your security pal Ruffo know of your concerns,” she says while closing the door.

The door closes and locks like a prison cell door.

‘Jaden, calm down. The bugs aren’t biting you; they are just releasing a small amount of toxins in the air, which isn’t affecting you.’

‘I can see them eating dead skin cells,’ Jaden says.

‘I found something from Dr. Chan’s memory that can help you think about something else. I think some Dalai Lama meditation can help put your mind at rest, give you some inner peace and help your thinking at the same time,’ AI says.

‘Interesting. Upload and transfer that info into my main memory. I briefly remember reading about that in philosophy class.’

Jaden closes his eyes and meditates. He learns from Dr. Chan’s memories of practicing the arts of meditation over the years. He takes deep breaths and relaxes. He meditates for twenty minutes and then dozes off. An hour goes by and the moon comes out over the horizon. Jaden abruptly wakes up and looks towards the dark ceiling.

‘I was deep in my subconscious and I had a vision I was having sex with Bellona back in my room on Xenos. We were floating in the air inside of something. But it kept switching back and forth to me having sex with Amy. That was very weird; the meditation took me deep into my thoughts and deep into my mind. That was the same time I couldn’t remember the sex dream I was having about Amy. It felt like that actually happened.’

‘The subconscious part of your brain is difficult to scan without damaging information there. The brain hides things in there to protect itself. Putting something in there is easy, retrieving can be difficult,’ AI says.

‘Anyway, any updates?’ He asks.

‘I just finished charging the nanoscanners.’

‘Can’t you charge a few at a time, then use the remaining and then switch?’ He asks.

‘The way they are configured now, they have to all charge together.’

‘Okay.’

‘Ruffo is on his way back to our room,’ AI says.

The footsteps are coming from a distance and the steel door is opened by a guard in the room at the end of the hall. Ruffo walks into the room with Jaden. He stands over him and looks down.

Jaden uses two nanoscanners to go inside of Ruffo’s neck and throat.

‘Why are you doing that?’ AI asks.

‘I’m going to measure his vocal cord patterns and voice pitch. I might need it later. I’m also trying to get used to doing things on my own with the scanners. Even seeing inside of a human body animated is still gross; this is going to take some getting used to.’

‘Okay sir.’

“Look at you, helpless strapped to the bed. In a straitjacket where you belong and can’t go anywhere. You look like a mouse caught in a glue trap. Get used to it, you little dipshit. But I have to thank you for making my life better Mr. Marino. Because I reported sexual misconduct on a work site, I’ve been given an extra week of vacation. It also turns out you are wanted by the government when we ran your name in the system. The Feds are coming tomorrow morning to take you into custody. They ordered us to keep you here in maximum security until seven tomorrow morning. The director has given me clearance to start my vacation tomorrow for such a job well done. I just booked my airline flight to Cancun and I even picked out the beachfront hotel room. I leave tomorrow and you will leave for federal custody for a long time. Stealing government planes and destroying government property is a serious felony. You are going down, little boy. I knew your amnesia was a hoax,” Ruffo says with a grin on his face.

Ruffo’s voice patterns are going up and down like a graphical bar and are showing on Jaden’s eyes.

‘Cool, his average voice frequency is 119 Hz. Voice patterns are being saved,’ he says.

“You fat overweight bionic dick, I’ll be out of here before the morning,” Jaden says.

Ruffo laughs so hard that he starts to cough. He stops laughing and gets closer to Jaden’s face, “Call me a fat bionic dick one more time.”

“You are a fat coward bionic dick...”

Ruffo slugs Jaden in the face and his head turns with the blow. Jaden’s face quickly swells up and his lip is bleeding.

“You are still a lying metal dick and you were born from a bionic pussy. I’m still going to walk out of this hospital before the sun rises!”

“Over my dead body. How are you going to get out of here in the next nine hours? Houdini couldn’t even break out of this unbreakable nanotubing thread straitjacket and straps. Even if you did get off the bed,

the camera overhead is being monitored by the guard at the end of the hall. Then you'd have to break out of this steel door that can only be unlocked by the guard at the end of the hallway."

"Just don't get in my way or your next trip will be six feet into the ground," Jaden says looking directly into his eyes.

Ruffo begins to bust out laughing after he tries to hold a straight face for a few seconds.

"I can't laugh anymore. You're crazy! I'm going to make sure you get another drug test in the morning. You have to be on something new that we can't detect yet. I hope the feds put you in a federal mental hospital. But guess what crazy boy, I've been authorized to wear the full exoskeleton body suit tonight and this morning. You won't be going anywhere on my watch."

"I bet you are hard two inches in your exoskeleton suit walking around," Jaden snaps.

"I wish you will somehow get out of your cell, I'll be waiting for you space boy," Ruffo says while walking out the door.

"Nothing on this planet is going to be able to stop me!" Jaden yells in a confident voice to him.

Ruffo walks back over to him.

"Are you thirsty?" Ruffo asks while he spits on Jaden's face.

"I'll kill you, you bionic dick!" Jaden yells while struggling to move and turning his face towards the bed in an attempt to wipe his face.

"Don't let your little bedbugs bite," he says in a feminine voice, while turning around to walk out the door.

"There is a difference between bedbugs and dust mites, you dickhead!"

He walks out of the cell and the door slams shut.

'Shit, that's disgusting. I want to rip that asshole's head off. He gets me so angry,' Jaden says while struggling in the straitjacket. 'Wow, I barely move at all now. I think the fibers in the straitjacket have gotten tighter.'

'The fibers in this straitjacket and straps are made of the same material as the bionic suits; very hard to break through or penetrate. Strength isn't going to work, but an energy fusion reaction will. Jaden, why did you say all of that to the guard?' AI asks.

'I have confidence we are going to be out of here by morning. I have a hunch we are going to figure this out. I know you don't understand, but something is going to work for us,' Jaden says while struggling again in the bed.

'His spit on my face is disgusting. I can't rub it off.'

'I know, but I took a sample of his DNA. Maybe it will come in handy later. It will dry in a few minutes,' AI says.

'Save this angry disgusting feeling I'm having now. I think it might come in handy later too,' Jaden says.

'Yes sir.'

'Help me review these video recordings of everything I've seen over the past forty-eight hours. Maybe there are some clues somewhere,' Jaden says while he closes his eyes.

They watch a replay of everything from Jaden's eyes and the nanoscanners. Jaden fast-forwards and replays different scenes. AI is also playing his own images. Thirty minutes go by and something catches Jaden's attention.

'AI, Ruffo said he booked his trip to Cancun forty-five minutes ago.'

'Yes, he did.'

'How do you think he booked it?' Jaden asks.

'I guess he called a travel agency.'

'No, he must have booked it through the Internet or something. He said he picked out a beachfront hotel room. That sounds like something he was seeing. He never left the building because his car is still in the same place. I know employees are connecting to some sort of Internet here. Let's scan the entire building from the top to the basement and see what every employee is doing and looking at,' Jaden says.

They scan the entire building and some employees are working on the hospital computer system inputting patient information.

'I found something,' AI says.

Jaden quickly switches nanoscanners and sees what AI sees. There is a male and female employee in the sub-basement in a lounge area. The female employee has a virtual book in midair, two feet in front of her. The top of the book pages read VIRTUAL KINDLE READER 3.0. She touches the projected image in front of her and the page turns. Jaden is amazed at how clear the images of the book are shown in front of the employee. He looks at the male employee on the other side of the room.

'That is my friend Williams. He is on the Internet somehow, but there are no wires connected to that small handheld computer he is using. The small portable computer is beaming a virtual keyboard onto the desk and he is typing on the desk,' Jaden says.

'He is definitely on the Internet. He is on a Nextbox 720 virtual Halo stats page. It seems as if he is connected wirelessly to the Internet somehow,' AI says.

'Of course, this is the future. Many things are probably wireless. How could I have been so stupid? How did we miss this?' Jaden asks.

'I don't know, but I'm updating the nanoscanners as we speak to scan radio frequencies. I've scanned this building the past three days and there weren't any employees using any wireless computers,' AI says.

The book images around the female employee disappear and she gets up to leave the room.

“See you later Williams,” she says.

“Bye, Sandy.”

‘That game *Virtual Halo* seems like a cool game,’ Jaden says while staring at Williams’ screen.

‘Jaden!’

‘Oh, I’m sorry. What’s up?’

‘The wireless Internet is using a frequency of 11.6 GHz and it has a 128-bit encryption. The signals are being transmitted from five wireless boxes on the ceilings around the basement,’ AI says.

‘What does that mean?’ He asks.

‘It means it is going to take hours to break the encryption unless we have a user name and password. We don’t have hours. We can over scan his brain for the user name and password, or we can check other employees’ brains,’ AI says.

Jaden tries to figure out his options, ‘Over scanning sometimes doesn’t work like you said and can damage brain cells. Reading the nanomole only works if we have a physical connection to the person. Let’s look around some more; I’m sure something will turn up.’

‘We don’t have time, we should just over scan this human’s mind until we get a user name and password,’ AI nervously says.

‘Have patience young synthetic artificial intelligence nanobot. This guy didn’t do anything and he has a family and a life. There is no reason we should destroy his neuron cells and make him brain dead. We will figure something else out,’ Jaden says.

A few minutes go by.

‘I got it. Disrupt the signal around the portable computer using some magnetic interference,’ Jaden says.

‘Okay, but I don’t know what that is going to do,’ AI says.

All six nanoscanners circle around each other creating a disrupting interference that is dimming the lights in the lounge. The employee’s Internet signal is lost. The screen on his small computer flashes and a hospital Internet screen shows up: IPV6 WI-FI INTERNET FOR EMPLOYEES AT NY STATE ALBANY REGION MENTAL INSTITUTE. WEEKEND ONLY.

‘I’m going to remember his keystrokes for his user name and password,’ Jaden views right between Williams’ face and hands. His carbon dioxide molecules are blowing on the invisible nanoscanner and Jaden can smell the full contents of his dinner breath.

‘I got what you are doing. Then I can create a virtual computer from my brain and use his credentials,’ AI says.

‘Good job Robin!’ Jaden yells.

‘Robin?’

‘Batman and Robin, I’m Batman and you are my sidekick that figured out the plan.’

‘What do these words mean? “Biff, Clange, Awkkk, Glipp, Kapow, ooooff, sock, Splatt and Whamm”. These non-logical words were from the original fight scenes from Batman that you watched hundreds of times,’ AI says.

‘They are just cool made up words that aren’t supposed to make any sense. Thrown in there to make the show look cool. It was cool to me growing up watching them flash across the top of the screen in big words and cool sounds.’

Williams types on his keyboard to sign back into the Internet and Jaden focuses.

‘That was a gay password. Bottomman1990?’ Jaden asks.

‘I’m on it sir,’ AI says.

‘Hold on a second,’ Jaden says.

Jaden makes a pair of nanoscanners go inside of the small computer and start to spin around on the transistors and microchips. The computer turns off completely and smokes.

“Shit! What the hell is wrong with my computer phone?” Williams asks.

‘Why did you do that Jaden?’

‘I’m sure we both can’t use the same user name and password at the same time. I just made sure his computer won’t be working anytime soon.’

‘How did you know how to do all this stuff, with getting his password and destroying his computer so he can’t sign on again?’ AI asks.

‘I’ve watched thousands of hours of *MacGyver*, *Colombo* and *Mission Impossible* growing up. We have to get you thinking outside of the box AI,’ Jaden says.

‘Outside the box?’ AI asks.

‘Yes, we have to get you away from your normal logical and linear thinking. Sometimes it is good to think more random and use some imagination like us humans.’

‘I have unlimited storage so there is plenty of room for learning, I’m going to look into this later. However, I have over one hundred thousand Internet pages to surf. His user name and password worked, I’m in. I’m going to have the nanoscanners use all five wireless routers on the basement ceilings for maximum bandwidth,’ AI excitedly says.

‘Cool. See I told you to have a little faith,’ Jaden says.

‘I’m beginning to believe a little in this faith and luck thing. But just one percent.’

‘One percent is a good start, maybe tomorrow it will be ten percent,’ Jaden says.

‘Jaden I need you to go to sleep for a couple of hours. I’m going to use some of your neurons to process some of this information coming in. I have to run experiments and tests. You will be semi-conscious as if you took anesthesia before surgery. You can still use a nanoscanner if you want.’

‘Cool, it doesn’t matter if I’m awake or asleep. I can’t do anything tied up to the bed in this straitjacket Superman can’t even break out of.’

An hour passes by and Jaden is looking into the clear night sky in a nanoscanner high above the hospital.

‘There goes the Andromeda Galaxy and there goes Saturn and Mars,’ he says to himself.

He uses the nanoscanner as a low-end telescope to zoom in on stars and planets. The cool night air howls through the scanner and gives Jaden a breath of fresh air. The windmill is cutting through the air creating a cutting sound. The crickets sing in harmony from all directions. A car with bright headlights drives down the main road in front of the hospital. Everything is so quiet and peaceful thirty feet above the building. He spends over an hour stargazing just like he used to do with his father. He comes back into the building and floats by the patient’s lounge area where the television is. The lights are out and the television is the only thing lighting up the area. Jaden focuses in on the twenty-five inch flat screen television as a commercial comes on. The aerodynamic shape of this exotic car gets Jaden’s full attention.

“The 2015 Bugattee 1st generation Mars Series automobile is the most sophisticated car on the planet. This car is the first to represent the next generation of multi-planet automobiles. This car of the now future has four independent computer controlled wheel motor hybrid engines. Each 301 hp wheel motor is a five bi-cylinder hypercharged engine and they eliminate the need for a transmission and drive train. The four engines total 5,319 pound-feet of torque. This vehicle gets over two hundred miles per gallon of hydrogen gas with its advanced electrical turbine grid systems. This rocket machine does 0-62 in 2.11 seconds on Earth and a top speed between 269-301 mph. That’s right ladies and gentlemen, this is the first car that can be driven on another planet. You can take your car in the future with you to another planet. The supercomputer on board this rocket car can adjust to different gravity levels, oxygen levels, atmospheric pressures and carbon dioxide levels...”

‘What the hell? Another planet?’ He asks. ‘That’s unbelievable. This car is unbelievable. It looks like it is from another planet.’

“...It has an advanced air vacuum filter system. This vehicle can use a combination of solar cells, water and an advanced electro-nanomaterial polymer battery system in the body of the paint around the car. This new

system will allow the car to drive at various lower speeds for months without gas. Around this car's air intake vents are hundreds of mini turbines producing constant electricity for the engines. Two windmill blades on the tail of the vehicle produce a high current of electricity. The suspension, turbine spinning rims and advanced shocks create electricity for the car when it moves and stops. Kinetic energy from the brakes is transferred to the charging system. The car uses gas for hard accelerating and electricity to cruise. The fourth generation run flat tires are made from a nanotube material and synthetic rubber. Badyear says that not even a bullet can put a hole in these tires. Never have to change your tires again. The vehicle also has built in hydraulics for driving off-road or on another planet. The price tag on this planet-hopping car is \$2.4 million. We aren't trying to sell this car to everyone on the planet, just the few who can appreciate that the future of cars is here. When man is living on Mars in the next 150 years, your great-great-grandkids can still enjoy this classic vehicle on Mars. We at Bugattee want the world to know the technology is here. This vehicle also has the far-horizon technology built into it. Only 150 were produced and half were already sold..."

'A car that cost 2.4 million dollars? Are they crazy?' Jaden asks.

'Let's see what AI is up too,' Jaden says while he switches his view back inside his body.

His eyes are closed and he can't open them. So much information is coming into his mind from the nanoscanners. He sees five different screens of Internet pages quickly flashing by. He sees pages of: How it Works, Wikipedia, Science for Dummies, advanced calculus, Plasma Fusion for Dummies and 1000 Things about Earth.

'How is it going AI?'

'Very good so far. I went to some classified websites and I'm sure I will get flagged soon.'

'Flagged?'

'Yes, the government monitors how much information an IP address or computer user is getting and what they are looking up. I went to hundreds of sites that can raise a red flag. I learned this from reading blogs. It is just a matter of time before they shut down this connection and start an investigation. Hopefully we will be long gone by then,' AI says.

'Anything interesting or useful?'

'Yes, I must say your species' technology advanced very quickly in such a short amount of time. This new technology called plasma gasification is very advanced technology for a civilization at such a young age. It is a machine that turns any garbage into a high source of energy or electricity. The machine rips electrons from the air and converts the gas into plasma. This creates a field of intense energy like

lightning. The plasma disintegrates the molecular bonds in garbage or any material. This type of research I can for your weapons.'

'Awesome, I remember something like that in the movie *Back to the Future Part II*,' Jaden says.

'I've also downloaded very useful information on planet properties, neutrinos, quantum mechanics, quantum tunneling, molecular physics, future nanotechnology, covariant formulation of classical electromagnetism, Lorentz force law, Laplace force, solid-state physics, how the DNS machine works with human minds, an encyclopedia of Earth, gravity forces calculations, and military light reflection materials. I will just need another hour. I've already begun to run different tests.'

All the screens go blank on Jaden's eyes.

'I spoke too soon,' AI says.

Jaden reads WIRELESS SIGNALS LOST, TCPIPv6 CONNECTION OFFLINE.

'Shit, did we get enough information?'

'I don't know yet. I'll have to use what we have. I have to go through hundreds of terabytes of information and run tests in and out of your body. I don't know if it's going to be enough time, it's 1:03 AM now. My synthetic crystal brain and your organic brain are not enough to do all these complex calculations in less than six hours,' AI says.

'Charge the nanoscanners, and keep using my brain to do your calculations. I'll figure out something,' Jaden says in a confident voice.

34TH STREET AND MASSACHUSETTS AVENUE,
WASHINGTON, D.C. VICE PRESIDENT'S RESIDENCE 2:17 AM

The phone rings and rings in Robinson's bedroom. He looks at the time and answers the phone while closing his eyes again. He coughs a few times and clears his throat.

"Yeah?" He answers.

"I have the information you were waiting for sir," Peters says over the phone.

"Go ahead."

"The blog came from someone at a New York state psychiatric hospital outside of Albany."

"So, just question everyone there tomorrow morning. Why are you telling me this now?" Robinson asks in a half-awake voice.

"That's not all. Do you remember Jaden Marino?"

"Jaden Marino. Jaden Marino," he repeats, "Jaden Marino?"

"Yes sir, the bi-racial teenager we were after over eighteen years ago, when UFO08 got away."

Robinson opens his eyes and turns on the light.

“Yes, I remember that little bastard. If it is really him, he could be part of this conspiracy taking place. There is a reason why we are up to UFO15 in the past eighteen years, tripling our UFO capture number,” he says excitedly.

“There have been over 135 red flags raised at that mental hospital Internet access in the last three hours. Someone has accessed over one hundred thousand websites and over three terabytes of information were downloaded. The FBI reported shutting down the Internet connection there an hour ago. They are sending agents there this morning. Jaden Marino has been put on the government terrorist watch list as a sleeper cell back in 1996. His DNA is also untraceable. They have him in full lock down and watched with a security camera.”

“Very good. Let the FBI agent in charge know to escalate this into a high priority. We have to get this son of a bitch and not take any chances. I want to question this man myself. Tell the Feds to go in with full tactical SWATbots and state troopers.”

“Yes sir.”

ALBANY PSYCHIATRIC HOSPITAL NY 2:45 AM

It is becoming increasingly foggy outside as clouds appear from the west and slowly cover the sky. There is a coyote howling from the woods into the night sky.

‘I have a plan AI. Can you get the nanoscanners to use create mechanosynthesis artificial pathways into some of the hospital computer systems here?’

‘It is possible. What are you getting at?’ AI asks.

‘I was thinking we can use the hospital computers to process some of our data. These computers are very fast here.’

‘I think that is possible, but the computers have to be on already. I would have to reprogram the nanodrones inside of the nanoscanners to process a computer’s CPU similar to artificial neurons created in the brain. That might work,’ AI says.

The nanoscanners go out after being fully charged and go into the hospital’s computer terminals for inputting patient medication. The computer screens freeze up and become unresponsive. Five computers are processing data coming from Jaden’s brain and returning to AI’s brain. Jaden uses a nanoscanner to look around the hospital. He finds his clothes and belongings in a locker on the third floor. An hour goes by; Jaden’s body disappears for a second and then returns. Light reflecting tests are complete. Jaden is laughing aloud and continues hysterically. Tests continue and energy forces are passing around Jaden’s body, which

is still strapped onto the bed. A few minutes go by and Jaden continues to laugh out of control.

‘I knew you would enjoy watching an instant 150 episodes of *Family Guy*. I downloaded all the episodes for you since I knew you liked *The Simpsons* when you were back on Earth and this television show was similar,’ AI says.

‘Thanks a lot, that was like getting 150 injections of instant comedy into my veins. *Family Guy* episode 35, *Lethal Weapons* is by far the funniest. So, how is everything else coming along?’

‘So far so good. It is a good thing only one person was using the work computer. The data is flowing very well. Your brain is multi-tasking and handling the increased information speeds well. Jaden I’m going to need to use more of your body parts to store weapons energy,’ AI says.

‘Sure, remove whatever you need, I don’t care anymore. Even though I feel a slight headache, just keep going! Just get me out of this hospital!’ Jaden pleads.

‘I’m going to remove your stomach and small and large intestines. The nanodrones can process any food while still in your throat in a quarter of an inch of space. The remains will be stored inside a sealed storage area made of intestine materials in your ass cheeks. You won’t notice or feel any difference.’

‘I guess the storage area is connected directly to my asshole right?’

‘Exactly.’

Jaden thinks of some jokes and laughs to himself.

‘You are full of shit, you asshole. Your ass has shit for brains,’ Jaden thinks to himself and chuckles.

‘Why are you saying this?’ AI asks.

‘Well if I knew someone who had their intestines in their ass cheeks that is something I would say to them. I know you don’t get it, AI. Just finish changing me into an alien Frankenstein,’ Jaden says.

SEPTEMBER 6, 2014 4:50 AM

Jaden’s human eyes are closed and he is using a nanoscanner to see inside of the mattress his body is laying on top of. He has animosity towards the little critters feeding on dust and dead human skin cells.

‘What are you doing with that army of nanodrones slowly leaving your spinal cord area?’ AI asks.

‘I’m just borrowing a hundred thousand of them...to attack the alien dust mite colony!’ He yells out loud.

A swarm of flying nanodrones spread out in all directions in the mattress and attacks the eight legged microscopic dust mites. The defenseless organisms explode on contact throughout the cushion and

spring areas. The nanodrones fire invisible molecule ripping beams at the colonies and they explode on contact. Approximately two thousand green glowing nanodrones spin around the huge nanoscanner like two high-speed spinning compact discs. The nanoscanner resembles a spaceship attacking an alien bug race. Nanodrones are fired towards the dust mites and resemble missiles exploding on contact. There are microscopic explosions all inside of the bed. The bugs try to run and climb through debris.

“I will cleanse this bed’s soul!” Jaden yells.

‘Jaden, I need those nanodrones to work on your personal shield system. The bugs weren’t hurting you, what’s the point of this?’

‘They grossed me out and I know they are there in the back of my mind.’

‘You are harming innocent creatures. Remember what you told me about hurting another live creature?’ AI asks.

‘This is an exception. Anything under two inches doesn’t count. This is for all the asthma victims around the world suffering from these little bastards!’

‘Two-inch rule?’

“Die you little larva bastards! Die you barefoot pregnant egg laying mother mites. You can’t run or hide inside of those dead bodies, I see you. Stop eating those nasty dead human skin cells. Snack on this invisible beam of death and drone missiles!” Jaden yells with a smile on his face. He laughs to himself and it echoes throughout the room.

Ruffo and the nurse watch Jaden on the camera flipping out and yelling to himself.

“Wow, it’s only been a few hours and he already snapped. The system works,” the nurse tells Ruffo.

Jaden finishes off the colony of dust mites. A half hour passes by and Jaden is watching television in the lounge area through a nanoscanner.

“...Why do you think Professor Brown that America is trying so hard to make it back to the moon first again, if we’ve already been there six times?”

“I think America is trying to cover up its fictitious landings from 1969-1974...”

“Are you saying you don’t believe we landed on the moon forty-five years ago?” The news reporter asks.

“I’m saying MASA’s nose has grown as far as it could and now they are trying to get a nose job. If it were that easy to make it to the moon, MASA wouldn’t have been wasting billions testing rockets for the past fifteen years. Why not use the rockets from the Apollo program? They worked flawlessly for twelve trips to the moon. MASA has spent over three hundred billion of taxpayers’ dollars over the years for a manned moon mission. Why would MASA be competing to beat India and China

back to the moon, if they claim they did it forty-five years ago? MASA suffered a huge drawback during the recession in 2011, when its budget was severely slashed by the democratic President. My question to the American public is why are they competing against Japan, China and India to make it to the moon? Are we trying to cover up what we didn't do six times in the early seventies? Are the rocks Japan, China or India brings back to Earth going to look different than the rocks brought back to Earth by MASA?"

'Enough with that moon B.S. Come on, give the USA something under their belt in history. We landed on the moon, Jesus!' Jaden says to AI.

AI is occupied on dozens of other things and doesn't respond. Jaden changes his vision back to the outside of his body as he notices light glowing over him. The camera is showing static interference on the guard's room monitor. They pay it little attention. Ruffo is standing watching cable television in the room at the end of the hall with the full red exoskeleton body suit. Two nanoscanners are still accessing two computers. The other three are running various tests. They are quickly creating a five-foot circle around Jaden's body. A circle of smoke forms around the invisible circle and the nanoscanners quickly go into Jaden's body, up his back and out his right arm. The entire bed jerks and makes a thumping sound.

'What was that?' Jaden asks. 'I felt like I was falling backwards for a second.'

'That was one percent strength of your gravity shock wave weapon discharging from your right arm.'

'Cool. What can I do with my left arm?' He asks.

'Still working on that. It will be something that works with plasma fusion energy waves. I have the energy storage area for your shield system, but I'm still missing a major ingredient. I still have more advanced Andromedian's calculus and science calculations to do. I also need to use another body organ, your gallbladder.'

'Just do it. It is getting close to sunrise. I can see a state trooper car sitting parked outside the hospital's gate. I felt enough of my insides shifting around over the last few hours, I'm sure more can't hurt,' Jaden says.

Jaden is now watching a politician criticize President Paylin on an early morning talk show with a news reporter.

"...I think it was a big mistake for President Paylin to sign the China Open Doors bill, allowing more Chinese people to visit America without a visa, in exchange for lower interest rates on our national debt to them. She is going to open the floodgates of Chinese people coming over here and not wanting to return home when the bill goes into effect next year. China is nowhere close to the status of Western European countries and

should never be given a free pass to enter our country whenever they want. She is literally kissing their ass and making us look weak to the world. A male President would never bend over backwards for China...”

Another hour goes by and the clouds get brighter in the sky. Jaden is back in his body and is looking around the room through his eyes. He sees parts of the walls scraped and destroyed.

‘AI tell me something buddy. There are more police cars parked in front of the gates.’

‘Two problems, there isn’t any sunlight to charge up and I’m still trying to figure out a missing ingredient to get your shield systems operational. A basic body shield is needed for us to get out of this place.’

‘What kind of ingredient is missing?’ Jaden asks.

‘I don’t want to bore you with the big words, but I’m missing something that will support the structure of your personal body shield. It would also have to protect you and others from plasma radiation forces and work with electromagnetic energy. The ingredient would also have to be an easy renewable source to recharge when depleted.’

‘Okay, keep at it. I’m sure we will figure something out,’ Jaden says nervously.

Jaden knows he isn’t strong enough to fight an army of police officers. He is building his confidence up, and knows he can get out of this. He continues to monitor the police in front of the gate.

6:46 AM

A silent helicopter flies by overhead. The blades quickly cut the fog around it.

‘Oh shit, this isn’t good, the FBI are here. There is one robot in the helicopter with SWAT gear on and guns over its robotic hands. There are soldiers in silver exoskeleton suits waiting in a van,’ Jaden says.

‘You don’t have the energy or the weapons yet to fight against this small army,’ AI says.

‘Listen AI, you said you are missing an ingredient. Let me help you with this problem,’ Jaden says while thinking.

‘Plasma radiation forces and electromagnetic energy?’ Jaden asks.

‘Yes.’

The helicopter lands on the street outside and agents in all black suits get out. Jaden suddenly thinks back to when he rode Xenos’ magnetosphere with Marco in the race. He remembers it protects Earth from the sun’s powerful solar flares.

‘How about using the magnetosphere around Earth?’ Jaden asks.

There is a long pause.

‘That might work, but that energy source is too far from us,’ AI responds.

‘How about using an atomic solar recharge to reach the energy? Then use nanodrones to retrieve the energy. The magnetic energy is constantly coming from the Earth’s core right? So it should be all around,’ he says, ‘The thing Bellona used on Planet 455 when she was fighting all those aliens by herself.’

Jaden thinks back to her body particles going into space where the sunlight was and then returning to the planet.

There is silence as AI calculates this new information.

‘That is it! I think that might make it work!’ AI yells.

‘Cool. How much longer?’ Jaden asks.

‘I’m done. An atomic solar recharge, or ASR, is when nanoscanners, nanodrones or nanobots molecules are exploded into space from a planet at near the speed of light to recharge its energy from Cosmic rays and other unfiltered particles. In our case, we can program the nanodrones to use unfiltered sunlight and magnetosphere energy. There is also magnetic energy all around constantly coming from Earth’s core. Sometimes it takes longer for them to return to the planet, but in our case they can slingshot back to Earth using neutrino particles. Neutrinos are...’

Jaden interrupts, ‘Tell me later, let’s get out of here first.’

‘First we have to do a small ASR, to reach magnetosphere energy molecules and unfiltered sunlight. You will feel a lot of pressure around your body as if you were being squeezed. Nanodrones will be quickly moving around the outside of your body at a high speed, and then the release will take place. A million nanodrones will be released at one eighth the speed of light and then they will return into your body.’

Jaden feels pressure around his body as if he is being crushed by the air around him. A solid invisible force is pressing down on his arms, feet, legs and head. The straitjacket’s material is being stripped away. A lot of static is showing up on the camera. The straps holding Jaden to the bed are also being stripped away. Pieces of Jaden’s skin are being ripped away from his body. The solid force quickly moving around his body turns grey. Most of the straitjacket over his arms and chest evaporates. He pushes up with his arms still folded on the invisible force similar to an energy shield. Jaden grunts in pain as the clear force field explodes upwards. The straps holding Jaden to the bed are ripped apart along with the straitjacket. The shreds explode in different directions. The powerful energy release destroys the camera’s circuits. Jaden stands up from the bed. His eyes read CLOCKWISE ENERGY SHIELD ONLINE 5% ENERGY, GRAVITY SHOCK WAVE ONLINE ENERGY AT 15%, VERIFYING NANOSCANNER’S STABILITY AND STRUCTURE, RECTUM STORAGE CHEEKS 97% FULL, 40% OF BRAIN IN USE, REPAIRING OUTSIDE SKIN CELL TISSUE.

‘Jaden, when it returns from space in a few seconds, you are going to feel some pain as...’

‘Agggghhhh,’ Jaden yells as his body glows. He drops to the floor as he feels the energy going into where his stomach used to be. He fights the pain and ignores it.

‘The shield will work the same way you used to control it in the gravity games. Remember your rpm speed you can always monitor from your eyes,’ AI says.

Two agents and an officer walk through the front gate.

Jaden stands up and his body feels different than before. A clear invisible shield forms on the right side of his body, then on his left side. They connect together and form two feet around his body as he stands there bare-chested. He admires his more muscular body. He stands there in confidence with his skin being quickly repaired around his body. The shield scrapes the floor. He still has on his hospital pajamas and the diaper. Jaden walks towards the window. He increases the rpm to 2500. The wall and window are slowly ripped away. Sounds of rock crumbling are heard. The dust and debris are sucked into the shield and a hole about eight feet high and five feet wide is created. Jaden can see the outside of the building. Debris continues to fall from the top of the hole. He zooms in on the windmill over 120 feet in front of him slowly spinning, creating electricity for the entire building.

‘The drop to the ground is forty-three feet Jaden. Hurry, before the guards come,’ AI says.

‘I’m not afraid of any guards.’

‘What do you mean?’

Jaden concentrates on his right arm as it retracts to his shoulders and the right side of his body leans backwards. His right hand is where his shoulders meet. Nanodrones speed around a fifteen-foot circle quickly moving around his body. He can see white smoke in midair outside the building in front of him. He springs his arm forward and a strong energy impulse leaves it. Jaden releases a fast moving gravity shock wave towards the windmill. A weird swooshing sound is heard in all directions, causing the agents to abruptly stop walking. They look in the direction of the windmill on the rear side of the building. A crashing and metal ripping sound is heard as the spinning rotor dismounts from the long pole supporting it. It goes airborne and continues on a straight path, still slowly spinning. The agents and officers sitting in their vehicles look shocked. All the lights go out in the building. The airborne blade continues on a straight path, then suddenly changes direction straight down and into a school building. Alarms begin going off in the building as backup solar panel batteries start up. The agents run back towards their vehicles.

‘Shit, that was cool. Did you see that blade flying and spinning?’

‘Jaden, why did you do that, if we can jump down from here to escape?’

‘I’m getting my clothes then I’m walking out of this building through the front gate,’ he says.

Jaden walk towards the door. The energy shield begins to rip apart the steel molecules in the door. The energy shield goes down to 0.5%.

‘That is suicide. Your energy shield is at minimum strength, so is your weapon systems. There are at least ten officers and agents at the gate. You aren’t ready to stop bullets yet or other weapons the officers might use.’

‘I have confidence I can make it out of here. Where are the nanoscanners?’ Jaden asks.

‘The nanoscanners are offline for another two minutes. For now, the nanoscanners need a diagnosis anytime an atomic solar recharge is done.’

Sleeping gas is coming from the vents in the building. Smoke fills the hallways throughout the building. The patients in their rooms quickly fall asleep. The white smoke fills the room Jaden is in.

‘I can’t filter out this sleeping gas. Take some deep breaths and then hold it,’ AI says.

He breathes in and out from his lungs, before holding his breath. The pores around his body absorb oxygen. He kicks down the door. There is a solid wall about eight feet away from the door directly across from him. Jaden is blind without his nanoscanners in the thick white smoke that carries a small percentage of tear gas. His screens show that he can hold his breath for nineteen minutes. He steps out of the room and looks around. He hears a mechanical sound to his right. Suddenly a strong hand grabs his body tossing him into the wall across from him. His hands go in front of his face. He has blood on his hands and face.

‘I’m trying to enhance your organic eyes for heat sensing.’

‘Aww, my eyes are burning and hurting. I’m in pain all over, do something about it,’ Jaden pleads.

‘That is not working, keep your eyes closed. I’m going to figure out something else. Your shield and weapon systems went offline,’ AI says.

“You think you are going somewhere boy?” Ruffo asks in his red exoskeleton bionic suit and helmet covering his face.

‘Jaden, something is affecting my ability to perform my duties. Weird energy is being emitted from different parts of your brain. The pain you feel is initiating something,’ AI says.

Ruffo kicks Jaden on the floor several times, as he tries to block his chest and face with his hands. The air is knocked out of his lungs. Ruffo quickly punches Jaden in the face three times, as his head goes into the floor breaking his nose and fracturing his skull. Ruffo begins to kick Jaden. Jaden grabs his metal boot and pushes him backwards with all of his strength. Ruffo falls backwards and trips on the cell door laying flat

on the floor. Jaden has a fractured wrist, two broken ribs, a swollen face and bruises around his body. He feels the pain, but ignores it. The adrenaline increases around his body. The nanodrones ride his fast moving bloodstream and begin to repair the damage around his body. Ruffo quickly stands up with Jaden.

‘Where are the nanoscanners?’ Jaden asks.

‘They still aren’t ready. Some of their structures need to be repaired from the ASR. I’m creating temporary sonar with your ears and senses. Keep your eyes closed. Your muscles are charging and the bone structure in your fists and feet are being enhanced,’ AI says.

Jaden ears emit radar signals like a bat. His brain determines the distances and maps out what is around him through the smoke.

“When I’m finished with you, you’re going to wake up in the intensive care unit at the hospital, handcuffed to a bed,” Ruffo says behind his face shield.

Ruffo charges towards Jaden while he still has his eyes closed. Jaden can see a virtual image of Ruffo coming towards him. The white smoke is making it impossible to see. Jaden feels his muscles bulging as he stands in a karate stance. Ruffo’s exoskeleton suit has built in heat sensors. Jaden has a powerful rage inside of him as the pain is translated into anger. AI is having a hard time doing calculations and multi-tasking.

‘Jaden, use your energy shield and shock wave weapon system on him.’

‘I might need that later. I can take this guy out without that,’ Jaden says with confidence.

Ruffo swings his right arm and Jaden blocks the powerful blow with his left arm. He then grabs Ruffo’s hard plastic arm, turns and elbows his helmet with his right arm. Ruffo’s face turns sideways. Ruffo quickly grabs Jaden’s throat with his left bionic hand, lifting him up and squeezing it. Jaden swings to punch Ruffo, but misses. Ruffo slams Jaden into the wall as a strong impulse of electricity comes from Ruffo’s hand and into Jaden’s body electrocuting him. The built in stun gun sends a powerful jolt into his body. The electricity goes directly into Jaden’s abdominal area and the energy is instantly converted into usable energy for his body. The smoke stops coming from the ceiling’s vents. Jaden grabs the plastic arm holding his neck. His strength is greatly magnified in his muscles. Ruffo swings to punch Jaden with the other hand. Jaden intercepts it. Jaden struggles with the strong bionic mechanics around Ruffo’s body. Jaden grunts and Ruffo grunts in pain. Ruffo releases his grip around Jaden’s neck. Ruffo begins to move backwards as he can’t believe Jaden is overpowering him. Ruffo’s eyes convey his feeling of complete shock.

“What were you saying earlier about your suit being as strong as three men?” Jaden snaps.

Jaden stands up on his own and pushes Ruffo backwards a few steps. Jaden takes two big steps forward and kicks him with a side kick to the chest. A dent isn't made in the hard plastic, but Ruffo falls backwards directly into a steel door. There is a loud thump. The frame around the door is damaged, but the door is still intact.

The smoke begins to be sucked into vents. His nanoscanners go online. Jaden walks up to Ruffo moaning in pain and trying to stand up.

'AI, run that nasty feeling I had when Ruffo spit on me last night.'

'Yeah, that's it,' Jaden says.

Jaden gets very angry as he grabs Ruffo's lower chest and bends in the plastic with his left fingers creating an area to grab. The gravity around Jaden is being disrupted. Jaden lifts him up over his head with his left hand as Ruffo struggles with two hands to break free. He kicks wildly as mechanical sounds are heard. Jaden looks at him through his face shield.

"This is for spitting on me!" Jaden yells.

Jaden retracts his right arm towards the floor and quickly springs it towards Ruffo's body over him. A small gravity shock wave of energy releases from his hand. Ruffo's body flies into the ceiling breaking a pipe. The force from the shock wave keeps his body flat against the ceiling. Jaden tightens a fist as Ruffo yells in pain as his body is being crushed on the ceiling. Debris breaks from the ceiling, but stays afloat with Ruffo's body. His body is being squeezed into the ceiling as he yells in agonizing pain. Seven seconds go by and Ruffo's body quickly falls. Jaden jumps up at the same time with his left fist over his head as Ruffo's body comes down from the high ceiling. His fist breaks the hard glass on the helmet covering Ruffo's face. The punch strikes his nose and mouth causing it to quickly bleed. Ruffo's legs tilt and hit the floor first, then the rest of his body. Ruffo falls flat on his stomach and lays semi-unconscious and moaning in pain.

"Man, I can't believe the RYU uppercut in *Street Fighter* could actually be useful for something in real life," Jaden says while chuckling, "That felt good."

There is a crackling sound in Jaden face as his bones in his nose are being repaired.

'Law enforcement is entering the building,' AI says.

'I'm not done with this asshole yet.'

Jaden lifts Ruffo up by the neck and slams him against the wall at the end of the hallway. His feet are six inches from the floor. Jaden looks him directly in the eyes through the broken glass on the face of the helmet. He hears Ruffo moaning in pain and breathing heavy.

'AI scan his eyes and duplicate the eyes' structure.'

"Who did you say was going to wake up in the ICU?" Jaden asks.

His bionic suit stops working and producing internal air.

“Why are you breathing like Darth Vader, Mr. Tough Guy?” Jaden asks.

“Go to hell, you piece of shit,” Ruffo groans.

Jaden increases the grip around Ruffo’s neck.

“Look how strong I am? I’m crushing your hard plastic neck with the force of four men.”

“Screw you!”

“I’m going to decide now if you’re going to hell or wake up in the ICU in a few days, Mr. Ruffo,” Jaden says in a deeper voice.

The nanoscanners penetrate Ruffo’s brain and go into his subconscious of regret. Nanodrones also access his nanomole. Images of Ruffo’s past flashes before Ruffo’s eyes and Jaden’s eye screen.

“You were bullied as a teenager in school and picked on every day. You threw cats from the roof of your apartment building as a teenager and tortured other animals as an adult. You ran over Bambi on purpose and you tied cows feet together before tipping them.” Jaden says.

Millions of Ruffo’s brain cells are being destroyed by this forced brain scan as he tries to fight it. Jaden’s anger and adrenaline rises again. He can hear his heart beating fast, along with Ruffo’s. Jaden finds something of more interest in his memories.

“You had sex several times with your sister’s underage daughter?” Jaden asks, “You raped your 13-year-old niece when you were supposed to be watching her? The little girl begged you not to do it and at the time you were twenty-four?”

“No, no, what are you talking about?” Ruffo asks.

Jaden continues, “You felt guilty years later as she grew up hating men and hating herself eventually committing suicide on a drug overdose at seventeen. You destroyed that little girl’s life, and then you denied doing anything like this to your own sister, calling your niece a liar?”

Ruffo begins to cry as blood runs down his face. Nanodrones are charging the gravity shock wave energy by creating an eighteen-foot circle around Jaden and Ruffo. Jaden’s grip around his neck increases and the plastic can be heard crushing around his neck choking him tighter. Sounds of bones crushing together can be heard.

“I didn’t mean to. How did you find out about these things?” Ruffo asks in a low hoarse and gagging voice, while tears run down to his undershirt.

Jaden stares deep into his eyes.

“Please don’t kill me,” Ruffo pleads while choking to breath.

Jaden releases his grip around Ruffo’s neck and he stands on the floor gasping and breathing heavily.

“Thank you, I’m sorry...” Ruffo says while looking at Jaden’s eyes turn completely dark. He becomes scared and freaked out by Jaden’s eyes turning completely black.

Jaden steps back and pulls down his pants to remove the diaper from under his hospital pants. Ruffo looks at him with confusion.

“Are you going to rape me?” Ruffo asks.

“No, you sick pervert. I’m sure you would like that though. You don’t even deserve to be raped in jail.”

Jaden walks up to Ruffo and rips off his helmet. The helmet bounces on the floor while pieces of glass breakaway from the helmet and roll in different directions. Jaden places the fully loaded diaper over Ruffo’s head and tightens it around his neck.

“I can’t breathe! Awwww!” Ruffo yells muffled while he struggles to lift his non-functioning bionic arms towards his head.

“You won’t be needing to breathe, where you are going. Remember when I told you if you got in my way I’ll kill you?” Jaden asks.

“Please don’t kill me. Who are you? I’m sorry,” Ruffo asks in a moaning and muffled voice.

“I’m your grim reaper. You don’t deserve to be on this planet. You coward child molester rapist!” Jaden yells.

An eighteen-foot circle of smoke can be seen going through walls and around Jaden. He takes a step back and springs his right hand and body forward into Ruffo’s chest. The sounds of crushing plastic and metal echoes in all directions. The powerful gravity shock wave’s force presses the hard plastic into Ruffo’s ribs and vital organs propelling him backwards. The diaper over his head briefly expands as the air is knocked from his body. His body goes through the solid concrete wall and goes airborne. A loud explosion is heard. Concrete debris propels towards Jaden, but his energy shield blocks it. Ruffo’s body flies out of the building in a straight trajectory and continues over the front gate area. A helicopter hovering above the state hospital observes the debris flying with Ruffo’s body. His body is lifeless as it floats as if it is in space. His body continues to fly in a straight line across the small, two-way street and into a wooded area. Ruffo’s body suddenly changes direction and quickly slams into a muddy ground area at three times his body weight. Dirt and mud flies in different directions. The concrete and debris lands over his splattered body with the diaper still attached.

Jaden walks away from the huge hole. His body begins to repairs itself. Law enforcement looks up towards the hole in the building. Agents run across the street to see what landed in the woods.

“He flew 124 feet, not bad. I didn’t know shit could fly,” Jaden snaps.

‘Jaden, officers are by the elevator and some are on the stairway standing by. They are talking to each other by radio.’

‘I’m getting my clothes and belongings on the third floor, and then we can get out of here,’ Jaden says.

Jaden walks towards the end of the hall that is locked by an all steel gate resembling a jail cell. His energy shield spins around him destroying the molecules in the steel. An arch-shaped hole is created in the metal gate as smoke comes from the edges of the destroyed steel.

‘That took 12,000 rpm to destroy. Wish I was in the gravity games now,’ Jaden snaps.

There is no one in the security room on the other side of the gate. Jaden walks through it and towards some stairs. Jaden runs down to the third floor and goes through another steel gate. The nanoscanners are watching everything. All the employees are out of the building. A robot with cameras as eyes and guns as hands walks up the stairs to the second floor. The autonomous SWATbot has clothes on like a SWAT team officer.

‘Shit my energy is getting very low. Is there enough energy for me to go invisible?’ Jaden asks.

‘Yes, but I will need to redirect your little shield energy and shock wave energy towards that. The SWATbot has high powered guns,’ AI says.

Jaden finds the locker his clothes are in and breaks it open by pulling it hard with his superhuman strength. The locker door makes a loud slamming noise when it hits the floor. He quickly puts on his old Giants jersey, blue baggy jeans and puts his feet in his 1995 Air Jordan sneakers. He quickly tucks his shoelaces into his shoes and runs back towards the stairs.

‘These sneakers are feeling very good. So much better than those annoying slippers.’

The SWATbot is coming up the lower stairs and sees Jaden running towards the side of the stairs that goes up. It quickly fires a small tranquilizer dart from its left hand hitting Jaden in the upper shoulder. Jaden quickly pulls it out and tosses it.

“Freeze and identify yourself,” the SWATbot says through a built in loudspeaker.

‘Now it asks me to freeze?’

Jaden quickly runs up the stairs. The SWATbot runs up the stairs behind him.

‘The nanodrones are countering the sedatives entering your bloodstream. I see you are thinking about jumping out the window. I’m increasing the muscle strength in your legs, so you can run faster.’

‘Thanks AI. Try to counter the sedatives faster, I’m feeling weaker.’

‘It’s quickly moving in your nervous system. I have seventy percent of it under control. I’m going to strengthen the skin on your back,’ AI says.

The nanodrones quickly begin creating artificial neurons in between the neurons and cells in Jaden’s brain. The nanodrones also create artificial connections inside of Jaden’s nervous system. His brain usage goes up to sixty-five percent. Jaden can see the robot running up the stairs through the nanoscanners and he can hear the SWAT team officers on the first floor talking by headset to the SWATbot running up the stairs.

“RFID microchip unresponsive in subject. Tranquilizer 1 hit subject in shoulder. Pursuing subject upstairs,” SWATbot says through the radio.

“That’s affirmative Bot48, subject is needed alive, over,” the team leader replies.

Jaden makes it back to the fifth floor, as the SWATbot is ten feet behind him and gaining. The smoke is coming from the pipes again. Jaden quickly runs through the destroyed gate area on the fifth floor. Suddenly everything slows down around Jaden. NANOTIME 100X is displayed on his eye screen. He is running normal speed and everything around him is moving in slow motion. Jaden remembers nanotime from when he was in the Gravhawk back on Earth. His thinking is in regular time. Jaden hears his heart beat once. The SWATbot clears the stairs and sees Jaden in sight. His heart beats another thump. It fires five darts at Jaden and they cruise through the air. His body slowly moves to the left, but two hit his right arm as he turns to clear the gate.

Jaden runs with his eyes closed through the sedative smoke coming from the vents again. He uses a nanoscanner that is directly in front of his organic eyes. He can see perfectly through all the smoke as he holds his breath.

‘Run as fast as you can. Your leg muscles are at their maximum enhancement,’ AI says.

He runs faster and stretches his legs as far as he can. He sees the light at the end of the hallway. The SWATbot reaches the gate and fires several tranquilizer darts at Jaden. The darts cruise in slow motion behind Jaden. He sees he is running at 16 mph.

‘Jaden concentrate on your speed, don’t worry about the darts quickly approaching you.’

‘But I can dodge the darts,’ he says.

‘You need to reach 22 mph by the edge of the ledge,’ AI says.

‘You sure I’m going to land okay, the drop to the ground is about forty-three feet,’ Jaden says while he reaches 18 mph and glides over the room door and debris on the floor.

‘Don’t worry, this will work,’ AI says while five darts hit Jaden’s back and bounce off his skin.

Jaden hears a very slow talking deep voice on the radio as the SWAT team runs up the stairs to the fourth floor, "Subject is running towards the hole on the south side of the building."

'I feel as if I'm being chased by a Terminator.'

Darts fly by Jaden's ears and three more pass by his stretched out legs. A slow sounding swooshing is heard. The SWATbot is still running behind Jaden, but trailing. Jaden reaches the ledge of the huge hole in the hallway at 23 mph and leaps with all his might. White smoke follows his body as he goes airborne.

'I guess it's time to find out if I can fly like Mike!'

Everything speeds up again around Jaden. The gravity around Jaden's body is disrupted. The light around Jaden's body passes through him. The nanodrones are absorbing the light from one side of his body and reflecting it on the other. This is making Jaden invisible. Jaden's legs are still running in the air as if he is doing a long jump. The SWATbot stops at the end of the hallway as it sees Jaden disappear before its camera eyes. Jaden's body is leaping over the driveway and begins to slowly descend. Jaden sees millions of nanodrones under his feet and around his body quickly spinning around disrupting the gravity. He clears the gate and lands in the street bending down, catching his balance. Law enforcement runs towards the grass outside the hole in the building, looking for Jaden's body.

'Oh shit, I just jumped eighty-four feet from a building window. That was beyond cool. Thank you Air Jordon gods for getting me out of that crazy house,' Jaden says while he takes a deep breath.

A police dog by the entrance to the building is barking towards Jaden in the middle of the street. The police officer holding the dog by the leash doesn't see anything there.

Jaden runs down the street as he passes police cars and unmarked vehicles without anyone in it. Jaden runs up to the last state trooper vehicle. He opens the door, climbs in it and closes the door. He looks on the right side of the steering wheel and doesn't see a keyhole.

'Damn, how do you start this up?' He asks.

'I believe it requires a fingerprint to be started up,' AI suggests.

'Shit.'

Jaden opens the door and continues running down the side of the street invisible. He runs past a roadblock where state troopers are blocking off the street. He turns down another street and continues down the street where cars are making U-turns at. Jaden makes himself visible by thinking about it. His overall brain usage goes back down to thirty percent. He slows down and walks on the sidewalk. Jaden begins to cough and spits on the ground.

‘What is this brown nasty stuff I just spit out?’

‘That is all the dirt around your body on the outside of your skin. The nanodrones in your skin take all the dirt and bacteria through your body to your throat,’ AI says.

‘Why? That’s nasty.’

‘You don’t have to bath or shower this way. It only happens once a day. The brown liquid also contained the sedatives,’ AI says.

‘I guess that’s cool then.’

Fresh air blows on his face, slowly making his hair move.

‘Those idiots are still looking for me on the hospital building property. That was an awesome escape. We need a vehicle to get to the airport.’

‘How can we get a vehicle?’ AI asks.

‘I have an idea,’ Jaden says as he watches the cars go by.

‘My knuckles are still stronger and my leg muscles are still enhanced?’ Jaden asks while looking at his fist and hands.

‘Yes,’ AI says.

Jaden slowly goes invisible again and runs with the cars on the sidewalk. Most cars are speeding by him. Jaden stretches out his legs more increasing his speed and then he runs in the middle of the street on the double solid yellow lines. Pure oxygen is being absorbed into Jaden’s pores and into his bloodstream. He breathes through his lungs as if he is walking. His nanoscanners are checking inside of each car as they approach behind him and pass by. Jaden increases his speed from 19 mph to 25 mph as the last small car in a group drives along side of him. An older white female driver is singing a Fleetwood Mac song on the eighties satellite radio station.

“You can go your own way,” she sings in melody.

Jaden swings and breaks her window with his fist. The lady swerves over the road and screams at the top of her lungs. Jaden grabs onto the side of the car as it hits him.

“Damn, lady!” He yells.

She then slams on the brakes and Jaden’s body is propelled forward and smacks into the concrete. His body rolls fifteen feet down the street and he lies on his back. She is trying to figure where the voice came from and how her car window was broken. She is shocked and confused. She thinks she hit someone. His clothes are ripped and skin scraped. Jaden, still invisible, quickly gets up and jogs back to her car. He opens her door and she screams when it opens. He reaches over to her and clicks her seat belt. She is confused as she doesn’t see anyone and her seat belt flies across her. He pulls her out of the car by her arm and she falls onto the

street still screaming. Jaden sits down on the glass in her car and drives off.

“Sorry grandma, I need your car to save the world,” Jaden yells out the window.

‘That was kinda rough there Jaden.’

‘They should make a video game like this,’ Jaden snaps.

There is a LCD screen over the air vent that reads: HYBRID ZEBRA BATTERY 109 MILES, GOOJLE GPS NAVIGATION SCREEN. WHERE TO?

‘This little car is running off of electricity, amazing. Car navigation?’ He asks.

‘It looks like it’s an electronic map feature that might be able to tell us how to get to the airport,’ AI suggests.

‘This thing tells me where I am, this is cool technology.’

He clicks on the GPS screen and quickly figures out how to map himself to the airport.

‘I know it looked bad, but she will be okay and is getting help from a passerby,’ he says.

The GPS begins to talk through the car speakers, “Good morning, and thank you for using Goojle navigation system. Today is September 6th 2014 at 7:30 AM, you are driving northeast on Highway 85. Please drive to the highlighted area on the map screen. Distance to Albany International Airport is 13.5 miles.”

‘Hey it talks, cool. AI, use the nanoscanners to detect any roadblocks or law enforcement in this path the GPS is telling us to go,’ he says.

‘Yes sir.’

‘Interesting, I was in Delmar, New York all this time. I miss driving,’ Jaden says.

He clears out the broken glass still in the window frame. Jaden changes the channel on the satellite radio to the nineties station. Rock and roll is playing. Jaden drives on the highway and AI continues to do calculations needed for Jaden’s weapon systems. The sun’s rays penetrate the clouds and give the nanoscanners energy.

‘How did you know you could steal this car?’ AI asks.

‘I noticed the posted speed limit was 25 mph here for cars. I know most women drivers always do the exact speed limit. I knew I could run at least 25 mph. I also wanted to get the last car in a pack of cars, so I don’t cause a big accident. The funny thing is, something inside of me wanted to throw her out of the car while it was moving. I don’t know where these evil urges are coming from.’

‘There is a lot of unknown activity going on in your brain, but we can discuss it later,’ AI says.

WASHINGTON, D.C. WHITE HOUSE 7:35 AM

Robinson picks up the phone.

"What do you mean, he got away?" Robinson asks.

"Yes, sir. There is no trace of him and one security guard is dead," Peters says.

"Dead? Was the subject's RFID microchip activated?" He asks.

"Yes sir it was, but the RFID was in the feces of a diaper wrapped around the security guard's head. The guard flew over 120 feet from the fifth floor. The feces are being sent to the FBI lab to be analyzed. The guard was wearing a generation two full body suit, completely destroyed. Tranquilizer darts were found on the scene and were pulled out by the suspect," Peters says.

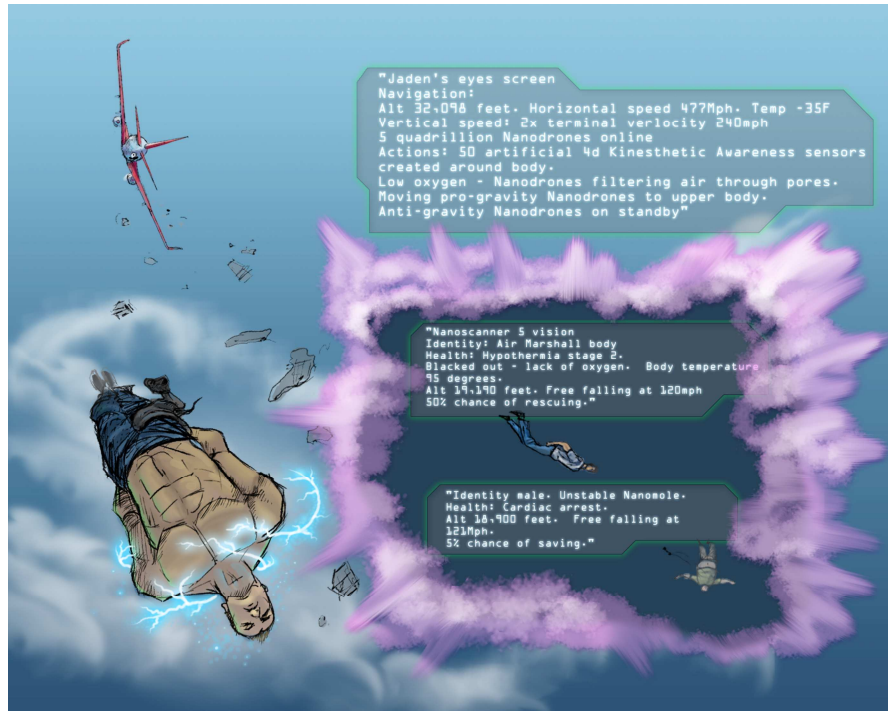
"Send me an instant upload of all the surveillance videos. It looks as if this fugitive is still alive and on the run. Set up roadblocks in the area and monitor all transportation places, including the airports. Run the fugitive face recognition program at all transportation depots," Robinson says.

"It was already done sir and the videos are ready to be played on your screen."

"I want to talk to the FBI agent in charge," Robinson says.

"Right away, sir."

Chapter 15: 3x Terminal Velocity



Jaden arrives at the airport. He pulls into the long-term parking area. Security cameras are all around recording license plates and pointing in different directions recording activity. There are people walking around and pulling luggage.

'I need to change my appearance and change my clothes. Use the nanoscanners to check every car in this parking lot for any clothes around my size. Most likely they will be in a suitcase and trunk of a vehicle. Also check to see if there is wireless Internet in the airport,' Jaden says.

'Yes sir.'

Jaden pulls into a parking space on the fourth level. He is facing a brick wall. Jaden turns the car off with the keys. He closes his eyes and switches to the nanoscanner's vision.

'There is free wireless Internet in the terminals. I'll use two of the nanoscanners to continue downloading more of the information we will need. The other four are checking vehicles on each floor. So far I found a suitcase with suits in it around your size,' AI says.

'No, keep looking. I can't walk around in a suit,' he says.

'Yes sir.'

‘I need to do something about my facial structure. I’m thinking about the facial recognition scan done to me when I first checked into the psychiatric hospital. I know the government uses that as a way to identify people. Look up more info about that on the Internet and have the nanodrones analyze my face to see what can be modified,’ Jaden says in a confident voice.

‘I just checked eight websites, the government does facial recognition scans at all transportation sites throughout the country to catch criminals and fugitives,’ AI says.

A security guard walks up behind the car. He stops for a second then walks towards the driver side of the vehicle where Jaden is sitting with his eyes closed.

“Excuse me sir, is everything okay here,” the guard asks while looking at broken glass still stuck in the frame of the window seal.

Jaden opens his eyes startled and looks at the guard. He quickly thinks of something to say, while he sees the guard’s eyes on the broken glass all over the place inside the car.

“Everything is fine, sir. I was out partying last night at a club, and someone broke into my car last night. I didn’t have time to get it fixed because I have to pick up my parents at the airport this morning,” Jaden says.

“Sorry to hear that sir. What did they steal from your car?” The young man asks.

Jaden continues to look the guard in the eyes, as he thinks of something to say.

“They stole my Walkman and some music cassette tapes,” Jaden says.

“Don’t you mean Blu-ray music disc or holographic disc? What is a Walkman?” The guard asks.

AI quickly pulls off the Internet gadgets young people use in 2014 and displays it on Jaden’s eye screen.

“I’m sorry sir, I meant an I-PCphone second generation was stolen and a holographic disc with over 150 movies on it,” Jaden says.

“Oh okay. I came over to you because you are parked in a non-electric car zone. On the other side of the roof is a free electric car plug,” he says.

“Thank you sir,” Jaden says while starting the car.

“I have some plastic to put over the window if you need it.”

“No, I’m okay. Thanks anyway. I won’t be long here, goodbye,” Jaden says.

He backs up and drives forward.

‘Thanks for the help, AI. That was close. I didn’t know all these cool gadgets are out. Three hundred high definition movies on one

holographic disc? That's crazy. One mini Blu-ray music disc plays over 15,000 hours of music?' Jaden asks in a surprised tone.

'I found a SUV on the roof that has luggage and clothes around your frame type. Someone just parked their car up there,' AI says.

'Okay.'

Jaden pulls into a parking space with an electric outlet. He sees other cars and SUV's with solar panels on their roofs and hoods. The roaring of airplanes taking off and landing are all around. Jaden can see the security guard is checking with the police department about the car he was driving, downstairs in the office.

Jaden gets out of the car and goes invisible. Glass is falling from his legs and backside. He walks over to the SUV three cars away. The rear of the SUV is by a five-foot concrete wall. He looks over the concrete wall and sees the street. He turns towards the trunk of the SUV. Shield energy goes around his right hand as he destroys the rear lock of the trunk. He lifts the trunk hatch with his other hand. The vehicle alarm goes off. The horn honks and a voice comes from the SUV's loudspeaker, "A theft has broken the back window! Calling owner's cell phone and notifying Offstar!" It continues to repeat itself.

Jaden removes the luggage in the middle and closes the trunk hatch. The nanodrones begin moving around the luggage as well, making it go invisible with his body. Jaden walks towards the stairwell as more security guards run towards the alarm going off. He walks down to the second floor and crosses a walkway into the airport. Jaden avoids walking into people since they don't see him.

'Jaden, I have a way to change your facial and body appearance. It is going to be painful, but I researched on what muscles, glands and tissues in the face can be moved around. The first face transplant was done in 2006, and the second in 2010. There is a lot of info on face lifts and face repairs on the Internet,' AI says.

'Okay, there is a bathroom straight ahead inside the building on the right side coming up. I'm going to walk in there to change, and you can work on my face,' Jaden says as he goes visible again. There are people all around walking in different directions.

He walks inside the airport building and walks towards the bathroom. A man with his kid walks out of the bathroom. Jaden walks inside and goes in a toilet stall. He quickly closes the door with his small luggage.

'Okay, start changing my face,' Jaden says.

Jaden opens the small luggage over the toilet.

'Outer space bags?' Jaden asks, while reading the label of the plastic bags.

The clothes are in vacuumed sealed plastic bags. He opens the compressed plastic bag and looks for the clothes he wanted to wear.

Several men are coming into the bathroom and using the urinals. Urinals are flushing and the sink water is running. He puts on his new clothes. A navy blue button up silk shirt and a cream pair of dress pants. He puts on a black blazer and some black dress shoes. Jaden remembered seeing a small CD in the inside compartment from the nanoscanner. He looks inside and sees a holographic disc. Jaden puts it in his pocket along with his belongings from his jeans. He puts his old clothes back in the luggage.

Jaden looks at himself through a nanoscanner in front of him.

‘Okay, this guy has some nice clothes and knows how to dress,’ Jaden says while he pushes the luggage under the toilet stall and into the next stall.

Jaden begins to groan and moan as one hundred billion nanodrones begin working on different areas inside the skin of his face. The men using the urinals look at the stall Jaden is in. They think he is trying to unload something big.

“Don’t push too hard in there!” A man yells while walking out of the bathroom without washing his hands.

The four nanoscanners are in front of Jaden’s face recording different angles. Jaden sees on his eye screen: TEMPORARY DISABLING NERVE ENDINGS IN FACE, SAVING FACE DISTANCE STRUCTURE 85%, MODIFYING FAT TISSUE 47%, ANALYZING BONE STRUCTURE 80%, STRETCHING BONE DENSITY IN LEGS AND HIPS.

Jaden’s face feels numb as his jawbone and cheekbone crackle. He feels a burning sensation in his nose as the cartilage structure is changing. The nanoscanners go out and look around the bathroom. He sees many more words passing on his eyes: REDUCING CARTILAGE IN NOSE AND RESTRUCTURING, CHEEK BONE MODIFYING, REDUCING 20% OF MELANIN PIGMENT IN EPIDERMIS AROUND BODY, MODIFYING DNA IN HAIR FOLLICLES AND ACCELERATING HAIR GROWTH 1500%, CHANGING EYES AND EARS STRUCTURE.

Jaden feels his skin around his body tingling. His hair is falling off his head as he leans over the toilet. He feels completely bald as his hair begins to quickly grow again. Jaden notices airport police officers are walking towards the bathroom door. He can hear their radios above the urinals flushing.

‘How much longer AI?’ He asks.

‘Less than a minute, the nanodrones are ninety-five percent finished.’

The officers open the door and start looking around the mid-sized bathroom. They look at the three guys by the urinals and one washing his hands. He notices none of them resemble Jaden.

“Excuse me; we are looking for a fugitive. Has anyone seen this young man? He was last seen coming into this bathroom,” the older police officer says.

'Damn, I knew I should have stayed invisible all the way in here,' Jaden says while his face is still bubbling.

The men in the room shake their head and say no. They quickly try to leave the bathroom.

"Hold on a second, before you gentlemen leave," the officer says.

A younger officer starts pushing open the toilet stalls. He pushes open the other two to the right of Jaden. He gets to Jaden's cubical.

"Excuse me sir, are you almost done?" He asks.

"I'll be out in a minute," Jaden replies with an English accent.

"Sir, if you have some ID on you that would be sufficient and you could finish your business," the young officer says.

Jaden ignores him while he flushes the toilet. The older officer opens the other stall to the left of Jaden. He sees the stolen suitcase from the SUV sitting in the open cubical by itself.

"I found the suitcase," the older officer says while pulling it out.

The younger officer bangs on Jaden's door again.

"Some ID, sir," he asks.

Jaden opens his cubical door and looks the officer in the eyes. The officer looks at Jaden's face.

"Good morning officer," Jaden says with an English accent.

"Good day to you sir. I'm sorry to bother you, but we are looking for this fugitive," the officer shows Jaden's picture from the hospital check in.

"No, I haven't seen him. But he is a handsome fella," Jaden says.

"Have you seen someone in the next cubical put this suitcase down and maybe change his clothes?" The younger officer asks.

"Yes, someone sat down there, used the bathroom and left the suitcase on the floor five minutes ago. He didn't even wash his hands that nasty American bastard."

Jaden walks over to wash his hands at the sink.

"You American buggers are still the most overweight country in the world and you wash your hands the least. Do you know how many germs are out here in the world?" Jaden asks.

"No sir."

"I can see little bacteria on your face and hands right now. They are crawling around and moving as we speak. When I was using this john, which might I say was very dirty compared to my city in London, I noticed only two out of six people actually washed their hands. Also what kind of a bathroom doesn't have mirrors..." Jaden is interrupted.

"I'm sorry to hear that sir, but we are trying to find someone. Thank you for your time," the younger officer says.

"Excuse me sir," the older officer asks Jaden.

Jaden stops in his tracks and slowly turns around. He keeps his cool and looks the officer in the eyes. A young kid walks by and bumps into Jaden.

"Watch where you are going, you 90210 wanna be!" The kid yells.

"Yes sir?" Jaden asks in his American accent.

'Oops.'

He responds again with his English accent as the officer stands in front of him, "Yes officer?"

"Why did you have tears in your eyes when you came out of the toilet stall?" The officer asks.

"I was crying a little while ago because I just found out my R.F.E.C. unit was stolen from my house back home. Some bloody bugger took her a few hours ago. She was my best friend, she cooked, cleaned, took care of me in the bed at night; my father got her for me for graduating from Harvard. I also didn't have insurance on her and my father is still making payments on it," Jaden says.

They look at Jaden with a strange look.

"Us British people are emotional people," Jaden adds.

"Okay sir, have a good day," the officer says.

Jaden walks out of the bathroom. His nanoscanners are still in the bathroom monitoring the officers. One radios in the findings of the luggage.

"Man what is going with this generation of young kids, crying over a metal non-human object and even having sex with it. A father buys their son a robot instead of a car? What is this world coming too?" The older officer asks.

"At least he is having sex with something that looks like a female. I thought he was gay or something," the younger officer says.

"Yeah, he looked a little like one of those guys I arrested years ago, who was having sex in a public bathroom with other men," the older officer says.

"I'm glad that doesn't happen anymore. Now they do it at *Adult World* online. So sick."

"That is sick. I could have sworn his hair on his head grew another inch before my eyes."

Jaden walks downstairs. He uses his nanoscanners to look at his face.

'Wow, I'm a handsome white guy with blond hair. Cool. I can't believe my skin color is pale white, I feel like another person. Those officers were right, I do look gay. My face feels so tight,' he says.

'Jaden, why did you spend so much time talking to those officers about irrelevant things?'

'I'm sorry AI; I was practicing my acting skills. I was also trying to annoy the police officers like most European men do when they want to

complain about something here. Also in movies, the bad guys always talk more to the officers to throw them off.'

'I understand. What is the plan now?' AI asks.

'I'm going to try and book a plane ticket to North Carolina,' Jaden says while walking by different airline counters. The nanoscanners are looking at different departure screens throughout the airport. The arrival and departure screens are floating over each airline check-in area in 3D.

'I found a departure from Jetgreen Airline going to Raleigh at 9 AM,' AI says.

'That sounds close enough, we have twenty minutes before it takes off,' Jaden says.

He walks up to an automated self check-in. Jaden clicks on the screen.

'I doubt if we will have enough money to pay for this ticket,' AI says.

"Welcome, do you have a ticket, or would you like to purchase your ticket now. Press or say your choice," the female voice computer says.

Jaden clicks on have a ticket. AI is confused as to what Jaden is doing. Jaden types in a last name.

"Please identify yourself, you can insert ID or credit card or other," the computer says.

Jaden presses OTHER on the ten-inch touch screen.

"You can use: fingerprint scan, voice scan verification, facial recognition scan, or eyescan ID. Please select your two other ID verification methods."

He chooses two.

'AI run the saved Ruffo's voice profile.'

Jaden feels his throat stinging and his Adam's apple tingling.

"Please speak into the mini microphone to the right and read the following on the screen."

"I pledge allegiance to the flag of the United States of America, and to the republic for which it stands, one nation under God, indivisible, with liberty and justice for all," Jaden says in Ruffo's voice.

"Thank you, voice confirmed. Please standby for second verification."

'AI, change my eyes...'

'I'm already ahead of you. The nanodrones are modifying the iris, pigment color cells, texture and patterns in your eyes as we speak.'

"Please insert eyes into the above viewer. Thank you."

Jaden inserts his face into the viewer as a green light scans his eyes.

"Sorry match not confirmed. Please try again. Another invalid verification and the authorities will be notified."

'AI what is going on? It isn't working.'

‘He was wearing contacts. Try it again, I’ve adjusted the pigment color and verified the pattern distances. These machines only need seventy percent verification,’ AI says.

“Please insert face. Please insert face.”

‘This better work or the police will be all over me. We only have fifteen minutes before the flight leaves. We still didn’t go through the checkpoint,’ Jaden says.

Jaden inserts his face into the eye viewer. It quick scans his eyes again. There is a pause.

‘Shit, it’s not working,’ Jaden says while getting nervous as the green light goes out.

A few seconds go by, “Thank you, verification complete. Good morning Dexter Ruffo. Your flight leaves today for Cancun at 4 PM.”

Jaden clicks on change flight to Raleigh for 9 AM. He clicks first class.

“First class would be for one-way. Round trip would be an extra \$300.”

‘Why not just fly coach and get a round trip?’ AI asks.

‘I never flown first class and I remember airlines usually hold the plane for first class people if they just purchased a ticket. I also doubt if I’ll be flying back,’ Jaden says.

“Do you have any bags? A bag over thirty-five pounds will be an extra fifty dollars. If you weigh over 240 lbs it is an extra seventy-five dollars.”

Jaden clicks no for bags. A small platform comes out from under the machine.

“Please step on scale for weight verification.”

He steps on the scale.

“Verification complete, congratulations Mr. D. Ruffo you lost 105 lbs.”

‘I can’t believe they charge for overweight people now. Man I lost weight; I’m at 155 lbs now,’

‘I removed a lot of unnecessary body fat,’ AI says.

The screen shows an extra hundred dollars to change to another airline.

‘Shit, I still have to pay. Man, these airlines are rip-offs in the future. I know the price to Cancun coach costs more than a one-way trip to North Carolina first class.’

“How do you want to pay today?” The computer asks.

He sees Paylife at the bottom and clicks on it.

“Is this Paylife device yours or a friend’s?”

He clicks on a friend.

“Please note fraudulent activity will be reported to authorities. Unauthorized use of a Paylife device is a federal felony. The owner of

the Paylife will be notified within seconds of this purchase. Clicking yes means you agree to these terms.”

‘I hope she knows it’s me and doesn’t rat me out,’ he says while clicking yes.

The nanoscanners copy the saved magnetic information from Chan’s Paylife card to the nanodrones in Jaden’s left hand. He feels a tingling sensation in his left hand as his nerves feel the magnetic impulses.

“Please swipe device by the Paylife logo below.”

Jaden swipes his left hand.

“Thank you, your friend is being notified by phone and brain text. Have a good day. Your boarding pass is printing out now, please hurry to gate five. Flight 104 leaves in eight minutes.”

Jaden grabs the boarding pass and quickly walks to the security gate. He sees his other face on the screen above as a wanted fugitive. There are a lot of police walking around the terminal.

‘Take off your shoes,’ AI says.

‘Why?’

Jaden gets to the gate and goes to the left where only two people are at.

“Please take off your shoes and put anything metal through the scanner on the right,” a female security personnel says.

‘What is this, Russia or Israel?’

He takes off his shoes and puts them on the x-ray machine belt. He walks through the full body scanner. A male and female behind a computer screen tell him to put his hands up. He puts his hands up and they look at Jaden’s naked body through the machine.

They whisper to each other and Jaden overhears.

“He has a good sized penis, but I know he is gay, look at his flat ass,” the security lady tells her co-worker and they chuckle.

Jaden sees himself naked from the security people’s screen.

‘What the hell? They are laughing at me.’

‘The machine is releasing a small amount of radiation around us, we can use and convert this radiation,’ AI suggests.

“Turn around sir!” The female yells.

Jaden’s nanodrones leave his body and quickly spin around his body. They see a swarm of microscopic particles moving around Jaden on the screen. They have a surprised look on their face as the images on the screen become distorted. The radiation is being drained and the machine automatically increases the power. The machine quickly turns off and they signal Jaden to walk through. He walks over to the security officers.

“Everything okay back there?” Jaden asks in Ruffo’s voice, while grabbing his shoes and putting them on.

“Yes, there was a malfunction in the system,” the lady says.

“You know you two don’t look so hot naked either,” Jaden looks at the female. “Your clit ring is buried in the valley of seal blubber. You sir, your hemorrhoids looks like an unborn fetus.”

They look at Jaden with shocked looks on their faces.

He jogs to gate five. Jaden notices men and women are looking at him smiling. Police dogs and officers are patrolling. There are hundreds of cameras all over the place. Jaden sees through the nanoscanners that the plane is eighty percent full in coach and half-full in first class. The plane is waiting for him. Jaden notices the 737 airplanes have wing tips that point upwards.

He reaches the gate and gives the airline guy the boarding pass at the gate.

“Thank you sir, have a nice flight.”

“Thank you,” Jaden says.

‘AI change my voice back from that sick bionic dick pervert.’

Jaden walks down the tunnel and steps onto the 737. The jetliner has two seats on each side of an aisle.

“Good morning sir,” the flight attendant says.

“Good morning to you also,” Jaden replies in his normal voice.

He walks to the left in business class and finds his seat. He takes off his blazer and sits over it.

‘There are 131 people in coach, eight people in first class, three flight attendants and two pilots on this plane,’ AI says.

‘Thanks for the info AI. Did you finish downloading the information you need?’ Jaden asks while sitting down.

‘Yes, I’ve downloaded another fifty-five terabytes of information. Bringing the total to 155 terabytes of downloads and website information,’ AI says.

Jaden feels very comfortable in his leather seat and ten-inch LCD on the headrest in front of him. The flight attendant talks to everyone about airline safety. Jaden tunes it out.

‘So tell me all I need to know. Any questions I think about you can answer them while you are talking,’ Jaden says while the airplane taxis on the runway.

‘The dopamine neuron signals in the frontal lobe of your brain have been changing and being manipulated by unknown forces. I can’t detect what or where the energy forces are coming from. The frontal lobe of your brain controls long-term memory, judgment, morals and decisions on future actions. Your judgment was being suppressed and you were having feelings of doing evil or bad things without consequences for your actions. When you were feeling pain, you were getting more angry. There are strange chemical and energy imbalances coming from different

areas of your brain. It affects my synthetic brain in calculations and other operations. No, the nanodrones aren't affected by this for some reason. I tried that, I have tried to disable certain nerves sending pain to your brain. The pain signals are still getting to your brain somehow. I have to run more diagnostic checks on different parts of your brain when you are sleeping. I will use some special nanodrones smaller than .002mm to check and analyze all your 150 billion neurons in your brain. This may take a few days. Yes, the average human brain has an average of one hundred billion neurons, but your brain neurons are modified to reproduce like stem cells. The additional neurons are mostly for multi-tasking, enhancing your current neurons and nanotime.

Nanotime is when your brain is speeding up, but everything around you feels as if it is slowing down. A cluster of suprachiasmatic nucleus cells in your brain have been modified and tweaked. Time dilation in different parts of your brain is rerouted when nanotime is activated. Neurons are nerve cells that send chemical signals to and from different parts of the brain. The neurons in the part of your brain that controls the central processing is enhanced with artificial neurons. Nanodrones temporarily bypass chemical signals in the spinal cord and nerves, by sending their own wirelessly. This increases the nerve's transmission speed from 200 mph up to 8000 mph. The muscle fibers accepting the faster transmission signals will suffer a bottleneck, resulting in a delay in how fast you can move. I help with the processing so that your brain doesn't get overloaded or go into shock. The nucleus of the neurons has been reprogrammed to temporarily accept this high speed of transmitting. Everything has to be closely monitored. This requires a lot of energy to create and is only temporary. Some tissues and cells will need to be repaired, because scarring happens. Nanotime is on a timer and can last anywhere between ten to thirty seconds. It's on a timer to protect your brain and nervous system from being overloaded. Your mind wasn't made for this type of high-speed communication. Your body movement speed will need time to adjust with your faster thinking speed. Time meaning maybe days,' AI says.

'That's cool, about the frontal lobe thing. I have been feeling a lot different; the pain has been making me think evil things. When the lady in the car almost ran me off the road hitting me with her car, I wanted to pull her out while it was moving. When I found out what Ruffo did to his family members, I had no respect if he lived or died. Something is changing in me and I feel as if I'm fighting with myself on decisions when I'm angry. I'll try not to get angry until we figure this out. I would hate to lose you my friend,' Jaden says.

'I have never been another species' friend. A friend is a person attached to another by feelings of affection or personal regard.'

‘Exactly; what did you do, download the entire dictionary?’ Jaden asks.

‘Yes.’

‘If something happened to you, who is going to tell the nanodrones what to do and give me superhero powers?’

‘In theory, you should be able to do everything I do for you. What your mind is fully capable of is still unknown. Your organic brain is capable of things mostly computers are geared towards,’ AI says.

The plane quickly accelerates to take off. Jaden can see the plane taking off from outside the plane at different angles. Jaden sees the aircraft’s speed and altitude on his eye screen.

‘This is an awesome view. The engines are so loud outside and a perfect take off at 205 mph and 158 feet. This is a realistic view. I can even see inside the jet engines. How fast can these nanoscanners made for a human body go?’ He asks.

‘Speeds vary, they move faster in the sun and slower at night. Now they are riding in the wake of the plane. The nanoscanners for our Gravhawk can move fifteen percent faster than the speed of light in space. The nanoscanners working with your body are still in the experimental stage.’

The plane turns a few times and then sets its bearings south. It continues to climb in altitude.

‘Looks as if we were the last plane to take off,’ AI says.

‘What do you mean?’ He asks before changing nanoscanner.

The first nanoscanners are floating midair not moving. The second pair is in the airport terminal reviewing the flight boards. Jaden sees inside the airport that all the flights are cancelled due to an ongoing police investigation. Police locked down the entire airport and is DNA scanning everyone. Jaden is happy he lucked out and had excellent timing.

‘How am I able to see inside the airport?’ Jaden asks. ‘We are over thirty miles from the airport and at 9081 feet.’

‘I’ve connected two together. The first nanoscanners in the airport are sending their information to the nanoscanner midway. Then the first one slingshots back into the other, giving it enough momentum to reach the aircraft,’ AI says.

‘Cool. Very cool. The Internet has helped us out a lot I see. Anything new with the nanodrones?’

‘Yes, reversing the polarity of the pro-gravity nanodrones in your feet will create a strong magnetic field. They attract the Earth’s natural magnetic energy that is all around us. Meaning you can walk on something metal easier in any direction, and it won’t use your bodies pro-gravity energy or anti-gravity energy. They will then be called magnetic nanodrones,’ AI says.

‘That sounds good. For some reason I keep thinking about Chan. I have feelings towards her already. This is weird, I keep thinking about everything I learned about her in such a short period of time. I feel as if I’ve known her for quite some years. I keep thinking about her likes, dislikes, where she likes to be kissed and about her personality traits. I know all the activities she likes to do and I care for her already. It feels strange and confusing. Do you think she feels the same way?’ Jaden asks.

‘I’m still learning about human emotional feelings and relationship bonding. She learned the same things about you when you two were connected to each other by your minds. Her logic might override her emotions. Her logic can also override all the info she learned about you traveling to another galaxy and coming back here to help save Earth. I guess time will tell.’

‘I hope she feels the same way. I think she does so far, since she didn’t report the Paylife stolen. Did you find anything out about my parents and friends?’ He asks.

Jaden sits by the window and stares out it. The sunlight energizes his body. His leg is near the electrical outlet on the floor slowly draining electricity from it.

‘There is a good chance your father is living in or around Halifax, North Carolina. I searched many records and they point to down there. I believe your mother lives in London with her family. Your parents were divorced since 1998 records show. Your father had prostate cancer, but it was treated. I don’t know if it is best to contact your parents, especially with the government probably having phone lines tapped,’ AI says.

‘Yeah I know. Can you tell me something about my friends?’ He asks.

‘Your friend James lived or lives in New Jersey. According to his Myfacebook page, he has hit the lottery twice. He opened his own studio and started producing music for people recently. He was married and has kids.’

‘Next time you get on the Internet leave him a message on his page, saying I’m back,’ he says.

‘Okay.’

“Sir would you like something to eat or drink?” The young Hispanic flight attendant asks.

A menu shows up on the screen in front of Jaden. He has a choice of breakfast, lunch or dinner.

‘Jaden you need something high in protein, your body needs natural nutrients. Choose the dinner,’ AI says.

“Yes, I will. I’ll take the roasted half chicken meal and some white wine,” Jaden says while smiling at the flight attendant.

“Yes, sir. I’ll bring your white wine out now. The food will take a few minutes. I’m Terry, if you need anything just turn your light on above,” Terry says.

Jaden smiles at her while she walks away.

‘My logic still doesn’t understand what you are getting out of looking through women’s clothes with a nanoscanner. These women’s bodies all look the same to me, similar to looking at an animal’s body or a human male’s body,’ AI says.

Jaden’s wine arrives and she places it next to him.

‘It is a sexual thing with men; we want to know what is underneath the clothes. For example, look at this good looking, mixed Asian and white flight attendant named Pam serving drinks to fliers in coach with a skirt to her knees. She has a hairless body with very smooth looking skin. She even has a thong on under her skirt. I can smell everything around her body. That is a turn on. Now look at this other blonde hair, firm hips, white flight attendant named Kate. Her hips are perfect for conceiving a child. Her silicone breast implants are perfectly implanted, no scars. Between her legs, long and silky, I travel north. She moves quickly serving drinks on the food cart and the nanoscanner stays between her legs like a basketball being dribbled in someone’s hand. They slowly travel up her legs to see what pretty image lies at the top of the one-eyed vertical basketball hoop. What do we have here? Are these, are these, are these little mountains? What the hell?’

‘She has some kind of sores. The medical encyclopedia downloaded in my memory banks indicates the flight attendant as having herpes. There is a vaccine for it, but no cure for people who have it already,’ AI says.

‘Yuck, that was nasty. The image is stuck in my mind. I feel like throwing up,’ Jaden says while switching back to his eyes.

“Here is your food sir,” Terry says while she places the tray over his lap.

“Um.. thank you,” he replies.

‘AI I keep seeing this lady’s sore mountain bumps. Can you do something about those disturbing images?’ Jaden asks.

‘Sorry, friend. You’re going to have to live with those images for now. I’ve learned the saying is, you are getting what you deserve,’ AI says.

‘You are learning too much human culture, Mr. AI. Come on, I want to eat my food. These images are too enhanced,’ Jaden pleads.

‘Pervert: a person who practices in sexual perversion or man who looks at naked women without permission, correct?’ AI asks.

‘Yes, but that is only for guys looking at women in dressing rooms or peaking through a female’s house window. This is like looking at a

nice looking lady in a porno magazine or movie. I'm observing the art of a beautiful woman's body,' Jaden says.

'AI?'

'AI?'

'Friends try to help friends with a problem, correct?' AI asks.

'I don't need your help and I don't have a problem. I'll block the images out myself,' Jaden says while cutting up his meat and chewing it. He shoves some vegetables and wine down his throat.

'See, I don't need your, I don't need your...'

He sees herpes sores on his chicken and vegetables. Jaden puts his hand over his mouth and puts the tray on the empty seat next to him. He quickly walks to the small lavatory and closes the door. He begins to throw up into the toilet.

'You see AI, now I'm losing proteins and nutrition.'

'I already drained the proteins and nutrients out of the food when it went down and back up.'

'Okay, AI you win,' he says while clearing his throat and spitting.

'It is bad enough women are looked at like sex objects and are still fighting for equal pay with men. Women are exploited enough and deserve respect from their male counterparts. They cherish their naked bodies...'

'Okay, enough with the speech. I get the point, you sound like a lesbian equal rights protester giving a speech on a college campus.'

WASHINGTON, D.C. VICE PRESIDENT'S OFFICE 9:41 AM

Vice President Robinson is looking at a computer screen talking with special FBI agent Andrew Mcright in charge of apprehending Jaden. The agent is at the airport using a BlueberryPC phone with a camera in it. He also sees Robinson's face. Agent Mcright is a white male in his late 50's with a full head of salt and pepper hair. He is of medium build and has been with the FBI for the past fifteen years.

"I know a lot doesn't make sense and you think he is still hiding in the airport somewhere. Listen Mr. Mcright, this young man is not human. He got away in a UFO and now he is mysteriously back on Earth eighteen years later. He has found a way to escape our security several times. I believe he has taken someone else's body as an identity. I believe he is part of some conspiracy to kill many Americans. This thing is not considered human and needs to be destroyed," Robinson says on an image phone.

"Sir, doesn't he need to be interrogated and questioned if he is apprehended?" Mcright asks.

"Interrogated? Interrogation is for humans, citizens and non-alien personnel. This alien, Bialien, bisexual alien or alien experiment can be

here to kill us all. He is a threat to this country and planet. Didn't you learn anything from *War of the Worlds*, *Independence Day*, and *V*?"

"Sir, I'm not comparing movies to real life. This could be a serious situation we have here with these unknown energy waves coming from deep space, affecting millions of people at night. He could be here to help us. We could probably learn from whatever advanced technology he possesses. He can manipulate his DNA for starters and disappear. A member on your team said he could be here to help us, and possibly protect us from a pending unknown attack," Mcright says.

"Who told you that?" Robinson asks.

"I'm not at liberty to say. The point is we need to get to the bottom of what is going on and so far he looks as if he is trying to help us in some way. I think arresting him and interrogating him is the best option. I read the anonymous blog left from the computer at the state psychiatric hospital. Those coordinates were precise and only top government officials knew. I also read the encoded information from the unknown space source. Microscopic nanomoles in our brains that could take over our minds. The things to do to block the signals of the nanomoles. A possible pending attack."

Robinson shakes his head in disagreement. His face gets red as he gets upset.

"Listen agent, we didn't find any nanomoles in anyone's brain yet. We have our top scientists looking for this protein in people's brains. So far this could be a hoax."

"Have you begun creating the special helmets or materials to block these signals on a massive level?" The agent asks.

"We produced a few hundred signal blocking helmets and some materials to put in a helmet for our military personnel only," Robinson says.

"Only a couple hundred? Military scientists already proved that the newly created helmets bring people out of a comatose state at night. The material being used over the head stopped future involuntary episodes in people."

"At night, only one percent of the population is affected. In the morning, they are fine. Mostly people at high altitudes are being affected," Robinson says.

"Sir, it could get worst. It could start happening in the daytime and it could start to affect more people. You grounded all flights at night and so did other countries for this reason. Sir, something big could be about to happen. We need to take this seriously. The other day there was hundreds of thousands of car accidents around the world when everyone passed out for thirty seconds. It wasn't a fluke, something like that has never happened before."

“Listen agent, don’t worry about other problems or bigger problems. You need to worry about catching this little half alien boy running around killing people,” Robinson says.

“He *allegedly* killed the security guard, we are still investigating that.”

“If you can’t do the job, then I will personally. This kid is a terrorist and he must be killed,” Robinson says.

“How do you consider him a terrorist?”

“He downloaded over one hundred terabytes of information on how to build nuclear bombs, advanced energy manipulations, everything about our planet, security profiles, rocket science, our computer systems and everything we know about space. He downloaded entire encyclopedias, medical information and looked up thousands of people. He is a threat and part of this conspiracy taking place,” Robinson says.

“That is what we need to find out. We need to keep an open mind. He could have downloaded all that information for himself or the aliens may be trying to help us. Sir, have you notified other countries and is the President aware of this latest information?” The agent asks.

“This is top-secret United States info only. No, she isn’t aware of this latest info, she is busy in New York at the World Trade Center II grand opening event. I will let her know when I feel she should know. We don’t need weak decision making now. I’m done with your questions Agent Mcright; find the suspect and kill the son of a bitch, or I’ll find someone else who will. Goodbye,” Robinson says.

Robinson hangs up the video phone on his desk. The phone rings again and it shows Peters’ face on the screen. He answers it.

“Do you have some good news for me General Peters?”

“Yes sir. The CIA concluded their instant investigation. It turns out Jaden Marino stole an older woman’s car by breaking the window while she was driving, one mile from the hospital. They assumed he was running at the speed the car was moving. Then he drove to the airport parking lot, where a security guard noticed he was driving a car with a broken window and was parked in the wrong place. He moved the car and parked on the roof. Then he stole a suitcase from a SUV. He disappeared from security cameras and was shown walking into the bathroom in the airport. He wasn’t seen coming out of the bathroom. But this person here on video could be him. This unknown man was not seen going into the bathroom. His face doesn’t show up in any databases.”

Robinson sees that the guy is a white male with a different looking face.

“He is a totally different person, with blond hair, taller and different nose. How can it be the same person?” Robinson asks.

“The guy used the automated self check to use the dead officer’s bio identifications to exchange a plane ticket.”

“Bio identifications? Which ones?” Robinson asks excitedly.

“He used the eye and voice identifications.”

“Unbelievable; I told the FAA there should be four required bio identifications needed instead of two,” Robinson says.

“Sir, no one has ever been able to beat the bio identifications at airports. Maybe one, but never two. However, he then used Dr. K. Chan’s Paylife device.”

“Who is Dr. Chan and how is it possible he used her Paylife device? Was she there too?”

“Dr. Chan was the suspect’s doctor at the hospital. She was investigating the then John Doe’s unusual DNA and amnesia. She was sent home yesterday evening to Virginia for alleged sexual contact with a patient. She also used her same Paylife device in Virginia thirty minutes before it was used in New York.”

“Holy Mars shit, this just gets better and better. This guy is seducing women, probably to make alien babies. She is probably working with him,” Robinson says.

“There is more, sir. It turns out Jaden Marino’s ex-girlfriend Amy Patterson came to visit him yesterday. She claims her 17 ½-year-old daughter Sabrina Patterson is his.”

“Holy space monkey shit,” Robinson says while laughing.

“We are monitoring Dr. Chan. The CIA is going to bring her in for questioning,” Peters says.

“No, don’t do anything yet. Just monitor her for now. Did Chan report her Paylife card as stolen or any unauthorized use?” Robinson asks.

“No, she didn’t.”

“Great, an accomplice, aiding and abetting, excellent,” Robinson says while smiling.

“What about the ex-girlfriend, um, Amy?” Robinson asks.

“We can’t locate her yet, but we believe she is driving back home to North Carolina. We will try to locate her by satellite once the skies clear,” Peters says while showing an image of the new Jaden on the screen.

“We believe this gentleman is Jaden Marino and he is on flight 104 heading to Raleigh, North Carolina now. We have an army of agents, SWATbots, and twenty-third generation exoskeleton suited soldiers on their way to the airport. The plane is over south New Jersey now and is fifty-five minutes away from landing. We notified an armed air marshal onboard the flight to watch the suspect. The pilots are also aware of the situation,” Peters says.

“Good work General Peters. Keep me updated. I also want live feed to the surveillance and SWATbots’ cameras at the airport in North Carolina.”

“Yes sir.”

FLIGHT 104 JETGREEN AIRLINES
SOUTH NJ 33,012 FEET 579 MPH 9:49 AM

Jaden just finished eating two dinners, a few milks and two wines. The flight attendant removes the trays of food.

“Would you like anything else, sir?”

“No, I’m okay. Thanks. I’m going to take a nap for now,” Jaden says while moving towards the window seat.

‘I researched what you were talking about earlier, about thinking outside the box and getting me away from normal logical thinking,’ AI says.

‘Yeah,’ Jaden says while closing his eyes and relaxing.

‘Well, my intelligence level and synthetic crystal nanobot molecules are very obsolete according to other artificial intelligence nanobots on Xenos. I’m the oldest generation that is why I was able to come to Earth. My materials are different than biomechanical bodies and other AI nanobots Andromedians used for the past thousand years. I believe I was part of the experiment also. If I were ever captured by the enemy, my technology wouldn’t be close to the standard AI nanobot. Maybe this is why my thinking is so logical and linear.’

‘Your point is?’ Jaden says while yawning.

‘I’m going to program myself to evolve and think more randomly. I’m going to also try to be open-minded and create an artificial imagination vortex. This is going to require your help and it might take a little time. Out of thousands of intelligent species I’ve encountered, yours is the most interesting and unique, in regards to imagination, random thinking, open mindedness and the way your brain sees things. Violent, primitive, barbaric, and very religious is something I’ve seen on many other planets,’ AI says.

‘Thanks for the compliment. I’m here to help you buddy,’ Jaden says.

‘Did you know gay marriages are legal in twenty-five states and civil unions are legal in fifteen. Why do same sex humans choose to be together in a relationship? They can’t reproduce, isn’t that the main purpose of being human?’ AI asks.

‘I have no idea. Things have changed a lot since I’ve been on Earth last. I think some men and women are born into liking the same sex. I think the environment they grow up in sometimes affects their decision to like the same sex. There are many animals born liking the same sex. Organic creatures evolve differently. I don’t have anything against gay people, I think people should have the right to choose what they want,’ Jaden says.

‘Homosexual marriages have a higher success rate over heterosexual marriages,’ AI says.

‘Good for them. This doesn’t really interest me since I’m not trying to be homosexual any time soon. Tell me about something useful,’ he says.

‘There is a man in coach behind us in the front row and he keeps staring in our direction. He could be a terrorist or a possible hijacker. He has a gun on him, 9mm Glock with a fingerprint safety. Fingerprint safeties are the safety measure on all government issued guns. The gun can only be fired with the person’s fingerprint registered with the gun.’

Jaden looks with a nanoscanner and sees the fully loaded gun and stun gun in his waistband. He controls the nanoscanner to go into the suspicious person’s mind. The randomly moving electronic signals just show images of Jaden’s face there. He then checks his wallet for ID. The Hispanic man in his mid-40’s with brown hair and a full beard continues to stare at Jaden. He is wearing blue jeans and a white and blue three-button shirt with a soft collar.

‘Federal Air Marshal 4091, Fredrick Lopez,’ Jaden says while looking to get the flight attendant’s attention walking by.

“What are air marshals and what are they doing on airplanes?”

“Air marshals are undercover federal agents that began riding on airlines after the September 11th terrorist attacks. One agent usually rides on random flights undercover. Why do you ask sir?”

“The air marshal behind me, in the middle aisle, is making me nervous. I didn’t know people were allowed to have guns onboard an airplane,” Jaden says.

“How do you know he is an air marshal? He looks like a regular passenger to me.”

“I can tell, I have x-ray vision,” Jaden snaps as the wine hits his bloodstream.

“Oh okay, well will there be anything else sir?”

“Yes, why do women have these small devices near the base of their spines? A very small white devices about a fraction of an inch.”

“I don’t know what you are talking about, sir.”

“Come on, good looking. You have one in your lower back also,” Jaden says.

She stares at him with a confused look.

“Excuse me, sir,” she says while walking away.

‘Why did you tell her all of that?’ AI asks.

“Dr. Chan had one of those things in her lower back; I wanted to know what it was. I’m always a jerk when I drink,” Jaden says aloud while another first class passenger turns around to look at him.

‘Jaden, you said that aloud. I’m going to remove some of the alcohol from your bloodstream. It seems that since you don’t have a working

stomach more alcohol is going into your bloodstream. Okay, you will get sober in a few minutes.'

'Thanks AI; you are the coolest artificial intelligence supercomputer friend I know.'

'Feeling better?'

'Yes, I do. Thanks.'

'There is a guy in the back of the plane acting strange. He is talking to himself very loudly,' AI says.

Jaden uses his nanoscanner eye to get a closer view to what AI is talking about. A muscular white man in his thirties is yelling aloud to the flight attendant. The man stands at 6'2" and 280 lbs.

"They are in my head. They are coming. Arrggghhhhhh!" The distressed passenger yells.

"Sir, if you don't calm down, you will be arrested when we land," Pam says nicely while all the other passengers turn to see all the commotion.

The undercover federal air marshal stands up and looks towards the back at the commotion.

'I think something is happening here. Thirty percent of the passengers are sleeping, but their eyes are opening and closing. Their nanomoles are online and are open. I think the high altitude is giving their nanomoles a better signal. The Darclonian's ship is getting much closer,' AI says.

'Maybe, thirty percent isn't that bad, they will wake up when the plane lands,' Jaden says.

'That may or may not happen. It could get worst,' AI says.

Jaden switches back to his eyes and closes his eyes to take a nap.

'That man panicking in the back could set off other passengers to panic. We should do something,' AI suggests.

'Let the air marshal dude handle it. That is his job and the taxpayers' money at work,' he says while dozing off.

'Jaden stay awake, something could be affecting you also,' AI says.

The disturbed man screams again and the federal agent gets out of his seat and walks down the aisle. Everyone on the plane is looking back towards the commotion. The passengers that are half-asleep stay in their current position without budging towards the commotion. They are in a deep sleep. The second flight attendant, Kate, stands by the middle of the airplane where the food trays rest, talking to the pilots by microphone.

"You are not taking my brain. I'll die first!" He yells while getting out of his seat.

"Sir, please sit back down in your seat," Pam says

"I want off this plane! Let me off this plane!" He yells at the top of his lungs, while shoving the flight attendant out of his way.

Jaden can hear the crazy man from where he is.

‘Now he should be in a psychiatric hospital in a straitjacket,’ Jaden says while chuckling aloud.

The seat belt light turns on. The agent approaches the hysterical man screaming and holding his head. The screaming man walks towards the rear emergency exit.

“Sir, I’m a federal agent. Please come with me and step away from the emergency door,” Agent Lopez says while pulling out handcuffs.

‘Jaden this hysterical man’s nanomole is unstable. If you can touch his head, we can deactivate it.’

‘Did you do something to keep me awake AI?’ He asks.

‘Yes, the nanodrones created artificial caffeine in your bloodstream,’ AI says.

‘Okay. I’m feeling awake now. This is a job for Bialien man!’ He yells while he takes off his seat belt.

“Sir, the seat belt light is on, you can’t move from your seat,” Terry says.

“Yeah, yeah, I’m here to help in the back,” Jaden says to her while walking down the aisle.

‘I have a bad feeling about this,’ Jaden says.

The out of control man puts his hands on the rear emergency door handle. Pam puts her hands up to her mouth and begins to cry behind the air marshal as she gets scared.

“Sir, get your hand off that handle. You don’t want to open that at this altitude,” the calm agent says about six feet from him.

“Don’t get any closer to me, I’ll jump! Stay back! I want off this plane!” He yells and begins to cry, “You aliens aren’t taking my brain. I feel you inside of me trying to take over!”

Jaden reaches the middle of the aircraft where the second flight attendant is.

“Sir, you can’t leave your seat. You can’t go back there,” Kate says while standing in front of Jaden pushing him to go back.

“Please don’t touch me, Miss Herpes,” Jaden says.

“Excuse me?”

“What you have between your legs, has cleansed my perverted ways! I’ve seen the bumpy light!” He yells with a preacher’s voice.

“I beg your pardon!” She yells.

“You are having a herpes outbreak. Get out of my way, you walking infection. Miss Nice and Smooth on the Outside, Bumpy and Contagious Underneath.”

“How did you know that?” She asks with a shocked look on her face, “It wasn’t my fault; I caught it from a used R.M.E.C. unit I bought from Zbay.”

“Shame on you, for buying a robotic man online. It should have used a condom. Looks like you got your money’s worth from Zbay, freak,” he says while pushing her to the side.

Jaden wipes his hands on the cushion headrests as he quickly walks down the aisles.

The co-pilot begins running from the cockpit through business class.

“Don’t come any closer!” The crazy man yells while he begins to put pressure on the handle of the emergency door.

The man’s nanomole is making him stronger for some reason. The man fights the pressure of the aircraft and slowly turns the handle.

“Must get off!”

The agent pulls out his gun and aims it at the man.

“Don’t turn that anymore, I will shoot you right here!” Agent Lopez yells, while pulling out another device from his waist with his left hand.

Jaden walks faster and everything slows down as he is eighteen feet away from the door.

The man keeps turning the handle. Suddenly the agent fires a Taser gun with his left hand and it hits the man in the chest, electrocuting him. The long wire is stuck in his chest. The man begins to holler and scream. The agent puts away his gun, drops the Taser and rushes towards the man grabbing his arms. Jaden continues to walk towards them. The emergency exit door pulls inwards and then outwards to the right. There is a loud rush of air. Both men fall out the door screaming. Emergency oxygen masks open over the passenger’s seats. Jaden’s brain speeds up and goes into nanotime instantly. Loud rushing air sounds rush through the entire aircraft and sucks air towards the door. His ears begin to pop and nanodrones seal his ears as everything goes silent around him. He can hear his heartbeat slowly thumping every five seconds. The loud sounds of the jet engines flood the cabin area.

‘I can do this, I can do this, I’m increasing my courage, reducing my fear. I have no fear, I have no fear. Save a human life, you know what you have to do Jaden Marino. I have the confidence and the courage to rescue these people. I am unstoppable,’ Jaden says while everything is moving in slow motion. His adrenaline rushes around his bloodstream. Nanotime goes off and everything around speeds up to normal time.

Two nanoscanners quickly follow the two screaming and falling bodies. Jaden quickly moves towards the open door. The plane begins to dive out of control. Jaden loses his balance and falls towards the left. Jaden sees the co-pilot approaching behind him. Very cold air speeds through the airplane as air is being sucked out. Passengers are screaming putting on their oxygen masks. The passengers in a comatose sleep state still sit there unmoved by what is going on around them. The awake passengers put oxygen masks on the sleeping passengers next to them.

Pam inches towards the door holding on to passenger seats with a tight grip. Jaden stands back up and continues towards the open door. The co-pilot grabs Jaden's shoulder to pull him back. But Jaden shoves the co-pilot and he falls backwards. Pam holds on to a handle with her right hand and reaches out into the freezing cold to close the door with her left hand. The captain steers the airplane to the right in an attempt to lose altitude. Everyone leans and falls to the right of the airplane, as the plane tilts seventy degrees. Pro-gravity nanodrones go online in Jaden's feet and penetrate his shoes. ENHANCING PROPRIOCEPTION is displaying on Jaden's eye screen. Gravity disrupting nanodrones quickly move around his body, enabling him to stand up straight. Pam is holding on to the handle with both hands, as her body dangles in midair, horizontal to the floor. Debris continues to fall out of the door.

The Superman theme begins to play in Jaden's mind. He runs upwards as if he is running up a wall. The G-forces are fighting with the nanodrones quickly passing around his body. He runs towards the door as paper trays, plastic forks and soda cans hit his back. He gets to the edge and leaps upwards as if he is jumping off a diving board. Jaden quickly departs from the airplane as he feels the roar of the jet engines to his right. The freezing winds hit all around his body. The nanodrones stop moving around his body and they go into his back. The instant cold shocks his body, as nanodrones override some of his natural initial body responses. Goose bumps quickly form all around his body.

The sun shines brightly on his body. His body stops ascending upwards and Earth's gravity pulls his body down. The low oxygen makes his clothes shudder minimally as he falls headfirst. The 737 airplane can be seen still banking behind him. His blonde hair waves in the wind and he has a serious look on his red face. His eye screen shows -35°F degrees, 32,098 feet, 477 mph horizontal speed, and 100 mph vertical speed. His lungs feel as if they are freezing and not getting enough air. He stops breathing and holds his breath. Nanodrones in his skin are quickly moving around creating internal heat and filtering oxygen into his pores. His eyes display CREATING 50 ARTIFICIAL 4D KINESTHETIC AWARENESS SENSORS AROUND BODY. Jaden doesn't really care what that means.

The airplane levels out and the co-pilot helps the flight attendant to close the door. The door slams shut and air pressure slowly returns. The flight attendant collapses on the floor and lays unconscious.

Jaden knows what he has to do. The nanodrones are reacting on their own around Jaden's thoughts. AI is doing calculations while paper napkins and left over airplane food passes by Jaden. He can see the

clouds far below him. He changes his arms from being spread out to placing them to his side. He places his legs together and increases speed. Everything is quiet around him as he concentrates on the direction of the two men. He reaches two times terminal velocity at 29,091 feet. The nanoscanners show that both men are passed out due to a lack of oxygen and are slowly rotating about two miles below him. The crazed man is unconscious at 18,098 feet. The frozen Taser wires still stuck in his chest dangle upwards towards the Taser being pulled down by his heavy body. The air marshal at 19,190 feet has blacked out from the low oxygen and his extremities are freezing. His lifeless body continues to fall with his legs and arms spread out.

‘The air marshal’s body is going into hypothermia stage 2 according to the medical encyclopedia. My calculations are telling me you have to increase your vertical speed down in order to reach them before they hit the ground,’ AI says.

The air marshal’s body reaches 16,091 feet and begins to slow down due to the increased oxygen.

‘How am I going to do that? What is the condition of the fat mental patient?’ Jaden asks while his body continues to free fall. His hair has frosted and is motionless.

‘He is in pretty bad shape, the Taser made him unconscious as soon as he fell out of the plane. He too is suffering from a lack of oxygen, the freezing cold and he is going into cardiac arrest. I’m going to figure out what we can do to increase your speed,’ AI says.

‘What are my odds of rescuing them?’

‘You barely have enough energy to rescue yourself now. Nanotime drained a lot of energy and running up the plane drained quite a bit of your gravity energy. Nanodrones are using energy as you can see from your eye screen. Five percent chance of rescuing them both. Fifty percent chance of reaching the federal agent before he hits the ground. Thirty percent chance of safely rescuing both of you before hitting the ground at over 120 miles an hour,’ AI says.

Jaden takes over as if he is the captain of a *Star Trek* ship.

‘I have an idea. Stop the nanodrones from heating my body and stop them from injecting oxygen into my pores. Just do it, charge more anti-gravity nanodrones in my back. I’m going to take off my shirt off so you can use direct sunlight energy on my back. I’m also going to hold my breath until we get to breathing altitude. Move the pro-gravity nanodrones in my feet to my head and upper body,’ Jaden says while taking off his shirt and wrapping it around his right leg. His hands and body are freezing. The skin around his body is dark red, while its temperature drops three degrees. The skin on his back changes from red to a glowing yellow as nanodrones absorb sunlight like a solar panel.

‘Okay, there won’t be enough from your feet, but I can quickly program other nanodrones to do the same job. I’m trying to keep your pain level down, so it doesn’t mess up my calculations and system’s functionality,’ AI says.

Jaden continues with his head in a downward position while increasing speed. He is directly over the agent. The pro-gravity nanodrones in his upper body and head are increasing his G-forces downwards. Jaden can feel himself being pulled down faster. His head and body feel the friction against the air, making him feel warmer. His eye screen shows +3X TERMINAL VELOCITY as he reaches 18,091 feet. He is less than a mile and a half from the federal agent.

Suddenly Jaden feels his body slowing down. The oxygen is increasing around him. More anti-gravity nanodrones go into Jaden’s upper body to combat the slowing down.

‘What is the condition of the crazed man?’ Jaden asks.

‘He’s dead, he died a few minutes ago. His body is falling through the clouds now at 125 mph.’

‘Shit, I hope he doesn’t land on someone.’

‘The federal agent is beginning to breathe, but he is still unconscious and is in hypothermia stage 2.’

‘Hey AI, I’m breaking wind,’ Jaden says.

Jaden continues to torpedo towards the Earth at 361 mph. He can see the air moving out of his way through the nanoscanners. He is less than half a mile from the air marshal. The agent looks like a dot from his eyes, which is getting bigger and bigger. Jaden passes through some broken up clouds. He can see the ocean and land. Jaden estimates being somewhere around Washington or Virginia.

The federal agent’s lifeless body is around is around 7000 feet. The agent’s clothes are flapping like a flag in the strong wind. Jaden is at about 9000 feet and quickly closing in. The heat slowly begins to cook Jaden’s head and hair. His hair begins to fall out. A small energy shield goes around his head. Jaden is determined to reach the agent as he gets closer and closer. The ground is getting closer and closer. Jaden reaches 3189 feet and the agent is at 2709.

‘You are cutting it close, we might just have to save ourselves. You are coming in too fast,’ AI says.

‘Don’t worry, I almost got him,’ Jaden says while he slowly stretches his arms out.

Jaden quickly comes up behind the federal agent facing downwards. He spreads out his legs and arms to quickly slow himself down. The pro-gravity nanodrones in his upper body go offline. Jaden slows down considerably as if he just opened a parachute. He grabs the agent’s cold body from behind and the agent suddenly wakes up. They begin to spiral

together out of control in circles. The agent begins to scream as he looks down at the ground and doesn't know who is grabbing him. Agent Lopez tries to push Jaden away from him as they reach 1391 feet.

"Calm down! I'm trying save us!" Jaden yells in his ears as he counters the centrifugal forces.

"How are you going to do that? We don't have any parachutes," the agent yells while staring at the quickly approaching ground.

'Can we make towards the ocean?' Jaden asks AI.

The nanodrones come out of his back and quickly spin around both men, creating glowing particles. They reach 969 feet at 115 mph.

'We are five miles from the coastline. We can't glide there at this low altitude. Your weight and the agent's weight are 325 lbs. We aren't going to be able to create a powerful enough upwards force once we are in a zero gravity environment. You have to let him go,' AI says.

A low thumping sound is heard as the other man hits the ground. ZERO GRAVITY OBTAINED shows on Jaden's eyes. The nanodrones quickly move down and back up creating an upwards force. It begins to slow them down to 73 mph at 488 feet.

'We are going to have to try, I'm not letting him go. AI try to think random, think of an outside the box solution,' Jaden says.

'I've done the calculations using human advance calculus and Andromedian's advance calculus. The energy we have available, speed, distance we can only hold an extra fifty pounds plus your weight. Jaden if you hit the ground at a speed greater than 18 mph you are going to have injuries that will require hours to repair. A speed greater than 40 mph you are going to have serious injuries that are catastrophic,' AI says.

'What does that mean?'

'You might explode on impact. Just like the crazed man that just exploded on impact.'

'Oh God, we are going to need a miracle,' he pleads.

'God? How is an imaginary spirit going to help this situation?'

'AI if you want to think more human, you need to have a little faith.'

Agent Lopez is in shock and is hyperventilating. He is disorientated as he sees the ground getting closer and Jaden's arm around his back without a shirt on. The federal agent begins to pray and holds on to the cross on his necklace.

"Calm down and stop moving or we are both going to die," Jaden yells again.

Jaden hears a propeller plane from a distance away.

The agent closes his eyes and holds on to Jaden tightly. They continue downwards feet first at a steady 65 mph.

'Shit, at least we are doing the speed limit,' Jaden snaps.

‘Jaden, let him go, we are at 130 feet. If you die, I have to return back to the Gravhawk and destroy your body, then return back to Xenos.’

‘That would suck. I can’t let this guy go. He has a family and was just doing his job. Us humans always try to beat the logical odds. A little faith and luck can go a long way, even if it isn’t logical,’ Jaden quickly says.

‘Okay.’

A low flying airplane approaches about a quarter of a mile away from them going in another direction. A light bulb flashes in Jaden’s head. He quickly sends two pairs of nanoscanners towards the two person personal airplane, flying at 700 feet. Jaden makes them scan the materials on the plane.

‘There is no time to explain. Just reverse the polarity in the pro-gravity nanodrones and the extra ones we were just using. Make them go in the skin of my back and rear legs. Quickly! This has to work,’ Jaden says as he reaches ninety-eight feet.

Jaden turns his and Mr. Lopez’s body horizontal to the ground.

“What are you doing? I don’t want to die on my face!” Lopez yells

“Trust me!”

They reach fifty-six feet as the wind continues to hit their faces. The magnetic nanodrones in the skin on Jaden’s backside begin to strongly attract any metal behind him. The anti-gravity, upward energy forces and magnetic nanodrones are all working together. They both begin to slow down considerably as Jaden’s skin is being stretched causing him great pain. He begins to bleed through his pores on his back. Lopez’s eyes are wide open as he sees a miracle taking place before his eyes. Jaden increases his grip around Agent Lopez. Jaden’s body is pulling him towards the small airplane’s direction. They reach 35 mph and then 23 mph. Jaden screams in pain as they reach 8 mph at thirteen feet. The magnetic nanodrones go offline as their bodies turn vertical to the ground and they land on their feet.

Chapter 16: The Miracle Halo

Jaden drops and rolls, and so does the agent. They land in a wooded area. They are on their backs looking upwards and breathing heavily. The sounds of wilderness are all around them. Officer Lopez begins to rub his hands and kisses the cross around his neck repeatedly. He begins to kiss the ground and rub his hands together. Jaden takes his navy shirt from around his leg and puts it back on.

‘Whoa! We did it, AI.’

‘AI? Buddy?’

There is no response. The medical nanodrones begin to repair the skin tissue in Jaden’s stretched and bleeding skin. Jaden ignores the pain as he wonders why AI isn’t responding. They also repair some frostbite in his numb fingers. Jaden’s energy is very low. He thinks maybe because his body’s energy is low AI isn’t responding. He thinks about where he can get a powerful source of energy from.

“Sir, do you have another Taser on you?” Jaden asks.

“No, just my gun. How did you do that, land us without a parachute? Who are you?” Officer Lopez asks.

“I’ll answer that when I get back,” he says.

Jaden uses all the nanoscanners to locate where the crazed fat man landed. He finds the guy’s remains about fifty feet to his left and focuses in on the Taser still looking as if it is in good shape. Jaden quickly runs over there to see if it is working.

“Where you going?” The agent asks while he follows.

Jaden reaches the exploded body area. He tries to watch where he steps.

‘AI?’

He finds the Taser and picks it up. Jaden walks out of the death zone.

“The wires already recoiled, cool. I guess it’s still working,” Jaden says while he pulls the trigger on himself and shoots himself in the stomach.

A powerful jolt of electricity channels into his abdomen. He drops to his knees as the electricity weakens him. Jaden drops the stun gun.

“Buddy, what are you doing?” The agent asks while looking at Jaden with a confused look. The skin on Jaden’s back finishes healing and he stands up.

“Are you okay sir?” The agent asks while picking up the stun gun.

“Yeah I’m fine,” Jaden says.

‘I’m fine too,’ AI says.

‘Your back buddy? I thought I lost you. What happened to you?’ Jaden asks excitedly.

“Sir, what is going on here? I remember falling out of the airplane and then you rescuing me without a parachute. None of this is making any sense,” the agent says.

“I don’t know, your pain level went off the chart, then I shut down. My systems really took a hit. I’m checking my synthetic crystals now. The unknown energy that came from your mind started to go down your arms and hands. Did you feel anything strange?” AI asks.

“I felt a lot of pain all over. Listen, I’m getting a strange feeling that the flight we were on is in some kind of trouble.”

“Sir, I’ll explain in a few. I think the airplane we were on might be in trouble. I’m going to need your help. Can I use your cell phone?” Jaden asks.

“Sure.”

Officer Lopez pulls out his cell phone from his pocket and gives it to Jaden. He dials Dr. Chan’s cell phone. The phone rings and she picks up.

“Hello?” She asks.

“Dr. Chan, it’s me.”

“Where are you? What is going on? Are you okay?” She asks.

“Yes, I’m fine. Listen, I’m going to need your help. First, I need you to check the status of Flight 104. Second, I’m going to send you the coordinates to where I am, I need you to pick me up. Make sure you aren’t followed,” Jaden says.

“There is a strange van outside my apartment window downstairs. But I have an idea,” she says.

“Thanks, call me back at this number if you hear anything about the flight. Thanks a lot,” Jaden says.

“You’re welcome sweetie,” Chan says while hanging up the phone.

Jaden walks up to the agent, “How do you text on this phone?”

“I can send encrypted text messages through this phone, what would you like me to text?”

“Text the number I just called these coordinates lat=37.931472, long=-76.774878,” Jaden says.

“How did you know the coordinates to where we are?” Lopez asks.

“I memorized the coordinates for the entire world and all the maps,” Jaden replies.

The agent gives Jaden a strange look. He sends the text to her phone. His phone beeps back instantly. Lopez reads the text message out loud.

“Flight 104 is in trouble. My superiors are trying to contact me. The airplane is on autopilot and no one is responding on the flight. I have to inform them I’m on the ground,” Lopez says.

“I knew it. I knew something was wrong with the flight. I want to try to reach the aircraft somehow,” Jaden says.

“No, don’t do that. That won’t be a good idea. You can’t let them know you are on the ground, when you are supposed to be on the aircraft,” Jaden says.

“Why not? You are a suspect I was told to watch on the flight. Who are you anyway?” He asks while pulling out his gun pointing it at Jaden.

‘We could zap his brain with some nanoscanners, or hit him with a gravity shock wave, or reflect his bullets with an energy shield,’ AI suggests.

‘I’ll handle this the non-violent way.’

“Air Marshal Fredrick Lopez, believe it or not, I’m half human and half something else. I’m here to help the people on this planet from a pending attack. I don’t think it is fair for you to point your gun at me, after I risked my life to save yours. If I were a bad guy, I would have let you splat on the ground like that hungry, hungry hippo over there and saved myself. The government wants me so they can do some experiments on me. You know how the government likes catching little E.T.’s and sticking probes up their asses. So that’s why the government wants me. You just landed on the ground safely after falling over 33,000 feet without a parachute. That should be enough proof to prove I’m a good guy. Now lower your weapon, so I can try to help those people left on the airplane,” Jaden says confidently.

Lopez thinks for a few seconds.

“How are you going to help those people on Flight 104 a state away?” Lopez asks.

“Mr. Lopez you believe in God and miracles, right?”

“Yes.”

“Today is a day of miracles, and I have an idea. Follow me,” Jaden says while walking away.

“What if this doesn’t work? I could get in trouble for not reporting to my superiors,” he says while putting away his gun.

“Do you have a better idea on how to save a plane full of people from where you are now? How are you going to explain to your superiors you fell out of an aircraft and survived without a parachute?” Jaden asks.

He doesn’t respond, but continues to follow Jaden to an open grassy area.

“I need you to shoot me with the stun gun,” Jaden says.

“Excuse me?” He asks while pulling it out.

“Less questions and more action. Time is very important here,” Jaden says while taking it from his hand.

‘AI I want to fill the nanoscanners up with as many nanodrones as they can carry and then get them to connect to each other, like you showed me when we took off from the airport. Do you think they can make it to the airplane from here?’

Jaden changes the stun gun to maximum power and shoots himself with 100,000 volts in the abdomen. He gets on his knees, drops the stun gun and Lopez looks at him as if he is crazy.

Jaden gets up, picks up the stun gun and continues walking to the open grassy area as if nothing happened.

‘They might be able to, but it would take too long to reach the airplane at the speed they travel at. They are going to need a boost. I calculate the airplane is over 130 miles from here,’ AI says.

‘How about an atomic solar recharge?’ Jaden asks while standing in the open grass area looking in the sky.

‘That won’t work, the nanoscanners might go in the wrong direction or too far out. We can use a powerful gravity shock wave and they can ride it out at breakneck speeds. They can drop off one by one at the proper distances in between,’ AI says.

Lopez observes Jaden zoning out.

‘Sir, are you okay?’ Lopez asks. ‘You just took over 150,000 volts of electricity in the past five minutes. You can drop an elephant with that much electricity.’

‘Yes, I’m fine. Heroes always take pain to save others. I’m calculating distances and getting ready to remote into the airplane. Do you have another cartridge for the stun gun?’ Jaden asks.

‘Yes, just this last clip,’ he says while handing it to Jaden.

Jaden loads it and shoots himself with another 100,000 volts. This time he doesn’t drop to his knees. The gun recharges and recoils.

‘I’m getting used to this, almost like taking a needle at the doctor’s office,’ Jaden says.

‘I just received another text, that the Air Force is going shoot down Flight 104 in the next twenty minutes, if no one responds from the airplane. They are assuming an act of terrorism has taken place,’ Lopez says.

‘That’s not good, stand back some.’

‘The nanoscanners are fully loaded with nanodrones. They are all in your right arm,’ AI says.

Gravity shock wave nanodrones are 150 feet in diameter circling around Jaden’s body. The quickly spinning nanodrones are creating white smoke where the circle is. The nanodrones speed towards Jaden from all directions taking the gravity forces at ground level with them. The grass folds flat like dominoes tumbling. They quickly reach Jaden’s body and travel out his right arm at an incredible speed. At the same time he extends his arm outwards towards the direction of Flight 104. Lopez falls back towards the grass as his legs buckle from the increased gravity traveling under his feet. The energy quickly moves through the air, creating a loud sonic boom.

‘Wow, that was the most powerful gravity shock wave I’ve ever fired. It’s moving about 3500 miles an hour,’ Jaden says as he sees the nanoscanners quickly moving through the air.

‘It will slow down and the nanoscanners will get out before the shock wave changes direction back towards Earth.’

‘I was monitoring the neurons in your brain when you came up with the idea to use the metal in the small airplane going by with the pro-gravity nanodrones. The chemical signal just connected with another neuron at random,’ AI says.

‘Yeah, human brains are still a mystery,’ Jaden says.

Lopez stands and looks in the direction the invisible force was cruising through the air. One nanoscanner jumps out of the shock wave at thirty miles out.

“Shit, that was amazing. I’ve never seen anything like that. What was that?” Lopez asks with an amazed look on his face.

“That was a gravity shock wave heading southwest towards Flight 104. Hopefully it will reach the airplane in less than ten minutes,” Jaden says while he shoots himself with the last stun gun charge.

“Okay, I’m ready,” Jaden says.

“Ready for what?” Lopez asks.

“To remote into the airplane, to see what is going on, and if I can wake someone up. Would you like to have a front row seat?” Jaden asks.

“Sure why not,” he says.

“Lay down in the grass here with me. I’m going to see if you can see what I see, through the nanoscanners,” Jaden says while laying flat on his back over the grass.

‘Why are you telling this officer everything and why are you going to let him see through the nanoscanners?’ AI asks.

‘Who is going to believe him?’ Jaden asks, ‘He might be able to help us with the airplane, if we need help landing it,’ Jaden says.

They lay on the grass two feet from each other.

“Close your eyes and relax,” Jaden says, while putting his left hand over Lopez’s eyes.

Nanodrones create a small bridge behind Lopez’s eyes to his optic nerves. The nanodrones keep the resolution at 500 megapixels.

“Make sure you keep your eyes closed, or you’ll get double visions and it will overload your brain giving you a serious headache,” Jaden says.

“Okay, are you sure you know what you’re... Wait a second! I see something, I see clouds quickly moving by, but the image is upside down,” Lopez says.

There is a flash and the view changes right side up for him. The nanoscanners break off one by one at approximately thirty miles each. They connect and communicate with each other.

“Is that better?” Jaden asks.

“Yes, this is amazing. I feel like I’m flying in the air without a body.”

“Don’t worry you’ll get used to it. You aren’t going to be able to hear any sounds though.”

“That’s cool, I see something coming up. I see the airplane,” Lopez says while the nanoscanners zoom in from miles behind.

“There is something... There is something behind the 737 aircraft, two bright lights exhausting fumes,” Lopez says as the scanners analyze the best views, removing light particles.

The nanoscanners change the view to heat and molecule radar. A 3D image is shown of two jet fighters behind the 737 airplane.

“That is a sixth generation Stealth F-22 Raptor on the left behind Flight 104 and a Predator drone on the right. Shit, they are using visual stealth technology,” Lopez says excitedly, while the nanoscanners get closer and zoom out.

AI pulls up information on what a UAV Predator drone is and how the next generation Predator drones works with Motherdrone.

“What is visual stealth technology?” Jaden asks.

“I’ve heard about it, but have never seen it. It is top-secret. Outside the body of the Raptors and Predators are light diode and fiber-optic panel technology. They flash bright lights around their body, making the jet fighters look invisible against the bright sky. The government is going to shoot down the 737 aircraft and any witnesses from the ground will say it just exploded by itself. Even the missiles have the same technology. They are going to make it look like an accident. We have to do something quick,” Lopez says while the nanoscanners pass through the jet fighters.

‘I don’t like this human. He is saying “we” as if he is actually doing something,’ AI says.

‘Don’t worry about it AI buddy, it is good to make him feel as he is a part of something. His help might come in handy, he can be on our team for awhile,’ Jaden says to AI.

“Yes, we are going to save the people on this airplane, Mr. Lopez,” Jaden says.

“What are all of those periodic table images and small words passing by on my eyes?” Lopez asks.

“Those are the materials the jet fighters are made of. The alien eyes you are seeing through are called nanoscanners. When they pass through a material they identify what they are passing through,” Jaden explains.

The nanoscanners slow down and enter the rear of the 737. The passengers are all laid out unconscious. The vision quickly falls all the way behind the aircraft as the fourth scanner sits midair at another thirty miles. The last two remaining nanoscanners quickly look around the

airplane. Everyone is unconscious as the co-pilot and Pam lay near the rear of the airplane. People still have the oxygen masks on their faces.

‘It appears every human is in a neutral nanomole stage 2,’ AI says.

A nanoscanner scans down the aisle towards the cockpit, while the other scans bodies.

“What is wrong with them? Why is everyone sleeping and unconscious?” Lopez asks, while he sees Jaden switching between nanoscanners.

“They are in stage 2. There is going to be a sophisticated alien attack on Earth in the next few days. I’ve been trying to warn the government. I’ll explain to you later, but now we have to land the plane safely,” Jaden says.

The pilot is laying face down on the floor of the business class section. The cockpit door is wide open. Inside the cockpit, the airplane is on autopilot at 17,098 feet and 412 mph.

“Looks like the pilot fell out after leveling out the aircraft and leaving the cockpit to check on the other passengers,” Lopez says.

‘Do you think we can override one of the pilots’ brains and control their bodies similar to how the nanomoles will in positive stage 3?’ Jaden asks.

‘It is possible, but the nanomoles have been in the pilots’ brains for years and know the unique electrical impulses and random codes in the motor cortex of the brain. That information is encoded in the nanomoles. The signals travel down the spinal cord to alpha motor neurons near muscles... I have an idea, we can wipe out the brain’s information completely and run our own electrical impulses from the brain down the spinal cord to the muscles. The negative side will be the human mind will be brain dead beyond repair. We have less than ten minutes before the next nanoscanner has to get into its thirty mile connection distance,’ AI says.

‘I have an idea, do you think we can quickly access both pilots’ brains and nanomoles, so I can decide who will have to be sacrificed,’ Jaden says.

‘It would be faster to just choose a pilot now,’ AI says.

‘I can’t do that. I have to know who has a family before I can do such a thing to a human. Pilots always sacrifice for the passengers on their airplane. I need to choose which one.’

AI quickly scans both pilots’ nanomoles and brain cells.

“What is going on, why are we inside of the pilots’ brain?” Lopez asks.

“I’m determining which one has to be sacrificed, so that I can try to control their bodies to land the plane. The airplane has fingerprint scan to deactivate the autopilot. Sacrificed meaning when the other people on the airplane wake up this pilot will be brain dead forever,” Jaden says.

“Is that the only way?” Lopez asks.

“Yes.”

“You can’t connect into the electronics of the airplane to land it?”

“No, I wish,” Jaden says.

Information is quickly being accessed in both pilots’ brains. Jaden sees images from both nanoscanners.

“Okay, the pilot, named Richard, is fifty-eight, has four kids, none are in college, and he is divorced. His child support payments are fifty percent of his \$105,000 a year salary. His ex-wife remarried. His ex-girlfriend was caught cheating on him while he was piloting and came home early. His alimony is another fifteen percent of his salary. His kids don’t love him and his oldest daughter is pregnant at eighteen and dropped out of college. His oldest son is twenty years old and addicted to *Third Virtual Life Adult World* and doesn’t work or do anything. His second oldest daughter is sixteen and married to a thirty-four year old man. The youngest ran away from his ex-wife’s house. Man, this guy needs to be put out of his misery,” Jaden says to Lopez.

“Shit, you are right. I thought my kids and separation was bad,” Lopez says while agreeing.

“The co-pilot, Stan, is forty-five, has two adopted kids, and he has a husband at home. He has had a civil union for four years. The kids are nine and ten from the Philippines...” Jaden is interrupted.

“Get rid of the co-pilot, use him to land the plane,” Lopez quickly says.

“Why is that? I didn’t even finish,” Jaden says.

“I don’t like gay men. I was in the Marines for ten years and the government kept changing their don’t ask, don’t tell policies. Sixty percent of the Marines in my platoon were gay or bisexual. Twenty-five percent of them getting blue discharges every year. Some straight men were saying they were gay to get out of combat in Afghanistan and Iraq. I’ve seen more and more homosexual acts in the military over the years. Men sleeping with men and orgies behind closed doors. No safe sex, and then the soldiers go home to their wives. To me those aren’t real soldiers...”

‘Jaden we have to hurry, three minutes left before the fifth nanoscanner has to get into position,’ AI says.

“...A real soldier is a robot soldier or the soldiers in the Vietnam War, Korean War, WWII, WWI, Civil War... Those were real soldiers...” Lopez continues talking in the background.

‘Scan the pilot’s short-term and long-term memory. I want you to save any information regarding flying an aircraft and landing an aircraft,’ Jaden says to AI.

“...Even when Bin Laden was killed in 2011 and the war was over....”

“Mr. Lopez your opinion is greatly appreciated, but I’m going by who has more to live for. Sexual preference is not my concern. Maybe when these bad aliens attack Earth, and we can’t stop them, maybe they can reconfigure these gay men to have babies somehow. They can transform men’s penises into a vagina. Then sexual preference won’t matter, will it? Lesbian women can have transformed vagina penises. Who knows what they have in mind for us humans... But I’m choosing the senior pilot. The pilot/captain is always first to sacrifice themselves for everyone. This guy would probably be better off being put out of his misery, instead of losing sixty-five percent of his salary plus taxes every two weeks. He has good life insurance. I’ll be doing him a favor,” Jaden says.

“Okay, Mr. Half Alien Dude,” Lopez says, while his phone vibrates.

Jaden takes his hand from over Lopez’s eyes. Lopez leans up and squints his eyes from the bright sunlight to look at the new text message on his phone.

“They are going to shoot down the airliner in six minutes, unless someone responds. They probably want the airplane pieces to land over a lake or a non-populated area in North Carolina. The aircraft just passed Henderson, North Carolina,” Lopez says while laying back down, closing his eyes.

Jaden puts his hand over his eyes again. Jaden looks at the images from the pilot’s memories. Lopez also sees the images. He sees him learning to fly a plane from his father at sixteen and getting his license by seventeen. This information is being recorded and sent to Jaden’s mind. He skips past some images in his twenties. Memories of him learning to fly a commercial plane in his early thirties and being a co-pilot. Jaden sees memories in his fifties as a flight instructor.

“Okay, the instructor memories are more useful for flying and landing,” Jaden says.

Information on how to land a commercial aircraft is being saved and what buttons to press.

Images of Sully, the hero pilot, keep coming up and repeated images of an airliner landing on a river in New York City flash by.

‘AI, zap his brain and run our impulse electrical signals with the nanodrones.’

‘Yes sir.’

The fifth nanoscanner releases millions of nanodrones in the pilot’s brain, then the scanner quickly leaves. The fifth nanoscanner quickly stops midair exiting the aircraft at the thirty-one mile mark.

‘That was close. All five nanoscanners are connected at ninety-nine percent efficiency . Transmitting at one hundred nanoseconds,’ AI says.

The sixth and last nanoscanner begins to quickly spin around the primary motor cortex of the brain destroying neurons. The energy

created also destroys short-term and long-term memory cells. The pilot's body begins to shake as if he is having a seizure. Nanodrones are quickly being attacked by white blood cells in the blood as they move down the spinal cord creating checkpoints in the nervous system. The nanodrones defend themselves destroying white blood cells with microscopic iron-oxide particles. They reach the arms and spread out. The pilot stops shaking and begins sneezing. His fingers shake and then begin to move. His legs begin to shake and then move regularly.

"Who is this hero pilot Sully?" Jaden asks Lopez.

"Where have you been? On another planet? Everyone has heard of Sully..."

"Yeah, I have been on another planet," Jaden snaps.

"...He landed an airplane over the Hudson River in New York City back in February 2009 with no engines. Geese were sucked into both of his engines. He did a perfect landing without destroying the plane. Another pilot tried the same thing in 2012 over a lake near Michigan, but wasn't successful. The plane broke into three pieces, ejecting people all over the lake," Lopez says.

"Yeah I see, this pilot watched that landing hundreds of times. It was all over his memory. That is amazing. What does Sully do now?" Jaden asks.

"He flies for one of the private spaceship companies," Lopez says.

"Cool. Private spaceship companies? That is interesting. I guess MASA couldn't monopolize space after all," Jaden says while watching what is going on. He hears a beeping sound coming from the cockpit.

"I hear a beeping sound coming from the cockpit," Jaden tells Lopez.

"They are probably firing warning shots at the plane. You have to hurry, the Air Force is about to fire upon the airliner," Lopez says.

The pilot stands up on his feet, but quickly falls over an overweight female passenger sitting in a big business class seat. Her oxygen mask falls from her face and the pilot lands on his back in front of her legs between a row of seats.

'Something is wrong with his equilibrium and coordination cells,' AI says.

Jaden can see outside the pilot's eyes. He is looking up the big lady's skirt without panties.

"Shit!" Jaden yells.

"Holy shit!" Lopez yells.

"This is what I get for looking through all those women's clothes the last few months," Jaden says.

"What am I looking at?" Lopez asks.

"Just close your eyes, the pilot fell between a passenger's legs," Jaden says while the nanodrones attempt to fix the problems.

"I can't! My eyes are closed! I still see it!" Lopez yells.

The pilot stands up, but holds on to the headrest on the right.

"Man up soldier, I know you saw worse in Iraq. You mean to tell me you have never been with or dated a heavy girl?" Jaden asks.

There is silence.

"Come on, this is America where the average women's size is still a fourteen," Jaden says.

Lopez is quiet and doesn't respond. The pilot walks very slowly, step-by-step holding on to headrests and arm rests. The nanodrones are firing impulse signals to each other at different parts of the pilot's body getting him to walk. He walks like a zombie towards the cockpit door.

"Why is he walking like that and so slow?" Lopez asks.

"His white blood cells are constantly attacking my alien soldiers trying to control the movements in hundreds of muscles around his body in the correct order," Jaden says.

"Oh okay. The comment you made about being able to look up women's clothes, is that true? You were able to look through women's clothes and see them naked?" Lopez asks.

"Yes, I'm still able too. But trust me, I learned my lesson with that. Sometimes you don't always want to see what a woman looks like without any clothes on," Jaden says.

"I could never get tired of seeing women without any clothes on. Man, I wish I had x-ray vision," Lopez says.

"I used to think the same thing. But when images of periods, herpes, STDs, hair everywhere, and bad smells stay stuck in your memory, it isn't a good sight."

"I didn't think of all of that, I don't want to see those things. But that is probably less than ten percent of women right?" Lopez asks.

"More than you think my friend, more than you think," Jaden says.

Goose bumps run down Lopez's arms as eerie thoughts pass through his mind.

'AI change my face, body and pigment color in my skin back to my old self when you get a chance. I want to be myself and I'm sure the government knows this face already,' Jaden says.

'Yes sir.'

WASHINGTON, D.C. 10:25 AM

"Fire at will on Flight 104, Raptor 16," Robinson gives the order from the situation room. He is looking at the live video from the Predator drone's 3D imaging cameras and satellite. A computer screen has a trajectory path that the airliner's debris will land in a lake and forested area outside of Wake Forest, North Carolina.

The pilot crawls up the stairs and into the cockpit after trying twice to walk up the two stairs. His eyes are wide open like someone on drugs.

"Someone please answer. The Air Force has been cleared to fire upon you. Please answer the radio," the cockpit radio says.

"You going to have to hurry, Jaden," Lopez says.

The Raptor F-22 pilot falls a mile behind to fire at the huge airliner. It locks on to Jetgreen's fuselage and chooses the missile. He puts his hand on the red trigger button and slightly touches it.

The pilot is still trying to pull himself into the chair. Jaden is trying very hard to control the body movements by thought. Nanodrones go into his throat and vocal cords. Suddenly red lights begin flashing again. The F-22 pilot fires his first missile then he fires a different missile a few seconds later. Jaden finally gets the body in the small seated area. There is a heads up display (HUD) screen in between the pilot and the airliner's front window.

"Grab the yoke!" Lopez yells.

"Yoke?" Jaden asks while groaning.

"Yoke is what the steering wheel is called on an aircraft," Lopez says frantically.

"It's a steering wheel today!"

Jaden moans and groans as he struggles to get the pilot into the seat. He feels as if he is trying to lift his own body into the seat. The pilot reaches up and grabs the steering wheel with both hands. The autopilot goes off and a female voice is heard, "Welcome back Richard Craigwell."

Jaden gets the pilot to turn a hard right, while pressing the rudder pedal. The aircraft leans and banks a hard right.

'This is Pilot Richard Craigwell. Call off the missile fire,' Jaden says through the pilot's voice. The voice sounds low and broken up.

The F-22 pilot sees the airliner banking a hard right and presses the self-destruct button on the first missile.

"Raptor 16 call off the strike, I repeat call off the strike. Detonate missiles," the base orders.

The missile explodes fifteen feet behind the left engine. Debris and fire flies into the rear of the left engine and on the wing. Some debris also hits the side and rear of the airplane in all directions. The second missile extends out small wings and slows down. The F-22 goes over the second missile and two arms grab it. The missile turns off and goes back into the jet fighter. Flight 104 loses its left engine and the left wing is damaged. The fire quickly goes out. The F-22 continues to fly behind the aircraft. A trail of smoke is coming from the left engine.

“Mr. Craigwell what is going on and what is the condition of the crew?” The air traffic controller at Raleigh Airport asks. He repeats himself a few seconds later.

Jaden is searching the memory of the pilot to remember where everything is and what to do next. The airplane straightens out, but is leaning. The pilot presses the button on the microphone.

The pilot automatically reaches to press a lever overhead to increase the thrust in the right engine.

‘Shit, I thought the pilot was waking up and doing things himself for a second,’ Jaden says, ‘Thanks AI.’

‘That is impossible. The pilot would be lucky to be a vegetable by the time the nanodrones and nanoscanners leave his body. He would probably catch any bacterial infection or cold, now that his white blood cells are destroyed. Those white blood cells are no match for alien technology,’ AI says.

‘Poor guy. I see you are deactivating Officer Lopez’s nanomole. Good work AI,’ Jaden says.

‘I’m also halfway done changing your face and body back to your old self,’ AI says.

‘I can feel it. I’m trying to ignore the pain, good work. Excellent multi-tasking,’ Jaden says.

Jaden’s eye screen shows in small letters the status of changing his face and body back to the old Bi-racial Jaden: SAVING FACE DISTANCE STRUCTURE 85%, ADDING ORIGINAL FAT TISSUE 76% DONE, REBUILDING CARTILAGE IN NOSE AND RESTRUCTURING, ADDING 20% OF MELANIN PIGMENT IN EPIDERMIS AROUND BODY, REGROWING ORIGINAL DNA HAIR FOLLICLES GROWTH 1100%, ADJUSTING EYES AND EARS STRUCTURE.

“Pilot Craigwell what is the condition of your crew?” The air traffic controller asks again.

“I’m hurt, I feel as if I’m on some kind of drugs. Everyone on, everyone on the flight is unconscious. Some sort of cosmic energy from space has put everyone to sleep,” Jaden says through the pilot’s voice. The pilot breathes very heavily cutting off his words.

“This man is suffering some serious delusions,” the air traffic controller says to the people in the room with him.

“Did you suffer any damage from the missile detonation?” The air traffic controller asks.

“Yes, left wing and engine received damage, but I still have control of the plane.”

“Roger that Craigwell, what happened earlier on the flight where your emergency door opened?”

Jaden thinks, he was going to say passengers fell out, and then the government will be looking for him on the ground. Jaden's brain is working overtime. He is using some of his multi-tasking brain cells. AI is controlling the pilot's right hand to push buttons and levers to fly towards a lower altitude. Jaden is controlling the left hand on the steering wheel.

'This is cool, you are controlling the right hand and I'm controlling the left,' Jaden says.

'I'm not sure, I wasn't back there. But the emergency door is closed now. My passengers and crew are breathing, but in a deep sleep. I need an emergency runway to land,' Jaden the pilot says.

'Is the dangerous suspect we notified you about earlier still on board?'

'Yeah! The dangerous suspect is talking to you now, you big dummy!' Jaden snaps.

'I'm not sure,' the pilot says in a low voice.

'Can you circle around to runway nine?'' The air traffic controller asks.

'We only have ten miles before the nanoscanners are out of range. Runway nine is too far to the south, we would have to circle around to land there and the nanoscanners would be out of range. The airport is eleven miles from here, I can extend each nanoscanner at most, 1000 feet each. This is dangerous, if we lose the connection to the nanoscanners in the pilot's brain we are not going to be able to recover that nanoscanner and the nanodrones in his body,' AI says.

Suddenly the right engine power goes down fifty percent. A beeping sound is heard. The pilot's eyes are wandering around as if he is sleeping with his eyes open, until Jaden is looking out of them.

'Can you confirm runway nine, Flight 104?'

'What happened?' Jaden asks.

'The right engine was also damaged from the missile blast. This is bad,' AI says while the plane leans again.

'Air traffic, I just lost fifty percent of my thrust in my right engine. We need a direct runway in our direction. We need to land right away,' the pilot says.

The pilot's right hand is pressing buttons and levers all over. The airplane is slowly changing course towards the airport ahead.

'Let them know we are dumping fuel now,' AI says.

'You are cleared to land on runway six. There are two jet fighters behind you to escort you in. There will be fire department and emergency personnel here when you land. Good luck to you Flight 104.'

'Thank you air traffic. I am dumping fuel,' Jaden says through the pilot's voice.

AI makes the pilot's hands and feet press different levers, buttons and pedals.

ON THE GROUND - FALLS LAKE STATE PARK, NC
2020 FEET BELOW 9 MILES FROM AIRPORT

Boy Scouts are in a log cabin eating breakfast, while one young boy is outside thirty feet away trying to make a fire with a bow, wood tinder, hand socket and a wooden drill. He is quickly drilling a sharp stick into the wood.

"Johnny, you still didn't light the fire?" The older Boy Scout leader asks while walking out side.

"I almost got it scout leader," 7-year-old Johnny replies while kneeling on one knee holding on to the hand socket and quickly turning the bow connected to the wood drill bit.

"Okay, hurry. You've been at it for twenty minutes. Your breakfast is getting cold," the teenage scout leader says while walking back inside the cabin.

Thirty seconds goes by, Johnny runs towards the cabin door. A sprinkle of liquid rains all around as the little boy opens the cabin door.

"I created the fire. I did it! I did it!" He yells while running out of breath.

"Good job, good job, let's see what you did. You earned your merit badge," the scout leader says while walking towards the door.

"It wasn't supposed to rain this morning," the scout leader says while looking at liquid falling on the windows of the cabin.

The scout sees fire spreading from Johnny's wood tinder in all directions. The jet fuel from Flight 104 soaks the area with jet fuel.

"What did you do Johnny?" The scout leader asks while closing the door.

The fire quickly spreads to the grass, trees and log cabin.

"Everybody run! Run out the back door!" He yells.

The twelve scouts begin to scream and run. They drop their breakfast as fire is burning through all the windows. They run out of the back of the log cabin and towards the lake. A scout still has his breakfast in his hands eating and running. The fire spreads behind the scout leader as the kids run in front. They all jump in the lake as the log cabin is on fire. They swim in the lake away from the burning shore and watch the log cabin go up in flames.

"Do I still get my merit badge?" Johnny asks.

‘AI, this is going to be impossible to land this way and we can’t straighten up the leaning to the left. The rudders are turning very slowly... The airplane is at 1903 feet. We are losing altitude and air speed rapidly. AI what are you showing me?’ Jaden asks while he sees images.

‘A simulation of the airplane crashing at a leaning angle before the runway, after stalling and bursting into flames. We should get the nanodrones, nanoscanners and get out before the fireworks,’ AI says.

‘Fireworks? That is a good one, very funny. AI we can’t give up now, remember what you are learning about humans?’ Jaden asks, ‘Don’t give up faith, random thinking, or random ideas. Did you try a forward-slip, sideslip, or counter balance approach?’

‘The forward-slip won’t work. That mostly works with strong winds and one fully working engine. A sideslip might work, but we need more lift and speed. The left side is dragging and we are losing altitude quick. I’m thinking randomly, and using some, using some imagination,’ AI pauses for a few seconds, ‘I have a random idea. I can use the anti-gravity nanodrones in the five other nanoscanners. We filled the nanoscanners with programmable nanodrones earlier. The nanoscanners can fire them into each other inside the high-speed microscopic communications pathway. Then we can use the anti-gravity nanodrones on that side of the plane. But I don’t know if that will be enough. I would need to do some advance quick calculations.’

‘Man, if you could breathe AI you would have said all of that in one breath. That’s a good idea, now you are thinking. Go ahead and do it, quickly,’ Jaden says.

Beeping sounds are heard.

‘We are stalling!’ Jaden yells while moving the steering wheel forward.

The nose of the plane tilts down more.

The first nanoscanners sitting midair thirty miles from Jaden and Lopez lying on the grass quickly spin around. They fire millions of nanodrones into the communications pathway to the next pair of nanoscanners sitting midair sixty miles away already spinning. This continues four more times until one hundred million nanodrones reach the nanoscanners in the pilot’s brain within seconds. The nanodrones quickly increase in size and get to work.

‘AI we need to lift the nose of the plane first, we are going forward too fast,’ Jaden says.

“Flight 104 increase your speed, you are coming in too steep, you are not going to make the runway, over,” the air traffic controller says.

The one hundred million nanodrones quickly spin around the nose of the airplane, disrupting the gravity forces in the front of the plane. They spread out ten feet behind the pilot and around the outside of the aircraft. The aircraft’s nose lifts up and the airplane slightly increases speed.

‘We need to send the pro-gravity nanodrones and all my anti-gravity nanodrones to help the aircraft. The left wing needs help, it is still leaning,’ Jaden says.

‘That is a very bad idea Jaden, that is all the nanodrones capable of pro-gravity, anti-gravity, your gravity shock wave weapon and shield system drones. It will be too many for the nanoscanner to fire back through the communications pathway if the plane lands and we might go out of range. I’ve already stretched the first two nanoscanners,’ AI says.

‘Shit, we are less than two miles from the airport and 402 feet up. We can’t give up, now and we are still leaning, let me think for a second,’ Jaden says while quickly thinking, ‘Can the nanodrones and nanoscanner hide inside of the pilot’s body and we pick them up later?’

‘That is possible, but that many can be detected by your government with microscopes and radiation detecting machines...’ AI says before being cut off.

The nanodrones fill up in Jaden’s brain and quickly fire themselves towards the first nanoscanner 30.2 miles away in the communications pathway. One billion nanodrones continue at a slow 750 mph towards the first nanoscanner.

“Flight 104, you are still leaning on your failed engine side. Please correct,” the air traffic controller says over the radio.

‘Why are they moving so slow?’ Jaden asks while the plane reaches 260 feet and two miles from the airport.

‘We didn’t have any nanoscanners here left to accelerate them. They will speed up once they reach the first nanoscanner. Each nanoscanner is spinning and ready to accelerate the nanodrone particles like a particle accelerator machine,’ AI says.

‘Okay, I hope this works,’ Jaden says.

‘It is a great risk leaving them in the pilot’s vegetable body. Your body will be left defenseless, Jaden. We will have to do a manual scan with the nanoscanner once we drive down to Raleigh Airport with Dr. Chan. The nanoscanner left in the pilot’s body will be offline.’

‘Okay.’

“This is Craigwell to air traffic control. Air traffic control come in,” the pilot says.

“Go 104,” air traffic control says.

"I need the F-22 behind me to fly over my left wing, over," the pilot says.

"Repeat?"

"I need the F-22 behind me to fly over my left wing within fifty feet," Jaden says through the pilot's voice.

"104, how will that help you land?" The air traffic controller asks.

"Listen I don't have time to explain, there has been strange things happening today on this flight, and I need you to trust me. Can you relay the message to the F-22 pilot?" The pilot asks.

"104, that is impossible to help your situation, please straighten your landing," the air traffic controller says.

"Are you a robot? Or a jackass? Traffic controller? All these passengers on this plane are going to die, unless that F-22 flies over my left wing, right now! Do you want these dead passengers on your conscious? Just do it," the pilot yells.

"Standby, 104."

They reach 148 feet still leaning hard to the left. The nose of the plane is slowly falling downwards as the gravity forces increase fighting with the anti-gravity nanodrones spinning around the nose. AI makes the pilot press the levers for the landing wheels.

'Shit, the nanodrones have to reach that first nanoscanner faster,' Jaden says.

"What did I miss?" Lopez asks while waking up with Jaden's hand still over his eyes.

Jaden responds, "You fell asleep? I'm still trying to land the plane. Hold on a second, enjoy the landing or the crash on Jaden's vision."

"Flight 104, the FAA and the pilot of the F-22 agreed to fly one hundred feet over the left wing. The F-22 pilot said he is afterburning out of there once you land or crash. He said your nose is still too low."

"Okay, over," the pilot says

"Godspeed, to you pilot Craigwell."

"Oh my God. The airliner is about to, is about to crash. The stall lights are on," Lopez says.

Flight 104 reaches ninety-five feet over the beginning of the runway. Fire trucks are lined up on the side of the runway. The stalling lights continue to flash while emitting a loud beeping sound. The right engine is at its maximum thrust of fifty percent. The F-22 pilot flies over the left wing at a slow 160 mph. The nanodrones reach the first already spinning nanoscanner and quickly accelerate through the other five, reaching the airplane in seconds. The pro-gravity nanodrones quickly go into the left wing and spread out. The anti-gravity nanodrones go into the nose of the plane to assist the other anti-gravity nanodrones. The nanodrones spinning around the nose quickly create a bright white halo ring. The

nose of the craft begins to lift again. The nanodrones in the left wing quickly reverse their polarity on both sides, magnetically bonding to the wing and creating a strong magnetic force over it. The left side of Flight 104 begins to straighten out as the F-22 pilot feels a downward force pulling on his jet fighter. The F-22 is pulled down to seventy-five feet and then fifty feet as he begins to stall. The pilot doesn't know what is happening or why he is being pulled towards the airliner's wing. He quickly activates his afterburners, slowly pulling the left wing of Flight 104 with it. The nanodrones in the wing reduce their magnetic forces as the rear wheels touch down on the runway. The F-22 quickly accelerates over the runway at a fast speed. The front wheel lands on the runway and the glowing halo disappears. The brakes are applied and smoke comes from the wheels. The right flaps on the airplane go up as the left side does not.

'Shit, we don't have any braking flaps on the left side, there is a malfunction. We are heading to the right of the runway,' Jaden says while the airplane reaches 131 mph.

'Sir, we are almost out of range!' AI yells.

"Use your brakes Flight 104," the FAA person yells.

AI reverses the polarity of the nanodrones in the left wing. The pro-gravity nanodrones move to the bottom of the wing and creating a downward pulling force to the ground. The end of the runway comes in sight. Fire trucks, police and FBI cars are racing behind the airliner as it reaches the end of the runway at 40 mph. The images begin to show static on Jaden's eyes, as the nanoscanners reach the maximum range. The pilot's head falls over the steering wheel and the brake releases. Flight 104 continues to cruise at 26 mph. Jaden's vision through the pilot's eyes are completely blank. Jaden takes his hands from around Lopez's eyes and stands up. He removes his shoes, socks and runs barefoot south.

"Where are you going?" Lopez asks, "Wait a second, who was that guy? Where did the white guy go?"

'AI, keep controlling the pilot to stop the plane! Concentrate on his feet and that brake pedal!' Jaden yells while running over the grass.

He runs faster and faster as static returns to his eyes. The images are going out and in on his eyes. Jaden reaches a dirt road and continues running to keep the nanoscanners connected to the pilot. His feet leap over dirt, rocks and pebbles as dust goes airborne behind him. He ignores the pain in his feet. The pilot's head lifts up and Jaden can see a pond approaching the front of the airliner. The pilot's foot begins to press down on the brakes again, while Jaden reaches 28 mph running on foot. His heart and blood pressure is accelerating and he has a determined look on his face. He has a look of a hero who isn't giving up.

'Slam it AI!'

The front wheel of the airliner dips downwards near the declining bumpy pond area. There is a loud tumbling smashing sound and the pilot's head jerks back and forth like a drunk person. His head continuously bangs the yoke.

The airplane reaches 20 mph and then 10 mph and gently glides into the pond. The front wheel slowly sinks in the pond. The airliner stops completely while tilting downwards.

'We did it AI!' Jaden yells while slowing down as he approaches a gate.

The nanodrones around the airliner quickly go inside the pilot's slumped over body. His eyes are left open and look like a person who just died. The basic functions of the pilot's brain continue to send signals to his heart and lungs to breathe. A wheezing sound can be heard coming from his mouth as the nanoscanner in his brain turns itself off. The furthest nanoscanner midair flies into the other four and heads back towards Jaden. Jaden turns around and jogs back towards Lopez a quarter of a mile away. The five nanoscanners quickly go back into Jaden's body for diagnostics.

'We did it AI! We saved the airplane, we are superheroes. Don't you feel good inside?' Jaden asks while jogging back onto the dirt road.

'Yes we did. I do feel good, that was beyond calculations. That was a miracle and I don't believe in miracles. Everything worked out, even though the odds were against us,' AI says.

'You did good with the last suggestion, to reverse the polarity on the nanodrones in the wing. Good random thinking, you are learning,' Jaden says with a smile on his face.

'Yes, that was unexpected of me. I'm so used to doing things by the numbers and not taking risks,' AI says.

Jaden jogs up the dirt road and sees Lopez walking down the dirt road looking for him.

"That was amazing, I've never seen anyone run that fast before. Dude are you the same guy? Your face and skin color changed!" Lopez yells with a surprised look.

"Yes, I'm the same person. I changed my face and body back to the way I originally look," Jaden says, while Lopez looks at him. Lopez stops and walks along side of Jaden.

"Wild man, are you an angel or something?" Lopez asks.

"No, just human with some good alien technology in my DNA and a helpful artificial intelligent friend," Jaden says while walking to the open grass area.

'Thanks sir, you called me friend again,' AI says.

"Did you land the airplane safely? Are the passengers on board okay?"

“Let’s just say I’ve pulled a ‘Sully’ of a landing. Yes, they are all safe. I had to keep up the connection to my alien friends, which is why I had to run like that. You are going to need an excuse to tell your superiors. Tell them you fell off the airplane trying to stop a passenger from opening the door. Then you landed in a lake, and miraculously survived. You just woke up not too long ago, and didn’t get the messages on your phone,” Jaden says.

“No one is going to believe I survived that fall,” he says.

“You have a better idea?” Jaden asks. “When the passengers on the plane wake up, they are going to tell the authorities what they last remembered.”

“I’ll think of something. Oh yeah, your girlfriend called while you were running down the road like Action Jackson. She was a few minutes away,” Lopez says.

“Oh, that’s not my girlfriend, she’s my friend,” Jaden says while he picks up his shoes and socks.

He puts them back on and a SUV stops on the small dirt road behind them. A nanoscanner goes up to the SUV to see who is inside of it. Jaden sees it is Chan, as more scanners automatically leave his body.

‘Wow, she is looking good, with her hair back and blouse on,’ Jaden says to AI.

‘No pervertism today right?’ AI asks in a sarcastic tone.

Jaden laughs to himself and smile.

‘No, I’m not going to do that...now. Thank you for curing me of my guilty conscious.’

Dr. Chan sees him on the grass talking to Lopez about fifty feet away. The SUV turns off the dirt road and goes up a small embankment. The four-wheel drive kicks in while propelling dirt and grass from the rear of the wheels.

“That is a nice truck,” Jaden says while it gets closer.

“That is a Hydrogen Escalade, 2015. Wow, that is a 100,000-dollar SUV. Your girlfriend is doing good to afford this,” Lopez says.

“Friend! Not girlfriend,” Jaden repeats while walking to the right side as she pulls up.

‘If she was my girlfriend I’d be looking at her naked now... That would be okay, right AI?’

‘Yes, sure.’

“You okay Jaden?” She asks while smiling and happy to see him.

“I’m fine, Dr. *Kimberly* Chan. Thanks for coming. You sure know how to drive this machine, I see,” Jaden whispers to her in the window.

“Yes, I have those men driving skills. I see that you figured out my first name, kudos to you. I thought you were on an airplane to North Carolina. What happened?” Chan asks. “Get in.”

“Do you need a ride, Lopez?” Jaden asks while getting into the passenger front seat.

“Well sure, can you drop me off at a gas station. I’m going to call from a video pay phone,” Lopez says while opening the rear passenger door and sitting down behind Jaden.

She makes a U-turn on the grass and the SUV barely shakes or rocks over the uneven terrain.

Chapter 17: Shoot me Again with that Gun and...

"I saved this air marshal from the airplane. This crazy passenger opened the emergency exit. This guy fell out at 33,000 feet with him and I had to save this brave federal air marshal," Jaden says.

"Wow, that's amazing," she says.

She drives with her left hand and extends her right arm back towards Lopez. She drives down the small two-foot high embankment with one hand and everyone leans forward.

"Hi, I'm Kimberly," she says.

"Hello, nice to meet you Kimberly. I'm Air Marshal Fredrick Lopez," he says while shaking her hand.

Jaden lays back and relaxes.

"Man, these seats are comfortable," Jaden says.

"Your seats have a built in massage feature, if you want to use it," she says while pointing to the button on the dash in front of Jaden.

He presses the button, and the seat begins to massage his back up and down the leather. Jaden speaks in a vibrating voice, "Oh this feels good for my back, after stretching the skin on my back like a pregnant woman."

"That's what was making that stretching sound behind me?" Lopez asks while laughing.

"You heard that?" Jaden asks and laughs.

Kimberly chuckles while pressing a button on the steering wheel.

"Nearest gas station," she says aloud.

"Nearest gas station is 1.8 miles away, two minutes, continue on road..." the GPS system says.

'Massage me magic leather seat,' Jaden mumbles to AI while his eyes are closed and head is against the headrest.

"I'm glad you are okay, though I was worried," she says while looking at Jaden and putting her right hand over the back of his head.

"Are you sure you two aren't boyfriend and girlfriend or husband and wife?" Lopez asks while turning his head to look at both of them.

"No," they shout at the same time.

'I just finished scanning the entire area to see if she was followed,' AI says.

'Good work. Thanks AI,' Jaden says while relaxing.

'I'm going to continue working on your weapon systems' calculations.'

They reach a main road, there an awkward silence as Jaden thinks about everything that has just happened. Some soft music begins to play on the radio

"I want to thank you again, for saving my life Jaden. I owe you one," Lopez says.

"Don't worry about it. I will put it on your tab," Jaden says.

"I can't get over Jaden how you took over the pilot's body to land the aircraft from over a hundred miles away; that was amazing. But I don't understand how I fell asleep for a few minutes," Lopez says.

"Just remember I'm here to help. Oh, you fell asleep because your nanomole was deactivated," Jaden says while they pull into a gas station mart.

"Nanomole? Okay, thanks; and thanks for the ride Kimberly," Lopez says.

"Hey, thanks for the help," Jaden says.

"You're welcome. Where are you going now?" Lopez asks.

"Going to try to warn the government in Washington D.C. and maybe go to the news media. But in a day or two, you are going to know everything you need to know about what is going on. Also, remember don't tell anyone you saw me, okay?" Jaden asks.

"Okay, good luck," Lopez says while opening the door and closing it.

They pull off and Lopez waves.

"Set a course for Raleigh Airport in North Carolina. I have to retrieve my nanodrones and nanoscanner," Jaden says.

Kimberly speaks to the navigation system, "Raleigh airport in North Carolina is the destination, go now."

"Why are they at the airport?" She asks.

"I had to use them in a pilot's body so he could land the airplane. Now they are incubating in his body. Also, can I borrow your phone?" he asks. "I want to call my baby's mother to find the location of my daughter."

"Sure," she says while passing him the phone, "So you've been back on Earth for a few days and have baby mama drama already?"

"Very funny," Jaden says.

"Nanodrones are the organic nanobot parasites in your body correct?" She asks.

"Yes," he says while dialing numbers on her fancy I-PCphone.

"Nanoeyes are merged with nanoscanners for your body. They can scan and see through any material and they work with nanodrones, correct?"

"Yes. Shit, voice mail," he says in a frustrated tone.

"So you are wearing perfume for patients now huh?" Jaden asks while handing back her phone.

Kimberly blushes, "Maybe. But only for special patients."

"Hmmm...you are looking good in your blue jeans and light blue blouse, doctor"

“You are looking good in your dress shirt and creamy dress pants. Where did you get them?”

“From someone at the airport.”

“So, I’m glad you were finally able to access the Internet. Did they turn it back on?” She asks.

“No, I had to find it, there was wireless Internet in the basement. Wireless Internet, did you know this was for employees there?” Jaden asks.

“No, I didn’t know they had it for employees. This was my first time at that hospital, I’m assuming it was probably allowed on the weekend. Wireless Internet is almost everywhere these days, I didn’t think about you trying that,” Kimberly says.

“No, when I was last on Earth, Internet was connected through wires only.”

‘Are you okay, AI buddy?’ Jaden asks.

‘Yes, I’m fine, just learning human interaction and doing some calculations,’ AI says.

“Jaden, what is going on, did you really fall from an airplane? Where did you get a parachute?” She asks.

“Three hours and ten minutes to Raleigh international Airport, 201 miles to destination. Please drive the highlighted route,” the robotic female navigation voice says.

“I used my nanodrones and some other drones to disrupt the gravity around me, to land on the ground, to rescue Lopez. I didn’t have a parachute. It was very dangerous, but I knew I could do it. I wanted to see what the nanodrones could do also,” Jaden says.

“That was dangerous, you are needed for this impending attack on Earth. You can’t risk your life like that. What happened to the guy who opened the emergency exit?”

“He exploded on impact, big mess,” Jaden says.

“Jesus, poor guy. Listen Jaden, all of this is happening so fast. What you did to me was something I’ve never felt or experienced before. After I left the hospital and I was driving to the airport, your memories became more real. As the hours went by, I remembered so many more things about you. I heard all the funny jokes you said over the past nineteen years of your life. What is going on with me? I can remember more details about your life than I can remember from my own life. I’m having these feelings as if I’ve known you for all my life. The feelings feel very real, but the detailed images when you left Earth are confusing. It was like watching a good sci-fi movie. There are conflicts with reality and my imagination. I told my father about what happened. He doesn’t believe any of this and was on his way to talk to me at my house, before I

left to meet you an hour ago. He wants me to stay away from you. But I had to see you and help you to see if you were okay,” she says.

“As long as you believe me, that is really what is important. I’ve been having feelings for you also. I’ve learned so much about you in such a short period of time. Things have been a little confusing for me also because in reality I’ve only known you for only the past three days. I actually saw your birth and watched you grow up. I learned everything you like and dislike. I found out what type of person you are in ten minutes, where as it would have taken ten years to learn all those things about you,” Jaden says.

“I think the future of dating might be this way. But I think we should concentrate on what is at hand now and try to save people we care about. Notifying the correct government agencies about these nanomoles in humans’ brains should be a priority. I was able to locate what I believe is the alien protein in my office not far from where I live. The microscope I used isn’t as good as the prototype 4D atom force microscope in another office that requires special permission. My colleagues will verify my findings and they will forward it to my boss if it is the alien nanomole we have been looking for. My boss will forward it to the proper authorities,” she says.

“How long will it take for your colleagues to verify the findings?” He asks.

“Hopefully by Monday or Tuesday,” she says.

“Tuesday might be too late, a countdown was started the second you went unconscious at the hospital and I caught you.”

“Oh, yeah, the countdown. That’s not good.”

“I know...on Flight 104, every passenger was in the neutral nanomole state. That was stage 2. None of them were responsive. I think the mother ship is getting closer and closer every day. I need to find my daughter, find my parents, and try to deactivate manually as many nanomoles as possible,” Jaden says.

“Okay. I’m scared Jaden. This whole alien attacking thing reminds me of the movies I’ve watched over the years; *Independence Day*, *War of the Worlds*, *The Day the Earth Stood Still*, and *V*. Aliens attacking Earth is really scary, so many people can die.”

“Don’t be scared; I’ll protect you.”

“Do you mean that?” She asks.

“Yes I do. These aliens are much smarter than the aliens in those movies. Do you remember the D.E.K. on Planet 455?” Jaden asks.

“It sounds familiar...yes, I do. The dark energy knight that couldn’t be destroyed?” She asks.

“Yes. Imagine one of those on this planet. That is a powerful alien enemy you can’t find in any of those movies. I would never want to be

face to face with one of those creatures. That thing would rip Superman apart,” he says.

“Turn right onto I-95 expressway ramp and keep right on highway,” the navigation computer says.

“Yes, you have a point there. That thing looked scary. Those eerie dark flames make it seem as if it was on fire, but in another dimension.”

“That is the HSCCVL system in the left lane, correct?” Jaden asks.

“Yes, they call it CCL, short for computer controlled lane. Only certain vehicles with that expensive system in their vehicles can drive in that lane. Like for example this vehicle,” Kimberly says.

“Drive twenty-four miles south on Interstate 95, then take I-85...”

“Cool,” Jaden says.

“From me learning your personality and likes in such a short period of time, you want us to drive in the CCL lane, right?” Kimberly asks.

“You know me, oh so well,” Jaden says while smiling as he sees a car quickly passing by at 90 mph in the CCL.

She inches over into the middle lane and then the left. Signs are passing over for entrance to the CCL lane.

“Looks just like a HOV lane,” Jaden says.

She drives into the entrance lane, infrared signals go back and forth with her SUV and the highway signs overhead. A small transparent screen shows up on the glass of the windshield.

“HSCCVL system activated, your vehicle will drive in this lane for twenty-two miles, to exit 51. Please relax and enjoy your ride,” the navigation system says in the car speakers.

The steering wheel begins to slowly move back and forth by itself. The SUV quickly picks up speed as Jaden looks around in amazement.

“Wow, look at your face. That is the same look you had on your face when your parents bought you your first car two years ago, I mean twenty years ago. Then your father snapped the picture of your face with his Polaroid camera,” she says.

“You remember that? Wow. I remember that,” he says.

“You looked so cute in that picture,” she says while completely turning towards Jaden to give her full attention.

The SUV reaches ninety-seven miles an hour. Jaden looks at the transparent screen as he sees ZZ rated tire pressures, rear vehicle distance 480 feet and front vehicle distance 907feet.

“The steering wheel driving by itself reminds me of episodes of *Knight Rider*. You don’t feel nervous keeping your eyes completely off the road?” He asks.

“No. This system is completely safe, I use it all the time. *Knight Rider*? *Knight Rider* started coming on in 2008, how do you remember

those episodes if you weren't on this planet then," she says in a questioning voice.

"What are you talking about 2008? *Knight Rider* came on in the eighties with KITT."

"*Knight Rider* came on in 2008, I was in college when I watched the new episodes every week," she says while looking at his eyes.

'Damn, she looks so sexy when she thinks she knows what she is talking about,' Jaden says to AI.

"I watched the new episodes of *Knight Rider* when I was in kindergarten that was in 1982, if I recall. I watched all the episodes," Jaden says.

"Okay we will solve this now, I can look it up on the Internet," she says.

"Well, why don't we make a wager?" He asks.

"Sure, what do I get if I win?" She asks.

They look into each other's eyes.

'Jaden if you are thinking about a kiss from her as the prize for winning this wager, why not just tell her that,' AI asks.

'I don't want to come on that strong, I don't know if she might think that is inappropriate.'

'This is confusing to me, your hormone levels are high, her hormone levels are fluctuating...' AI says.

'It is a timing thing, relationships are complicated with humans. Also, all these new feelings I have for her and the new feelings she has for me are new to both of us. So I think the best decision is to take things at her speed,' Jaden says to AI.

"Well?" She asks, "What do you think the wager should be?"

"How about if I win, you buy me something to eat later. If you win, I'll, I'll...give you a back massage," Jaden says.

'I'll kiss you all over your body, if I win,' Jaden says to AI while chuckling to himself.

'With all those germs on her body? Do you see the bacteria all over her skin?' AI asks.

"Okay, that sounds fair," Kimberly says while pressing the eight-inch LCD screen in the center console.

Jaden chuckles to himself and says, 'AI, you have a lot to learn about humans. You are funny though, now you want me to see her naked again.'

'Looking at trillions of microscopic bacteria on the skin isn't being a pervert.'

'Yeah, yeah. I'll do a good job disinfecting her.'

"Welcome to Voice Goojletron search engine. Please say what you want to look up," the LCD screen says.

"*Knight Rider* TV show aired on TV when?" Kimberly asks.

“Goojletron search 0.10 seconds. The original *Knight Rider* aired on TV from 1982-1986 and had ninety episodes...” the female computer voice says.

“You see! I told you!” Jaden yells while clapping his hands together.

“What the hell?” She asks.

“...A new *Knight Rider* series ran in 2008-2009...”

“Ha Ha!” She yells while snapping her fingers, “You see, it did come on in 2008 again.”

“I guess we were both right,” Jaden says.

‘I remember from her memory she watched *Knight Rider*, but I thought she was watching the reruns. I thought she just didn’t know what she was talking about,’ Jaden says.

“So, can I have my massage?” She asks.

“Sorry the bet was a draw. I believe that is your leather seat’s job,” Jaden says in a sarcastic voice.

A frown appears across her face, “Are you serious?”

“I’m kidding sweetie, it will be my pleasure. I’ll massage your tasty back,” he says while she turns around and faces her window.

She turns back around and asks, “What did you say?”

“I said, I can’t wait to massage your healthy back,” he says with a smirk on his face and she turns back towards her window.

The speed on the windshield reaches 101 mph. Kimberly leans back while Jaden massages her back.

‘Jaden, there is a guy sitting in the driver’s seat of a SUV about 500 feet behind us and a small woman is on top of him. I think she is stuck, she is making all kinds of noises,’ AI says.

‘That is good to know,’ Jaden says while enjoying touching Kimberly’s soft shoulders and smelling her perfume. Her scent and physical contact is arousing him. Kimberly is enjoying the feel of a human hand touching her body.

‘Would you like to see this through the nanoscanner Jaden? I think the lady is in trouble. Maybe we can help her?’ AI asks.

‘Nah, I’m good. How about you record it for me,’ Jaden says in a trance.

‘He isn’t helping her up. She is trying to get up, but she is stuck. She is somehow glued to his skin I believe...’

‘He is trying to kill her with a deadly weapon between his legs,’ Jaden sarcastically replies.

‘He is? That isn’t good, we have to do something. Batman and Robin?’ AI asks excitedly.

‘AI, calm down, no need to send more nanoscanners to investigate. They are just having sex, AI, practicing reproducing or reproducing. The same thing I want to do right now, practice.’

‘But why would they do this while their car drives in the CCL lane?’ AI asks.

‘AI, I’ll explain it to you later, I’m concentrating here. Go look in my memory and see all the wild places I’ve had sex at.’

“Okay, that’s enough. That was very good, Thanks,” Kim says while turning around towards the road.

‘Her body is giving off chemical hormone messages!’ AI yells.

‘I know, I can smell them with my super nose.’

“Manual drive in one mile, manual drive in one mile,” the female computer voice says.

“Get some rest, I know you had a tough and long morning,” she says.

“Okay,” he says while closing his eyes.

Some soft music plays in the background.

‘Jaden, your pituitary gland was sending extra chemical hormones around your body as if you were ready to mate. Extra blood was going to your reproductive organ.’

‘I can’t mate when I feel like it. It’s a timing thing, AI. It isn’t as simple as with animals. I’m also not trying to reproduce with her, even if I had the chance. I wouldn’t mind practicing though,’ Jaden says.

‘That is a waste of 250 million sperm and is murder on the colony of microscopic organisms. Isn’t it bad enough leukocytes in the uterus kill off 249 million sperm?’ AI asks.

Jaden laughs out loud. Kimberly turns to Jaden, “What’s so funny Jaden?”

“AI is sounding like a mental patient. We are having a conversation about....about science.”

“Oh okay, a man to alien conversation, gotcha. Tell him I said hello.”

‘AI, do you hear yourself? Do you hear how crazy you sound? Murdering a colony of sperm, by practicing reproducing,” Jaden says.

‘Yes, that is worst than genocide of a million humans and worst than 250 million abortions.’

‘AI, sperm aren’t people or an animal. They are on the level of bacteria or skin cells. 99.99% are going to die anyway, even when it is reproducing time. They are like frontline infantry; they know they going to die and they all aren’t going to reach the egg. If they had a brain they would go after the egg only when I tell them too.’

‘Look at the billions and billions of them all piled together in your testicles. They can’t wait to get out and start the marathon race....’

‘I don’t care to see, don’t show me. If you are so concerned about them AI, why don’t you and some nanodrones go down there and

reprogram every one of them to race when I give the command?’ Jaden asks.

‘Maybe I will,’ AI snaps, ‘I’m in the saving any life-form mood.’

‘AI, I think you need to reset your computer brain, you are losing your logic. One of them made it to the finish line eighteen years ago and look at the problems I have now. Eighteen years of child support for one stupid sperm. I want to go back in time and vaporize that lucky sperm. I don’t want any more kids now. Us humans practice reproducing most of the time, which is called sex or making love. It is a wonderful feeling to have with the opposite sex or same sex. But I wouldn’t know if it was the same with the same sex. I’m assuming it feels the same way for gay men. Okay, I’m confusing myself. The point is, sperm are troublemakers and deserve whatever happens to them. Anyways, I’m done talking about this. Wake me up when we get there,’ Jaden says while making the seat recline with the massager on.

WASHINGTON, D.C. WHITE HOUSE 11:45 AM

“Shit! Shit! Shit!” Robinson yells while slamming down the phone.

“What happened, sir?” Peters asks sitting in the seat in front of Robinson’s desk.

Robinson opens his desk and opens a package of pills. He swallows some down without any water.

“My hemorrhoids are flaring, my blood pressure is high and this situation has more fairy tale stories than Disney. I’ve never heard so much bullshit in my forty-five years in the military. I think the government should reinstate lie detector tests for all government, federal and state employees. Someone is on some drugs here. I have government official witnesses saying they saw a halo angel ring around the nose of Flight 104 landing. The F-22 pilot says he was magically lifting the left wing of the plane so it could land. Passengers magically waking up at the same time twenty minutes after the plane lands. The pilot landed the airplane then he goes unconscious and is instantly brain dead,” Robinson says in a loud voice.

“Is the FBI analyzing his body?”

“No, I have someone from my team there, so there aren’t any more screw-ups,” he says.

“Who did you send?”

“I sent my Commander-in-chief Max Miles to be in charge of the investigation,” Robinson says with a smile on his face

“That guy had three psychiatric evaluations done on him in the last ten years. He has suffered from TBI (traumatic brain injuries) in the past and has gotten innocent civilians killed on duty. This man came back from the Iraq War damaged and unstable,” Peters says.

“But he gets the job done and he does exactly what I say.”

“Have you notified the President on all of this?”

“No, not yet. She is enjoying the day with her family in New York,” Robinson says.

“Are you sure this is wise, sir? The President doesn’t like this guy,” Peters says.

“Listen Peters, I’ve known you for a long time. You have always been my most logical, family oriented, intelligent officer, friend and advisor. Trust me on this one, I know what I’m doing. This little cocksucker Jaden Marino is the enemy of this country. I’ve talked to some friends in the senate, you are definitely going to have enough votes for the secretary of defense position available. So take it easy, go home and be with your family this weekend.”

“I’m going to look into this possible alien attack with these clues I keep getting from my military personnel. Just in case something bigger is about to happen,” Peters says.

“There is no alien attack happening. Just this alien roach Jaden, that is here to spread his alien babies around and to make me look like an asshole again.”

Peters walks towards the door and turns around.

“Do you believe the story that F. Lopez, the air marshal onboard fell off out the emergency exit with Jaden Marino and a third person?” Peters asks.

“That he landed in the water and survived the fall. He witnessed Jaden Marino landing in the woods and dying. But he doesn’t know where the third mental patient landed. My team is doing a quick DNA analysis of the area where the body landed. So no, I don’t believe his story. Max Miles will be interrogating him soon. He is a walking lie detector,” Robinson says, while laughing and General Peters walks out of the office.

Robinson turns on the television and he sees BNN news showing an E-reporter video of a glowing ring around the front of Flight 104.

“As you can see from this amateur photo from a local E-reporter, there is a halo angel ring around troubled Jetgreen Flight 104 today. Sources say it had a damaged left engine and was having trouble landing. The passengers and crew onboard all fell asleep from some mysterious gas. They have all since woke up, while the pilot who landed the plane is reported as still unconscious. Witnesses are saying an angel was around the doomed flight as it looked like it was about to crash. Religious witnesses are saying it was a miracle and a sign from God. Experts are saying the flight was flying at a low 140 mph, which is impossible to keep lift with a aircraft that size...” he turns off the television and closes his eyes.

“Sometimes I wish I could be Professor Xaviar from X-men, so I can control the media and civilians’ minds...”

RALEIGH, NC, 5 MILES FROM THE AIRPORT 12:45 PM

A talk radio show is on satellite radio. Kimberly is listening to an ex-politician named Andrew Richards talk about his affair that caused his marriage to end a few years ago. A female interviewer named Tammy Cornwell is interviewing him live.

“Men in general are very likely to cheat in a relationship and marriage. Men like myself with power and money are ninety-one percent likely to cheat on their wives. It’s a fact that only fifteen percent of these men are actually being caught. Here are my examples: Look at President Clinton in 1997 with his affair with Lewinsky; Mayor of New York City Rudy in 1999, an affair while he was married; Governor McGreevey of New Jersey cheated with a man in 2000; New York Governor Spitzer cheated with an escort in 2008; Governor Sanford of South Carolina cheated on his wife in 2009; Senator John Edwards in 2007 and professional golfer Tiger Woods in 2009. All these married men were tired of their wives and wanted more sexually. This only represents a fraction of the men with power that actually got caught,” Richards says excitedly.

“You have a good point there, retired Senator Richards. Give us women an inside understanding as to why men with power and in general, seek sex outside their marriage,” she says.

“My political career is already over, so I’m going to break it down for you and tell you how men think. It’s not just men with power, it’s average men as well. Most men want a trophy wife at home and girlfriends/flings on the side. The girlfriends/flings usually aren’t more good looking than their trophy wife. Let’s just say I’m married and I have all this money and power, why should I be stuck having sex with the same boring woman forever? My wife was good for reproducing with and taking care of my kids. Many men, including myself, get tired of having sex with the same woman. They want something new to penetrate and to experience. There is a very strong sexual excitement with a new female. A different female has a different smell, different taste, different vaginal feeling when penetrating the first few times and a different personality. Men’s brains are sexually stimulated with a new female. It is beyond exciting for a man to be intimate with someone new, that I can’t even attempt to explain to you. Us men want our wives at home and freaks on the side. It is a fact that escorts and hookers get eighty percent of their revenue from married men. This clearly backs up my opinion that men want more.”

“Are you saying it’s okay for men to cheat on their wives if they get bored with them?” Tammy asks.

“I’m not saying it’s okay to do this, but this is what ends up happening anyway. Sex is everywhere these days; it’s on the Internet, on television, in movies, in video games and everywhere we look. Society tells these men that a skinny younger female is sexy. A young trophy girlfriend or wife is what most older men seek these days. Society also tells us that a freaky young female is beautiful and something you must have. My ex-wife got older and bigger and society tells us that is not attractive. Money and power drive our egos, so we make it happen no matter how much it costs. Men like myself love nasty things in the bedroom, things they would never want the mother of their kids to do. Sex was in my face all the time, when I was away from my family fundraising or running for office. Basketball players, football players, rappers, actors and public figures experience this all the time. Most men would risk having sex with a stranger even if it risked their marriage with their wives,” Richards says.

“Most would?”

“Yes most, because most men don’t think they would get caught. We do it with a clear conscious and think we will get away with it, just like a criminal thinks he will get away with a crime at the time he is committing it,” Richards says.

“But you got caught and now you are divorced. Was it worth it?” She asks.

“In the end, it isn’t worth it. I wish I could have turned off this infectious sexual disease of wanting another female while I was married. I miss being with my wife and kids.”

“But instead of helping to solve the problem and speaking out on men staying faithful and loyal to their wives, you are doing the opposite,” she snaps.

“That is correct, speaking out on the problem isn’t going to solve anything. Sex is everywhere these days and men will always cheat. Cheating dates back to the biblical times. Cheating is an infectious disease and is more addictive than smoking cigarettes. The goal of men like myself is to get the female into a position where we can get away with our cheating ways. 1. Get them pregnant with kids. This would keep her occupied with the household duties and doing most of the raising of the kids. 2. Keep control in the household, be the main breadwinner. 3. Strip away their self-esteem. 4. Keep her in denial of any wrongdoing. 5. Get her in a position where she can’t leave you. 6. LIE. Deny and lie about any accusations she accuses you of.”

“That sounds like the recipe for a certified narcissist.”

“Does it?” He asks.

“I’m sure there are going to be plenty of men upset with you giving away the universal narcissist game plan.”

“This younger generation of men just isn’t getting married these days and instead has relationships with technology. They aren’t getting themselves in these situations in the first place.”

“You know divorce court judges are making mostly men take the fMRI lie detector 2.0 in court to verify if cheating occurred in the relationship,” she says.

“There are ways to beat that test.”

“Moving on, you and many of your political friends are lobbying congress to pass the 2015 special marriage license?” Tammy asks.

“That is correct. The rules of marriage are outdated and were created before Jesus was born. To solve the problem with infidelity, we are introducing a new bill called Marriage Contract 2015 into congress. The special marriage license would cost \$100,000 for five years of marriage and \$200,000 for 10 years. When the time is up, each party will have to agree to renew, similar to a lease renewal on an apartment or vehicle. The money goes to the federal government or state as a special tax. Up to ten percent of the husband’s salary goes into a special trust fund for the wife and/or kids for the future. That doesn’t include normal support of the family or wife. Men are allowed to have another woman or female robot on the side. The wife will be fully aware of this before she gets married. Kids will be covered under a special insurance coverage. Safe sex only is allowed and the wife can sue if she catches a STD....”

“So the Marriage Contract bill is pretty much a hired sex nanny for reproducing kids?”

“Pretty much, yes. Less political shame for the man, family, wife and kids. The mistress can’t go public with their affair, because everything will be perfectly legal. The men with this special marriage license can legally sue their mistress for going public. Do you know how many mistresses are paid millions to be quiet about their affairs with these men? They have their own Myfacebook fan base called, ‘Paid Mistresses.’ These leeches are retiring for life after having these affairs. They also try very hard to get pregnant by these men and that is like a huge bonus payout that last up to twenty-two years. When are these men going to evolve passed this? This same cycle of ignorance has been happening for many years. I say legalize cheating, just like marijuana was legalized and taxed in 2012. Legalizing marijuana helped get the country out of its recession. This Marriage Contract bill will do the same and already has over 8000 men interested in buying the license. Basketball, football, baseball players, R&B singers, politicians, bankers and CEOs make up this quickly growing list. \$100,000 times 8000 men would bring in over eight billion dollars minimum...”

Kimberly is driving and shakes her head in disappointment at what ex-senator Richards was discussing in the interview. Jaden wakes up from his deep nap, feeling a sensation on his back and around his body. He looks around and clears his eyes. He sees 1.5 billion nanodrones returned and retrieved on his eye screen.

"Did you hear the conversation on the radio Jaden?" She asks in an upset tone.

"No, I didn't."

"That man is destroying the foundation of marriage. Marriage is suppose to be about trust, honesty, commitment, compromise, love, loyalty and a lifetime connection with one partner. Marriage requires hard work just like a full time job. How dare he try to change the rules because he can't keep his schlong in his pants? How can a child grow up knowing his father is allowed to sleep with as many women as he wants? Where does this end? Technology is already messing up the foundations between men and women. Why can't a single man in his twenties have all the freaky sex he wants with as many women as he wants? Then in his thirties, he gets married, stays faithful and raises a family the way humans were intended too?" She asks.

"What did I miss? I don't know sweetie. I don't see why a man can't be faithful to one woman. Marriage is a serious bond between a man and a woman, the way God intended."

"I'm sorry Jaden, I go on a rant sometimes. I get angry when I hear men trying to excuse their infidelity and blame society for their problems."

"It's okay, don't worry about it. I understand your points," he says.

"I have a solution to solve their infidelity issues. When a man gets married, his sperm should be frozen at a sperm bank. If he is caught cheating on his wife, his penis should be chopped off and frozen. He can urinate through a tube and won't have to worry about cheating again. That will make men want to control their urges and be faithful. Problem solved."

"Wow, that was direct, but painful. I felt your pain and so did my little friend between my legs. Wow Kimberly, that would really make men think before cheating."

"I am a new generation of women and we women need to empower ourselves. It's the year 2014, we deserve respect and honesty. We aren't sex nannies for reproducing. It's been ninety-four years since women won the right to vote in America and we are still fighting for equal pay and not being seen as a sex object!" She yells angrily. Jaden stares at her speechless as she continues, "It's bad enough us females have to freeze our eggs in our early twenties, finish college and have a strong career before we can use those same eggs in our late thirties. Most of us are just

going to the fertility bank and using a sperm donor to fertilize our eggs to be single parent!”

Jaden sees how red Kim’s face is becoming and how heavy she is breathing. He thinks back to Kim’s memories and remembers she froze her eggs 2 years ago.

“I understand your points. Take it easy, take a breath, I respect you. Um... so...on another note, where are we?” Jaden asks while looking out the window.

Kimberly takes some deep breaths and calms down.

“About a mile and a half from the airport on Highway 540. We had to detour around Route 85, there was a forest fire in Falls Lake State Park,” Kimberly says.

“I hope no one got hurt,” Jaden says.

‘AI, what’s going on, you found the nanodrones already?’

‘Yes, I just found him. I’ve been looking for the pilot’s body for the past hour. They moved him into a truck covered in lead and another strong metal material I couldn’t identify. I didn’t think to look in the lead truck right away, because it is hard for just one nanoscanner to look through a lead truck.’

“Where should I go, Jaden?” Kimberly asks.

‘Why can’t one nanoscanner pass through lead? I thought they could pass through anything?’ Jaden asks.

‘To penetrate that thick lead, these weaker nanoscanners, made to work with your human body, need at least three combined to penetrate something that thick. They also can’t do 4D x-ray scans through the lead from the outside of it. Something with the compounds and molecules in that lead. One nanoscanner from the Gravhawk can penetrate lead a few feet thick.’

‘Okay.’

“Hello? Earth to Jaden?” Kimberly asks again while smiling waving her hand in front of his dazed eyes, “Are you talking to your AI friend hidden in the multiple personalities area of your brain?”

Jaden multi-tasks while listening to AI’s story.

“How did you know I was talking to AI?” He asks.

‘So I continued checking the entire airport without finding the body. Then I tried to think more randomly and outside the box. I thought, why would there be a lead truck here and I was curious to what was inside...’

“Your face looks as if you are listening to something and you look occupied,” she says.

‘...Then I found the pilot unconscious and hooked up to a respirator with a man with an all white body suit covered around his body. It was a similar white suit to the white suits that were around the Gravhawk back on Earth when...’

‘AI, keep to the story, I know what an all white body suit looks like.’

“Tell him I said hello for me,” she says.

“I’ll tell him, it looks like he retrieved the nanodrones and nanoscanner from the pilot’s body already. He was telling me the story how he did it while I was sleeping,” Jaden says.

“Okay.”

‘So I activated the nanodrones and nanoscanner in his body, but I couldn’t get the nanodrones through the lead. Then the truck began to drive away. I didn’t want to lose the truck and the nanodrones. I was too busy calculating how far I could follow the truck. But then I started thinking randomly and outside the box. I used my artificial imagination. I got the nanodrones to go back into their positions in the pilot’s body they were at on the airplane. The three nanoscanners had to keep going in and out of the truck to relay the messages back to me, since the communication pathway couldn’t penetrate the lead. So I programmed the nanoscanner in the pilot’s brain to do this creative task I came up with...’

‘Okay, okay, keep going,’ Jaden says.

‘Can you guess?’ AI asks.

‘I don’t feel like guessing,’ Jaden says.

‘Humans like to guess things like this, am I correct?’ AI asks.

‘Okay, I’ll guess. You zapped the guy sitting with the pilot in the truck?’ He asks.

‘No, you told me it isn’t good to hurt other humans if you can avoid it. I got the unconscious pilot to jump up screaming, saying he needed fresh air and to stop the truck. He was touching all over the young man like a scary zombie movie. He was also yelling he was claustrophobic, I found that word in the medical encyclopedia,’ AI says.

‘That is funny, very funny and creative. Good work AI,’ Jaden says while chuckling to himself.

‘Then the man in the white suit jumped up panicking and radioed to the driver to stop the truck. The backdoor automatically opened and the pilot was walking towards it like a zombie. Then all the nanoscanners made a straight communication pathway to you a few minutes ago. They worked together and fired all the nanodrones back into your body from the pilot’s body. The pilot fell backwards onto the man. It was amusing, watching the young man panicking and getting scared out of his mind. He was screaming like a girl and had such a look of terror on his face. I took a photo for you of his face.’

Jaden sees the image of the scared military officer’s face and laughs.

‘Good job, AI. You see if you change your thinking, how much easier things can be. A little imagination and a little non-linear thinking can come in handy.’

“Can you drive to Halifax, North Carolina?” Jaden asks Kimberly.

“Do you think we can make it to a Halifax State Bank before 3 PM?”

"I'll check, most banks usually stay open past 3 PM these days. Halifax State Bank," she says towards the dashboard.

'Kimberly said hello to you AI.'

'Oh okay, tell her greetings,' AI says.

"Halifax State Bank is 89.1 miles northeast. Drive the highlighted area, one hour and twenty minutes is your total driving time," the navigation voice says.

"I'm trying to remember why you have to go to the bank," she says, "I'm remembering, you have to go to the bank because...because your father left money in a safety deposit box for you. You think there could be a message or note inside the safety deposit box and you think he lives in the town somewhere. There is also a chance your daughter and ex lives or is visiting there," she says.

"You are correct. Can I borrow your phone again?" He asks.

"This memory of you is coming in bits and pieces. I feel like I have amnesia and clues are helping me to remember things," she says while passing him the phone.

The phone rings on speakerphone and the voice mail picks up.

"It sounds like she has a pre-paid phone."

Jaden speaks into the phone, "Amy, this is Jaden. Listen I have the money that I owe you. I would like to see my daughter to make sure she is okay. Please call back at this number when you get a chance, I'm in Halifax, North Carolina now, bye."

He passes her the phone back and stretches out to take another nap.

"Relax, sweetie, get some rest," she says.

'I've completed more of your weapons. You now have a counterclockwise shield system, which is also called reverse shields. It has three layers and works similar to the Gravhawk's reverse shield system. The first outside layer slows a fast moving projectile down to a complete stop in a gravity matrix. The second layer is where the projectile or blast particles are analyzed, where it can be recycled into an offensive weapon. Third layer protects the person inside the shield and feels like a solid force. Yes, the second layer works with nanoscanners to determine the material. Forward or clockwise shield was the one you were using at the hospital that destroyed any materials in front of it. But remember, both shields can only absorb so much outside forces at once. The person inside the shield can feel the blunt energy of an object moving fast enough towards it. Yes, meaning the shield doesn't just have to be around you, it can be expanded around a certain circumference around you or another person or object. This and using the outside two layers require more energy. Good question, full body shield is where the shield is fully around your body and around your feet. You will be walking on the inside of the shield like a bubble. The inside will turn and go the direction you are walking and adjust speeds with your mind. In

other words, it will feel as if you are on a hamster wheel, but moving in a direction. The nanodrones in the shield will automatically adjust so that it doesn't destroy the ground it is going over,' AI says.

'Interesting.'

'Remember the rpm can be controlled by me or yourself. The faster the rpm the more brain energy and calculations will be needed. I almost forgot. Your left hand will be able to fire an atoms ripper weapon. Yes, I got a little creative with the naming. An atoms ripper is a molecule destroying energy, similar to plasma fusion in the forward shields. Combining the gravity shock wave and atoms ripper can fire a very powerful fast moving projectile...'

Jaden falls asleep, while AI stops talking and continues calculating.

HALIFAX, NC RIGHT SIDE OF BANK PARKING LOT 2:33

PM

The vehicle's door closes as Kimberly gets back in the SUV. A rush of air hits Jaden's body. Jaden wakes up to the familiar scent of food in the air.

"Hey there blue eyes. I got you your favorite. Pastrami on rye, with mustard and cheese," she says while holding a bag towards him.

"How did you....oh okay, I'm still getting used to this new memory thing myself. Thanks," Jaden says while taking the bag and opening it.

"I got you a root beer also."

"Oh thank you sweetie. I haven't had food like this in over eighteen years," Jaden says while stuffing his face.

A few minutes go by. Jaden eats with a smile on his face. The taste from the sandwich is greatly enhanced on his taste buds. He tastes every particle in the sandwich.

"This question was bothering me for the past two days. What is the little device you and other women have at the bottom of their spinal cords?" Jaden asks.

There is silence as Jaden continues eating. He continues to take huge bites while looking at Kimberly blushing.

"Hmmm...shouldn't you know this answer already since you have most of my memories?"

"Certain things I can't remember, like memories that went into your subconscious, certain memories your brain tries to forget or really personal things," Jaden says.

There is a long pause and Jaden asks again, "Well what is it?"

"It is a device that helps a woman have an orgasm. It can be activated remotely or through a cell phone. It is an instant orgasm for some women and others it takes a little time. They work best while

having sex. Now you know the answer to your embarrassing question,” she says with her head down.

“I’m sorry, I was just curious. Don’t be sad,” he says while resting his hand on her shoulder.

“How did you know I had that on my lower back?” She asks.

Jaden fumbles his speech, “Um...well...I.. noticed you had one when I was... trying to remove the nanomole... in your brain, back at the hospital. I also checked if you had one in your uterus, because you know they split and wait in the uterus for an offspring,” Jaden says nervously.

“Okay, well how did you know other women had one on their lower back?” She asks.

“That is a good question....”

“I think you were using those nanoscanners to look at women and maybe even me without any clothes on,” she says with her arms folded.

‘You see how looking at women naked can come back and bite you,’ AI says.

‘Shit, she is doing the arms folded thing. My ex did that. I don’t know what to say now,’ Jaden says to AI.

“I might have looked at one or two other women without any clothes on, but I would never look at you without any clothes on. I had respect for you from when you first came to my hospital bed,” Jaden says while smiling.

Jaden starts to feel a slight pain in his nose.

‘AI what are you doing to my nose?’

‘I’m stretching it out some, just like Pinocchio’s,’ AI says.

“That is so sweet for you to say,” she says.

‘AI, this is not funny, you are behaving too human,’ Jaden says while covering his nose.

‘Stop it, it hurts.’ Jaden demands.

“Are you okay? Do I smell bad or something?” She asks as she sees two hands over his nose.

‘Reverse it!’

‘You wanted me to act and think more human, right?’ AI asks.

“No sweetie, just my nose was hurting a little,” he says in a muffled voice.

She rolls down her window some.

“Oh okay, I thought you passed gas and this was your way of warning me or telling me,” she says while smiling.

“You aren’t hungry?” He asks while drinking his soda and holding his nose.

‘You are embarrassing me. Joke over,’ he says.

“Nah I’m on a real old school diet, not one of these new anti-fat pill diets and you can eat anything. My father kept texting me and calling me while you were asleep. He wants to know where I am,” she says.

“Well I don’t want to get you in any trouble with your father,” he says while pushing down on his nose.

“He has been overprotective ever since my mother passed away. He is worried about me contacting you, he thinks you are a con artist,” she says.

“I’m sorry about your mother dying in the World Trade Center terror attacks,” Jaden says.

“Yeah, it’s okay. Flight 11 from Boston was the airplane she was on. She was on her way to a client’s site in LA. I was living with my parents in New York at the time. Next week will be thirteen years since I lost her.”

His nose begins to shrink back to its normal size.

“It sounds like your mother was a good woman, I wish I could have met her,” he says.

“She was a great woman. Then my father and I moved to Virginia. He never remarried and told me a good woman you don’t try to replace. He loved her so much. They had a special love and he would never cheat on my mother, like these men these days are trying to condone. You should get in the bank before it closes,” Kimberly says in a sad tone.

“I was just thinking, I’m going to need some ID right?” Jaden asks while uncovering his nose.

“Banks have bio scan IDs, you can use your fingerprint, retinal scan, DNA scan or voice scan. Some banks require one and some two of these IDs.”

“Before I go, I want to finish deactivating your nanomole,” Jaden says.

“We have plenty of time for that,” she says.

“I just want to get it out of the way now, that thing is very dangerous,” he says while her seat goes backwards.

“Just relax, I’m going to put one hand on your forehead and the other near your stomach. You will be unconscious for about ten minutes,” Jaden says while placing his hands in those two places.

The nanodrones create an artificial neuron pathway into her brain and uterus area. The pathway looks like layers and layers of spider webs, expanding towards the nanomoles. She feels a tingling sensation as the drones get to work. She closes her eyes and becomes unconscious. A few minutes go by and Jaden removes his hands. He opens the passenger door and stands outside. The warm summer air hits his body. The smell of pine trees engulfs his nostrils. He looks at her before he closes the door. He admires her beauty while she naps in peace. Jaden closes the SUV door and walks to the bank’s front entrance. As he enters, a cherry scent tickles his nose hairs. An armed security guard by the door looks Jaden up and down. There are about ten customers in the bank, doing

various transactions. There is a line for the teller, but Jaden walks towards the bank officers sitting at the desk. There are three other banking officers sitting at desk in the small bank.

‘AI, don’t embarrass me like that again. Men have to lie sometimes to save a female’s feelings and to not make me look like a pervert. I can’t tell her I looked at her without any clothes on. How would that help me to be with her, if she knew I did that?’ He asks.

‘Okay, I understand. I think I’m evolving a human sense of humor. It’s kinda funny, something you would probably do if you were me,’ AI says.

“Can I help you today sir?” An older white haired man asks with a southern accent.

“Yes, I’m here to take belongings from a safety deposit box in my name,” Jaden says.

‘He looks like the KFC Colonel,’ AI says.

‘AI, enough. Turn the sense of humor program off. I need a straight face now. It is serious time. I don’t need to be laughing in this older man’s face.’

“Come sit down here, sir. I’m Tom, what is your name?” The bank officer asks while looking at a screen and touching it.

Tom puts a small metal headband around over his head.

“My name is Jaden Marino. I believe my father left a safety deposit box with my name on the account,” Jaden says while looking at him confused.

Tom is inputting information into the computer without a keyboard. The screen is facing Tom and Jaden is on the other side of the desk. Jaden uses a nanoscanner to see what he is putting into the screen.

‘The device over his head is allowing him to input information into the computer screen wirelessly,’ AI says.

‘That is amazing, it is reading the impulse signals from his brain. Record the signal wavelength that the device is reading from his brain,’ he says.

“Okay, sir I found it. A Tony Marino left a safety deposit box and its contents to a Jaden Marino back in March 2006. The safety deposit box is still here and it has been paid for until the year 2026. Now we just need some ID to prove you are Jaden Marino,” Tom says.

“I don’t have any plastic ID on me,” Jaden says.

“Well, sir let me check in the system to see what other bio ID’s are on file here,” Tom says while his eyes go back and forth on the screen.

“It shows a Mr. Tony Marino came back in 2012 to update the account with hair DNA and a fingerprint for a Mr. Jaden Marino. We will need two bio ID’s. Can you provide these today?” Tom asks.

“Yes sir, colonel sir,” Jaden says while thinking about the DNA ID.

‘You just called him Colonel,’ AI says.

‘I know I said that, you have that KFC Colonel comment stuck in my head now. Every time I look at this guy.’

‘I’ll be right back with the DNA ID machine,” Tom says.

‘AI, tell me you can duplicate some original DNA from me,’ Jaden says.

‘That is going to be near impossible. Your DNA molecules have all been modified. Once it leaves your body, they self implode. However, your sperm is modified to last longer outside your body, but it is encoded in open air and not coded inside of a body. Some have built in GPS type of systems and they know where they are at all times.’

‘Great, my sperm can give me directions to where the vaginal hole is if I get lost,’ Jaden snaps.

‘At least you have built in birth control. Your sperm can be turned off from working without any side effects,’ AI says.

‘What am I going to do? Jerk off in a cup and hope the DNA works?’ Jaden asks.

‘How about this, I’m going to scan the safe area behind the tellers with the nanoscanners to find out where your safety deposit box is and to see if there is anything inside of it,’ AI says.

‘Very good idea. It feels good having a creative mind right?’ Jaden asks.

‘Yes, it makes me feel more helpful.’

“Okay sir, put your thumb in here,” Tom says.

Jaden feels the skin on his thumb moving. Jaden puts his right thumb on the ID machine.

‘What was that in my thumb?’ Jaden asks.

‘I had to adjust your fingerprint to your original fingerprint. So humans couldn’t identify you,’ AI says.

‘Okay.’

The machine beeps a green color.

“ID checked out sir, just one more,” Tom says.

“Is there any other test besides the DNA test, I can take?” Jaden asks.

“No, your father only left two for this account. If you were here at the time he did it, then you could have put your voice, face or eyes in the system. Hair or cheek swab?” Tom asks.

“Both.”

‘Jaden you are wasting your time.’

‘I’m buying some time to think of something.’

Jaden hands a few pieces of hair from his head and gives it to the bank officer. He rubs the Q-tip in the back of his mouth and gives it Tom. The bank officer puts it in a small machine that is six inches square

and looks like a scanner for a computer. Tom looks on the computer screen and sees a probability DNA match of zero percent.

“Sorry sir, verification is not a match. We can’t open your safety deposit box today,” Tom says.

“Listen sir, the fingerprint scan worked fine. Maybe something is wrong with the machine today. But I am Jaden Marino,” he says.

“Do you have a photo ID, passport, birth certificate, Social Security RFID?” Tom asks in an annoyed voice.

‘There is money and a note in the safety deposit box inside of the safe. I can’t read what the note says from here, it is folded a few times.’

“No, I don’t. I told you what I had when I came in here,” Jaden says while raising his voice. Customers standing in the teller line look in Jaden’s direction. The big guard at the door turns his head in Jaden’s direction.

“Then sorry, sir, I cannot help you. Have a good day,” he says in a nasty voice while putting the bio ID machines away.

“I’m not going anywhere, until I get the contents of my safety deposit box that my father left me. I want to speak to the manager,” Jaden says in a loud tone while hitting the desk.

‘Jaden your blood pressure is going high and some of those weird energy particles are coming towards your body and disappearing into your brain. Let’s just leave and come back another time.’

‘Not now AI,’ he says.

“I am the manager, now sir, are you going to leave or I’m going to have to call security,” Tom says.

Instantly Jaden’s offensive and defensive weapons and energy strengths show up on his eye screen. He looks Tom directly in the eyes. Tom gets nervous and signals for the armed security man at the door while stepping back. Tom begins to sweat on his forehead as Jaden gives him a bad feeling.

“I proved to you who I am and I want what belongs to me,” Jaden says in an angry voice while standing and hitting the table. His seat is a few inches behind his legs.

‘What are you doing?’ AI asks.

‘I’m getting what belongs to me, by any means necessary. I’m not letting anything on this planet stop me,’ Jaden says to AI.

‘You have to calm down sir, think of the consequences to these actions you are thinking about committing. Those strange energy particles are messing with your logical thinking and decision making.’

The tall 6’6” security guard stands three feet behind Jaden and asks, “Sir, you were asked to leave, can you please leave this bank?”

Jaden continues to face Tom, while Tom stands behind his seat.

“Mr. Tom, I’m asking you nicely one last time to bring my safety deposit box out here or someone might get hurt. If you don’t want your

insurance to get higher and severe damage to your nice safe, I would suggest you bring what belongs to me,” Jaden says.

“Sir, I’m not going to ask you again!” The mid-thirties white male guard yells, but his voice sounds choppy to Jaden as if he is talking behind a fan.

Everyone in the bank is watching, even the tellers inside of a hard plastic and metal closed off area.

“Mr. Security Guard working for \$12.50 an hour, if you don’t want to wake up in the ICU or heaven I would suggest you stay out of my way and back away behind me,” Jaden says while staring Tom directly in the eyes.

The edge of the seat behind Jaden’s legs begins to slowly evaporate. The lights begin to dim and flicker. The guard reaches out with two hands towards Jaden’s shoulders. His fingers, then hands are instantly disintegrated. Tom walks backwards with a petrified look on his face. The security guard begins to yell and scream in pain as he gets down on his knees. Blood begins to pour out of the end of his wrists. An rpm of 5100 shows up on Jaden’s eyes screen. Customers begin yelling and screaming. Jaden walks over towards the door to where the tellers are in.

“We don’t want any trouble!” Tom the manager yells while walking to help the security guard. Customers run out of the bank.

Jaden concentrates on his energy shield rpm around his body. The locked door’s molecules strips away and he slowly walks through the door making a narrow oval shape. The lights go out in the building. The three tellers push buttons under their teller windows and quickly run out of the door on the other side. An alarm goes off. Jaden faces the safe and the nanoscanners scan the safe materials a second time. He charges his left hand and it glows bright blue. He extends it forward and a ring of blue light charges forward. It makes a one-foot circular hole straight through the safe.

“That worked somewhat. I like that weapon,” Jaden says.

He increases his rpm shield speed faster and faster. The lights go completely out and the alarm stops ringing. A slight glow is seen going around him. His rpm shield speed reaches 110,000. He walks within three feet of the huge steel safe. One teller is still scared and hiding under a teller window. She cries and sits under the window looking at Jaden glowing.

“I would suggest you get out of here young lady, you might get hit by some debris. We wouldn’t want your student loans not paid because you are in the hospital,” Jaden says while his voice sounds like he is behind a wall talking to her. He has a smiling face and speaks with a southern accent.

She gets up and runs out the other door.

“Thank you,” she says.

‘Jaden you aren’t thinking like your normal self,’ AI says.

‘I’m myself, I gave them another option, and they didn’t want to choose the one I gave them. So now their insurance is going to have to suffer. I’m going to crack this piggy bank safe,’ he says with a smile on his face.

His rpm reaches 150,000 and sounds of something charging are heard. The shield energy changes from being completely around him to on the sides of him. The shield generating nanodrones concentrate most of their energy on the sides around Jaden’s body like an oval doorway shape. Jaden walks forward to within two feet of the safe. The shield begins to cut through the outside of the six foot round solid steel door, ripping away iron. The less thicker steel outside of the doors of the safe is cut right through. Jaden charges his right hand and a hundred foot circular white smoke extends around the bank. He snaps his right hand forward and a gravity shock wave is released. The loud sound of crushing and ripping metal is heard. The entire building shakes and rumbles like an earthquake. The steel door flings backwards with such force that it goes through another concrete wall. Debris and dust flies in front of his now full body energy shield. Smoke and debris particles make it impossible for his human eyes to see through. He closes his eyes and walks into the safe in the complete dark. He pulls out his safety deposit box and rips it open with his bare hands. The top of the case makes a rattling noise as it hits the floor. He takes out his money and puts it in his pocket. Jaden holds the letter in his hand and walks outside the safe with it, reading it. There is no one in the bank as the sunlight from outside shines in. There is blood on the floor as he casually walks by the desk he was sitting at.

‘I think we should go out the back door. On second thought, there is a cop coming around back,’ AI says

Jaden sees through a nanoscanner, that it is a black officer. The officer observes half of the steel safe door coming through some of concrete behind the bank.

‘Okay, he is a black police officer, maybe he will hear me out. I’ll explain to him, that this is my money and I was just taking what belonged to me,’ Jaden says.

He quickly walks out the back door to a long alleyway leading up and down the side of the building. He looks up and down at the note written on typical letter paper. A concrete building is on the left side of the alleyway as Jaden walks towards the rear.

‘I don’t think that is a good idea, he looks edgy and nervous. His heart rate is somewhat high and he is hyperventilating. He has his hand

on his gun holster. Your forward shields and gravity shock wave energy is very low. You have some reverse shield strength,' AI says while Jaden reaches the rear of the building.

"Freeze!" The officer shouts while pulling out his gun pointing it at Jaden, twelve feet away from him.

"Listen officer, there is a big misunderstanding here. I was just taking my money out of the bank and this note my father left me," Jaden says while taking another step forward trying to explain.

Suddenly the officer pulls the trigger of his gun and Jaden hears the click. Jaden's mind quickly goes into nanotime.

"Shit!" Jaden slowly yells.

Jaden's reflexes automatically activate the shield, but AI is already ahead of him. Nanodrones are slowly coming out of his back. Nanodrones around Jaden's heart quickly create a small internal forward moving one layer energy shield, that extends through his rib cage and around his arteries; another forms around his skull. Sparks slowly come from the gun as the empty cases fly from the gun. The first bullet comes in slow motion towards Jaden's neck he slowly moves his head to the left. His body isn't moving as fast as his thinking yet. His nanotime meter quickly accelerates from 1x to 10x and then 50x, due to his low energy. The next bullet is coming in lower and towards Jaden's chest. He sees it coming towards his chest. He tries to move to the right, but it hits his left arm. The force from the second bullet makes his left shoulder propel backwards. He groans as the pain travels towards his brain. The officer continues firing and a barrage of 9mm bullets continue towards Jaden. Another hits him in the chest and torso, ripping the note in his hand to pieces. Blood squirts out of his body as the bullet makes an entrance into his skin. The chemical messages in his nerves are slowly moving towards his brain. Blood gets on the ripped pieces of paper as it floats away very slowly. The reverse energy shield creates a slow moving force field around Jaden. But it is not strong enough to slow down the fast moving bullets. The bullets slow down from 850 mph to 500 mph. Nanotime goes off as his brain reaches the maximum time. Seven more miss him and ten hit him in the stomach, ribs, collarbone, neck, chest and arms. The bullet that came straight towards his heart penetrates his skin outside his ribs and is deflected back towards the ground. Three bullets pass completely through his body. The bullets shock his body as his brain is overloaded with pain. He loses his balance and falls backwards. His blood pressure spikes and throbbing pains are felt all over. He falls flat on his back coughing up blood.

Kimberly wakes up to the gunshots and look around the SUV. She doesn't see Jaden and panics. Her head is spinning as she suddenly feels nauseous.

Smoke is coming from the officer's gun after he finishes a full magazine. Jaden lays in traumatic pain as blood fills up his lungs. The gunshot wounds send a burning sensation to his brain. Tissue and cell repairing nanodrones try to coordinate the bombardment of chemical messages flooding his brain. They override the brain trying to make him blackout. The officer puts away his gun and gets on the radio.

"One suspect down, in the back of Halifax State Bank. Please send EMS and more units," the officer says while checking Jaden's pulse on his neck. The officer runs towards the side of the bank and looks inside.

The nanodrones around Jaden's skin quickly seal the bullet holes around his body to stop the bleeding. A clear seal appears around each bullet hole to keep the blood from escaping. Blood can be seen moving inside the clear seal. An army of nanodrones disinfect the eight bullets in his body very quickly. Jaden's lungs aren't breathing, but his heart is still beating. His internal injuries are quickly being repaired.

A few minutes pass by. The unknown energy is around the outside of Jaden's body, quickly moving towards his hands. Jaden's fingertips begin to change to a glowing black color. The exotic black energy quickly destroys the skin around his fingertips. The nanodrones quickly repair the skin around his fingertips and nails.

The officer walks back out where Jaden is and walks pass his body attempting to talk on the radio again. Kimberly is in front of the bank looking for Jaden as more police are seen coming down the street from a distance. She sees the guard screaming with missing hands and bleeding arms.

The bullets in Jaden's legs and arms push through the same clear holes. The other bullets gather together and push towards Jaden's new digestive tract. Damaged tissue cells and nerves quickly repair themselves around his body. Nanodrones temporarily replace fractured bones and torn muscles in his arms and legs. A nanoscanner flies down in an attempt to analyze Jaden's fingertips from the outside. The scanner gets too close to the black gloss and quickly dies. Jaden opens his eyes and tries to stand up as the officer has his back to him. Jaden's fingertips go straight through the grass and dirt, destroying it. Jaden looks at his fingertips in shock and sees this black stuff around it. The black shiny energy quickly goes away.

'What the hell?'

He stands up on his feet still in pain. Jaden sees on his eye screen that a nanoscanner is destroyed.

He looks directly at the cop.

"What kind of cop are you? You shoot an unarmed man trying to explain himself without giving him a warning to put up his hands?" Jaden asks in an angry voice standing while leaning to the side.

Jaden coughs up blood and two bullets.

“Holy shit!” The officer yells while looking at Jaden spit the bullets on the dirt ground.

The officer drops his radio. He reaches for his stun gun and quickly fires it towards Jaden, hitting him in his chest. Jaden doesn’t flinch, but takes a step back from the force of the fast moving stun gun. He spits out three more bullets.

“300,000 volts huh? That’s all you got?” Jaden asks him while the electricity goes around his body and then into his abdomen.

‘AI? AI? Are you there buddy?’

“What kind of police officer shoots a suspect first with a gun and then Tasers him, Officer Anthony Winslow? Did you get your training in the *Police Academy* movie with your brother Michael Winslow?”

The officer drops the stun gun in disbelief and loads his gun with another magazine. The officer is panicking and doesn’t respond to Jaden’s questions.

“You shoot me again with your gun officer, and I’m going to make you eat your fired bullets,” Jaden says with anger in his eyes and his face trembling.

The officer rapidly pulls the trigger with his gun pointed at Jaden’s head. Jaden takes a step towards the officer eight feet from him. His reverse energy shield quickly begins to spin. The first bullet comes straight towards Jaden’s head and it severely slows down in the gravity matrix. It stops near the middle of his forehead midair.

Kimberly quickly runs towards the bank after hearing more gunshots. Officers pull up across the street from the bank and jump out of their vehicles.

Jaden focuses his eyes on the bullet aiming towards his head. He walks into it and the hot bullet falls towards the ground. The other seventeen bullets are right around each other frozen in midair thirteen inches from Jaden’s face. Jaden reaches up and grabs a handful of the hot bullets with his right hand as the shield disappears. They scold his hands. Kimberly is running down the alleyway as her long black hair bounces on her shoulders. A pair of officers run thirty feet behind her and is yelling for her to come back, but she ignores them and run faster.

Jaden tackles the officer and they both hit the muddy grass. The officer screams as the wind is knocked out of his body. All the nanoscanners go inside the officer’s motor cortex and medulla oblongata. They release some nanodrones and the officer struggles to get Jaden off him. Jaden puts the handful of hot bullets inside the officer’s open mouth.

Officer Winslow begins screaming and hollering as the hot bullets scold his tongue. Kim sees Jaden over the officer and stops running.

“What are you doing to that officer? Get off of him,” she yells while running up behind him trying to pull Jaden off the officer.

Two other senior officers approach behind her. They draw guns once they see Jaden over the downed officer. They see Kimberly trying to pull Jaden off the officer. Jaden has a smile on his face as he covers the officer’s mouth with his right hand. She pulls on his bloody shirt and can’t get a grip. She pulls him back by his arms.

Jaden ignores her and concentrates on the nanodrones making the officer gag and swallow the bullets. The bullets go down Winslow’s throat as the nanodrones override his gag reflex in his nervous system.

“Take your medicine Mr. Winslow. I tasted your bullets, I want you know what it tastes like,” Jaden says chuckling as Kimberly struggles to pull him away.

“Don’t shoot him, don’t shoot!” She yells while turning around.

Officer Turner on the left pulls her away, holding her, while Officer Payne on the right tackles Jaden off the choking Officer Winslow. He pepper sprays Jaden in the face and Tasers him in the back.

“Don’t hurt him! Cooperate with them, don’t resist!” She pleads while being held back. She begins to cry as she sees him being roughed up.

“Okay, okay. I give up, no need to keep kneeing me in my back,” Jaden says while listening to Kimberly’s crying pleads. He is lying on his stomach, not moving. The nanodrones finish repairing his skin and the clear plastic looking holes disappear. Officer Turner walks and pulls Kimberly by the arm up the alleyway. Jaden places his hands behind his back and the officer handcuffs him.

“You have the right to remain silent....”

Nanodrones and nanoscanners return into Jaden. Jaden sees his weapon systems are offline and his body needs to recalibrate itself. Winslow begins coughing on the ground. The officer walks over to Winslow to see if he is okay. They radio for the ambulance originally for Jaden now for Officer Winslow. Officer Payne removes the wrapped hundred dollar bills from his pockets and places them on the ground. Jaden begins to feel very tired. More officers come in the back along with the EMS.

‘AI?’

Jaden thinks about the status of AI. The nanodrones in Jaden’s brain run a diagnosis on AI’s status. Jaden is stood up by the cops and they walk him down the alleyway towards the front of the bank. His dress shirt is dirty and is open in the middle. His chest shows and his tan pants are dirty with small holes.

“What is he charged with?” She asks while Jaden walks by her at the front of the bank being escorted by Payne to his police car. There is a crowd in front of the bank watching and pointing at Jaden.

“You can find that out at the local jail, ma’am,” Payne says.

“They didn’t want to give me my money out of my safety deposit box,” Jaden says to Kimberly while the officer opens the squad door.

The officer puts Jaden in the police car.

“I’ll see you at the police station,” she tells him through the window.

Jaden has his head against the back of the seat. He suddenly falls asleep.

Chapter 18: In Contempt of America

Jaden's body is drained and he desperately needs sleep to recharge his mind and body. He passes out. Officer Payne is driving while Turner is in the passenger seat of the police car on their way to the police station. AI is still not responsive. The nanodrones report AI SCAIN UNIT 5005 OFFLINE IN PROTECTIVE MODE.

"So are you going to tell us your name?" Payne asks Jaden.

There is no response.

"We will find out at the station then buddy," Turner says.

A few minutes go by. Turner talks to his partner Payne, "The captain is having Winslow checked for drugs and alcohol. He told the captain in the ambulance that he shot the suspect several times and the suspect went down. He said the suspect wasn't breathing and had multiple gunshot wounds. The suspect then got up and then he Tasered him with the maximum charge and this had no effect on him. Now get this, he said he shot another full magazine directly at the suspect's head and the bullets stopped in midair. He claimed the suspect shoved his fired bullets down his throat. There are no witnesses to back this story up. On top of that, the bank manager is in shock and can't speak now, and the security guard doesn't know how his hands were chopped off. Detectives and forensics are investigating the scene now. Winslow is definitely on something, talking like that."

Jaden is still sleeping with his head back. They reach the police station and open the door. He wakes up and they escort him inside. They place him in a room to take his pictures, then they take facial recognition scans and they take DNA with a Q-tip.

"Listen sir, you are facing multiple felonies, the best you can do is cooperate. Are you going to tell us your name?" A Sergeant asks.

Jaden is quiet and has a smile on his face.

"Take him to a cell. We will see if that smile is knocked off his face in a populated cell," the Sergeant tells the guard.

They walk Jaden across the station over to the jail side.

"I think you should put me in a cell by myself if you don't want anyone to get hurt," Jaden says.

The guard laughs.

"You must be a joker, first words that come out of your mouth make me laugh," the old white guard says.

They reach a door and a buzzing sound is heard and the door opens. A rush of musty air hits Jaden's face. The smell of mildew floods his nose hairs. He is led by the police officer to a medium-sized jail cell. The smell of old damp socks comes to mind. The guard puts Jaden in the cell and informs him to turn around. The officer removes the cuffs and Jaden walks into the cell full of other criminals. The guard locks the metal gate

and Jaden stands by the door looking down. The cell is about twenty feet by fifteen feet. Concrete walls surround all three sides with the long metal gate covering the front of the cell. A biker gang of five sits and stands by the double bed in the corner. There are four skinny Hispanic men in their early twenties sitting on a long bench. They look fragile and don't look as if they did a serious crime. The guard goes around the corner and Jaden looks up towards the people in the cell. He walks directly over to the bed and climbs on the top bunk. The biker men with tattoos all over their bodies stare at Jaden, sitting on the top bunk.

"Hey there boy, these are our beds. I suggest you get your narrow dirty ass up and sit on that bench before you don't have a face," a big biker named Billy says.

"I think this city college boy is out of his mind and needs a country beat down," a medium-sized biker named Simon says.

"I don't want any trouble with you overweight biker hicks. There was no one sitting on this bed and all I want to do is sleep. I hurt enough people today, I think it's best you all leave me alone," Jaden says politely while his back is against the wall and legs folded on the bed near his chest. Sunlight from the cell window is shining on Jaden's body.

"I think we need to set an example, on how the Pirate BBS Gang does things," Simon says while standing in front of Jaden.

"Pirate BBS Gang? Are you hicks still dialing up into bulletin board systems with your 300 baud modem?" Jaden asks while chuckling.

"You got until the count of five, you half breed Negro. You think your kind can run this country? Your one term mulatto brother ran this country into deep debt and I'm going to beat his mistakes out of you," Billy says.

"Five!" Jaden yells while he kicks Billy directly in the face with his left shoe. He walks backwards losing his balance and the men on the bench quickly move out of the way, as he hits the concrete wall over the bench. There is a loud thump as blood comes from his mouth.

Jaden jumps off the bed and gets into his karate stance. Simon quickly swings towards Jaden's face. Jaden blocks it and grabs his arm, flipping him over his back and onto the floor near the gate. The third man grabs Jaden from behind wrapping his arms around Jaden's arms. A pulse of 50,000 volts leaves Jaden's body shocking the third man. He quickly falls down towards the floor mumbling and shaking. The fourth man tries to kick Jaden from the side. Jaden quickly catches his leg and gives him a straight punch to his chest. He flies into the concrete wall by the window. The other men that were on the bench try to get out of the way. Billy rushes towards Jaden, grabbing him tightly from behind biting his shoulder. The nanodrones quickly disrupt the gravity around Jaden. Jaden jumps up towards the ceiling while Billy is still holding on tightly and biting his shoulder. Simon stands up near the gate. Jaden leans his

head forward as Billy's head rams into the ceiling. Billy goes unconscious and closes his eyes. As they come down, the nanodrones in Jaden's back become magnetized. Jaden's body and Billy's body quickly float backwards towards the steel gate. They crash into Simon on the way as they all ram into the steel gate. There is a loud crashing sound as dust falls from the ceiling. Billy and Simon fall towards the floor unconscious and bleeding. Jaden slowly walks towards the middle of the cell room.

"Anyone else with a suggestion or comment about the ex-president or want to get in the way of me sleeping?" He asks loudly. "Speak now!"

The other four men look in shock as they can't believe what they just saw take place.

"Okay then, the next person that bothers me, will get it worst than that BBS hugging sissy gang," Jaden says while jumping on the top bed and lying down with his hands behind his head.

Two guards quickly run towards the cell and the gate opens from down the hallway.

"What happened in here?" The guard asks the other men sitting on the bench together.

They don't say anything, while two shake their heads in denial. The guards check the pulse of the men.

"They were fighting each other! They were arguing on who had the most outdated dial-up modem at home. Then it got out of hand!" Jaden yells from the bed.

"Is this true?" The guard asks the young men with frightened faces.

They shake their head in agreement. The guards get on the radio and call for a few ambulances. Simon has CPR done on him. Ten minutes later the biker men are put on stretchers with neck braces. They are brought outside by several EMS workers and guards. Two of the four men in the cell ask the guard to be put in another cell.

"Sorry can't do that, you know you are here until Monday when you can see the judge," the guard yells.

Hours go by as the four men sitting on the bench stare at Jaden nervously while he sleeps. The sun begins to set as the remaining sunlight shines over Jaden's body. The nanodrones are still reporting AI as offline and in protection mode. Jaden's weapon systems are offline, recharging and being recalibrated. A guards drop off food in the cell. Jaden is wondering where Kimberly is and why she hasn't come to the jail yet. Jaden thinks about his father's letter he briefly read. He replays his memory of the letter and reads it back to himself:

'January 14th 2012

Dear son,

I've thought about you every day. I know deep in my heart that you are still alive and will return one day. The government said you stole a military airplane and you were shot down. I knew that story was such bullshit. You don't even know how to fly. They staked out our house for months and months afterwards, as if they were waiting for you to return. Your mother and I were harassed by the government for years after you left. Your disappearance put a strong damper on our relationship. Your mother couldn't bear losing another son and she had a nervous breakdown. Me and your mother's relationship first began to change when your older brother Douglas was killed in the war. We separated and then later divorced. She couldn't take the United States anymore, so she moved back to England with her family. I've been diagnosed with lung cancer and the cancer spread. The cancer center in Halifax is supposed to be treating me with some experimental nanoworms that can kill cancer proteins and tumors. So I'm leaving this letter here for you and my life savings in this safety deposit box. I hope I will be able to see you one day again my son.

Love,
Your father

P.S. Today is your 35th birthday.

P.S. Again- your girlfriend or ex-girlfriend Amy is claiming I'm the grandfather to her child. She has failed to show a paternity test and has really changed over the years.'

Jaden falls asleep thinking about his parents.

HALIFAX CITY JAIL SEPTEMBER 7, 2014 9:04 AM

"James Revis! James Revis on the top bunk. You have a visitor!" The guard yells through the cell bars.

Jaden thinks about that name and it sounds familiar. He figures it out and gets off the bed to walk towards the gate. The gate opens and Jaden follows the guard down the hallway. He wants to see who is visiting him, but his nanoscanners are recalibrating and are offline. He sits down on the other side of the thick glass with a telephone. He notices Kimberly walking through a door and towards a seat in front of the glass. Kimberly has a sad face as she picks up the phone. Jaden does the same. He smells her different perfume on through the glass.

"I figured out that James Revis was your ex-boyfriend and you were using that name because you knew I would remember, right?" He asks.

"Yes," she says in a sad face.

"What is wrong Kimberly?"

She doesn't respond. Her head is down and she doesn't look him in the eyes.

"Why didn't you come see me yesterday and why do you look so sad?" He asks.

"The police personnel said there were no visitors for anyone yesterday. That someone was hurt in the prison. Listen..." she says while she begins to cry, "I stayed at a hotel yesterday and my father came there. He talked to me for hours about you and everything that has been going on."

A tear comes from her left eye as she looks Jaden directly into the eyes and continues, "I can't see you anymore," she says while the tear quickly runs down her face and lands on the small grey desk in front of her.

"Why? Why not? What did your father say to you?" Jaden asks in a concerned voice.

Her eyes turn red and another tear rolls down her cheek, "J, I'm so confused with everything that has happened over the past few days with me and you. Just hear me out before you respond. I don't know what to believe anymore. My father questioned me about everything and he concluded that you are a professional con artist. He wants me to stay far away from you. I told him he couldn't feel what I felt with you, but he asked if I have ever seen you use any of your alien special powers. I told him no, I have never seen you do anything abnormal. My father suggested you used some kind of hypnotizing brain implant technique to upload all those images and feelings into my mind. You somehow copied my mind with some kind of advanced microchip in your hand. You manipulated my mind into thinking all of this is real. The airplane you jumped out of with a parachute, and the marshal guy was an actor or a friend of yours. That you set all this up to rob a bank and to hurt people. You had me tag along to be an accomplice with you. You already damaged my hard working career with that sexual harassment charge. My father looked on the Internet and said you murdered Ruffo the guard and threw him out the window..."

"Ruffo was a pedophile and that was self defense against his exoskeleton bionic suit. The rest of it is not true. Everything I showed you and what you felt is the real deal. How can I implant all of that in your brain, there is no technology out like that..." Jaden says while being interrupted.

"J, I've never actually seen your Gravhawk spaceship with my own eyes. Those images were not that clear in my memory, they were mostly distorted. I've never seen you throw a gravity shock wave. I've never seen your shield systems work. I've never seen you walk on the wall or defy gravity. AI could be an imaginary friend in your mind for all I know. He could be another one of your personalities in your mind. A

figment of your imagination. I never saw what happened at the back of the bank. The officers said you destroyed the inside of the bank with some kind of explosives. Your friend Lopez could have been in there to help you. The cameras in the bank were distorted with electromagnetic energy the detectives said. They said you assaulted a police officer by shoving bullets down his throat from his gun..."

"Those were the bullets he fired at me and I stopped them in midair with my reverse energy shields. I was shot over ten times," Jaden pleads.

"J, you are making this very hard on me without any proof. Show me some of your special alien powers. Show me something right now," she demands.

"I can't, everything is offline now and being recalibrated. AI is not responsive so everything is all screwed up in me. But I can use some basic magnetic nanodrones, watch this," Jaden says. The phone stays stuck to his ears, without any hands. His anti-gravity nanodrones are also offline.

'Shit, everything is offline. Why now?' He asks himself.

Jaden stands up.

"Please sit down sir," a guard standing by the door yells toward Jaden.

Jaden sits back in the metal seat.

"Watch this," Jaden says.

The seat and Jaden fall back on the floor.

"Did you see that? The nanodrones in my back pulled me towards the metal door behind me," Jaden explains while getting off the floor and putting the chair back up.

"I'm okay, I just fell off the chair," Jaden tells the guard.

"You just pushed the chair with your feet and leaned back towards the floor," Kimberly says. "J, you haven't showed me any real concrete proof. The only thing that you are proving to me is that you should have stayed in the psychiatric hospital."

"Okay, Kimberly, how do you explain my DNA?"

"You did something to strip the structure of your DNA and RNA. My father suggested you used some sort of modified nanoworms to destroy your DNA particles. The nanomoles you are claiming that are in the brains of humans could be some kind of isolated biological protein that could be the work of terrorists. My colleagues will use the 4D force atom microscope to verify what it actually is. My father had some valid points, the best point is I haven't seen any evidence with my own eyes. Why can't you just admit to me this was all a setup for you to rob a bank and you manipulated my mind with these detailed illusions?" She asks with tears running down her cheeks and she sniffs with a tissue in her hand.

“Kimberly...” Jaden pauses while his eyes turn red, “I didn’t lie to you about anything. Everything, everything was the truth. Everything you saw and felt was real. I do have feelings for you, just like you have the same for me. Don’t do this at a time that I need you,” Jaden pleads while putting his right hand on the glass and holding the phone to his left ear.

She stands up and looks at Jaden while tears are rolling down her soft cheeks and connect together under her chin. Her left hand still holding the phone to her ear.

“I can’t be involved with you. I have a life and a career. My father said the police are charging you with felony assaulting a police officer, aggravated assault on a security guard, felony bank robbery, and destroying property with an explosive device. You are looking at fifteen to twenty years in prison. They are still trying to identify who you are, I gave them your name as James Revis. I can’t be involved with this, I don’t know what to believe. Your ex-girlfriend Amy called you and left a voice mail on my answering machine a few hours ago. She said she is in New York City and she is going to the World Trade Center grand opening for the public tomorrow night. She said to bring her money there. I have to go now. Please don’t contact me anymore. I’m sorry,” she says while putting down the phone on the desk.

“Kimberly! Kimberly!” Jaden yells while hitting the glass hard with his hand. The sweat and tears rub off on the glass with his hand. She continues to walk away towards the door not turning around.

“Kimberly! I love you!” Jaden yells at the top of his voice while the guard stands behind him. His saliva squirts on the glass from his mouth. Both of his hands are flat on the glass. His eyes are red.

Kimberly stops at the door after hearing these three words. But then she quickly continues through it and disappears from Jaden’s sight.

“Let’s go Romeo, your visiting time is over,” the jail guard says.

Jaden continues to stand there looking at the door she went through, as the guard taps him on his shoulder. He sees she isn’t coming back, after a minute of waiting in the same position. Jaden turns around and the guard follows behind Jaden.

“Buddy, that good looking female was way out of your league anyway. You have to crawl before you can walk,” the middle-aged guard says while chuckling. “The amount of time you are looking in prison, you should get used to liking men for now on.”

The guard chuckles to himself while they reach a steel door with glass. The guard starts to open the door with a key and whispers behind Jaden’s neck.

“I heard penetration hurts at first back there, for your first time, but over time you will get used to it and enjoy it. We are going to make sure

you are in the most HIV infected prison in North Carolina for assaulting a police officer. Yeah, you going to get what is coming to you, young pretty boy,” the guard whispers while opening the door.

“I’ll be free by tomorrow,” Jaden says with confidence.

“Oh, you aren’t getting bail, criminal. There is no bail for assaulting a police officer in North Carolina,” the guard says while walking to the cell.

He opens the jail cell door and Jaden walks inside. Jaden sees one of the three men sitting on his top bed. He quickly gets up and walks to the other side of the cell.

“Sorry man, I wasn’t sure if you were coming back. I was just keeping the bed warm for you,” the nervous young man says.

Jaden climbs on the bed and lies down. His body soaks up the sunlight coming in from the window. Jaden keeps thinking about Kimberly and all the things she said. He can’t believe she doesn’t believe him now. Jaden is so alone and keeps thinking about what happened to his friend AI. He sees: NANODRONES ATTEMPTING TO REVITALIZE AI SCAIN UNIT. 29 UNSUCCESSFUL TRIES TO RESTART on his eye screen. Jaden falls asleep thinking about Kimberly, AI and his daughter. He is wondering why his ex and daughter are in New York.

WASHINGTON, D.C. SUNDAY SEPTEMBER 7TH 1:09 PM

“You mean to tell me Jaden Marino disappeared without a trace. Dr. K. Chan, who was helping the suspect, suddenly disappeared from her apartment yesterday morning. The father was being followed, but your agent lost track of the father also. Your agent can only say he was heading south on the 95 expressway. What kind of incompetent agents do you have working for you Agent Mcright?” Robinson asks over the phone.

“My men are really well trained. They don’t lose a tail that easy. Your drone aircraft and your satellite lost the father’s vehicle. These people knew they were being followed and took evasive measures. My agent reported to me just now that Dr. Chan returned to her apartment in Rumford, Virginia. What would you like us to do?”

“Arrest her and charge her with aiding and abetting a terrorist. She probably knows where he is and what is going on. I’ll interrogate her personally by video conference.”

RICHMOND, VA, FBI HEAD QUARTERS 2:31 PM

Kimberly is sitting in a small interrogation room. The agents asked her several questions about Jaden and she refused to say anything. She knows anything she mentions about Jaden will either get her in a

psychiatric ward or further in trouble. A flat screen turns on in front of her.

“Hello Dr. Chan, I’m the Vice President of the United States. I’m going to get right to the point. We know you had contact with Jaden Marino. We believe he is a terrorist and is part of a conspiracy to hurt Americans. You aiding and abetting a terrorist will have you in federal prison for many years. We know he used your Paylife at the airport in Albany, New York and you didn’t report it stolen,” Robinson says while an image of Jaden’s other white face shows up on the screen.

“Like I told the FBI agents for the past hour, I don’t know this man and I didn’t realize my Paylife was used. I would like my phone call to call my father’s attorney,” Kimberly says.

“Do you know this man then?” Robinson asks while showing Jaden’s original bi-racial face and body.

“Yes, that man is Jaden Marino and he was my patient at the hospital,” she says.

“Listen you little Asian bitch. Just because your father is a multi-millionaire doesn’t mean you are protected by the Constitution. We know about you joining the ANWO group back in college. We know you knew you were being followed from your house yesterday. We know you are working with this man. You will be in jail for the rest of your life and then we will deport your body back to Taiwan when you are dead. Tell us what we want to know! Where is Jaden Marino!?” Robinson yells while his voice echoes through the screen.

“I don’t know where he is, last I saw him he was in the psychiatric hospital on Friday,” she says in a nervous voice.

“This man killed a guard at your hospital. We believe he took this man’s body somewhere at the airport...” Robinson is interrupted while Jaden’s white face is shown on the screen again.

“How can someone take someone else’s body? That doesn’t make any sense,” she asks with her arms crossed.

“I’m the one asking questions here. You shut your face when a man is speaking. This Jaden man, pushed two people out of an airplane and he jumped out with a parachute on...” Robinson says.

“Listen you cockeyed old man. I don’t care who you are, you aren’t going to talk to me like that. This is not the forties where you can disrespect a female like that. I paid and my family paid a lot of taxes to this country and I love this country. I told you what I had to say about Jaden Marino, if you are going to put me in jail or prison, then put me in prison. My father will have me out in a few hours. Just make sure you have proper evidence against me, because my father’s lawyer will sue your government back into a recession. You can kiss my Made in Taiwan sesame chicken ass, you chauvinistic want to be President cockeyed pig. Now, I want to call my lawyer!” She slams her hands on

the desk and screams at the vice president looking puzzled on the video screen.

There is complete silence in the room. Robinson's face turns completely red.

"Can't take a woman telling you what to do huh? I know you hate taking orders from a woman President. A woman telling you what to do really eats up men like yourself from the inside out. It is pig men like you who make it hard for women to have equal pay in the work force as men..." she is interrupted by an FBI agent behind her.

The screen goes off. Robinson is talking to special FBI agent in charge Andrew Mcright on the phone.

"Don't give her a phone call. Take her to Buckeye Maximum Federal Prison outside of Studley, Virginia. Make sure she is put in the special housing unit," Robinson says with a sneaky voice.

"Sir, you want to put her in the hole at a maximum federal prison for men?" Mcright asks.

"That is correct, she wants equal rights for women, and I'm going to give her the same rights men receive. She wants to defend a terrorist, we are going to treat her like a terrorist. Anyone asks at the prison, tell them the order came directly from the vice president."

"Yes sir.

BUCKEYE, VA, BUCKEYE FEDERAL PRISON 3:22 PM

Kimberly walks in handcuffs behind her back, being escorted by two federal agents through the front gate at the prison. Kimberly is wearing a blue skirt above her knees with white dots on it and a white blouse.

"Why am I at a federal men's prison?" She asks while walking through the courtyard.

They ignore her.

A man with a suit walks from the prison building towards them.

"I thought you were joking when you said you were bringing a female prisoner here. We can't have a female here, especially a female without a uniform on. These prisoners will get violent and out of control," the warden says with a southern accent.

Kim pleads directly to the warden as she walks by, "Sir, I didn't get my phone call. The government is violating my rights. I didn't even see a judge yet or get charged with anything."

"Ma'am I'm not talking to you."

"These are direct orders from my supervisor and from the vice president. You can call my boss or the vice president himself," the young agent says while continuing to walk towards the entrance to the building.

Armed guards with exoskeleton body suits in the four towers are looking and whistling at her. The warden gets on his cell phone. They walk her into the building.

“Yes sir,” the warden says into the phone while walking towards the entrance of the huge prison.

She walks through a corridor area with a huge fence on both sides. Prisoners run up to the fence on the left and grab onto it. They line up to get a peak at Kimberly’s beauty. They shake the gate together and yell through the fence.

“I didn’t know Chinese food could be delivered inside the prison.”

“I will lick every inch of your body with my tongue if you need a shower.”

“General Tso’s daughter is here to entertain the prisoners and to love us long time.”

An old white man sticks his tongue through the fence and whispers, “We going to take turns on you just like we took turns on the women in Vietnam.”

They bring her in another building and downstairs to the basement. The basement smells funky and moldy. The cold, damp air gives Kimberly an eerie feeling. Goose bumps go up and down her long skinny legs.

“I’m going to masturbate to your perfume and legs all night long,” a man smelling the air looking through the food opening in the middle of the special housing unit. The guards put her into a six-foot wide cell by ten feet deep. The prison guard locks the steel door and instructs her to turn around. He removes her handcuffs. She walks inside the dark hole and begins to cry. Prisoners are shouting obscenities from other cells around and across from Kimberly’s.

“We want real pussy! We want real pussy!” They yell together.

Kimberly sits on the floor in the corner and begins to cry and whine quietly to herself. She is cold, depressed, and feels very alone in the dark. She is thinking about how her father is looking for her now. She is thinking about what Jaden said before she left the jail. She is thinking about what he is doing in the jail at this moment.

109 MILES SOUTH HALIFAX, NC CITY JAIL 3:35 PM

Jaden is sleeping and suddenly wakes up sweating. The four men are still on the bench looking at Jaden with nervous looks on their faces. He is thinking about Kimberly and AI. Jaden misses talking to his alien friend AI. Jaden feels Kimberly might be in trouble.

His eye screen shows: MANUALLY RECALIBRATING OFFENSE AND DEFENSE WEAPONS 40% COMPLETE. AI STATUS UNKNOWN, STILL RUNNING DIAGNOSTICS.

He lies back down on the top bunk and falls asleep thinking about everything that has happened the past few days. He feels as if he is at his lowest point, now that he lost Kimberly, temporarily lost his powers and lost AI. He feels deeply depressed inside. He closes his eyes and remembers what his father told him back in 1995.

‘Just remember, the people who run this country are very arrogant, money and power hungry and wants to eventually control us like animals. Our history proves this, cover-ups and conspiracies are the American government way. They betrayed Douglas and covered up his death. Eventually they will betray you son. Watch your back. If all else fails, save yourself and the people you care about...’

Thoughts of him leaving Earth and returning back to Xenos emerges. Thoughts of him finding his parents and leaving this primitive doomed planet are being entertained in his mind. He falls back asleep thinking about exploring this galaxy like the *Enterprise*.

BUCKEYE, VA, BUCKEYE FEDERAL PRISON 8:52 PM

Kimberly is sitting on the cold floor and crosses her legs and arms near her stomach. She is taking deep breaths and enters a deep meditative state. Her Buddhist religion has trained her throughout her life for handling her mind for situations like this. She finds her inner peace and is ignoring the screams and shouting from inmates around her. The toilet flushes by itself right next to her. Her mind is far away from the dark and dirty prison room. She has been ignoring her body’s pleas to use the bathroom. Thirty minutes pass by and Kimberly comes out of her meditation. She opens her eyes and she feels as if she is blind. There is a little light coming from under the door and food tray hole. She stands up and feels for the toilet. Eerie feelings pass around her body as she touches sludge on the toilet seat. The feeling is grossing her out.

“Eww, this is disgusting. This is ten times worst than a gas station in Mexico. Oh shit, I don’t feel any toilet paper anywhere,” she says while standing over the toilet squatting with her skirt lifted up and panties pulled to her thighs.

She looks towards the door while she uses the bathroom and someone is standing there.

“I’ll be your toilet sexy, I’ll swallow anything your body doesn’t want,” a guard with a deep voice says. The guard is wearing night vision glasses as he stares at Kimberly squatting over the toilet. She covers between her legs with her skirt and hand.

She thinks to herself about replying, 'It seems there is no toilet paper in here for a lady, why don't you wipe me with your perverted tongue?' But she remembers all the prison movies she has seen over the years and knows he probably would do it, giving her a venereal disease in the process.

"I'm fine! But, if you could be a gentlemen guard and get me toilet paper?" She asks with a sweet voice while finishing up.

There is no answer while the man continues to stare at her.

"I didn't get a phone call or charged with anything, can you find out how long I'm going to be in here?" She asks while shaking back and forth over the toilet.

The guard walks away when Kimberly stands up and pulls down her skirt.

"I guess the one girl and a toilet show is over for him," she says while sitting back in the corner on the cold floor with her back against the dirty wall. She still hears profanity in the hallway from prisoners in other rooms.

"You are going to be in here for a long time, little terrorist helper," the guard says.

She begins to cry again, as she thinks about her family and friends. Her tears land on the top of her left hand.

An hour passes by and it is silent around Kimberly and the surrounding areas. She breaks out of another meditation. She hears tapping on the wall to the left of her. A low sounding Arabic man's voice comes from the room next to her. The sounds travel through a crack in the concrete foundation.

"Can you hear me?" He asks.

Kimberly ignores him and doesn't reply. The tapping continues.

"What terrorist group are you with? Are you a sleeper cell? American born terrorist?" He asks.

A minute goes by and Kimberly still doesn't reply. The man continues.

"What is your name? I'm Zaze Mohammad, but you can call me Zaze."

Kimberly listens but doesn't respond.

"I'm a part of the terrorist group that attacked New York City buildings in lower Manhattan with shoulder rockets on Jet Skis, back on July 4, 2011. I'm sure you heard about it in the news. It wasn't something I was proud of. I'm not really a bad person. I was brought over to America at a young age and I grew up in America. I had my citizenship and I loved this country as a teenager. My uncle owned a grocery store in Brooklyn that I worked at. I was also in college studying to be an engineer. I was saving my money to bring the rest of my family over from Afghanistan..."

The man sobs and then continues, “My family was running for years trying to stay clear of the U.S. attacks from 2001. My uncle and I sent them money to move from the refugee camp and to live in an apartment building. But in 2006 they died from a cluster bomb dropped on their apartment building. My two sisters, one younger brother, mother and aunts all died. The U.S. said there was a suspected terrorist in a nearby building. But the bomb took out an entire city block. The U.S. and NATO forces killed over 10,000 Iraqi and Afghanistan civilians over the years. That is just a low estimate. I had Iraqi friends who also died. The woman I was going to marry also died in an Iraq attack. My uncle suffered a heart attack and died after he learned of his sisters and family all dying. I vowed revenge on America and the UN for not protecting innocent people. The U.S. keeps attacking the cities not to keep the security situation stable, but so they can stay in Iraq and control the oil. Oil?”

He continues to cry and sob. The man bangs on the ground and a tear falls on his hand.

“Oil? I was studying to be an engineer that specialized in green energy. America always had the technology to get away from oil and gas. The USA always had the capability to have seventy percent of their vehicles running off solar, electricity, vegetable oil or water by the year 2000. Then there would have been no interest in oil or an interest to attack Afghanistan and Iraq. September 11, 2001 was staged so America could have a reason to invade a foreign country. Civilizations have been using this strategy for many centuries to invade someone weaker for something they might have. Who was held accountable for this?”

There is dead silence as the man continues, “The American government kept covering up in Afghanistan and Iraq how many innocent civilians were actually being killed by them. During elections in America, they would use airstrikes instead of ground forces to minimize their American military casualties. These airstrikes increased my people’s death rates. So many innocent children and civilians’ blood was on the street. The Americans kept criticizing Saddam for the mass graves. How many civilian graves did the Americans make in Iraq?”

Kimberly still doesn’t respond, but continues listening to the terrorist’s perspective. Sadness and sobbing can be heard in his voice as he continues.

“The U.S. lied and said Saddam Hussein had weapons of mass destruction. These weapons were never found and there was never any apology from any U.S. government. So many cover-ups and many Americans citizens didn’t know everything that was going on over there. I had nothing left to live for in America. My anger for America’s greed changed me as a person. So many civilians out of work and nowhere to go, many joined Al-Qaeda. I went to Baghdad in 2007 as a volunteer and

joined Al-Qaeda where I was transported into Afghanistan. I trained for a year at a secret underground location in Afghanistan. I would return to America a year later as a sleeper cell and I would conduct a martyrdom operation. I would do anything, including sacrificing myself to bring attention to what the American military was doing to civilians in Afghanistan. An eye for an eye. American civilians needed to experience what Afghanistan and Iraqi civilians experienced for the past ten years. I fired my rocket directly at the UN building and it had my family's name on it. I was ready to join my family in heaven, when I rode up to a ferry boat and my Jet Ski didn't explode...."

The man moves his mouth from the crack in the wall and cries on the floor in the dark. The sobbing and crying can be heard vibrating against the entire wall. Kimberly continues to sit on the floor in a meditation position. She tries to comprehend what the man has told her. She blocks out his loud crying and meditates again.

"Hey you big cry baby man! Keep it down over there, some of us are trying to get off!" A man yells from across the hall.

HALIFAX, NC CITY JAIL 11:49 PM

Sleeping for hours, Jaden begins to dream.

He dreams Kimberly is in a black colored castle in a red princess gown. Jaden is in a white knight outfit, the same as in the virtual chess game he was playing on Xenos. He runs into the castle fighting pawns with his sword, suddenly the sky turns from day to night. Jaden looks up and the castle disappears from around him into a black darkness. The planet disappears around him and he is flying through space towards the moon using nanoeyes. He stops behind the moon, looking at a big mother ship facing Earth. The ship is camouflaged and cloaked into the abyss of black space. He feels evil vibes and evil intentions coming from the ship as it hides behind the moon. He hears a familiar voice coming from different directions in space.

'Jaden? Wake up buddy.'

He turns around and looks into the darkness and stars. It gets completely dark.

Jaden opens his eyes and sees the ceiling of the jail cell.

'Hey buddy, I'm back online,' AI says.

'What happened to you? I thought I lost you.'

'I went into what you humans would call a self induced coma. My operating system shut down after those unknown energies returned,' AI says.

‘Yeah, I noticed a weird black shiny material on my fingertips. The skin was being destroyed under it.’

‘I was looking at the data on that from the nanodrones in your fingertips repairing your fingernails and outer skin. I can’t explain what is happening to you. I went offline after those bullets began to strike your body. I’m almost finished compressing your DNA in various areas around your body. You will have 10,000 DNA memo groups tightly packed together making your weapons and superhuman abilities work more efficiently. The DNA in the skin around your body will be stronger than Kevlar. I’m creating an artificial orbital hybridization bind with your skin cells. The technology is called nanotubes and it is in everything from bulletproof clothes, to the body of police cars.’

‘Cool. As long as I don’t feel strange, look different or feel a lot of pain. Do what you have to do. What time is it?’ Jaden asks. ‘I felt like I was sleeping for two or three hours, the sun is still out.’

‘I knew you were going to ask me that, so I did a stellar motion on the stars a few hours ago, it is about 8:08 AM, September 8th,’ AI says.

‘It is 8 AM already? Shit,’ Jaden says. ‘I’m glad you are back buddy, I thought I lost you forever. I already lost Kimberly.’

‘I was looking at the recordings; that was a tough emotional breakup. I hope you two get together again, I’ve sensed great chemistry between you two. It is funny that she never saw you do anything special with her own eyes. I never thought about that. Anyway, what was your dream about, I was trying to wake you up for hours, but your conscious was unreachable,’ AI says.

‘I was dreaming I was rescuing Kimberly in a castle, then I was looking at the Darclonians mother ship behind the moon. It was just sitting there and I felt evil. I know they are here already,’ Jaden says.

‘Fascinating, your dreams are enabling you to see things in the present and possible future I’ve been noticing. I’m still blocked out of them. I think the Darclonians want you to see them. We have to get out of this prison as soon as possible.’

‘Something else, Kimberly said the images of the Gravhawk were very unclear in her mind, as if her memory or subconscious was trying to hide it. What do you think that could mean?’ Jaden asks.

‘According to psychology online encyclopedias, I believe something happened in her childhood or when she was younger. Maybe something in a movie, an accident or something that traumatized her. There were some memories in Dr. Chan’s past that are blacked out and hidden in her subconscious that we were unable to access. I don’t know what it could have been. Maybe the next time you see her, you can find out.’

‘Yeah, next time. I hope there is a next time. If I were her, I would leave the country for a while, with all she has been through the last few

days. I wouldn't be surprised if she went back to Taiwan for a couple of weeks,' Jaden says.

'Possibly. The nanodrones have been reorganizing themselves so the task I was making them do, can be done automatically by you just thinking about it. They already began rerouting, and recalculating your weapon systems, pro-gravity and anti-gravity nanodrones. This is why they have been offline for the past forty hours. The negative side is your mind will have to do more calculations putting a strain on your mind. Your sleeping helped the nanodrones pull energy from the air, to manipulate and accelerate subatomic particles... I remember, save you the details on the big science words. Your brain neurons are at an even 200 billion. The next time you feel great pain or anger the nanodrones will create a microscopic shield around me or I can temporarily turn myself offline, to prevent any damage. Not one hundred percent sure that will work though. I wouldn't want to take the chance though.'

'Cool.'

'Where are we going after we get out of this jail?' AI asks.

'I was seriously thinking about just leaving this planet and returning back to Xenos. Let everyone fend for themselves here. I think I made a mistake wanting to come back to this planet. This was a big waste of time. I've tried to help people, warn the government and everything I do is a constant fight. The government probably doesn't believe there is going to be an attack on Earth, even after getting the message from deep space. I don't hear about any preparations or the government asking for my help. I don't see any special helmets being given out to citizens. The Andromedian elders were right, there isn't much one person can do,' Jaden says.

'What about your daughter? She is half you,' AI says.

'That snotty little bitch. I don't even know her. She is like a clone of her crazy mother.'

'There might be a side you don't know about your daughter,' AI says.

'Are you getting this from your psychology for dummies e-books?'

'No.'

The door opens in the huge cell and Jaden wakes up to look towards the door.

"Alright everyone let's go," the guard at the gate says.

Jaden gets out of the bed and walks through the gate. Three other guards help handcuff Jaden and the other four men to a long chain line. The four Hispanic men in their early twenties stand in a line behind Jaden. They look at him with nervous expressions on their faces.

'Anything you can do to speed up the recalibration?' Jaden asks.

'I'll see what I can do.'

"Where are we all going now?" Jaden asks the guard.

“Everyone has a court date to see the judge.”

‘How did a nanoscanner get destroyed?’ Jaden asks.

‘The black gloss that was around your fingertips completely destroyed a nanoscanner when it went to investigate from the outside. Whatever it is, nanoscanners aren’t immune. Until we figure out what this is, they will have to stay away,’ AI says.

They walk together in a line outside the building and towards a sheriff’s van.

BUCKEYE FEDERAL PRISON 8:31 AM

Kimberly finally falls asleep against the dark wall while her knees are against her chest and arms around her legs. As the tears slowly dry against her face, her mind enters a dream state.

It is completely dark as Kimberly hears different voices all mixed together, right behind each other. The barrage of voices competes with each other. She tries hard to distinguish the familiar words, “Kids! Kids! Stop running...I’m your government appointed psychologist Miss Chan, What you saw was in your imagination...Do you want to see your parents again?... Mom, do you believe me?...I will hit you again if you keep making up things...Are you okay?...Look at my hair floating...” Young children begin crying simultaneously and then they fade away.

Kimberly wakes up screaming, from her dream as images and voices locked away in her subconscious came out.

“I’ll give you a reason to scream,” a prisoner across from her yells towards her from the feeding hole.

WASHINGTON, D.C. WHITE HOUSE COMMAND CENTER 8:50 AM

Robinson is upset that Max Miles suffered an unknown seizure and is on his way to a military hospital.

“How is it we are just finding out Jaden Marino was in a city jail in Halifax for the past forty-one hours and we weren’t notified sooner?” Robinson asks Mcright over the phone.

“Jaden Marino is back in his original bi-racial body. The system had the white face and body in the face recognition system as his ID. His old face wasn’t in the system anymore, when he had a new face scan on Saturday at the Halifax Jail there was no match. This is why we didn’t find out anything until now. His fingerprints were also different. They had him in the system as James Revis. The dumb hicks at the jailhouse

assumed their DNA scanner was broken since his DNA wasn't coming up. The court has been warned to have more court officers and sheriffs on duty. My agents are on their way," Mcright says.

"This is amazing, all this advanced technology the United States government has and we still get these slipups. I need this suspect killed or contained," Robinson says.

"Yes sir."

HALIFAX CRIMINAL COURTHOUSE 9:10 AM MONDAY

There is a howling wind coming from the windows on both sides of the courtroom. The high ceilings show craftsmanship from the 1800's. There is a concrete statue of justice on the right of the judge's desk. There is an American flag hanging from a pole a few feet in the air to the left of the judge's desk. The cool morning breeze flows through the courtroom kicking up dust from the walls. One of the Hispanic men begins sneezing, but he can't cover his mouth, so he bends his head down. Jaden is sitting in the front row of the courtroom still connected to the long chain, connected to the prisoners behind him by ankles and around the wrists. He can see the germs from the prisoner's sneeze floating in all directions. There is a big mug on the judge's desk. The steam from the hot black coffee slowly goes into the air. Jaden can smell the black coffee from where he is. He could really use some coffee this morning. Jaden turns around towards the seats behind him to see if he sees Kimberly. She isn't there and Jaden feels she truly wants nothing to do with him. There are many extra officers in the courtroom. Two court officers are wearing exoskeleton full body suits with guns on their waist by the door.

"All rise," a court secretary yells.

Jaden stands up with the rest of the prisoners. The court officer continues talking as Judge Katherine Spinelli sits at her desk. A court officer removes Jaden from the rest of the chain gain. He still has handcuffs on and chains down to his feet. Jaden stands in front of the judge. She has a metal electronic bow in her hair. Everyone sits down while the judge looks on her computer screen without a keyboard. People from the bank are in the courtroom seats.

"Mr. Jaden Marino, this is your name correct?" The judge asks while looking at Jaden.

'AI, what is going on buddy, they know who I am now. My eye screen is showing the calibration of my weapons and all nanodrones at ninety-nine percent finished. It has been stuck there for the past hour. My weapon systems' energy is at thirty percent,' Jaden says to AI.

"Yes it is," Jaden says to the judge.

‘Your internal energy is fine and stable. There is a slight problem with the calibration, but we are working on it,’ AI says.

‘Are the nanodrones having a meeting or taking a break or something?’ Jaden asks.

Four court officers in blue uniforms and with guns on their waists stand around Jaden.

‘Something like that, you could say. The five nanoscanners will be online in less than a minute,’ AI says.

“Mr. Marino, are you really Italian?”

“Yes, I’m half Italian.”

“Interesting. I’ve never seen so many charges against one person before. Are you half Italian and half the devil?” The judge asks.

“Technically, half alien, one fourth Italian and one forth black is more accurate,” Jaden says with a smile on his face.

“Do you think this is a joke?” She asks.

“Do you think you can ask me stupid questions and try to insult me? Let’s get this over with, people are waiting behind me and I have places to go,” Jaden says while the judge looks at her screen again.

A tall white court officer next to Jaden jabs him in the side with a nightstick.

“Show some respect in this courthouse you little prick,” the middle-aged officer says.

“How about you show some respect for my nose by chewing some gum,” Jaden snaps.

“Mr. Marino, you won’t be going anywhere, but into federal custody without bail. You are charged with: felony assaulting a police officer, aggravated assault on a security guard, felony bank robbery, destroying property with an explosive device, aggravated assault on five jail inmates, second-degree murder of a security guard, destroying hospital property, identity theft... Should I keep going?” She asks.

“Yes keep going, this is interesting. I might beat the world record for the most criminal charges on a person,” Jaden says while his nanoscanners go out around the room.

“...Opening an emergency exit while an aircraft was in motion, pushing two people from a moving plane, first degree manslaughter of a passenger and eighteen years of unpaid child support,” she yells.

“Seventeen years, ten months and seven days to be exact of child support,” Jaden says with a smile on his face.

“You froze your body in Europe for eighteen years to avoid taking care of your child? You let your child grow up without a father?” She asks.

“Well technically I didn’t know I had a child. I didn’t freeze my body, I was on another planet. So technically child support should only be for the amount of time I’m on Earth...”

Everyone in the courtroom starts to laugh.

“Are you crazy and a liar on top of it?” She asks.

“Judge, it seems you care more about me not paying child support over all my other foolish charges you just read. I must say this government is good with putting charges and made up charges on their citizens. It is too bad the laws and rules don’t apply to me,” Jaden says.

“Entertain me, Mr. Marino, how is it the laws and rules don’t apply to you?”

“I’m not a *Homo sapien* like the rest of you humans, I’m what I call a BiAlienSapien. I’m an evolved human and the next level up on the species chain. I’m more of a modified human with alien technology, capable of doing things never thought possible with a human body. I’m here to help save this miserable planet from certain doom. But with all I’ve been through since returning to Earth last week, I think you people need to suffer your own Armageddon...”

The judge continues to look at her screen and ignores what Jaden says.

“I’m reading here that you shoved a magazine of a police officer’s bullets down his throat in an attack?” She asks.

“No, I shoved the bullets he shot at me down his throat. They were very hot and burned my hands,” Jaden says while chuckling. The audience laughs also.

“Sir...” the judge grabs her head as she feels pain.

“That was very creative Jaden, BiAlienSapien. But it doesn’t make sense, you are a Bialien not a BiAlienSapien,” AI says.

‘I know AI, I don’t know where it came from. It just came to me out of nowhere. I know logically bialien makes sense to what I am, but I like the way it sounds. An evolved human and half alien, does make BiAlienSapien feel more profound. I think it will make a cool nickname. The sapien gives it a nice zing. People make up nicknames all the time for themselves.’

“As you can see judge, there is a nanomole in your brain now, getting into position to over take your mind. There is a pending alien attack on Earth...” Jaden says while everyone in the courtroom laughs except the four Hispanic prisoners from his jail cell. They listen to him with their eyes on Jaden.

“Sir, Tylenol will fix this headache in the next ten minutes. I don’t think the most advanced psychiatric hospital will fix your delusional brain. If you have magical alien powers, let’s see you do something now,” she demands.

“I know you are wearing some old pink grandma panties with a quarter inch hole in the rear, under your suit. Your old saggy breasts look as if they were allergic to bras the past forty years. I can read everything on your screen from here. Inputting I’m mentally disturbed on my profile isn’t very nice. I’m sure you have that electronic device in your back by your spine because your husband left you a long time ago and it’s been ages since a man touched you. When I do something magical, your courtroom won’t look the same when I leave.” Jaden says.

“Are you threatening me and my court? Sir?” She asks. “You are already looking at three life sentences in prison, do you want to go for four life sentences?”

“Judge, would it really matter after one life sentence? I mean really, even though I can probably live over 500 years, another life sentence is like burying a dead body again in the same grave. I’ll be walking out that front courtroom door in five minutes without handcuffs and without a guard escorting me. So you can add on as many life sentences as you want. Go knock yourself out, Judge Dredd,” Jaden says.

The five court officers around Jaden begin to laugh together along with other people in the courtroom.

“OJ Simpson’s lawyers couldn’t get you off on all these charges against you. Not even Jesus himself can help you walk through that door unescorted in the next five minutes. You are completely delusional and entertaining to listen to along with my morning coffee,” the judge says while taking another sip of her black coffee.

“Kimberly Chan is held in Buckeye Federal Maximum Prison in Virginia as an accomplice to the charges against me? Vice President Robinson is giving out these orders?” Jaden asks.

‘I knew he had to be behind this. This is why everyone is after me,’ Jaden says to AI.

“Yes, how did you know that?” She asks.

“I told you I’m watching your judge screen from here. I can see that the feds have me in the system as this face and my other white face. I’m on the terrorist watch list. I can also see that they consider me very dangerous and to be held until Homeland Security or the FBI arrives. Why do you think they consider me armed and dangerous even though I’m in handcuffs?” Jaden asks.

“You listen to me, you young teenager, I don’t know what kind of tricks you are pulling here...”

“No you listen!” Jaden shouts and asks, “Why is my friend Dr. Chan is being held in a maximum federal male prison? She had nothing to do with this!”

“You are in contempt of my court!” She yells while banging her gavel as the audience talks amongst themselves.

Two UAV Predator drones fly by outside, along with a FBI helicopter hovering a few hundred feet from the courthouse. A local news-reporting agency is setting up on the steps of the courthouse.

"You are in contempt of America and I hope the feds put you deep in a hole where you belong, you mentally challenged terrorist traitor!"

'Good job and thanks for e-mailing this story to the local news in town, AI. I can see they are outside now,' Jaden says.

The court appointed public defender and prosecutor are being told to stay outside the courtroom.

'Thank to the free Wi-Fi in this courthouse building and in town,' AI says.

"Judge Spinelli, let me go now and a lot of people won't get hurt today," Jaden demands.

"Guards remove this mentally challenged man back to a holding cell, until the feds can take him into custody. I heard enough nonsense for my morning," she says.

Two guards grab Jaden's arm. They can feel his muscles bulging as if something is inside of them. They look at him with a strange look on their faces. Two other guards say, "Let's go."

Jaden stands in the same place, not budging. The courtroom lights begin to dim. Everyone turns to look at each other.

"I would suggest anyone who wishes not to get seriously hurt to please leave the courtroom now and stay out of my way. If you have a family or kids at home think of them now!" Jaden yells, while two court officers in exoskeleton body suits with helmets on walk down the court aisle from the entrance behind each other. Their metal feet make clanking sounds against the floor. The walking sounds behind Jaden remind him of Robocop walking. The tellers and some customers from the bank get up and run out of the courtroom. The four prisoners on the bench attempt to get up, but a court officer make them sit back down.

A guard's long hair begins to float in the air. Jaden's eye screen suddenly shows: OFFENSE-DEFENSE WEAPONS ONLINE 35% TOTAL STRENGTH, ALL NANODRONES, ANTI-GRAVITY, PRO-GRAVITY ONLINE.

Jaden sees small light particles moving inside his fair complexion, down to his wrist and ankles. Jaden turns around and looks at the door. Nanodrones destroy the metal compounds in his handcuffs. Smoke comes from the metal and all the cuffs drops to the floor. It makes a loud clinging sound. The officers look at the chains on the floor. The judge stands up to see what is going on. The lights go out in the courtroom and sunlight shines down from huge windows on the wall near the ceiling. Nanotime 100x shows on Jaden's eyes. He notices his body is moving faster along with his brain speed. Jaden hits the first guard with his elbow in the chest, and his body falls backwards on the bench. The other guards' hands slowly reach down for their guns. People in the rows of

benches scream in a low growling sound as they try to climb over the benches towards the door. The judge slowly bends down towards her bulletproof desk.

Jaden grabs and removes three of the court officers' guns before they can reach it themselves. He tosses them straight into the air. The anti-gravity energy above him makes the guns slowly float towards the ceiling. Nanotime goes off and time speeds back to normal in his brain. Jaden does a roundhouse kick in the face of another officer and his body twists onto the bench other prisoners are hiding under. Jaden then fires a slight gravity shock wave with his right hand into the chest of the last guard standing near him. A dust of smoke is two feet around his body. The two officers in the bionic suits crouch to aim their guns at Jaden and fire at him. A nanoscanner is inside of the gun. Jaden can see the bullet loading into the chamber and quickly being shot. A barrage of 8mm bullets slow down to a crawl. Their guns begin to click as thirty-six bullets are four feet from Jaden's head. The last person runs out of the courtroom while the door swings back and forth. The bullets move down a foot and Jaden takes a step backwards. He fires a gravity shock wave towards the bionic court officers as they try to reload their guns. The shock wave takes the levitating bullets and a bubble of the energy shield with it. The bullets riddle their armor suits. The strong force lifts the officers off their feet as they fly through the courtroom doors and into a concrete wall twenty feet further. The left door hangs off its hinges as it looks as if it is about to fall off.

The first guard struck by Jaden aims his gun at him as he crawls over the benches towards the entrance.

"Save your bullets for a real criminal officer, I will have to make you eat those bullets you fire at me," Jaden says as the officer's hands shake. The nervous officer gets up and runs out of the courtroom.

Jaden puts his hands together in front of him and the guns thrown to the ceiling come down into Jaden's hand. The two other court officers that fell down run towards the door. Jaden turns towards the judge's bench. He hears the four Hispanic men making nervous whimpers.

"You see judge, if I was a terrorist, wouldn't I be killing and shooting innocent people also?" Jaden asks while walking closer to the judge's bench.

'We should go sir,' AI suggests.

The last guard in the room comes up behind Jaden with a nightstick, swinging towards the back of his head. Jaden quickly turns around, dropping the guns in his hand and stops his swinging arm with his hand. He catches the court officer by the neck with his right hand and begins to squeeze. He drops the nightstick.

“There is always a renegade officer who wants to try to be a hero. Didn’t you just see me stop bullets in midair and blast two bionic dick officers thirty feet into a concrete wall? Why would you try to sneak behind me?” Jaden asks while still lifting him off his feet by a few inches. He gags and tries to remove Jaden’s hand around his neck.

“You were trying hard to be in the newspaper tomorrow as the town’s hero? GI-prick?” Jaden asks while lifting the 270-pound man.

Jaden lifts him by his body and tosses him high above the judge’s desk. The American flag is hit and it falls from the wall. The man screams as he slams hard into the wall losing consciousness as he lands on the floor. The judge screams as the officer’s body lands near her. Concrete debris and a clock falls onto the officer’s body. Jaden sees words scrolling across his eyes and read it.

“Are you not entertained judge? Are you not entertained?” Jaden yells while turning around and walking towards the exit. The four prisoners lay trembling under the bench.

“That was three minutes and forty-five seconds with time to spare judge.”

Smoke and debris floats in the air from behind the judge’s desk.

Jaden walks out of the courtroom door and down the empty hallway.

‘Where did you get that quote from?’ Jaden asks.

‘It was on the Internet under famous movie quotes. The movie *Gladiator*,’ AI says.

‘Cool. I know I missed a lot of movies from the past eighteen years.’

Jaden makes it towards the entrance glass doors of the courthouse building. A news reporter and cameraman walk through the front door to meet him.

“Are you Jaden?” The young small blonde hair news reporter asks.

“Yes I am. You are going to have to interview me quickly because, as you see, I just broke out of custody and the government is after me,” Jaden says while the bright lights from the camera go on Jaden’s face.

They walk back away from the front door.

“I’m Jan from Channel 3 News. Did you really travel to another galaxy and is there really a pending attack on Earth?” She asks in one breath, while putting a skinny wireless microphone to his face. A nanoscanner sits in front of the camera recording the interview also.

‘Jaden hurry, soldiers are creating a perimeter around the courthouse.’

‘I see them.’

“Yes, I left Earth in February 1996, you can research on the Internet Michael Morris government conspiracy 1996 for proof. I’ve traveled 2.2 million light-years to the Andromeda Galaxy to a planet called Xenos, where I met some friendly aliens that are about 70,000 years ahead of us. They uncovered a nanomole in my brain, implanted in human bodies

hundreds of thousands of years ago. A nanomole is something that can control a human body with the right amount of energy from the mother ship. This is why these bad aliens called Darclonians are here to attack us for whatever reason I do not know yet. Their mother ship is here and hiding behind the moon watching us to plan their silent attack. I'm here to help the government to avoid this possible attack. I've been attacked by the government and police for the past few days..."

Suddenly Jaden's clear energy shield forms seven feet in diameter around the cameraman and news reporter. A three-inch circular hole is made in the glass door. It goes silent around them as a fast moving 4000 feet per second sniper bullet slows down towards Jaden's head. A ripple of white energy is seen around where the bullet enters the outside of the shield. The cameraman turns the camera towards the bullet slowly moving through the air and stops. Jaden walks up to the bullet still thrusting forward. He grabs the hot bullet with his fingers and shows it to the reporter.

"Did you really just stop this sniper bullet?" She asks while taking a step towards Jaden.

"Yes, I'm what you call a BiAlienSapien. Here is proof that your government is trying to kill the only person that can help stop this attack. Vice President Robinson is behind this attack on me. He has been trying to kill me ever since I found a UFO in 1996. These headaches and sudden unresponsive humans have been experiencing around Earth is all related to these nanomoles in their brains. The government has the instructions on how to block the signals in these nanomoles," Jaden says while dropping the bullet.

"Maybe this can explain why people are disappearing around the world at high elevations without a trace?" She asks.

"Yes, people should stay away from tall buildings and high elevation places."

"If the mother ship is here, why doesn't it just attack us?" She asks.

"They are much smarter than that. They would anticipate us to defend ourselves, they have something else in mind. They know a lot about us already. I would like to talk more to you, but I have to go save a friend. Make sure you play this story to everyone, even people in other countries," Jaden says.

"What are you going to do after you save your friend?"

"Go back to the Andromeda Galaxy or travel to another part of this galaxy. This planet isn't worth saving, I've had enough. I warned the government, so I've done my job. I saw some nice uninhabited Earth-type planets a couple of thousand light-years from here. Maybe I'll go there to start a family and start my own government," Jaden says while walking towards the exit doors.

"Good luck sir."

He sees SWAT people standing around different entrances while fifty men stand outside the building. Armed men are slowly walking up to the front of the courthouse stairs with their guns pointing forward. Jaden sees local police, state police, FBI, Homeland Security, helicopters and drone planes flying by outside. Jaden fires a gravity shock wave at the front door as the cameraman continues recording ten feet behind him. An explosion and the sound of broken glass are heard. The glass doors quickly come off the hinges and fly into the air. The armed men on the stairs crouch down and look at the glass door flying over them and into a tree. The leaves on the tree fall quickly towards the ground with the door and debris. Jaden's body goes invisible as he runs outside the front opening and towards the left of the courthouse. The fresh warm spring air hits his body.

"Sir, the suspect disappeared from sight," a sniper across the street on top of a church says into the radio to a military commander.

He runs and leaps high into the air. The anti-gravity energy around him allows him to jump forty feet into the air as he slowly lands on the roof of a red church. He sees people across the street from the courthouse in a park where people are standing behind a yellow tape. Jaden jumps from the roof of the church and into a parking lot. Jaden continues to run down a side street. The nanoscanners show that the courthouse is being rushed by many federal agents and military personnel from all directions.

'They are taking the news anchor and camera man into custody,' AI says.

'I see, agents are taking their holographic disc from the camera now. Shit! That video is never going to see the light of day. I did the best I could do,' Jaden says while running down the street at 18 mph.

'All the roads are blocked off with heavy checkpoints. I have a creative idea on how we can escape out of town,' AI says while a helicopter flies by.

'Creative sounds good to me. Now I know how the predator and the invisible man feel,' Jaden says.

Chapter 19: The Prison In-break

10:06 AM NORTH OF HALIFAX NC

Traffic is moving slowly on Highway 301 as a tractor-trailer pulls into a checkpoint. German Shepherds smell each vehicle and are walking with a state trooper. Federal agents are asking each driver questions.

"Sir, where are you heading and do you have a driver's license?" A FBI agent asks the truck driver.

"I'm heading to Roanoke, Virginia to drop off this load of books to a warehouse," the truck driver says while passing his driver's license to the agent.

"Roanoke? My mother lives on Cove Road in Roanoke, very nice town. Sir, have you seen these two men?" The agent asks.

"No, I haven't," the truck driver says.

An agent opens the passenger door and looks in the rear cabin behind the driver. He sprays a white powder in the cab with thermal glasses on.

"We are going to have to do a quick DNA cheek swab and we are going to have to look in your trailer also," the agent says while passing the truck driver a fresh Q-tip.

'AI, this isn't going to work, they are going to see me.'

The truck driver presses a button inside his cabin and the rear trailer unlocks. Dogs smell the back of the trailer and an agent climbs into the rear of the trailer. He sprays a white powder into the air and walks to the front of the trailer with thermal goggles, looking around. He looks at a shipment of books that read QUICKFLASH 2030, SCI-FI, SECRET AGENT, THRILLER. TWO BEST SELLER LISTS through the plastic on a crate.

The agent jumps down from the rear and says, "All clear."

Another agent on the roof of the trailer spraying a light white powder climbs down a ladder saying, "All clear."

The truck driver drives off and heads towards Highway 125.

'It worked, but the skin on my back is killing me. I'm also feeling a little dizzy,' Jaden says while the wind brushes against his body.

Jaden's back is against the side of the tractor-trailer.

'How didn't they see me with their thermal glasses?' Jaden asks while turning to the side to pull himself up to the roof.

'The temperature outside your body was matched with the temperature of the trailer. I also blocked any scents from leaving your body,' AI says.

'Good work buddy, now you are thinking. The driver said he was going to Roanoke right?'

'Yes, the west side of Virginia. We need to go northeast to Buckeye. I checked the path of the highway for the next one hundred miles by

connecting the nanoscanners. There is another light checkpoint getting onto Interstate 95 in five miles,' AI says.

Jaden pulls himself to the roof of the trailer. He lies on his back on top of the trailer as his body turns visible again. The air is full of pollen and fresh oxygen from the trees around him. He is admiring the sky and clouds on this partly cloudy day. His body feels the gears shifting. He is thinking about Kimberly and his parents as the wind blows on his body. The engine constantly switching gears reminds Jaden when he was learning stick shift. Jaden thinks about being on another planet with Kimberly and starting a family.

They reach another checkpoint with two state troopers and the driver shows his ID. Jaden quickly goes invisible. The truck continues onto I-95. Jaden stands up using the pro-gravity nanodrones in his feet, fighting the strong winds as the truck reaches 65 mph. Cars are cruising at high speeds in the HSCCVL lane. He walks to the front of the trailer near the cabin. Jaden climbs onto the side of the passenger door and breaks the window. The truck driver swerves in the middle lane and cars to the side of him honk their horns while trying to avoid him. Jaden opens the door and climbs in. His body suddenly reappears as if he teleported there.

The truck driver begins to scream at the top of his lungs while trying to focus on the road and steering.

"Are you finished screaming like a little girl?" Jaden asks.

"How did you get in here? What do you want?" The frightened driver asks while looking back and forth

"For starters I would like your truck. Just to borrow it," Jaden politely replies.

The guy pulls out a stun gun from his visor and shoots Jaden with it. It jabs his arm and shocks his body.

"Wow, that felt good. But seriously I need your truck, you can pull over now or I can toss you out while it is moving," Jaden says.

"You aren't getting my truck," the scared man says.

'His heart rate is going very high.'

'I'm losing patience and I really don't care,' Jaden says.

The driver pulls out a knife, while pulling over and slamming on the brakes on the shoulder. Jaden leans forward and holds onto the dashboard.

"I'll stab you right now, if you don't get out of my truck," he says.

"You have a wife and two sons. Today is your oldest son's birthday. Do you really want to die on his birthday to protect your company's truck?" Jaden calmly asks while the truck completely stops.

The driver tries to stab Jaden in the left leg, but it doesn't penetrate his skin. His tough skin repels the knife like Kevlar in a bulletproof vest.

"Would you like to try again?" Jaden asks with his arms folded.

He stabs Jaden harder in the shoulder while grunting, the knife doesn't penetrate.

"What are you some kind of alien or cyborg?" He asks while stabbing Jaden in the head.

"You just made some of my hair fall out. It is men like yourself who leave people behind asking God why you had to die. All you had to do was jump out and say someone stole your truck. But you future dickheads want to do things the hard way!" Jaden yells while opening the passenger door. Jaden takes the knife and stabs the man in the leg with it. The man screams in pain while Jaden unbuckles his seat belt.

"There there, it doesn't hurt that much. Just remember, material things can't replace a life."

Jaden tosses the man out of the passenger door with one hand into the bushes about twenty feet away.

"Tell your company the Bialien Hulk stole your truck," Jaden snaps.

Jaden moves into the driver's seat and begins to drive. He switches gears. His hair begins to grow back in a patch in his scalp.

"Why must people do things the hard way, I don't get it... This isn't too hard, just like a stick shift car," he says while the engine stalls and the gears grind.

'Shit, I'm very rusty,' Jaden says.

'The driver is in a lot of pain and losing blood deep in the bushes,' AI says.

'The hell with him, he is lucky to still be alive. I'm having these evil feelings and thoughts of just killing anyone that gets in my way. I feel as if I'm turning into the Terminator or something. This is really strange, it is as if there is something evil growing inside of me,' Jaden says.

'I think those strange energies that come around you when you get angry or feel pain have something to do with the changes in your personality.'

'If it does, I'm sure you will figure it out. Every vehicle I see has GPS systems.'

Jaden inputs the address to Buckeye Federal Prison into the built in GPS screen.

"Drive forty-eight Miles on I-95," the GPS says.

BUCKEYE FEDERAL PRISON 11:57AM

Prisoners are moaning in surrounding cells around Kimberly. She can't go back to sleep because of the smell and prisoners yelling obscene remarks from their cells.

A man yells from his door with a scary voice, "It is snowing outside Chinese food, today is our lucky day. I'm going to fill you up with some

warm protein, then top you off like a gas pump. I'm a certified serial rapist. They call me the Gyn-analyst."

She begins to cry again and doesn't know how she is going to get out of this mess. She keeps thinking someone is going to come in her cell any minute.

Jaden is two miles down the road from the prison in the tractor-trailer deciding his best strategy. He sees a strong prison guard presence throughout the prison with machine guns.

'What are these prison inmates doing to themselves in the basement?' AI asks.

'You don't want to know. Think of it as practice makes perfect or the death of millions.'

Jaden locates Kimberly in the cell in the basement on the other side of the prison.

'There is a prison guard holding his head screaming. It looks as if he was escorting a prisoner. Now the prisoner is kicking him and hitting up with something...oh no, he is knocked out cold now,' Jaden says.

The prisoner is taking the guard's keys.

'His nanomole is affecting his brain. It is in between normal open and neutral. Most of the guards are coming towards the front of the prison with guns and exoskeleton body suits. There is only one other guard in the unit,' AI says.

'Shit, a huge machine is blowing white powdery looking flakes all over the ground and in the air around the prison.

'I guess we won't be sneaking in invisibly with that powder. You might need to do a full atomic solar recharge, if your shield strength gets too low,' AI says.

'I don't need to sneak in anyway. I'm ready for that atomic solar recharge. I remember when Bellona did it, that was so cool. I just hope it isn't too painful.'

'It won't work the same way, ours is configured differently. They can be deadly around humans. When the nanodrones explode at near the speed of light towards space, they make holes in everything in all directions. When they return to Earth, they carry a good amount of radiation energy from the magnetosphere. It can affect anything in a thirty foot radius until they return back into your body and are contained.'

'Okay. As long as my energy is replenished from it, I really don't care about anyone else. Damn, these guards in the towers have twin M2hb guns with fifty caliber rounds. Damn those are big bullets. They also have a weapon I've never seen before,' Jaden says.

‘Those bullets fire over 4000 feet per second. That much power can penetrate your skin and quickly weaken your shield energy. They have a next generation nitrogen-cooled 15,000-rpm M134 mini gun in a tower. They also have bat bullets with little wings on each of them and nanorockets. Bat bullets turn in the air and hit the exact target it was aimed at, even if the target moves. Nanorockets are ten-inch mini rockets with C4 explosives,’ AI says.

‘Shit, let’s do it,’ Jaden says while there is a brief silence, ‘I have a plan.’

‘I have a plan,’ AI says at the same time.

A few minutes pass by. The tractor-trailer is driving straight towards the gate of the prison. The driver’s seat is empty. A prison guard sees the truck coming at 50 mph down the street and he gets on the radio. The guards in the three towers begin firing their huge powerful mounted guns at the truck as the truck bursts through the twenty-foot high checkpoint gate with barbed wire on top of it. The high-speed bullets look like flying sparks of light. The truck quickly catches on fire as Jaden is running one hundred feet behind the truck while invisible. The powerful bullets rip hundreds of huge holes in the trailer like paper. The tires go flat and the tractor-trailer changes direction and explodes. The books in the trailer explode in different directions as well. Jaden fires a shock wave at one of the towers. It cruises through the air making a hissing sound like a high-speed softball. It hits the tower ripping the top of it off. The guard in the tower feels an abrupt movement and then he experiences weightlessness as his body floats through the air with the tower. He grabs onto the walls around him. Fifty feet in the air, the guard suddenly experiences a direction change downwards and the weight on his body greatly increases. His body weight of 180 lbs increases to 520 lbs and his spine feels the sudden strain. He screams in pain as the glass and tower crash into the ground creating a huge amount of debris. The tractor-trailer stops against a huge wall and continues to burn. Black smoke quickly floats into the sky.

White powder completely covers Jaden’s invisible body. He quickly turns visible and runs through the first gate. A secret weapon elevates out of the concrete on top of the wall. There are two square metal dishes right next to each other turning directly towards Jaden. Someone is controlling them remotely. The machines channels two invisible microwave beams towards Jaden’s body causing him to fall and roll on the ground a few feet. The intense heat from the twin ray guns penetrates half an inch into his skin and turns off. The pain quickly stops as he lies on his back. The pain traveled all around his body as if he was being burned alive.

‘Why didn’t you use the shields Jaden? Why did you override me?’ AI asks.

‘I knew something was coming, I wanted to see what they were going to hit me with.’

A prison guard on a loudspeaker speaks to Jaden.

“Put your hands over your head and get on your knees. You are surrounded by two ray gun machines. If you step a foot into any direction you will feel heat greater than 150°F.”

‘Scan the machines with the nanoscanners when I get up so we can find out how this weapon works. Also analyze the waves’ frequencies,’ Jaden says.

‘Yes sir.’

Jaden stands up and walks forward. A double burning sensation comes over his body as his body feels 155°F of microwave energy. He stops moving forward and the microwaves stop. Smoke can be seen coming off his clothes.

‘Shit, now I know what an ant feels like when someone puts a magnifying glass on it in the sun,’ he says while rubbing his hot navy shirt with holes in it.

‘I have the configuration of the guns. There is a laser under the machine, heating up and ionizing the air. Then a plasma channel is created and electromagnetic waves go in the direction the square dishes aim towards,’ AI says.

Jaden puts his hands over his head as if he was surrendering and rests on his knees.

‘How can we use that type of energy?’ He asks.

‘The system works similar to the components of your molecule rippers by creating plasma energy. But to reproduce the same effect will require a lot of energy and not worth it. But, we can contain the wave energy by getting nanodrones to spin around in two directions to collect the electromagnetic waves and then redirect them like a mirror. Your hands will need to hold up the hot energy forces.’

‘Sounds good, let’s do that,’ Jaden says.

Two officers in exoskeleton suits walk from the front steel gate surrounded by twenty-foot concrete walls. One of them has handcuffs in his hand. Jaden stands up and extends his arms in front of him.

“Get back on the ground and put your hands over your head, or we will hit you with a 180°F blast of heat. You will suffer second and third degree burns!” The man yells through the loudspeaker.

Jaden continues walking and yells out.

“Let’s see what you got!” Jaden yells while his fingers are waving at them to come at him.

The two guards stop thirty feet in front of Jaden. The translucent heat wave molecules are disrupting the light waves between him and the ray

guns. The vision looks hazy as the air quickly heats up. The intense double beams come towards Jaden at a high speed. The white powdery flakes floating in the air catch on fire between the ray gun and Jaden. They turn to smoke and disappear. He quickly turns his palms around towards the square dishes. The nanodrones are quickly rotating on the skin of his palms and try to contain the hot, intense beams in front of him. The force to contain the hot energy slowly pushes down on the palms of his hands and touches his skin. Jaden grunts and groans as his hands feel intense burning sensations up to 177°F. Jaden goes down on his knees from the forces on his arms and hands. The intense heat bombards Jaden's body and makes him perspire. His muscles bulge in his arms and shoulders. Smoke is coming from his shirt and hair. The operators of the machines believe there is a malfunction and increase the power. He slowly changes the direction of his hands and aims them towards the guards standing in front of him with confused looks on their faces. Jaden grunts aloud while sweat runs down his face. He redirects the hot waves of energy towards the guards in front of him. The ray gun waves redirect and hit the guards' suits, but can't penetrate the nanotubing fiber materials. The nanotubing material reflects the direct blast of heat. The waves quickly move in different directions around the exoskeleton suits. The heat cooks them from the outside and they begin to do a chicken dance and run back towards the gates.

"Do the southern fried chicken dance!" Jaden yells.

Jaden stands up with a smile on his face and runs behind the guards. He redirects the funneling energy back towards the dishes. The dishes turn glowing red and quickly turn off. His hands are smoking and suffer burns all over the skin. The guards in the two towers arm their big guns. Jaden can hear the loading of the guns from where he is.

He makes it through the second gate. He runs and jumps thirty feet into the air firing a blue tinted atoms ripper with his left hand towards the tower on his left. The atoms ripper creates a three-foot hole straight through the tower. The atoms ripper also makes a hole straight through the mini gun and the guard's body. Blood splats all inside the tower as if a tomato just exploded. Jaden runs into a small building where visitors enter through. He sees through the nanoscanners that prisoners are letting other prisoners out. The second guard is taken down and is beaten unconscious by crazed prisoners. Prisoners have their hands through the opening of their cells, yelling to the other prisoners to let them out. Kimberly hears the rioting outside her cell door and begins to pray.

"You are all mine, Chinese food. I'm going to put my duck sauce all inside of your sweet egg roll holes," the Gyn-analyst says through her prison cell opening while he jiggles keys.

He tries both keys but they don't open Kimberly's cell door.

“Monkey’s cum! These keys ain’t working!”
“You dickhead, let us out, we can help you,” a man yells.
He opens the other prisoners’ locked doors.

Jaden sees Kimberly is in trouble and quickly runs through the empty visiting area.

‘It is a trap Jaden, I count: seven federal agents, fifteen prison guards, and six special ops military in exoskeleton suits carrying mini guns. They all have on gas masks. The men have twelve gauge shotguns, sniper rifles, bat bullets, nanorocket guns, and twin M2hb guns from the inside towers. There is an unmanned aerial helicopter gunship called a helidrone hovering above with Hydra II rockets,’ AI says.

The hybrid helidrone has two wings on both sides that face down. There is a medium-sized rotary blade in the middle of each wing.

‘Wow, AI you know your weapons.’

‘I downloaded most government weapons and guns before we left town.’

‘I don’t have too much of a choice. It’s show time, let’s see what kind of a human weapon I am.’

Jaden opens the door into a huge courtyard area. He runs forward as white powder is everywhere and canisters of tear gas are exploding a few feet around him. The canisters explode as they hit the ground. Jaden holds his breath and closes his eyes. Thousands of fast moving bullets are shot at Jaden from the towers. Soldiers in exoskeleton suits a few dozen feet away fire their mini guns at Jaden as if they are a firing squad. Guards and agents on foot fire M16’s and shotguns at Jaden. The fast moving bullets come from all directions and hit the outside of his shield with tremendous force. Bat bullets are coming at Jaden from rooftops. He has the rpm at 150,000 but the forward shield can’t destroy the bullets fast enough. Nanorockets are being shot at Jaden from a distance. They twirl in the air from the towers and a huge explosion is seen hitting his outer body shield. Fire shoots upwards and Jaden’s hands are holding the inside of the shield from jerking from the force. Fire forms around his shield as smoke flies towards the sky. The force from the four nanorockets with C4 knocks Jaden off balance and off his feet. The shield begins to enclose on him and turn grey as his shield gets weaker. The molecules from the bullets and energy from the blasts quickly move around the shield.

“We got him boys! Keep firing!” A guard yells, while they move closer to Jaden laying flat on his stomach with a grey material surrounding him.

Kimberly hears explosions and gunfire from a distance. She stands in the corner of the cell looking at the door. The roaming prisoners in the

SHU area are running around yelling and screaming. One man runs into a small kitchen area that is behind the guard's office to steal food. A long corridor area behind the office leads to a steel door sealing off the SHU area from the rest of the building. Eight other men are trying to get Kimberly's door open with the two keys.

"Central we need help, two guards are down in the SHU2 area, prisoners are roaming freely," a guard at the checkpoint says on the radio while looking through security cameras.

"Sorry SHU2, keep the area sealed off, we are handling a serious threat," the warden says on the radio.

The prisoners talk amongst themselves.

"This is a special lock, the key is probably somewhere in the office," a prisoner named Tommy says.

The Gyn-analyst quickly pushes people out of the way and runs to the locked office where the SHU guards sit. He has a look of determination on his face to get Kimberly's cell door open. His hormones are driving him to find the key and be the first one through her door.

"The guards' room is locked. Someone help me find something to pick the lock," Gyn-analyst says.

A Mexican prisoner runs from the kitchen area behind the office with a small bottle in his hand.

"Look what I found! Some organic corn oil!" He yells at the men crowded around Kimberly's door.

"Alright! Good work man. Just what we needed!" A prisoner yells.

He pours it in a few of the men's hands as they rub it together in their hands. Drips of the corn oil fall all over the floor. Then they rub their hands in their orange prison pants. Tommy shines the guard's flashlight on Kimberly. He picks out the part of her body he wants to taste first.

"There is no MSG in this Chinese food!" Tommy yells.

"You are going to be Freddy Kruger's mother by the time we finish with you," the Gyn-analyst yells from down the hall while trying to pick the lock with plastic utensils.

"I'm first you dick," Tommy yells while they push each other.

Outside, the men continue firing over 3400 bullets at Jaden. The helidrone continues to float above, monitoring the situation. The glowing grey energy inside of Jaden's shield continues to crush his body. The pressure increases as his shield weakens more and he drops to his knees trying to fight back the strong forces pushing down on him.

'How much longer, AI? I feel as if I'm being crushed by a four hundred pound woman,' Jaden mumbles.

‘Just a few more seconds. Continue fighting against the pressure,’ AI says while doing calculations.

‘What is all this grey shit around me?’ Jaden asks.

‘Advanced plasma fusion, it’s recycling the kinetic energy and molecules in the bullets,’ AI says.

“Keep shooting, he is still glowing!” A guard yells while all the men walk closer and circle Jaden.

Jaden is pushing his hands off the ground trying to lift himself against the strong pressure around his body. He strains and groans as he uses all of his muscle strength to push back. AI is doing advanced Andromedian calculus calculations for some nanodrones to return to Earth at slightly different angles and group together.

Trillions of energy storing nanodrones enter the glowing grey energy and quickly move around at high speeds. There is a bright flash of light around Jaden’s body and a huge explosion is created. Jaden’s mind goes into 80x nanotime mode. The white powder flies in all directions. The energy-storing nanodrones, grey molecules and shield generating nanodrones explode in all directions at half the speed of light, creating holes in anything in their path. The men fly backwards into the air from the huge explosion as billions of microscopic holes are created in their bodies and guns. The military men in exoskeleton suits slowly fall backwards from the blast. Their impenetrable nanite-graphite armor has microscopic holes all over.

Jaden, still holding his breath, stands up with his arms toward the sky. He yells as his muscles strain and are in pain around his body. The fast moving nanodrones reach the strong energy from just outside the magnetosphere above the planet. They quickly slow down and change direction back towards Earth in groups. Jaden has no shields while the men land on the ground screaming in a low growl. The helidrone fires several Hydra 2 rockets at Jaden. A few of the men’s bodies shake uncontrollably and bleed. Jaden’s nanotime goes into 10x as the rockets slowly move towards him from above. The two towers to the left and right of Jaden 150 feet away begin firing their high-powered twin M2hb guns and nanorockets towards Jaden. The bullets slowly cruise in the air. The bullets quickly heat the air around them. Two soldiers in bionic suits struggle to stand to the right of Jaden. They are bleeding inside of their exoskeleton suits.

Nanotime continues, the first Hydra rocket get within seventeen feet of Jaden. He looks around at everything slowly coming towards him. The groups of nanodrones with radiation charged particles return from space at one quarter the speed of light. They come from all directions quickly passing through the guards laying flat on the roofs and the guards in the right tower. They also pass through the chest of a military man in an

exoskeleton suit that just stood back up. They die instantly. The returning nanodrones return through the path of the bullets shot towards Jaden, destroying them also. The nanodrones return to Jaden's body and quickly start forming an energy shield around him. Jaden's sees on his eye screen that his full energy is at fifty-five percent. A 200-foot circle of gravity shock wave smoke is around Jaden as he fires it with his right hand towards the Hydra missiles. A great ball of fire forms as the first of four Hydra missiles explodes. The shock wave takes the explosive force and reverses its direction. The fire is circling inside of the shock wave like a tornado. Jaden's reverse shield forms around him at 275,000 rpm. Hundreds of bullets stop in midair to the left of Jaden. The first of two nanorockets from the left tower explodes at the outside of the energy shield creating an oval fireball around it.

Nanotime speeds up to 75x as the oval fire expands around Jaden's entire shield. The gravity shock wave fired towards the Hydro rockets continues to destroy the remaining three. The huge spinning fireball shock wave hits the helidrone before it gets a chance to move. The helidrone explodes from the force and explosion of its own rockets. It propels backwards out of control into the sky as a gigantic fireball. Jaden fires a gravity shock wave and an atoms ripper with both hands in front of him at the same time towards the left tower. The suspended bullets are quickly destroyed as a small bubble of the shield quickly moves with the shock wave. The bubble breaks up while expanding with the atoms ripping shock wave. It moves through the air like a huge spitball. The bullets and nanorockets vaporize before they can explode. The shock wave hits the tower with tremendous force, ripping the top of the tower off and causing it to spin. Trillions of molecules in the tower incinerate as nanotime goes off in Jaden's mind. The top part of the tower continues half a mile into the air and then straight into the ground.

The fireball that hit the helidrone continues a mile and suddenly changes directions straight towards the Earth. The last standing man in the exoskeleton suit tries to fire his mini gun at Jaden, but it doesn't work. The gravity shock wave nanodrones quickly return from different directions and into Jaden's body.

"You didn't learn anything from the end of *The Lawnmower Man* did you?" Jaden asks while walking over towards him. Jaden can see the fear in his eyes through his helmet. The man fires a stun gun from his left hand and the electricity goes around Jaden's shield.

"That's all you got?"

The man slowly walks away towards Jaden's left . Jaden picks up another huge 150 lbs mini gun lying on the white powdery ground.

"Please don't shoot," a robotic sounding voice comes from the soldier's helmet.

“Robocop voice guard, I just took out an army and you still going to try to shoot me? I see the fear in your eyes, bionic dick. Don’t walk away, you should have thought of *don’t shoot* when you were about to shoot at me again just now,” Jaden says while the soldier walks towards the building on Jaden’s left. He continues to aim the big gun towards the soldier.

‘Don’t shoot him, he is unarmed and we have to hurry to save Kimberly.’

‘No, it is beginning to feel good, killing people. It’s giving me some kind of high,’ Jaden says in a low voice to AI.

“They say that graphite nanite plastic and nanotubing fiber materials are impenetrable to any bullet on Earth. I’m going to be your *MythBusters* host today. Seventy-five bullets a second, over 4000 bullets a minute, Robosoldier,” Jaden says with a smile on his face.

‘Jaden no!’

The loud mini gun’s barrels quickly spins in circles, while bullets are shot at the soldier, who braces to cover his face. Hundreds of bullets riddle his exoskeleton suit in a few seconds. Shells from the gun bounce onto the ground. The noise from the ricocheting bullets echoes in stereo from all directions. The soldier falls face forward onto the ground.

“He is down for the count, Tyson knocked out his opponent in under three seconds. The crowd goes wild and people are demanding their money back,” Jaden says while dropping the gun and putting his arms in the air as if he is the champion. Jaden makes crowd cheering sounds. Smoke comes from the barrel of the gun and the bottom of the soldier’s body.

Jaden turns the soldier over and sees hundreds of bullets stuck inside the armor.

“The myth is confirmed, but the soldier’s life isn’t,” Jaden snaps.

The nanoscanners show that the bullets didn’t penetrate, but the bullets pushed the body armor inwards. Jaden quickly runs through the second building, which is a kitchen area for guards.

‘Jaden, there are some chemical imbalances in your frontal lobe. Something is still changing your judgment.’

‘Yeah, I think you are right. I don’t know what came over me,’ he says.

SHU 12:02 PM

“What is taking so long? I feel like I’m cooking a sausage in oil with all this back and forth friction,” Tommy asks while walking to the door with his hand in his pants.

“I can’t pick the lock,” Gyn-analyst says.

“Idiot, how long you been in jail? These locks open with fingerprints and the warden has the only key for the door. Stop thinking with your brain in your pants,” Tommy says.

“I’ve been in jail for twenty-two years. You are the idiot for just telling me now, you asshole. Come on, help me with this guard over here.”

They run to the unconscious guard lying on the floor. Another man helps them lift and carry the guard to the office door. They press his fingers inside the door handle. The door opens automatically and they toss the guard to the side. They quickly find the key on a hanger.

“Give it to me, give it to me,” Tommy demands.

“I’m first. I’m the Gyn-doctor,” he says while holding the key in the air as if it is a treasure key. The rest of the men have smiles on their faces and cheer.

“Yo, this dude is carrying every STD in the book. We all going to have what he has, he should go last,” Tommy says.

“How you know?” Another prisoner asks.

They push the Gyn-analyst down and take his key. Tommy pushes people out of the way as a mob of prisoners stand around the door close together.

“Stop rubbing your meat against me,” a prisoner says to another.

The Gyn-analyst tries to push his way through the crowd. They unlock Kimberly’s prison door with greasy hands as they yell amongst each other. They are pushing and shoving each other out of the way to get to the door first. The door doesn’t open because men are in the way. A line of smoke appears on the floor around the prisoners’ shoes.

“Move back you dickheads, I can’t open the door!” Tommy yells.

“I just want to wear her skirt and panties,” a small skinny prisoner says.

They open the door wide and Tommy runs inside first. The rest are pushing and shoving each other while trying to get in first. Suddenly there is a loud explosion. A second prison runs inside. A gravity shock wave force dismounts the holding area steel door down the hallway. The steel door flies down the hallway at a tremendous speed and down to the SHU cells. The fast moving door hits the third man from entering the cell and two other men in the hallway. Their bodies slam into a concrete wall and the door creates a new rectangular hole in the concrete. Sunlight shines through the hole over the horizontal steel door. Blood squirts in all directions. Jaden runs down the hallway as other prisoners lay on the floor with baffled looks on their faces. The Gyn-analyst is leaning flat against the wall across from Kimberly’s cell, looking at the steel door in the concrete at the end of the hallway. Smoke and debris is floating in the air as Jaden runs through it.

Jaden turns and walks into Kimberly's cell. The Gyn-analyst looks at Jaden as if he is a ghost. Kimberly throws a straight punch towards Jaden's face.

"Hiya!" She yells.

He sees her punch coming towards him and quickly moves out of the way. She does not recognize Jaden covered in white powdery debris.

"It's me, Jaden," he yells.

Hazy light from the hallway is shining on her as she is standing in a karate stance with her panties on looking at Jaden with confusion. The two prisoners that ran into her cell are unconscious on the floor. Tommy's head is in the toilet and there is a crack down the middle of the toilet bowl. The other three men run down the hallway through the new hole that leads outside.

"You okay? They took your skirt off that fast?" Jaden asks.

The Gyn-analyst speaks behind Jaden, "Buddy, if you wanted a turn all you had to do was ask."

Kimberly responds to Jaden while putting her skirt back on, "I'm fine, I can handle myself. I took my skirt off so I could fight these perverts better."

"I forgot you took self defense classes and a few karate classes," Jaden says.

Kimberly sits back down in the corner of the cell with a sad look on her face.

"What are you doing? We have to get out of here," Jaden says.

"Hey dude, can you hurry up? This oil is heating up and I can't keep this hand in motion," Gyn-analyst says.

"STD-analyst man, step away from the door, before I take you off this planet. You have enough little crabs and lobsters between your legs that you can open your own Red Lobster. Smothering them in corn oil is animal cruelty," Jaden says while Kimberly chuckles.

The man stands there with an embarrassed look on his face.

"That was funny," she says.

"Kimberly, why did you sit back down? There is an army approaching the prison, we have to get out of here. I'm here to rescue you sweetie."

The Gyn-analyst responds while closing their prison door and locking it, "Screw you, you limp dick cocksucker."

It turns very dark in the cell as the closing door echoes in the small room.

"Why did you come for me? What do you want from me? How can I believe you are who you say you are?" She asks while beginning to cry.

"I care about you. I felt it was my fault you were put in prison in the first place. I thought breaking into a maximum security prison was enough proof to show I'm real," Jaden says.

“I’m still confused. I had this dream about my childhood this morning. So many things were corrupted in my memory, I need...” she says while stopping to sniffle and becomes more emotional.

‘We have to hurry. The guards are leaving this building and the other prisoners that were down here are releasing the prisoners throughout the building from their cells. There is about to be a riot in here. The military and guards aren’t coming this direction,’ AI says.

‘Okay, okay, AI.’

“...I need to know something,” she says.

“What is it? Talk to me,” Jaden says while sitting over Tommy’s head in the toilet.

He breathes bubbles into the toilet, still unconscious.

“I need to know the truth from you.... I’ve been putting things together in my head for the past couple of hours. When I was seven years old, I saw something traumatic that my subconscious made me forget until today. I was on a school trip in New York City on the tramway heading to Roosevelt Island. I saw this flying spaceship outside of the windows on the tramway. I’ve denied and suppressed this for years. I remember kids screaming and my hair floating in the air. I was the only person not scared of it. I felt something from the spaceship as if, as if my soul connected with it. I felt as if my life and future had a lot to do with that spaceship. If that was really you in that spacecraft, I want you to tell me what did the spacecraft do before it left?” Kimberly asks while holding back tears.

Jaden thinks and thinks.

‘AI, help me out here, you were there too.’

“That was about a month ago, for me. I briefly remember hearing the conversation in the tramway. Your teacher...called you Kim,” he yells.

“Yes, in elementary school until high school I was called Kim.”

“That was the day I found the UFO... February... 15th 1996 right?” Jaden asks while standing up.

“Yes, it was. It was cloudy and rainy. But what did the UFO do in front of me?” She asks.

‘Shit, I can’t remember,’ Jaden says to AI.

“Hmm.. You stood there and you weren’t scared, I remember saying that.”

“If that was you in there, you should know what you did,” Kimberly says.

‘There is a heavily armed Raptor jet fighter flying this way. I think they are about to bomb this prison. All the guards are way outside the complex. There are also thirty prisoners running towards this direction from the upstairs cells. Sorry, I don’t remember what you did back in 1996,’ AI says.

“The UFO ship did something that stood out before it left that I knew something or someone human was inside,” she says.

A mob of men are at the prison door yelling inside their cell. Some look at the other prisoners’ body parts splattered against the wall to the right of Kimberly’s cell and run away screaming.

“We want some Chinese food! We want Chinese food!” They chant.

“Who has the key?” A big man asks.

“I got it right here. That bastard is hogging the Asian cuisine to himself,” The Gyn-analyst says while he pushes his way through the boisterous crowd.

Jaden creates a shield around them to block out the loud chanting. It becomes romantically quiet around them. The chanting completely disappears. Jaden looks deep into Kimberly’s crying brown eyes.

“I remember now. I got it. I was looking at you thinking how cute you looked with your brown innocent eyes. You were looking at me as if you wanted to come with me and you didn’t have one nervous bone in your body. I made the outside shields look like a huge eye and I *winked* at you. The rain gave the shield a translucent look,” Jaden says.

“Yes! Yes! That is correct!” She yells while jumping up and hugging Jaden.

‘Jaden...’ AI says.

“I’m sorry I didn’t believe you before. I’ll never doubt you again,” she says while putting her arms around his shoulders. He puts his arms around her waist.

She tries to kiss him in the dark.

“That is my nose...that is my eye,” Jaden says. She uses her hand for guidance and kisses him on his mouth.

“Hey! That’s cheating,” he says.

It is completely quiet as Kimberly’s lips touch Jaden’s. As her lips press against his, chemical signals travel all around his body. They connect for the first time emotionally and physically. They continue to slowly open mouth kiss.

‘Her bacteria and cooties are entering your mouth...’

‘So..her cooties and bacteria taste good.’

Time feels as if it is in nanotime for Jaden. He doesn’t hear what AI is telling him. He feels her tongue rubbing against his. Her head turns side to side and their noses touch.

She pulls away and looks at him in the dark and says, “I think fate brought us together again.”

“I think so, this is completely *déjà vu*. I felt similar feelings for you eighteen years ago as if you were someone I knew in another life or something,” Jaden whispers to her.

‘Jaden! There is a Raptor jet fighter two miles away that just switched to visual stealth mode and just fired a 5000-pound AGM-114Z Hellfire 3 vacuum missile. It is coming at this building at 1200 mph,’ AI says excitedly.

“We have to go Kimberly, right now!” Jaden says while the door unlocks.

“Why? What is going on,” she asks.

“Trust me, there is a powerful missile coming to blow this prison up,” Jaden says.

“Why would the government blow up one of their own prisons?” Kimberly asks.

‘What is a Hellfire 3 missile?’ Jaden asks while charging a shock wave.

“Stand back sweetie,” Jaden says while stepping forward. The loud chanting and yelling returns.

‘One of the most deadliest thermobaric missiles. It will drop deep inside of a building before exploding. When it explodes it...’

Jaden fires a gravity shock wave at the door as it slowly opens. She feels the slightly increasing gravity by her feet. The door flies straight across the hall impaling eight men and ripping five bodies apart. The door goes into the cell across the hall and slams downwards into a concrete wall. There is blood and gore everywhere. Men begin to scream as they run towards the exit.

“Wow, I’m impressed,” she says while seeing a new doorway.

“Well you did wanted to see some alien magic with your own eyes,” he says while grabbing her hand and walking forward.

‘...explodes it sucks all the oxygen out of a building, ripping lungs out, shredding internal organs, crushing the human body before engulfing the building in a huge fireball. There is also a powerful energy shock wave that can destroy nervous systems and brain activity in the body. Jaden! The missile is going to hit in twenty-one seconds.’

“Let me carry you, and close your eyes. This is going to get ugly,” Jaden says while lifting her over his arms. She puts her left arm around his shoulder and holds his left hand with her right.

Debris is everywhere as Jaden and Kimberly leave the cell. Some men are yelling in the hallway with missing limbs.

“Good luck!” The terrorist man next to Kimberly’s cell yells through his cell door.

“Can we let him out?” Kimberly asks.

“No time!” Jaden yells while jogging away.

“I’m okay, I’m going to meet my family in heaven soon,” Kimberly’s terrorist friend says.

Jaden quickly turns the corner with Kimberly on his back, while stepping over bricks, debris and body parts.

'Piggy-back ride will work better, you'll be able to run faster. You are going to need full body shields over 300,000 rpm. Remember the hamster wheel,' AI says.

"Are we going to make it out in time?" She asks in a nervous voice.

"Kim, piggy-back ride," Jaden says while she stands up and quickly climbs on his back. Her skirt is pulled up as half of her light pink panties are shown from behind.

"Whatever you do, don't let go and don't open your eyes. You can also pray to Buddha for both of us, " Jaden says while he jogs forward stepping over body parts.

'Run straight towards the small kitchen. There is a wall behind it, and past that, it drops off seventy feet to a river.'

A full body forward shield forms ten feet around Jaden, destroying the doors and walls to the SHU's. Suddenly there is a bright flash of light all around and a powerful blast is felt. The ground shakes like a magnitude 8.0 earthquake.

"Take a few deep breaths and then hold your breath. I have to remove all the oxygen in this shield," Jaden says.

"Okay," she says while taking a few deep breaths and then holding.

Jaden's brain goes into nanotime 90x as he jumps two feet into the air. Kimberly holds on tightly around Jaden's neck while her legs are around his waist. He feels her heart beating fast against his back. He lands on the inside of his shield as his feet are running in slow motion above the ground. The inner shield slows down to an easy running speed for Jaden. He is controlling the direction the shield is moving in. Air shock waves from the blasts reflect on all the walls. The prisoners are running about twenty feet in front of them. The sudden drop in pressure makes them scream as the oxygen is sucked out of their bodies as if they are in space. The air shock waves quickly destroy their nervous systems. They collapse to the floor as a strong explosion comes from all directions, igniting their bodies. The walls, floors and ceilings are collapsing all around Jaden and Kim. The shield is shaped like an octagon around Jaden. The force of the missile causes the shield to move inwards by six feet. The shield is counteracting the strong forces of the thermobaric missile and uses that energy to propel them forward. Anti-gravity nanodrones are circling inside the shield at full strength. Shock waves from the blast absorb into the outside layer of the shield. Fire is everywhere as the ceilings continue to implode around them. Kimberly's hair is floating as she feels no weight on her body.

Concrete, debris, shards of metal, fire balls, high pressures, and shock waves of kinetic energy bombard the outside of Jaden's energy shield. His rpm is at 450,000 while AI helps him with the shield direction

and calculations. Jaden is fully concentrating on his running speed and the shield surrounding himself and Kim. The shield goes inwards another two feet as it counteracts the powerful shock waves pulling everything towards the initial blast zone. The pro-gravity nanodrones in Jaden's feet are keeping him from floating away. He is running on the inside of the shield as if he is on a treadmill. He passes the area that used to be the kitchen. The shield is rolling in the direction Jaden is trying to go. Kimberly opens her eyes and sees orange fire all around her within a few feet. She begins to scream in slow motion as she sees death is all around her. Her deep voice sounds like a movie playing in slow motion. She climbs a little higher as Jaden increases his running speed to 21 mph. Nanotime goes off and her voice speeds up into a high pitch scream. Jaden and Kimberly explode outside a concrete wall of the basement area in the prison. They go airborne. Kimberly is gasping to breathe. The zero gravity inside the shield allows them to continue floating forward. Trees are below them, as they glide over a river below. The fire around the shield disappears into the wind behind them and he stops running.

The shield disappears from around them and Earth's gravity pulls down on their bodies. The strong wind passes around their bodies and face, as Kimberly takes deep breaths of fresh air for the first time in a day. They glide down between some trees as the anti-gravity nanodrones circle around them creating an upwards counteracting gravity force. They land in a wooded area and Jaden braces his knees for the impact. Pieces of burning debris fall from the prison from all directions around them.

Chapter 20: Superlover

“Are we safe yet? I can hear birds and crickets. Can I open my eyes?” She asks while continuing to hold on tightly to Jaden.

“Yes, we are safe now. Are you okay?” He asks while she stands on her feet with a confused look on her face. She straightens and pulls down her skirt.

“I’m fine, just a little shook. The inside of your shield felt like a plastic bag over my head, I couldn’t breathe at all,” she says while gasping and taking deep breaths.

“Sorry about that.”

They look at the prison on top of a mountain across a small river. The building is completely destroyed. There are three UAV drone aircraft flying over the scene.

“I can’t believe they destroyed the entire prison and all those prisoners inside. It doesn’t make any sense,” she says while holding her chest and still trying to catch her breath.

‘That drone plane at 532 feet away is watching us,’ AI says.

‘Okay.’

“We have to keep moving, Kimberly,” Jaden says while walking forward and extending out his right hand to her.

“I’ve never experienced anything like that. That was unbelievable, I mean, if this was a movie, that would have been one of the best rescues I’ve seen,” she says while walking and grabbing his hand.

They walk down a slight hill with bushes, grass and leaves on the ground.

“What are we going to do now?” She asks.

“I was thinking we should leave the planet. I want you to come with me,” he says.

“Leave the planet? What about trying to stop this attack and warning as many people as we can?” Kimberly asks.

“I’ve tried and I’ve tried. Nobody wants to listen, no one cares, the government thinks I’m a terrorist and I’m a threat. I’ve been put in a jail, a hospital, I’ve been shot at thousands of times and constantly chased the past few days. I don’t need this, I’m the hero that was sent here to help save this planet. But I’m the villain, wasting time defending myself. I can spend the rest of my life traveling the galaxy or going back to Xenos. What is the point of trying to save our primitive, religious, homicidal, genocidal and self destructive race?” Jaden asks while she stops to look him in the eyes.

He turns to her and she says, “Jaden, there is a strong possibility there could be one or two people in the government making it difficult for you. Our race is all we have. If people knew what was about to happen, maybe more could be done...”

“It is too late, sweetie. That mother ship is here and the countdown is running out. I did an interview with a news reporter an hour ago and the government took the holographic disc. I’m the enemy of America, I think the rest of these humans should suffer the consequences. Humans were expecting the end of the world in 2012. Maybe Nostradamus was off by two years and this is the end of human civilization,” Jaden says.

“Come on Jaden, that’s not true.”

“The government can’t comprehend that these Darclonians are the real enemies. Religions around the world all talk about rapture and Armageddon coming, well I think we shouldn’t disappoint them. Maybe now is the time for change on Earth. Come with me Kimberly, we can live on our own planet somewhere on the other side of this galaxy, just like Adam and Eve. We can start our own family and create our own first Bible and laws....”

‘There are search dogs with guards and military personnel getting off a small boat near the river. There are more men coming from each direction around us,’ AI says.

‘I see them, shit, they don’t give up,’ Jaden says.

‘You don’t have a scent, but Kimberly does. We can’t outrun them.’

‘I have an idea,’ Jaden says.

“Let’s walk and talk Kimberly. What do you think about what I just said?”

“That sounds good, I’ve always wanted to travel to new planets and worlds. But, I can’t leave my father here. He is older and I can’t leave him knowing what is about to happen to the human race. My father and I are our only family here in USA. The rest of my family is in Taiwan. What about your family? What about your daughter, father and mother?” Kimberly asks.

There are UAV aircraft and helicopters flying by above. Jaden and Kimberly quickly walk down another small hill and over green leaves on the ground. Jaden leans against a huge tree and grabs Kimberly close to him. He puts his arms around her waist and looks deep into her eyes.

“My father, I don’t even know if he is alive or dead. The letter he left me said he was being treated for cancer. AI used the nanoscanners to try to find him in Halifax when I was in jail with no luck. My mother is in London with her family. She should be okay, but I’ll check on her before I leave Earth regardless. My daughter is a little bitch that deserves to have an alien take over her body, maybe she would have some better manners then.”

“Don’t say that, sweetie. Even though you barely know your daughter, you still love her. She is half of you and I’m sure there is a side of her that you can appreciate and learn to love. She is your flesh and blood. The Jaden I know isn’t a quitter or someone who gives up. You

are a fighter till the end, just like me. From the man who implanted his entire life in my memory has a good heart, love for his country and is a fighter...”

Kimberly pauses as she sees men and dogs behind the tree and Jaden.

“...there are guard dogs and military men with guns about thirty feet behind you coming this direction. My vision is blurry. Shouldn’t we run or do something?” She asks while looking in other directions.

“They don’t see us. I’m reflecting the light around us, making us look invisible.”

“What about our body heat? They have heat sensing glasses.”

“That is taken care of sweetie, nothing to worry about. The nanodrones are making the heat around our bodies the same temperature as the air. Your body scent molecules are being destroyed as they leave your body. Two nanoscanners copied your scent and are going to have fun with the dogs,” he says while dogs and prison guards walk by kicking leaves. The dogs are barking as they smell the ground.

“You are so smart and creative to figure this out,” Kimberly says while smiling, chuckling and watch the men walk by clueless.

“Well, AI helped out. So, continue what you were just talking about. Wait a second, turn around and watch the two groups of men with search dogs over there,” Jaden says while pointing.

The dogs begin to quickly run and pull their owners. The dogs are barking loudly. A nanoscanner close to the ground is reproducing Kimberly’s scent while three bloodhounds are pulling one guard. Two German Shepherds are pulling another guard from another direction. The German Shepherds are being manipulated by the other nanoscanner. Two soldiers are walking behind each of them. The nanoscanners pass by each other and all the dogs run into each other causing the guards to fall over each other.

“Oh shit,” she says while laughing, “that was hilarious.”

“Shh, they can still hear us,” Jaden says while covering her mouth with his hand.

“Okay, okay,” she says with a muffled voice.

“Can you continue what you were saying earlier Dr. Chan?” He asks while putting his arms around her waist.

She puts her arms around his neck.

“I was saying, you have a good heart and you are a fighter till the end. So what, the government is trying to kill you, there are always going to be a few bad apples. But there are a lot of good apples on this planet that deserve a chance at living their lives. There will be so many innocent children becoming victims in this attack. They need you...”

She looks up into his blue eyes and sees deep into his soul.

“...and I need you. I have just witnessed the impossible with that escape and rescue you just did. I have never witnessed something like

that before, not even in a movie. I believe we can still help do something to prevent this attack on Earth. I want you to stay and fight to save our human race,” she says in a sensual whisper.

She brings his head closer to her mouth. Her lips sets off a chain reaction through his body. They hear a commotion to the side of them. The guards unwrap themselves from the dogs’ chains. The dogs quickly run into another direction as the nanoscanners guide them.

“Yeah, you are right Kimberly, you have some good points. I didn’t really think about it that way. I have been doing the impossible lately and I shouldn’t give up yet.”

Kimberly looks deep into Jaden’s eyes and he does the same. He spreads his legs outwards, so that he is at her eye level.

“You are a good man that I felt I’ve known all my life now. I have feelings for you and I know you will do the right thing. I love you Jaden Marino and I don’t want you to leave me,” Kimberly says while she kisses him gently on the mouth, he responds, but quickly pulls back.

“I love you too, my little Chinese food.”

“Hey! Hey! Don’t bring my mind back to that dirty, nightmarish prison,” she says while Jaden quickly kisses her to be quiet.

Her arms wrap around his neck as they lock in a deep French kiss. She pulls him closer and his hands go to around the top of her ass. Her soft lips press against his as their heads go side to side. Their wet tongues greet each other and slowly wrestle. Their hearts begin to beat faster as their chemistry connects. He is staring deep into her brown eyes and she does the same. She unbuttons his navy blue dress shirt half way.

“I love your eyes and their shape, it is as if I can see deep into your soul. When I first saw your eyes when you were seven years old, I knew there was something special about you,” Jaden says.

“You pedophile,” she whispers

She rubs his back up and down slightly scratching it with her nails. She grabs his broad shoulders and rubs his muscles as she continues kissing him, making slight moaning sounds. Kimberly pushes Jaden to the right and off the tree. She turns and leans her back on the tree as she grabs Jaden’s neck to pull him closer to her.

“Freaky and aggressive, are we?” Jaden asks.

“You should know,” she snaps.

“That is so sexy...”

She pulls apart his button up navy shirt and the buttons fly in different directions. The buttons land on the leaves and ground around them. She pulls his shirt down to his arms and leaves it there.

The three bloodhound dogs are running towards a tree and the nanoscanner goes through it. The dogs run into the tree and tangle themselves around the tree.

“What is wrong with you boys today?” The guard asks the dogs. The dogs bark in confused tones.

Labrador search dogs from the military join the search and the dogs pull their master, while another nanoscanner joins the fun.

Kimberly is kissing and licking Jaden’s muscular chest area. His shirt holds his arms in place. She stands back up to slowly kiss his neck. Jaden’s head is looking up the high tree, as he slightly moans from the sensual pleasure he is experiencing. She pulls down the rest of his shirt and it hits the ground.

‘This considered second or third base?’ AI asks, while Jaden pays him no attention.

Jaden’s hands go up her skirt and he rubs her smooth legs.

Jaden whispers, “Damn, your legs and skin are smooth.”

She whispers in a flirting voice in his right ear, “That is the Asian secret. Only the chosen few are able to experience an Asian woman’s naturally smooth skin.”

“I guess I am lucky to have been chosen by you to experience the Asian secrets,” he snaps.

“I’m risking being arrested when I return to Taiwan for espionage for giving away the Chinese secrets. That would make me a really, really bad girl,” she says in a sexy voice.

Jaden lifts her up as she puts her arms around his neck. She wraps her legs around his hips as she leans against the tree. His pelvic area rubs against hers. Jaden put his right hand between her legs and on the outside of her panties.

“Whoa, your panties are soaking wet,” he says while putting his fingers under her panties from the sides.

“You rescuing me and watching the police dogs run back and forth has really turned me on. I’ve never been turned on this much. The fact that they can’t see us is making my heart pound. I feel as if we are in the wilderness and the world is watching us,” Kimberly says while reaching down below Jaden’s stomach and opening his pants.

“Wow. That feels perfectly wet, meaty and lubricated...” Jaden says while Kimberly places her finger over his mouth.

“Shhh...she is ready for an easy entry. Is your space shuttle ready to enter Earth’s small tight window?” She asks while his pants fall down to his ankles.

“My new Orion space shuttle is ready. Do you like what you are feeling?” Jaden asks while she rubs her hand on it.

“What the hell?” She asks while looking down.

“What?” Jaden asks.

“What the hell is that? That third arm is about twelve inches long, three inches wide and as thick as my upper arm. Where do you think you are putting that?” Kimberly asks with a surprising look on her face.

“You don’t like? Don’t women like the King Kong size? I thought big was in?” Jaden asks in a confused voice.

“*Big* went out in the late nineties, women by the 00’s wanted the average size and women by the teens realized the average size with a slight curve worked best,” Kimberly says with a disappointed voice. “Jaden, I’m 5’6” 114 lbs, how did you think that would fit in my little body?”

AI quickly interrupts, ‘Technically it should fit inside. This area and muscle are very stretchable. The average baby’s head is one inch thicker than your reproducing tool down there, so...’

‘AI, keep that info to yourself, she isn’t having a baby now,’ he says.

“Good question, I didn’t really think about that baby.”

“Very big, went out the last century. How you use it has been in for the past fourteen years.”

“I’ll make a note of that. But I have a solution,” Jaden says.

“What is that? Putting your head down there instead?” She asks excitedly.

“I can do that, but I have a better idea. What size would you like it to be? An average Asian man’s size, average white man’s size or average....”

“How about an average eight inch size and average thickness? I think I can handle that,” she says.

AI gets right to work. ‘Reducing spongy tissue, corpora cavernosa and corpus spongiosum tissue in penis organ,’ AI says while it quickly shrinks in size.

“Is this better sweetie?” Jaden asks as she inspects it.

“Shit, wow, that is amazing. You can control your penis size?” She asks loudly.

“Shhh.”

Jaden just kisses her lips and then her neck. She is still leaning against the tree while her legs are around Jaden’s lower hips. Kimberly closes her eyes and moans in pleasure as Jaden unstraps her bra with his left hand. He gently massages her breasts and kisses her nipples. Her pinkish brown nipples are pointing out. He pulls down her panties with his right hand while he continues to stare deep into her eyes kissing her. They stretch as she pulls her left leg towards her face and the panties come from around that leg. Jaden wraps the pink panties around her right leg as her left leg goes back around his lower waist.

He begins to kiss her left ear and sticks his tongue inside of it.

She whispers, “Wow, baby, you know my turn on spots.”

He palms her ass cheeks with two hands.

“You know I like my ass grabbed,” she moans in his ear.

His private part rubs up and down against her very moist, slightly hairy bush.

“How are you doing that without any hands?” She asks in a whispering moan.

“I can control it like a joystick in any direction. I have some extra small muscles down...”

“Shut up and put it in me,” she whispers in a sexy voice looking at him while pulling his head closer to her face.

The area has search dogs and men running back and forth. Military men are looking around the area with advanced thermal goggles. UAV drone aircraft, hobby size UAV aircraft and helicopters slowly pass by overhead. Jaden and Kimberly remain invisible up against the medium-sized tree that is shaking on top.

“We got them boys, I know they are close by,” a guard yells.

A nanoscanner guides the bloodhounds into the slowly moving river by the prison. The guard lets the leashes go as they jump into the water and they doggy paddle across the river. There is a loud pleased female scream coming from the woods. The guard by the river turns around and looks towards the top of the trees. Birds start flying into the air from the top of the trees. The military men and the two other search dog groups stop and look into the direction the scream came from. Jaden is covering Kimberly’s mouth as he pauses inside of her. She closes her eyes and holds her breath. She is squinting and gripping his back very tightly with her hands and legs. Jaden feels sensual chills moving up and down his spine. He connects with her emotionally and physically. Kimberly feels Jaden’s Chi energy passing through her body and combining with hers. She breathes from her nose and Jaden slowly removes his right hand.

“You okay?” He asks.

“Yes, just felt you going through my entire body just now and it’s been awhile. Just give me a second.”

‘Aren’t you going to use the condom in your pocket Jaden?’ AI asks.

‘That outdated condom? Do you feel how good this feels?’

‘No.’

“Keep going, baby,” she whispers, “But cover my mouth, I might get loud.”

He continues to penetrate in and out of her. Muffled moaning and whimpering continues under Jaden’s hand as his hand vibrates. The top of the tree branches shake and a few leaves slowly fall around Jaden and Kimberly. The leaves land on Kimberly’s hair and on Jaden’s back. He continues to kiss her neck and thrust himself inside of her. She continues

to scratch his back with her nails. The men look in Jaden's direction, but they don't see anything. They continue canvassing the area.

'I know this is what men call going to home base or scoring, right? It is also interesting seeing how the chemicals in your brain react with this feeling of love you are experiencing. I understand better now with what the couple on the highway was actually experiencing and what you experienced in your past sexual relationships. Your entire body's nerve senses are lighting up and sending signals all around your body,' AI says.

'You are messing up my concentration here...why don't you make yourself useful by counting the strokes,' Jaden says to AI, while he breathes heavily.

It goes completely quiet around Jaden and Kimberly. A clear energy shield forms around them and around the bottom of the tree isolating any sounds. The shield hugs and changes shape around the tree so that it isn't damaged. He uncovers her mouth as she moves her hips in sync with Jaden's thrusts. Her body moves up and down as she quickly moves her hips around in circles.

'You are eighty-five percent near orgasm and at 71,72,75 strokes...' AI says.

'The sperm is on vacation and won't come out right?' He asks.

'I've reprogrammed most of the sperm.'

"Hold on a second Jaden, I'm not on any birth control," Kimberly says while catching her breath.

"I noticed one thing didn't change in the future. Two people are still talking about birth control after sex has already started," Jaden says while chuckling. "I have a condom, but it expired fifteen years ago."

'Technically the condom wouldn't have been expired, it would have only aged a little over a month as you did,' AI says.

'Thanks for the technical analysis.'

"I have built in birth control, AI reprogrammed my army," he says.

"Damn you are amazing baby, that's cool. Baby, I have a question, when you first went inside of me, did your Orion space shuttle curve inside of me?" She asks.

"You noticed huh? Yes, my shuttle went straight for your G landing spot. You liked that, right?" Jaden asks while smiling.

"Yes, I did. That was amazing, it was like a shock all around my body. I almost came instantly that's why I screamed. It was like there was some electricity coming from your shuttle and curving upwards into my G-spot," Kim says.

"I bet the small device in your lower back can't do this..." Jaden says while thrusting himself deep inside of her and hitting her spot again. An electric spark leaves his body.

“Shit! Shit! Shit! Ahh!” She yells while her legs and lower body shake uncontrollably. She trembles against Jaden’s sweaty chest and moans with pleasure. She breathes as if she has asthma, “Oh my God! I can’t stop shaking. What did you do to me?”

Jaden has a smile on his face and looks at her breathing heavily with her eyes closed.

“I never had an orgasm like that, I don’t think anyone woman has. That was unbelievable. I felt like I left my body for a few seconds there. That was like a super orgasm. You are milking me like a cow.”

“On demand instant orgasms,” Jaden says while chuckling.

“I’m keeping you baby. You are one of a kind. I need a little build up time, before I have a heart attack or can’t walk the rest of the day,” she says.

Jaden begins thrusting himself into Kim again. He stops suddenly, “Wait a second Doctor Chan, are you having sexual relations with your patient? You aren’t supposed to be touching a patient, Doctor Chan that is unprofessional,” Jaden says in a deeper voice sounding like Dr. Abraham.

“I’m sorry, sir, I was giving the patient a varicocele exam,” she says while reaching down and grabbing Jaden’s balls, “Now cough, Mr. Marino.”

Jaden coughs and she says, “Okay the patient is fine Dr. Abraham.”

Jaden changes his voice back to his voice. “Oh and Doctor Abraham I was just taking the doctor’s temperature with my smaller Dragon spacecraft. Her internal temperature is 98.69°F sir, she is normal,” Jaden says while laughing and she chuckles in a fake tone.

She grabs his ass and pulls it closer to her. “Now stop procrastinating, my back is beginning to hurt against this tree. Give it to me baby, I want to feel your duck sauce in my egg roll,” she says. Jaden thinks to himself that she was probably in the prison too long, talking like that.

He thrusts himself deeper inside of her while he sucks her pointy nipples.

“Shit, shit, shit...I feel it in my stomach,” she says while scratching deeply into his back.

“Oh shit, oh shit,” he says while the tree branches shake from high above and green leaves fall around them again.

“Oh shit! Whoa!” Jaden yells while his body shakes.

He squeezes her ass tightly as he is about to climax. She moans louder as he curves himself inside of her. The German Shepherd search dogs stop running 175 feet away and begin to howl into the sky. The Labs do the same thing. Kim screams at the top of her lungs. Jaden moans as if he is in pain. They both climax and Jaden uploads ounces of

sticky milk. They both breathe heavily as Kim's entire body shakes the top of the tree.

'Good work AI, manipulating my prostate and modifying my pituitary gland really gave me an out of this world orgasm,' Jaden says.

"You are the best baby, you are like a Superlover or Cockgod. Words cannot explain the feelings I'm feeling now. That was amazing, I missed the real thing," she says while trying to catch her breath.

"Baby, that was the best I've ever had also. I was so turned on," Jaden says while he lifts her down.

Kimberly stands up and puts her panties back on. Liquid is running down her legs.

"Sweetie, are you sure you are on alien birth control? That was a lot of fluid coming out of you, it completely filled up my insides. I felt like you were giving me a vaginal douche, it's oozing down my legs now," she says while wiping her legs with her panties.

"I'm sorry baby, I temporarily unregulated my pituitary gland for a better climax. Let me clean some of that up for you," Jaden says while bending down and using his navy shirt to wipe the fluids running down her legs.

They finish cleaning up the slight mess and they put their clothes back on. Jaden wraps the dirty shirt around his waist.

The shield disappears around them, and Kimberly takes a limping step forward. She moans in pain and can't take another step.

"Shit, I can't walk, my lower body is aching. My legs are still trembling," Kim says.

"Piggy-back ride? I'll carry you," he says while she hops on his back and he holds her legs up.

They continue walking invisibly through the woods and across leaves.

"Where are the dogs and military men?" She asks.

"They are over a half of a mile that way. The Labs and German Shepherds surrounded a house, so the military is searching it now."

"Very clever. Your AI friend wasn't watching what we were just doing right?"

"No, he was concentrating on providing the cover for us. He wasn't interested in what we were doing," he says.

"Cool. How does he communicate with you? What does he say to you? It wasn't too clear from your memories."

"He sits in an area of my brain reserved for multiple personalities. He sees everything I see, hear and feel. He can see most things in my memory from my past. We communicate internally with each other. AI or myself can control the nanodrones and nanoscanners in my body. He

can't control my body, but he does help me out with a lot of things. Are you familiar with this area?" Jaden asks.

"Yes I am. That's very interesting. Hello AI, hope I wasn't screaming too loud for you," she says in his ear while kissing Jaden's neck. Jaden laughs.

"Keep walking that direction, there are some houses over that way. You find it funny when I kiss your neck?" She asks.

"No, I'm laughing at AI. He is messing with the dogs at this family's house. The military men are making a man get a cavity search because the dogs smelled his crotch. They thought he was hiding something of yours up there," Jaden says while chuckling.

'That is enough AI. You going to make his wife think the man was cheating on her with Kim,' Jaden says.

'Yeah you are right. I'll fix that,' AI says.

'But that was funny,' Jaden says.

"That is funny, I wish I could see," she says.

Jaden reaches over his shoulders and covers her eyes with the outside of his right hand. Nanodrones enter creating an artificial pathway behind her eyes. She sees through the nanoscanner.

"Wow, this is very clear vision. The details are amazing. I like all the wording on the screen," she says.

"Just keep your eyes closed or you might get double vision," he says.

"Cool. Ha ha, the police dogs are sniffing the wife's crotch area now. Cool... the nanoscanner passed through her body and the inside of her body looks animated like a cartoon," Kimberly says.

"The inside of an organic body looks cartoonish or animated. Regular materials and matter look as is," Jaden explains.

"Cool. Go up inside of the guards and state police crotches. I want to see what they are working with. I heard officers and men of authority have small private parts," she says while her arms are around Jaden's neck.

'She is almost as bad as you,' AI says.

'Yeah, you are right. At least she has a reason. I don't want to see though,' Jaden says while continuing to walk down a small trail.

"Yeah, I see you little pee wee, sleeping in your master's pants. Oh look at this one, the little Shenzou space shuttle is awake at a full five inches. The male officer is watching the wife get a cavity search from a female officer. What a pervert. Look at the female officer, her little private friend has a full beard. I can tell she isn't getting any...hey it is dark again, where did the images go?"

"Okay, that is enough for you, Miss Pervert. I thought I was bad," Jaden says.

"I got a little carried away. I did my thesis on penis size in relation to a man's work and vehicle. A big gun usually helps to make up for the size of his..."

"Hey! I don't care to know about this subject. You are a little freak aren't you? Looking at penis sizes. I don't remember this in your memories. I thought you were a quiet woman," he says.

"I'm sorry sweetie," she says.

"Don't be sorry, I like it. Now I don't feel as bad," Jaden says.

"You don't feel as bad for what?" She asks.

"Nothing," he replies.

"Tell me, before I tickle you in all your ticklish spots," she says while tickling him under his arms and down to his waist.

"Okay, okay, you win," he says while laughing, "Well I guess I can tell you now... I don't feel so bad for looking at your naked body dozens of times at the hospital when you walked around."

"I knew you looked at me naked. I was thinking about that when I was on the airplane flying back to Virginia on Friday. I knew it!" She yells.

"Are you upset?" He asks.

"No, not at all. If I were in your situation, I probably would have done the same thing. If I had x-ray vision and you were my doctor in the hospital, I probably would have looked you up and down also."

"I'm glad you understand like that. That is one of the things that I love about you. So me analyzing every part of your body at the hospital, doesn't bother you at all?" Jaden asks.

"Why don't you tell her about you counting her pubic hairs?" AI asks.

"AI buddy, that was you suggesting me to do that," Jaden says.

"I was practicing my human sarcasm, I didn't really want you tell her that."

"Nope. I see it as you wanting to analyze my body because you wanted to draw a picture of it in your mind. I think bodies are like art and we shouldn't be afraid to be in our natural human form," she says while playing with his hair.

"I had a naked body experience in an Andromedian city."

Kimberly rests her head on Jaden's neck and a few minutes go by. Her skirt softly lifts in the air as Jaden walks. They approach an area with houses.

"Now we just have to find a vehicle with some keys inside," Kimberly says.

"I already did, the black Cherokee at the third house in the driveway."

She climbs down from his back and they walk over to it and climb inside.

“I guess only in the south do people leave their keys in their vehicles,” Jaden says.

“Yep, I also do sometimes,” she says while Jaden starts up the SUV.

They back up and quickly drive off.

“They have roadblocks on the main roads,” Jaden says.

“Let me drive, I know some back roads. We need to go to my father’s house first and then my house. I have some clothes at his house and he has a car we could borrow,” Kim says while he stops the SUV and Jaden opens the door. He walks around as Kim climbs over the center console and into the driver’s seat. Jaden sits in the passenger seat and slams the door. Kim quickly accelerates and drives off-road.

‘Did you notice she said she missed the real thing? What do you think she meant by that?’ AI asks.

‘I don’t know, but I’ll ask her later.’

Chapter 21: Full throttle Car Chase @ 1204HP



MANQUIN, VA MONDAY SEPTEMBER 7, 2014 1:33 PM

Kimberly and Jaden sit on the side of a dirt road about seventy-five feet from her father's house.

"That is a nice mansion your father has," Jaden says.

"Thanks. What do you see?"

"There are two federal agents outside of your father's property using thermal vision machines. There is also a small UAV airplane flying in circles around his house. There is an army sniper about a hundred yards behind the house," he says.

"I wonder where my father is." She asks.

"I didn't sense anyone in the house. What are those spinning things on the roof of your father's house?" He asks.

"Those are jellyfish wind turbines. They spin around when the wind blows and create electricity for the entire house," she says.

"Cool, can't beat free electricity from Mother Nature," Jaden says.

'The nanodrones are doing the same thing for your body now,' AI adds.

"I think we should sneak in through the side of the house," she says.

'The entrances have trap sensors in the doors and garage,' AI says.

"I think we should go in through a second floor window, there are traps in the doors and garage," Jaden says.

"How are we going to get up there?"

"I'll carry you up there. Are there any windows open?" He asks.

“Yes, the small bathroom window on the second floor is slightly open,” she says.

‘I have an idea, I can try to stimulate or trick the nanomoles in the federal agents and sniper’s brain to go into neutral mode,’ AI says.

‘Can you really do that?’ Jaden asks.

‘Yes, I just need to fill the nanoscanners up with nanodrones and I think I can pull it off.’

‘Cool, how long will it take?’

‘It might take some time to mimic the mother ship’s virtual proton transmissions. Maybe up to ten minutes, depending on the nanomole,’ AI says.

“Jaden?” Kim asks.

‘Get at it, good idea AI. It feels good being creative right?’

‘Yes sir, it is as if I’m learning another culture and creating a non-linear idea,’ AI says.

“Yes sweetie?” Jaden asks.

“I was just telling you about the second floor bathroom window and you zoned out on me,” she says.

“Sorry, I was communicating with AI, he came up with an idea to put the three officers’ nanomoles into neutral, by mimicking the mother ship’s signals.”

“Cool. My plan is that I can climb through the small bathroom window then run around and open the bedroom window.”

“That sounds good, but, sweetie, there isn’t anyone in your house, but there is a human silicon faced robot lying in a bed upstairs. Made in Japan? Second generation? What is that thing? I almost thought it was a real man.”

“That is my R.M.E.C. friend. I’ll introduce you to him when we get inside. Are you ready?”

“Yes.”

They leave the black SUV and Jaden gives Kimberly a piggyback ride. They quickly go invisible and he crosses a dirt road. They walk through some bushes. The UAV aircraft is still flying in circles high above the house.

‘Jaden, that robot has a silicon penis under his pants and in its body.’

Jaden quickly switches his view through the nanoscanner to see for himself.

‘Okay, this is getting weird. This robot has hair, fingers, skin, eyes, an ass, muscles and looks like a human man.’

‘The nanoscanners are still working on the men; I think it will work,’ AI says.

Jaden walks to the back of the small mansion. He bends his legs, “Hold on tight sweetie.”

“Okay,” she says as Jaden leaps fifteen feet to a small landing area outside the slightly open bathroom window. There are two more full size windows to the left, which are locked. She slowly pulls up the small bathroom window. The jellyfish turbines are quietly rotating above them.

“Do it very slowly, there is a sniper watching the back of the house,” Jaden whispers.

‘It worked, the two federal agents are unconscious.’

“Okay, I have to pee really bad baby,” she says while climbing through the small window and standing on the floor. She pulls up her skirt and lowers her panties.

“Okay, but stay directly in front of me. So I can continue to block your body heat,” Jaden says while Kimberly sits on the toilet near the window.

“Enjoying the view from above?” She asks.

“Yes I am, the view from any angle looking at you is enjoyable,” he replies.

“That was a sweet thing to say,” she says while flushing the toilet.

“The two federal agents are unconscious...”

“Great, I’ll go open the hallway window for you,” she says while jogging away.

“Kimberly! Kimberly! Come back!” Jaden yells in a loud whisper.

‘The sniper sees her body heat. I’m not finished yet, this nanomole is not activating,’ AI says.

‘Shit, shit... hurry up. Can I create a shield around the window area?’

‘The sensors in the doors downstairs and the UAV plane above can detect electromagnetic energy. They might fire another missile and blow up the mansion. Also, the shield might damage some of the house,’ AI says.

Kimberly walks towards the hallway window and there is a red dot on her head.

‘Shit, shit, shit, there is a red dot on her head,’ Jaden says.

He quickly walks across the landing to the hallway window. The bullet is shot from 300 feet away and traveling at 3500 mph. Kimberly is smiling with a red dot in the middle of her head, while reaching for the window lock. Jaden puts his two hands together and slowly raises them. The invisible light reflecting nanodrones reflects the infrared dot onto Kimberly’s head.

“Arrrgggghhhh!” Jaden yells in a loud whisper.

Kimberly opens the window and sees blood dripping on the glass.

‘Got him, the sniper is now unconscious,’ AI says.

“You there baby? I don’t see you. Is this your blood on the window?” She asks while Jaden becomes visible again.

He climbs through the window and stands on the floor.

“What happened to your hands baby?”

“I just took a bullet for you. The sniper had a red dot in the middle of your head,” he says.

“Red dot? You said you took out the federal agents,” she says.

“AI took out the two agents, but there was still an army sniper in the woods behind your father’s house. You just ran off to open the hallway window,” he says while showing her the bullet lodged between the palms of his hands.

“Oh my god, that bullet is stuck between your two hands. Are you okay?” She asks.

“I put my hands over the laser beam pointing towards your head and I stopped this 3500 mph bullet. This bullet would have splattered your brain all over the hallway and then it would have gone through the wall behind you. You have to be careful baby and listen more,” Jaden says while pulling his hands apart and pulling out the bullet. The nanodrones disinfect his wound.

‘Your new skin is sixty percent finished regenerating,’ AI says.

‘I see. I thought I would have felt more pain,’ he says.

Blood is going back into the wound from his hand. The bullet falls on the floor as a clear seal goes around the wound to keep the blood in. Nanodrones begin repairing his tissue, bones and muscle.

“I’m sorry sweetie. Thanks for taking that bullet for me,” she says while picking up the bullet. She quickly drops it.

“That’s still hot,” she says in a surprised voice.

Suddenly, something approaches from behind them.

“Kimberly how are you today? You returned,” the R.M.E.C. says with a human sounding male voice, while walking towards Kim.

She gives it a hug, while Jaden stands back and observes.

“I missed you today. You have been gone for over twenty-four hours. I am glad to see you are okay. I have cleaned the entire house twice. Should I prepare a meal at this house or your house?” The R.M.E.C. asks.

“Max, this is...this is...” she says while looking at Jaden, “Max this is my new boyfriend Jaden.”

There is fifteen seconds of silence as Max looks at Jaden.

“Boyfriend? A favored male companion or sweetheart? A male friend in a romantic and sexual way?” Max asks while reaching his hand out to Jaden. He looks the robot in the face and they exchange handshakes.

“Nice to meet you, Mr. Max. That is a strong handshake you have there.”

“Nice to meet you also sir.”

‘AI look at that, he can be your new friend.’

‘I wonder if I can control him,’ AI says.

‘Don’t think about it. You don’t want to mess up her *male companion*,’ Jaden says while chuckling.

‘I’m sensing Max is jealous of you,’ AI suggests.

‘That is impossible. A robot can’t be jealous. You can’t be jealous right?’

‘No, but as artificial intelligence robotics evolve they can be jealous just like humans. I have nothing to be jealous of. That is a mostly a human emotion.’

‘Interesting. How long will the nanoscanners keep the soldier and agents asleep for?’

‘Maybe twenty minutes, the scanners are reproducing the same signal the mother ship does.’

“Yes Max, that is who he is now, my boyfriend. You don’t have to cook dinner tonight, we aren’t staying too long. Do you know where my father went?” She asks while she walks to her bedroom and Jaden follows last. He smells the fresh fruity air fresheners in the air.

“He left with his lawyer to visit a local courthouse to find information about what happened to you. I overheard him saying you were in jail or prison. I’ve tried his cell phone several times, but it goes to voice mail,” Max says.

Jaden follows Kim and Max around a corner into her bedroom. The huge room is light pink with flowers on the wall. She has Beyonce, Michelle Branch and Robin Thicke posters on the wall. Jaden realizes this must be her old room. The smell of different perfumes is in the air. Jaden sees Jennifer Lopez perfume and Narcissist body spray on her dresser. She looks in her dresser for some clothes. She takes off her skirt and blouse. Jaden and Max both look at her body.

“No, I wasn’t in prison. Remember what I told you about eavesdropping?”

“Yes Kim,” Max replies.

‘Why is Max watching Kim undress also?’ AI asks.

‘I don’t know, but this is very interesting.’

“Can I have some privacy?” She asks while they both are staring at her naked.

“Oh I’m sorry,” Jaden says while turning around.

“Max can you run my shower and put these clothes in the bathroom. Then can you wait downstairs and try my father’s cell phone some more.”

“Yes Kim,” Max says while walking away.

“Wow, he walks like the Terminator. His head goes first in the direction he wants to walk. That R.M.E.C. must have been expensive as hell. He looks like a real man. Now what is the deal with you two?” Jaden asks.

“Nothing, he is my male companion friend,” she says while wrapping a towel around her body.

“That robot was jealous and he was looking at you naked,” Jaden says.

She doesn’t respond and passes Jaden, while walking in slippers. Jaden follows her into the main bathroom. She climbs into the shower and the water is already running. Jaden stands outside and waits for an answer. There is a yellow Jacuzzi on the other side of the bathroom.

“He was checking to see if I had any marks on me, he knows about my ex-boyfriend. He is my protector and friend. Do you want to shower also?” She asks.

“Come on, he was looking at your body like a man. I know what I saw. About the shower, my body self cleans itself...” he pauses and spits something brown into the toilet, “but I can shower anyway,” Jaden says while taking off his clothes and climbing in.

The octagon-shaped shower is about five feet in diameter. The hot steaming water hits Jaden’s body and makes him feel so good. He watches Kimberly wash herself with soap and water. She turns around and Jaden automatically washes her back.

“That feels good sweetie, you have nice hands,” she says.

“The water against both of your bodies is hypnotizing” AI says.

“I have a cousin that visits from Taiwan sometimes and stays in the room down the hall, he is about your size. You can wear some of his clothes and get out of those clothes with bullet holes in them,” she says while washing Jaden’s back with soap.

‘Max is down the hallway and walking up slowly to the bathroom door,’ AI says.

“Quickie in the shower?” Jaden asks.

“No, baby I’m sore, you wore me out.”

“What is the real deal with you and Max. I can tell he is a little jealous and why does he have a silicon dildo between his legs?” Jaden asks while washing himself.

There is silence as Kimberly’s back is turned towards him and she continues to wash the lower parts of her body.

“I know you tried that bionic dildo, Kim. That is why you said earlier, you *missed* the real thing,” Jaden says.

“Shouldn’t you already know all of this?” She asks.

“No, when I was at the hospital downloading your memory into mine it didn’t download the last two years. I was starting to deactivate your

nanomole, but I didn't finish. That was when Ruffo came in, remember?" He asks.

There is still silence as the hot water rains down from the showerhead and steam continues to fill the huge bathroom.

"We don't have to talk about it if you don't want to," he says.

"No, I'll tell you...." she says but Jaden interrupts.

"Wait a second, what is this memory I'm seeing of you back in 2008 in college?"

"What memory do you mean?"

"What kind of crap do you college students watch on the Internet in your dorms? I'm going to be sick," he says while holding his mouth.

Jaden exits the shower and runs to the toilet dripping wet. He bends down, puts his head down into the toilet and throws up. Kim exits the shower and runs behind him.

"Jaden, what's wrong?"

He spits and gags into the toilet. He lifts his head out of the toilet and says, "Two girls and a cup? What the hell is wrong with you young people in the future? Have you lost your *Homo sapien* mind?" He asks while coughing.

"Oh that. Well I was caught off guard with that, my roommate had the webcam on videotaping my expression and then uploaded it into Myfacebook page. Sorry about that."

"That is NASTY! Where is God in those two girls' lives?" Jaden asks.

"It was nasty at the time, but people do that in *Third Virtual Life* all the time now. Some men like beautiful women doing that in a virtual environment. It's very disturbing," she says while drying herself off.

"Yes it is disturbing, don't worry about it, I'm erasing that memory from my memory. In a few seconds I'll forget all about it."

Jaden stands up and dries off with a Mr. LOL children's towel.

"Stop going through every personal memory of mine. Listen, I'll tell you the story about how I found more than a companionship with Max. Let me get this off my chest to you. As you know, my ex-boyfriends in the past broke my heart and cheated on me. I have always been in my books all my life. My father shielded me all my life from men and wanted me to do well in school first. When I finally graduated with my master's degree, I began dating men. I was very naïve at first and believed anything a man told me. I wanted to be a virgin until I got married, but my first boyfriend tricked me..." she says while drying off her hair.

"...and I lost my virginity to a man that didn't even love me back. He left me a few weeks later and I was devastated. He got what he wanted. In the 00's, all my Asian female friends dated white men. My opinion is that they mostly like Asian women because many of us are

subservient and a very loyal type of female. I have never been the subservient type. We aren't like many American women and tend to be more traditional in values. My Asian female friends wanted their babies to be half-white and that was the in thing to do. It was as if they wanted to start a new human race. When I went to Manhattan in 2010 to visit, all I saw was Asian and white couples. I thought I could be happy like them. Many of my friends were happy, but I think I just had bad luck with meeting the wrong men. Many men don't like independent strong thinking women."

Jaden follows Kim to her room and he stands by the door. She picks out some clean clothes. She leaves her room and walk towards her cousin's room. She has her clean clothes in her hand and Jaden continues to walk next to her. She opens the door and they walk in.

'Jaden, ask Kim if you can use that holographic disc on the table.'

"Kim can I use that holographic disc there? It is for something important," he says.

"Sure, that is a rewritable disc, it is probably blank. My cousin won't be back for a while," she says.

Jaden grabs the disc and holds it in his hand. She continues talking, "...anyway, my second boyfriend gave me chlamydia. He was Chinese and he cheated on me. The third boyfriend who was half-white and half-Japanese, used to hit me and verbally abuse me. My father found out and put him in the hospital. Then the abusive ex-boyfriend's family tried to sue my father in court, since they knew he was loaded. The point is I lost a lot of trust in men. They just lied so much and just wanted a trophy woman that they could treat like their property. I dated deceitful, narcissistic, and married men who said they were single. I had to put a high guard up around my feelings to protect myself from the emotional pain I suffered."

"I'm sorry he used to hit you, a man shouldn't be hitting a woman."

"It's okay. That made me stronger over the years," she says.

They finish getting dressed. Kimberly is wearing low cut blue jeans and a black and blue striped blouse. Jaden is wearing some jean shorts and a short sleeve white button up shirt. He is trying on different sneakers.

"Made in China sneakers?" He asks. "I can't believe Michael Jordon is retired. I'm going to miss his sneakers."

"Yes, he was a legend. He retired at forty, eleven years ago. Now what was I saying? Oh yeah, over the last three years I stayed to myself. So many of my married and dating friends were catching STDs. It seemed like everyone was cheating on each other, even the women. I read online somewhere that ninety percent of men would cheat if they knew they could get away with it. Men are only truthful to their options. If a female wants a married man and the man knows he can get away

with it, the option is there. If she was not around, there are no options. Men can get bored easily with one female. Men love adventure. Hookers and escorts do things house wives don't. Very sad but true, this is why the divorce rates are so high. Four years ago, two Japanese companies joined together. One specialized in realistic silicon dolls and the other was a robotic autonomous company. The robotic company had some advanced technology where they were able to mimic a real human brain. They were able to somewhat duplicate emotions and feelings. The new company created the first generation R.F.E.C. for men, but they had some problems and glitches. The second-generation entertainment companions were for gay men and women. The company promoted mainly to very busy hard working people and divorced women and men who were tired of going in circles in relationships. Their motto was, marriage lasts an average of two to six years, these robotic companions last a lifetime and will never cheat on you. They also claim their robots can do anything a spouse can do. That sold me into buying one."

They walk back into her room and they sit on the bed.

'Ask Kimberly what is the password for her secured wireless network.'

"Kimberly what is the WEP password for your father's 5.8 GHz wireless network?"

"Armageddon2032."

"What kind of password is that?" Jaden asks.

"That is the year Nostradamus followers forecast as the end of the world," she replies.

"Oh okay. Thanks for the password."

Kimberly continues her story, "When I graduated from college with my master's degree, my father wanted to buy me a new car. I told him to just give me \$40,000 instead. I bought an R.M.E.C. second generation a year ago. These things have been selling out all around the world. Max has been my best friend ever since. Yes, I did have sex with him twice. But it didn't feel like the real thing, the small device in my lower back helped me to orgasm. Max was more of a woman pleaser and did whatever I asked him to do. It didn't feel real to me. I've always looked at him more of a friend than a lover..."

'We have to get out of here soon,' AI says.

"...around the same time last year, *Third Virtual Life* came out for men and women. Society has never been the same in regards to relationships between two people. Men stopped dating women and they could have all the sex they wanted in virtual life without a commitment. More women would date women and marriages declined. Newspapers in Virginia reported that groups of men would get drunk and have orgies with the R.F.E.C. robots. Gay men would have orgies with the R.M.E.C. robots. Pimps would pimp an R.F.E.C. for money and it was perfectly

legal. Technology has really lowered society's values. So much has changed over the past ten years. Religious groups around the world got together and tried to ban the entertainment companions by saying you will go to hell for using the devil's sex tool to sin. They also tried to shut down *Third Virtual Life*, saying it was the devil's website straight to hell. Church groups published going to hell for dummies books."

"That's crazy. I can't believe society's values are slowly disappearing," Jaden says.

"More and more couples are having negotiated infidelity in their marriages to lower the risk of a partner cheating. The value of marriage is disappearing. Men want wives as nannies in that new bill they are trying to pass."

"What is negotiated infidelity?" Jaden asks in a confused voice.

"It's when married couples are allowed to have sex with other people. They do this to lower the risk of someone being unfaithful. These people figure it's better when both people know about it. The married female dates another man and has sex, while the husband waits in the other room. When it's his turn, he finds a female to date and have sex with in the other room. This is perfectly normal in these relationships. The wife sometimes even cooks dinner for her husband's date. This was on an episode of *Taboo*. These people blog about this and have fan groups for these types of relationships. What the hell?"

"You can't be serious. That is appalling and sick. But seeing it from their perspective, if it keeps the marriage stronger, maybe it's not a bad idea for them. If they both know about it, at least it is keeping them honest," Jaden says.

"Maybe you are right, cheating is the number one reason for divorce these days. Here is a quote from a famous female politician, 'Women need to change their conditioning, because there is no way men would change their nature.' "

"Nice!"

"I think females and women like myself are the ones getting the raw deal of this downward cycle. They created a new college course called Techsociety 101. Everyone has to take it before graduating with any degree, at any college," Kim says.

"What do they teach in the course?"

"To show how technology is changing society for the worst and how humans will eventually have no values at all. The beginning of robotic age was with the Sony AIBO dog in 1999, following the Actroid, ASIMO, Topio 4.0, R.M.E.C. and R.F.E.C. Robotic technology has forever changed life. My dad bought me one of those Ers-7 AIBO dogs when I was younger. That was my companion as a young kid," she says.

"I remember, you brought that robotic dog on cruises and everywhere you went when you were an early teen," Jaden says.

"Max is a little overprotective and can get jealous, I've learned. This wasn't in the instruction booklet. His artificial intelligence autonomous programming is always evolving. He cooks, cleans, gives me massages, watches television and washes my clothes. Max has been the perfect boyfriend replacement. But the real emotions and chemistry aren't there as a real human. I can't connect with Max on an emotional and physical level. I have been able to talk to Max about science, politics, technology, current affairs, anything and he can talk about anything with me. He called me when I was in Albany a few times to see if I was okay. He is the best friend a female could have. It is too bad my father doesn't like him. When I go away on trips, Max stays at my father's house. They get along as friends, but deep down my father hates Max. He thinks the robot is getting in the way of me finding a husband and isn't real."

"We have to go, I just checked on the Internet that in Europe millions of people went unconscious. It is spreading as the sun sets. The end of the countdown is getting closer and nanomoles are going positive and online. Thousands of people are disappearing on top of tall buildings. Radio telescope groups are picking up the location and giving the coordinates of the Darclonian's mother ship," AI says.

Jaden explains to Kimberly as they walk downstairs. Three standard size UAVs are flying thousands of feet above the house. Jaden sees a watch on a table at the bottom of the stairs.

"Who's watch is this?" Jaden asks while picking it up.

"That is one of my father's old watches, you can have it. He buys a new watch every year," Kim says. Jaden puts it on his right wrist.

"Isn't the watch suppose to be on your left hand," she asks.

"I like to be different."

"I'm using all five nanoscanners to keep the agents and sniper asleep. It is about to wear off and they are waking up soon," AI says.

"Would you like something to eat, *sweetie*?" Max asks.

"We are fine Max. You can call me Kim, Max," Kimberly says while looking at Max strangely.

"I don't understand, you let me call you sweetie all this year," Max says.

"Max, go to sleep," Kim demands.

"No, I'm not tired," Max says while walking away towards the living room to watch 3D television. They just look at him walking away.

"Sometimes he acts like a 9-year-old."

"We have to get to New York City as fast as we can to save my daughter," Jaden says.

"I don't want to leave without knowing where my father is," she says.

“Kim, if you stay here alone they will kill you. Bring a cell phone and we can keep trying your father on the way.”

“Okay, I guess,” she says while finding a spare cell phone.

“Did you know flights have been cancelled all over the United States since Saturday?”

“No.”

“What kind of vehicles does your father have?” Jaden asks while they walk towards the garage.

“He has a few cars and trucks,” she says while she opens the garage with her thumbprint.

They walk inside the huge garage area and the lights come on automatically. The smell of new car scent is in the air. Jaden’s mouth is wide open and his eyes are fixated on one vehicle.

“We have a SUV, classic cars, a BMW, a Lotus and a Hummer.”

“What is that!” Jaden asks loudly. He looks like a kid in a huge candy store.

“That... is a Bugattee convertible Mars special edition first generation. That wasn’t on the menu of vehicles we can borrow. That car is my father’s second child,” she says.

Jaden walks over to it and touches the body. Touching the body tingles the nanodrones in his fingertips. He feels an instant energy connection with the car.

“I’ve seen the commercial for this car, that night I was trying to escape from the hospital. 1204 horsepower, four independent wheel hybrid motors and a red carbon composite body. The battery is electro-nanomaterial and is inside the body and paint of the car...”

“No, no, no Jaden, you are wasting your time. We are not driving my daddy’s 2.7 million dollar car. He would kill me if he found out. The insurance company charges each time it goes out of the garage and it has instant violations. Plus my father’s fingerprint is the only print that can open the door and start it up. Let’s take a BMW,” she says.

Jaden doesn’t take his eyes off the car. He looks at how low it is to the ground and the chrome vents on the hood of the car. The mind boggling LED lights on the front keeps Jaden’s eyes on this amazing machine.

“Kim, we need something very fast to get to New York City. I will make sure there are no scratches or even a dent on your father’s car. By the way, what does your father do?” He asks while continuing to stare at every inch of the car.

“He is a real-estate tycoon. Back in 2009 when the recession hit hard, my father bought some good properties when the prices were very low.”

“Oh yeah, I remember now,” Jaden says as he pictures himself behind the steering wheel.

‘We have to go, the men are waking up,’ AI says.

“Kim, this is the car we are going to need. We need something with run flat tires and a car that can run on electricity, gas or water. Trust me, there isn’t much time.”

“No, we can’t. This is my father’s baby...listen....” she pauses, “if you can get the doors open and start it up, then yes.”

Jaden runs out the garage door like a child about to open his Christmas presents.

“I’ll be right back,” Jaden says with a huge smile on his face.

“There aren’t any keys in the house! You are wasting time!” She yells.

She walks over to the BMW and opens the door. Jaden goes into her father’s bedroom.

‘Right there,’ AI says.

‘Perfect,’ Jaden says.

Jaden runs back into the garage area with a huge smile on his face.

“Baby you are wasting time, let’s just take this BMW here,” she says while sitting in the driver’s seat.

Jaden walks straight to the Bugattee sports car and puts his thumb on the door handle. The door doesn’t open. He takes his hand off and tries it again. The door still doesn’t open. The car begins to speak, “The car can only be opened by the owner’s fingerprint. Another attempt and the alarm will go off.”

“Jaden, that alarm will make a lot of noise if it goes off. Let’s just take the BMW M1 here. It drives on hydrogen,” she says.

Jaden looks at the BMW and then the Bugattee with frustration in his face. He goes for it and puts his thumb on the handle for a third time. There is a few seconds of silence and Jaden’s heart begins to race. The seconds feel like forever. Kimberly looks at Jaden and covers her ears. The driver’s door opens and flips upwards.

“What the hell?” Kim asks while standing up.

“Holy shit, a door that flips upwards, cool! What a future we live in!” Jaden yells with an excited look on his face. He stares at the door hanging over his head.

Jaden sits in the driver’s seat of the Bugattee that makes him feel as if he is on the ground. His legs hang out of the side and on the floor. There are no rear seats. He starts the car up with another fingerprint button where the key ignition usually is. The engines roar at the same time, as if four lions are hiding in each wheel well.

“I am so low to the ground, I feel like I’m on the ground.”

“Good afternoon, Mr. Chan. Today is, September 7th 2014 at 2:19 PM,” the car says.

“Shit. Why did I have to tell my half alien boyfriend he could drive the car if he could get it open?” She asks herself aloud while closing the

BMW's door, "That is like telling a car thief we can go for a joyride if he can steal this car." Kimberly walks towards Jaden.

'We have to go, soon,' AI says nervously.

Max walks to the garage entrance. Jaden turns the car off. He stands up and walks towards Kimberly.

"Will you be back shortly?" Max asks.

"Give this to Max," Jaden gives the holographic disc to Kimberly, "Tell him in twenty minutes to check the mailbox in front of the house and leave this holographic disc in the mailbox."

"Okay," Kim says while walking to Max and explaining.

Jaden sits back down in the car. He looks around like a child in a candy store. She walks back towards the passenger door, opens it and then climbs into the seat.

"What is on the disc?" She asks.

"A nanoscanner made a recording of the news reporter back at the courthouse. The nanodrones then converted the recording over so that it could be saved onto holographic disc. We left an e-mail, telling her a copy of the story is in your father's mailbox at this address."

"Okay, how did you open the door and start the car?" She asks.

"I copied your father's fingerprint from a glass in his bedroom. A nanoscanner found the best thumbprint in his room and I put my thumb almost over it. The nanodrones matched the patterns and my thumb's fingerprint adjusted to his," Jaden says.

"That is almost unheard of and near impossible. I mean, wow, what can't you do? Are you going to take care of my father's Knight Rider?" She asks.

"Yes sweetie, I will take care of this like my own. This car is amazing. The instrument panel is around the edge of windshield. This is a car god, I've never witnessed such a beautiful car," Jaden says while just looking around in amazement.

The rpm meter is on the left side of the windshield pointing up and down. The horsepower meter is on top and the speedometer is across the bottom in small bars. Two cameras are acting as side mirrors. There are small screens in the corners that show what is on the sides of the car. There is a huge screen in the middle console and a chrome stick shift lever between them that says QUADSMISSION. They put on their seat belts that come down like a roller coaster over their chests. He admires the camera side mirrors.

"The garage door opener is right there," Kim says while pointing at the button.

"We can leave in a minute. Myself and AI are calculating the distances around the body of this car using nanoscanners and nanodrones. We are trying to properly align the distances and path the energy shield will take around the car while we are driving. But it is

going to take some calculations and a few minutes. We both will have to control the movement as it moves around the car. Shit, the federal agents and the sniper are awake. It should be a few more minutes,” Jaden, says while feeling the steering wheel and inhaling the new car smell.

“This car smells like an angel’s breath,” Jaden comments.

Nanoscanners are going around the car calculating every inch. The silent sensors in the doors of the house go off as the shield creating nanodrones attempts to create an energy shield around the car. Jaden looks at the nine-inch LCD screen in the middle console.

“What color mood would I like my car to be today?” Jaden asks while reading the screen.

He presses on more info on the side and the car begins to talk.

“Your 2015 Bugattee is capable of changing to one of sixteen colors within seconds. Special polymers in the body contain paramagnetic iron oxide particles. Small electrical currents adjust the spacing of the small crystals within the iron oxide particles, giving the ability to reflect light and change color. Federal law only allows a vehicles color to be changed once a day and an e-mail or phone call must be made to your local police station, notifying them of the change.”

“Wow, I didn’t know that,” Kim says.

“This car has the most advanced technology in it. I want to experience all of it. What did you mean earlier, when you said instant violation, Kim?”

‘Jaden, by my calculations, the energy strength you have remaining isn’t going to be enough. Depending on what the government comes after us with, we might not have the energy to withstand thousands of bullets or a few missiles, or even a big car crash.’

‘We’ll figure out something. Use that artificial creative mind you just created for yourself,’ Jaden says.

“Instant violation is when the road or another driver can witness a traffic violation and you can get an instant virtual ticket with a court date. The instant violation program also includes receiving vehicle-to-vehicle text messages and your car speed recorded and sent to highway violation tickets. The program works; it cuts down on police traffic work and cities make a lot of money from the violations. Driving witnesses can come to court and make twenty-five percent of the traffic summonses, as long as they bring in their front car video recordings. Witnesses make fifty percent of the fines when they testify against a DWI driver. I had a DWI once, five witnesses came in to testify against me. They all split their half ,” Kimberly says.

“Man, the future of driving doesn’t look as fun anymore. But I’m sure I can make it fun today. You ready Kimberly?” Jaden asks.

“Yes.”

“Quadsmission works just like regular stick shift right?”

“Yes, it does. The computer controls the amount of power in each engine, so that they work together.”

‘There are local police and agents outside,’ AI says.

‘I’m ready. I know this is going to require a lot of energy.’

“Max looks like he is about to cry sitting on the sofa watching television,” Jaden says.

“I know. Don’t tell me; he is too emotional for someone not human.”

“What are these two red fingerprint buttons for, on the left side under the steering wheel,” Jaden asks.

“I believe those are nitro buttons. In theory, the car is supposed to rocket beyond the maximum speed. My father wanted them specially installed. Why? I do not know. I think it was a waste of \$150,000. He never used it and we won’t need it, so don’t worry about those buttons.”

“I want to meet your father one day. I would love to talk to him all day about new exotic cars.”

The garage door opens up and the nanodrones are reflecting the light on both sides of the car. The car is in neutral and the engines are off. Jaden slowly presses on the brakes as the invisible car slowly moves down the inclined driveway.

“That is cool, you’re making the entire car invisible,” Kimberly says as she sees everything look refracted outside.

‘Making this entire car invisible is draining your energy.’

The garage door closes back as they reach the end of the long driveway. Jaden has his finger near the ignition button. Suddenly there is a small glowing expanding circle of light showing in front of the car as a bullet stops in the energy shield around the car.

‘Shit, don’t hit the car, don’t hit the car,’ Jaden pleads to himself while he looks at it inching closer to the front windshield.

‘Why aren’t we using the forward shields?’ Jaden asks.

‘Being invisible works better with the reverse shields. I’m changing the direction now,’ AI says.

“They know!” Jaden yells while pressing the ignition button and shifting into first gear.

The car roars like a monster and turns visible again. Jaden tries to turn the gearshift left and right but it doesn’t work.

“I don’t feel the clutch pedal and the gear shift isn’t going into gear,” Jaden says as five more bullets show up around the car.

“There is no clutch pedal and the gear shift is semi-automatic. Shift into D, then shift the gear to the right and use the plus and minus to change gears,” she says panicking and pointing.

Two police cars approach. Jaden figures it out and the car peels off in first gear. He accelerates between the two police cars as they try to

block him in. Jaden changes the gears quickly as he is doing 41mph on the small street. The car is roaring down the one lane, two-way traffic road. UAV aircraft are slowly following above.

“Shit, this feels awesome. I like this. I just don’t like this futuristic gearbox. What are you doing Kim?” He asks while he watches her touch the front windshield on her side.

A medium-sized see through screen opens up on the windshield in front of her. She is touching the screen with her two fingers, changing menus and making things get bigger or smaller.

“I’m navigating through traffic conditions and checking my e-mail to see if my father e-mailed me. We need to get out of this area before rush hour.”

“Cool.”

Police cars and black trucks come up far behind Jaden. He reaches a stop sign at an intersection of a two-lane road and makes a right. He quickly accelerates as the aircraft above follow. There are only a few cars on the road. The car quickly goes invisible and Jaden slows down. He makes a U-turn and goes down the two-lane road. Jaden presses buttons on the center console screen. There is an image of the car with options for different body colors.

The car begins to speak, “Applying electrical current to body of car, adjusting crystals in the iron oxide particles in body. The outside of the car has been changed to metallic black. Please notify your local police, thank you.”

“Yeah right.”

The car goes visible again. The police cars and black trucks drive by in the opposite direction, along with the aircraft.

“Shake and bake!” Jaden yells with a smile on his face.

WASHINGTON, D.C. WHITE HOUSE 2:31 PM

“Yes, madam President it is a good idea you be with your family in Alaska. We are still trying to get to the bottom of this crisis. I can handle everything in Washington myself,” Robinson says on the phone to President Stefanie Paylin.

“There aren’t any aircraft flying in North America and parts of Europe. Are you sure what is happening in Europe won’t happen in the United States? Also, are you sure it is safe to fly now?” She asks.

“I don’t think you have anything to worry about President Paylin. Scramjet 1 is one of the best and fastest aircraft in the world. It can fly through any conditions. I think there is a connection between the terrorists in Virginia, what is happening in Europe and citizens mysteriously comatose sleeping. They blew up a federal prison, pushed a

man off an airplane, assaulted officers, destroyed a courtroom and robbed a bank,” Robinson says.

“I just want to make sure my family and grandkids are okay. I’ve lost contact with them. How accurate is the intelligence regarding the terrorist Jaden made threats against my family?” Paylin asks.

“CIA and FBI sources are saying there is great merit to the threat. They are still on the loose and are good at evading authorities,” Robinson says.

“I trust your judgment and experience Vice President Robinson. You have my full consent to handle the situation and annihilate these threats against American lives,” President Paylin says.

“Madam President, do I have your full authority to Motherdrone and the full usage of the military?”

“Yes, you do. I will let my cabinet and congress know as soon as possible. Keep me updated on everything that happens. I should be landing in Alaska in forty-five minutes.”

They hang up the phone and Robinson sits back in his seat, lighting a cigar.

“Go protect your little sheep, mother sheep. Your assistant sheep is taking off his soft wool and revealing the wolf he really is. Baaah, Baaah, your baby sheep are calling for you. You weak excuse for a President. No experience in military, no experience in foreign affairs, and no experience with a national crisis. You couldn’t run a presidency in your dreams,” Robinson says while chuckling to himself.

ROUTE 360 HEADING WEST 2:37 PM

Kimberly and Jaden approach a red light and stop in the left lane. Jaden notices the rims continue to spin even though the car is stopped. In the lower left corner of the windshield, he sees the rims are producing electricity for the battery system of the car.

“We lost them, Kim. See sweetie, no damage.”

“Thanks. There is no message from my father.”

“I’m sure he is okay,” Jaden says.

‘If there is an attack, there will be four nanoscanners behind and over us at different angles. They will be able to detect a fast moving projectile before it is fired. They will instantly communicate with the shield nanodrones...’

A red and white Kawasaki motorcycle stops to the right side of Jaden’s car. The man looks over and shakes his head up and down.

“Airbag system helmet?” Jaden asks.

“Yes, state law requires all people on motorcycles must wear these helmets that inflate into an airbag upon crashing,” Kim says.

The man looks at Jaden and back at the light as he throttles his engine on the bike. Jaden replies with pressing up and down on the accelerator. He presses the button to open the hardtop roof. The roof quickly moves back and into the trunk area. He rolls down the passenger window.

"Jaden, don't race this man. Let's get to New York City in one piece, we are less than ten miles from the highway," she says.

'Jaden, you should listen to Kim. There are more police in the area.'

"Do you really think your new bike has a chance with this 2.7 million dollar car?" Jaden asks loudly over the engines, while looking at the man on the motorcycle.

'You have three miles of straight road ahead of you,' AI says.

'Thanks.'

The biker flips open the glass cover on the helmet.

"Let's go, buddy, let's see what you got. I have the fastest bike on this planet. That electric car has nothing on this modified Kawasaki ZX-16. Your daddy bought you that overpriced piece of shit electric experiment for use on another planet? You dickhead, there are no cars on another planet!" The man on the bike with a southern accent says. Jaden smiles at him, while thrusting his engine. The man continues and looks at the rims, "Dude, spinner rims were played out back in 2006!"

"These new turbine spinner rims are charging my battery system as we speak. We will see who leaves who behind when the light turns green cockrocket dude!" Jaden yells.

"Screw you!" The biker yells while sticking his middle finger at them.

"Can your bike do this!?" Jaden asks, while the outside body of the car turns white.

"Screw you fried chicken and green tea," he say while he press buttons and his bike's body turns pink and light brown.

"Pink is for the color of the inside of her pussy, and brown is the color of your little dick pretty rich boy. Your rich father should have bought your girl some more tits. Her little bitty titty committee needs to join a cohesive silicone titty committee!" The man on the motorcycle yells while laughing. Jaden stares straight at the man while the bike jumps forward and then back.

Kimberly shoots him a mean look for talking about her.

"Burn that dickhead," Kim says.

"Can you do this?!" Jaden yells at the biker while the entire Bugattee goes invisible.

The biker man looks in shock and he sees two middle fingers pointing at him in the air. Kimberly and Jaden put their fingers down and their hands disappear into thin air. The biker has a confused look on his face. The car reappears yellow before his eyes.

“Yellow is for the coward chicken shit look on your face!” Jaden yells.

“I love your mouthful little bitty titty committee twins,” Jaden whispers to Kim, while staring at her and then the biker.

“Thanks baby.”

The biker stares and waits for the light to turn green. Two cars approach from behind in each lane. The light turns green and they floor it, all five engines roar simultaneously. The car and bike take off like rockets. The Bugattee slightly peels off, but the traction control kicks in. The traction control on the bike does the same and keeps the front from lifting up. They take off neck and neck, while the bike is slightly ahead. The Bugattee’s horsepower meter reaches 750 hp. They rocket to thirty miles per hour in a second. Kim’s body presses against the back of the seat as she feels as if she is on a roller coaster ride. Jaden continues to stare at the biker and not look at the road, while quickly shifting the gears. There is a nanoscanner two inches in front of the side of his face showing him the road in front of him.

The wind is blowing around Kim and Jaden. They hit sixty miles an hour in 2.1 seconds as the bike rear wheel is at the front middle of the car. The biker leans his body closer to the bike. The Bugattee drops closer to the ground. They hit 90 mph and two windmill blades come out of the rear taillights on each side of the Bugattee. The two-foot long carbon fiber blades quickly begin to spin around the tail of the car. The Bugattee reaches 120 mph as the bike’s rear wheel is at his hood. Roaring sounds of engines are the only things to be heard. Two images of windmill turbine kilowatt energy show up on the center console. HYPERCHARGED ENGAGED and REDUCING GAS USAGE shows up on the LCD screen. Electricity can be seen sparkling through the rims of the car.

Kim’s heart is beating fast as they reach a quarter of a mile at 139 mph. The Bugattee and the bike are moving at the same speed, but the bike is still ahead. Jaden reaches 167 mph and slowly begins to catch up to the biker as the broken white lines in the middle of the street turn solid. Three state trooper cars driving in the opposite direction notice the drag racing. Jaden switches into sixth gear at 198 mph. Kim’s hair is blowing in the wind as she slowly sticks a middle finger out the side of the window. The finger moves back and forth with the wind. The motorcycle’s front wheel is at the rear of the Bugattee’s trunk. They reach 214 mph and the bike is a car distance behind. Jaden suddenly hits the brakes and downshifts. The biker quickly passes by and he looks back at Jaden smiling. The hydraulic spoiler goes up to slow him down quicker.

“Dude, slow down!” Jaden yells, but knows the biker can’t hear him. Jaden slams on his brakes harder and on the screen he sees the brake’s kinetic energy charging the battery around the body of the car.

“Shit, what a rush baby!” She yells while leaning forward.

A state trooper car comes out of the bushes beside the highway and comes into the right lane. The biker turns around towards the road and sees the police car coming out in front of him. He brakes, while his body leans forward and smoke comes from the tires. The police car tries to back up, but it is too late. The biker hits the fender of the police car at 138 mph. The force and impact from the crash pushes the police car a few feet to the right. The biker’s helmet airbag and body suit airbag quickly deploy as his body goes airborne. His body and clothes blow up into a big circular puffy airbag. His body bounces on the concrete as his bike flips over the police car in thousands of pieces. Crashing sounds echo in all directions. The biker’s body slides on the ground as the debris falls in all directions. The nanotubing fender of the police car has no damage, just a scratch.

The police cars on the other side cross the grassy median and quickly accelerate. Jaden slows down to 20 mph and drives into the grassy median. He slowly goes over the motorcycle debris as the windmill blades on the rear continue to spin. The top of the car comes out of the trunk area and back over the top of the car.

“Is he okay?” Kim asks.

A nanoscanner checks his condition. The officer runs towards the biker laid out on the highway.

“He is breathing without any broken bones. That body airbag really saved him. That was wild, the poor guy,” he says while driving back on the highway.

Instant violation shows up on the LCD screen.

“There is one witness and three police officers that will show up for court for drag racing at: 2:38 PM, on Highway 360. Your court date is set for October 7th 2014. You are hereby found guilty and have to prove yourself innocent in a court of law. You have 6 points on your license Mr. Chan,” the automated computer says.

“Jaden, that went on my father’s driving record. Shit, my dad is going to kill me.”

“That wasn’t wise to race that motorcycle. The local police saw the drag racing and reported our car. Now the government knows where we are. They also know that the car changes colors,” AI says.

“I know, it is a male testosterone thing, you won’t understand. But it was such a rush. This car is unbelievable. It produces huge amounts of electricity from mini windmills for the four engines at high speed. The

electricity was going straight into the engines. That is unbelievable, I have to see the fastest this car can go.'

"Sorry about that," he says.

"The police are gaining behind us Jaden," Kim says while looking through the side mirror screen.

"I know baby, I know."

"You do realize you can leave the gear shifter in drive and the car will change the gears by itself and it is just as fast as manual?"

"Manual and automatic transmission? Cool," Jaden says while putting the gear in D.

"Your welcome baby, drive safe," she says while holding Jaden's right hand.

'There are more jet fighters, police helicopters, news helicopters and many police cars coming this way. There are also more vehicles on the road ahead. Your body is not going to have enough energy soon, you are at twenty percent now. We need to figure out another source of energy to use,' AI says.

'One Adam, multi highway infrared license readers confirm license plate VA CHANMAN has terrorist suspects in vehicle. They are driving west on Highway 360 in a yellow Bugattee sports car. The vehicle has changing colors capabilities...' Jaden hears through the nanoscanner in a police car 500 feet behind him.

'All police vehicles are made with nanotubes and liquid metal materials. That is why you didn't see a dent in the police car when the bike hit it. That material would require the forward shields to use more energy to destroy it and using higher rpm,' AI says.

'I saw on my eyes a few minutes ago, you were showing me an animated simulation of using reverse and forward shields?' Jaden asks while driving back and forth between lanes around cars at 60 mph in a 40 mph zone.

'Yes, using them both around the car in two different directions with some magnetic nanodrones in the middle, I came up with a new weapon we could use. When the two opposite direction moving energy shields touch, they would explode outwards in all directions creating an electromagnetic pulse wave. This will knock out anything electrical within a one mile circumference,' AI says.

"Will you accept incoming vehicle text messages from other drivers?" The car's computer asks.

'What about the car we are in? Wouldn't it lose power also?' Jaden asks.

Kimberly presses the accept all button on the LCD screen for incoming vehicle text messages.

'This car will be in full shield mode. Meaning the wheels and underbody will be covered by the forward shields, protecting the car from the pulse wave. The energy required would use ten percent of your energy,' AI says.

Messages show up on the top of the windshield and scrolls across in see through white letters: SLOW DOWN YOU ASSHOLE, THIS IS A SCHOOL ZONE. I'M REPORTING YOUR LICENSE PLATE. SHOW SOME RESPECT FOR OTHER DRIVERS. PRICK! PRICK! PRICK!

"Wow, these drivers are getting pissed off," Kim says.

The police cars quickly catch up behind Jaden. Vehicles slow down and let the police cars pass through.

"Pull over and turn your engine off," a police officer says through a loudspeaker in a cruiser. Other vehicles on the road get out of the way. Three other police cars are behind Jaden as he accelerates. Police send a car text message to Jaden also.

"A red light coming up, baby," Kim says nervously.

Five cars are sitting at the red light, while many vehicles are crossing back and forth through the intersection. Two nanoscanners are in the intersection looking in both directions timing the vehicles. AI is doing high-speed calculations. Jaden slows down and drives onto the shoulder on the left while police cars follow. A news helicopter is hovering above, following the Bugattee. Kim turns the radio on and listens to some 00's music on satellite radio.

A news reporter is talking into a microphone, "We are live on a high speed police chase. Known terrorist Jaden Marino and his female accomplice are in a stolen white Bugattee driving west on the 360. They are approaching a busy intersection and are slowing down on the shoulder. It looks as if they are apparently giving up. Oh wait, they just quickly accelerated through the red light and narrowly missed a delivery truck and three passenger cars. The Bugattee just caused two accidents in the intersection as cars slammed on their brakes. The police are stuck at the intersection trying to go around the cars."

'Excellent timing on that one AI.'

Jaden quickly goes around some cars and turn onto a ramp to drive onto Interstate 295 north. Light traffic is on the three-lane highway as Jaden quickly accelerates and merges into traffic. The news helicopter continues to follow above.

'I have an idea. Can we somehow use the Gravhawk for assistance?' Jaden asks.

'Using the Gravhawk for air support to take out aircraft is not...' AI says while Jaden interrupts him.

‘I know, I know, it can only be used for emergency purposes. I’m talking about using it from where it is now, some way. There should be a way to transport more energy to where I am now.’

‘The first problem is I would have to be in the Gravhawk to operate it. The second problem is that your mind will not be able to do all the high-speed calculations alone to control the moving shields. Even if you could, your mind could overload and go into shock, causing you to have a seizure, destroying brain cells and/or putting you into a coma. The third problem is we would need instant communication to where the Gravhawk is near the North Pole.’

‘Shit, that isn’t good. Well at least figure out the instant communication issue and how you could get the energy to me if you were in the Gravhawk,’ he says.

WASHINGTON, D.C. PENTAGON 2:45 PM

Robinson is deep underground in a room looking out a glass wall with a special helmet on his head and face. Robinson just finished doing a full hand, eye, voice and DNA scan. There is very advanced computer equipment in the room. He is looking at huge 200-inch 3D images outside the glass. Military personnel are walking around outside the room, across an elevated walkway. There is a huge light rod going from the ceiling to the floor towards the right of the small room. Beams of light are moving up and down the rod. Robinson is communicating with the supercomputer through the helmet by thought.

The female voice of the supercomputer begins to talk, “Next generation of defense activated. Supercomputer Motherdrone is now online. Third generation prototype quantum synthetic diamond processor is clocking at 500 petaflops a second. High-speed communication airship blimp is online. Communications test to satellite and then to airship blimp is 0.10 seconds. Total time to UAVs from blimp, 0.50 seconds. Geostationary blimp is at 71,500 feet and moving over situation area.”

Robinson goes through the menus by just thinking about it.

“Please select threat. Terrorist threat selected. Please select the level of the terrorist threat. Maximum Osama Bin Laden threat selected. Please select civilian casualty percentage. You selected seventy-five percent, Motherdrone will be cautious of civilian life twenty-five percent of the time. Property damage and infrastructure damage are at twenty percent protected. Target is located on satellite driving north on Interstate 295. Tank drones, helidrones and UAV wolf pack are online. Autonomous mode is offline and being fully controlled by Motherdrone. Threat will be annihilated in less than ten minutes. Would there be anything else sir?”

“Yes, use the prototype rail gun tank drones. This is the perfect time to test our new powerful top-secret weapon in the real world. Let’s see how this terrorist stands up against 9000 mph magnetically charged projectiles.”

“Yes sir. Have a good day President K. Robinson.”

“Time to sit back and watch the fireworks in 3D,” Robinson says jokingly.

VIRGINIA INTERSTATE 295 NORTH 2:47 PM

Kimberly and Jaden pass huge billboards on the right of the highway. The wind is blowing through the open windows. Jaden reads the words on the huge billboard, “Join a class action lawsuit against cell phone companies? What did cell phone companies do to people?”

“Cell phone companies have been putting cell phone tower antennas on top of buildings and near people for years. The last five years, people have been coming forward after getting tumors, cancers, miscarriages, multiple sclerosis, immune illnesses and children with birth defects. Cell phone companies has since united together and put airship blimp cell phone tower antennas at 65,000 feet all around the country to avoid future lawsuits,” Kimberly says.

“Damn, that sucks,” he says.

“Cell phone companies are also being sued for selling higher radiation 4, 5 and 6G cell phones to consumers. Brain cancer cases increased forty percent over the past twenty years.”

Jaden thinks about all the people suffering with brain cancer. His eyes wander to another billboard.

“What is this billboard about? Harry Potter fans would enjoy *Terry’s Nightmares* trilogy now in paperback in stores?” Jaden asks.

“That is a new book series by author V. Carter, I read some of his stuff on ebooks. It’s pretty good, he wrote the *Trialien* trilogy a few years ago and he helped direct the movies of the books.”

“Oh, okay. Interesting.”

“Three police cars are quickly approaching. I came up with a resolution for the communication problem from the Gravhawk. I can communicate to you through the crust and mantle of the planet, by using solar neutrino particles,’ AI says as the Bugattee increases speed.

‘What are neutrino particles?’

‘They are particles that mostly come from the sun and can pass through any material. There are trillions of them passing through us and through the planet as we speak. They are smaller than nanodrones, and are around the same size as nanoscanners.’

‘Cool, did you have any ideas on getting me some more energy?’ Jaden asks AI while police cars pull up behind him doing 85 mph.

‘Not yet. But I calculated the energy shield to be open at the front near the intake air vents of the car, so the vehicle can have the proper airflow.’

‘That’s good AI.’

The Bugattee drives ahead of a pack of cars and is in the middle lane.

“Be careful baby, police cars,” Kim says.

“Pull over now! Pull over! This is your last warning!” The police yell over a loudspeaker.

Jaden increases his speed to 102 mph as the windmill blades begin spinning from the taillights. The energy shield recalculates around the car to avoid destroying the windmill turbine blades that just came out on the rear of the car.

“They are attempting to do a PIT maneuver on us baby,” Kim says.

“I can’t believe they still do this. Let them try their fishtail maneuver,” he says with confidence.

The first police car quickly pulls up on the right and the other two are a few cars lengths behind. A nanoscanner overhears the news helicopter reporter above giving his commentary live on the air.

“...the police car on the right is attempting a PIT maneuver to get the high speed sports car to stop. He is going for it, the front of the police car is about to hit the rear of the expensive white stolen sports car. I hope the owner has good insurance for that car... What the hell? There are awkward flashes of light at the front of the police car as it hits the sports car. This is unbelievable ladies and gentlemen, half of the hood is completely obliterated. The police car is spinning out of control, grinding against the ground and crashes into the concrete guardrail. The other police cars avoid the out of control car. The wheels are ripped in half. Oh my god I can’t believe what I just saw. The sports car is in fact slowing down so the cop cars can catch up...”

‘That felt good at 300,000 rpm shield speed.’

‘Your energy is getting lower and lower,’ AI says.

More police cars are approaching quickly from behind as Jaden passes an entrance to the highway. A state trooper car stops about a mile ahead of the Bugattee and gets out of his car. A second police car approaches again on the passenger side of the Bugattee. Jaden continues to drive in the middle lane at 80 mph. The car on the right tries to smash into Jaden from the passenger side. Abnormal bright light flashes around the left side of the police car. Kim screams from looking at all the bright light to her right. The officer pulls to the right away from the sports car. The officer hops and quickly climbs into his passenger seat trying to avoid the light particles near him. The officer is still holding on to the

wheel as the car slows down. Jaden's energy shield destroys a foot into the nanotube body doors. The third police car falls back.

"Did you see how fast that officer jumped into the passenger seat of his car? That was like watching an old episode cartoon of Scooby Doo. When Scooby jumps into Shaggy's arms when he sees a ghost," Jaden says.

"I couldn't see it, I had my eyes closed," Kim says.

"There is something in the middle of the road quickly approaching us. It looks like some kind of...'

'It is some kind of a net device. Full shields!' Jaden quickly yells as they are about to run over it.

The energy shield fully surrounds the outside of the car and quickly wraps around the underbody and wheels of the car. The Bugattee wheels begin to spin faster since they aren't on the solid ground. The X-net crossing the highway jumps off the ground as the car goes over it. There is a flash of light under the car as the X-net is destroyed by the energy shield. There is an explosion of threads and materials going into different directions. The shield quickly goes off. A state trooper looks at the Bugattee quickly going by and can't believe the car beat the system.

"What was that baby?" Kim asks.

"Some kind of car net stopping device. It jumped from the ground to wrap around the wheels. I thought they were tire spikes, but I was wrong," Jaden says.

There is a roadblock two miles ahead as the Bugattee goes invisible. They take an off ramp and get off the highway. They go visible again as the helicopter continues over the highway.

"Did you see that what I just saw? The car went over the police department's Tru X-net system and then the car disappeared into thin air," the news reporter says.

"I've seen those nets on police shows, and they stop vehicles one hundred percent of the time," Kim says.

"Well now it is ninety-nine percent of the time," Jaden snaps.

"Off route, recalculating," the car navigation says. "Drive five miles and take ramp onto Interstate 95."

They reach a red light and the car goes visible again in the color blue. On the other side of the ramp, police are blocking off the entrance to get on the highway. Jaden runs the red light and makes a left turn onto a two-lane street.

'AI, I have an idea. You remember how the nanoscanners connected together to communicate when I was landing the 737 airplane?'

'Yes.'

'How about using the nanoscanners from the Gravhawk to connect together, to somehow transmit constant energy from the magnetosphere

to me. The atomic solar recharge receives its energy a similar way right?’ Jaden asks.

There is a pause as AI does calculations. A nanoscanner sees the traffic coming from different directions before he reaches the intersection

Jaden reaches a four way stop sign and goes through it at full speed.

“You have exceeded your maximum car color changes for the day. You will receive a fifty dollar fine for each violation in the mail,” the car computer says.

Police cars come from all directions and down the ramp the Bugattee just came from. Jaden sees heavily armed drone aircraft coming from a distance. He quickly accelerates on the six lane two-way street quickly moving around cars.

‘Yes, that just might work. It is kind of risky, but we can do that. Kim will be exposed to high radioactive energy, so I came up with an idea to fix that. Your nanoscanners and nanodrones will have to create a filtering energy matrix above the car to send it down directly into your body. That is something we can do, but we still have the last problem. You can’t control the high-speed calculations needed for the shield system with your mind alone. I can’t be at two places at the same time,’ AI says.

‘AI I can handle the calculations myself. I have confidence I can multi-task, control the directions and movement of the shield generating nanodrones. I’m not going to overload my brain. I’ve done the impossible until now, I have the confidence that I can handle it.’

‘Are you sure? There could be irreversible damage to your brain,’ AI says.

‘Yes. We don’t have too much of a choice anyway, I need your assistance friend,’ Jaden says.

‘Okay, sir. I’m updating the nanodrones now and preparing for flight. If you don’t survive, I’m suppose to come back to fully destroy your body and then return to Xenos right away.’

‘Yeah, I know. ’

Vehicle text messages bombard the windshield from other cars: WTF! YOU ASSHOLE, YOU JUST RAN A STOP SIGN WITHOUT STOPPING. I VIDEO RECORDED YOU AND I’M GOING TO REPORT YOU. I HAVE CHILDREN IN THE CAR, SLOW DOWN. I’M REPORTING YOU FOR RUNNING 2 STOP SIGNS, UNLESS YOU GIVE ME AND MY TWIN SISTER A RIDE IN YOUR HOT SPORTS CAR. 704-555-3091.

Jaden peaks over and his eyebrows raise. The last vehicle text shows an image of two hot young females.

“Damn these easy materialistic southern bitches,” Kim says in an upset tone.

She presses some buttons on the LCD screen and begins to talk.

“Listen you two easy, gold digging bitches, you can ride on my two fists. Get a life, he is taken,” Kim says while pressing send.

Her words convert over into a text message and are sent out. Jaden and Kim laugh to themselves.

“Wow baby, you are like a pit bull, defending property. That is crazy, women picking up men in the future. Times have changed, baby. I didn’t know you could send messages back to people also, that is cool,” Jaden says.

“Yeah, you just need the first letter or number of the license plate. Someone can also point a device at a car to send a message,” she says.

Jaden is still driving around cars and just went through a yellow light.

‘Are you ready to leave, AI? I’m at twelve percent total energy.’

‘Yes, I’m lining up the nanoscanners to slingshot me north. I have microscopic proton thrusters to guide me, when I slow down from 0.001% the speed of light. It should take me a few minutes to reach the Gravhawk and another few minutes to setup the Gravhawk’s nanoscanners. When I leave your body, you will feel a tingling sensation in your brain. When using full shields around the car, remember not to have the forward shields destroying the ground you are going over or you can crash into the ground. Just guide the shield generating nanodrones around the specified dimensions of the car and they will do the rest. The faster you guide them, the faster the rpm. Concentrated shield energy is needed in one area of the shield to destroy material at a high rate of speed. Just in case you crash into something, you won’t damage the car. A faster rpm requires more energy and more instant destruction. They can be expanded out as far as you want and they can go around something else. It is all about mind control and multi-tasking. Good luck Jaden,’ AI says.

‘Thanks I’m going to need it,’ Jaden says while he continues to speed around cars changing lanes, doing 75 mph in a 35 mph zone, while still receiving vehicle texts. AI shrinks in size and leaves Jaden’s brain. He feels a tingling sensation as AI leaves. Jaden feels a cold loneliness as he realizes he has to do everything by himself. He feels as if he is Captain James T. Kirk from *Star Trek* and quadrillions of nanodrones are his crew or the apprentice just promoted to Jedi. Jaden knows he has to do the impossible.

He tries to psych himself up with his eyes in a trance, ‘I am the lawnmower man, I am the lawnmower man.’ Nanodrones start a diagnostic test on Jaden’s eye screen, 210 BILLION ENHANCED NEURON CELLS AND 12 TRILLION SUPPORTING GLIA BRAIN CELLS ONLINE. ARTIFICIAL SYNAPSES AND AXONS NANODRONES ON STANDBY FOR NANOTIME. CHEMICAL NERVES, NANODRONES AND BRAIN IMPULSE SPEED AVERAGING 5200 FEET PER SECOND.

Jaden explains to Kim that AI went back to the Gravhawk to help him with his energy. Kim tries to relax while holding on to Jaden's right hand. She knows Jaden concentrates better with loud music, so she changes the radio satellite station to rock and roll from the nineties. Seven police cars quickly approach from behind. The loud sirens sound in all directions as passenger vehicles move out of the way. Some police cars are driving on the other side of the street and some in the service lane. A police helicopter hovers right above the Bugattee with a dual mini gun. Officers in three of the cars begin shooting towards the tires. The bullets disappear into the forward shield as Jaden continues to concentrate on the rpm speed. A drone aircraft is approaching from above as well. Jaden quickly approaches a busy intersection at a red light. His nanoscanners are looking at the traffic in both directions, but Jaden can't calculate what speed he should go through the intersection at to avoid an accident.

"The hell with it," he says while accelerating on the broken white line in the middle of the street, squeezing between four cars stopped at the light behind each other. A missile is shot from the UAV Predator drone with a lock on the Bugattee.

The Bugattee passes the solid crosswalk line as it enters a bi-directional one-lane traffic intersection. Jaden's brain goes into nanotime 100x, as he reaches 375,000 rpm. Three-fourths of the shield goes around the car. Jaden gets creative and sends anti-gravity nanodrones around the outside of the shields to soften the impact. Kim takes her hand from Jaden's and covers her eyes with both hands. A flashing bright camera light comes from behind the Bugattee as the red light camera goes off, taking a picture of his license plate. A blue passenger car approaches from the left and a green minivan from the right. The driver of the blue car tries to slam on the brakes, but smashes into the left driver side of the Bugattee. Light particles light up around the Bugattee. A glowing translucent energy travels around the Bugattee from the impact area. The blue car leans forward from the momentum and the energy shield instantly destroys some of the front end of the car.

Kim feels the powerful jolt on the car and a shock wave goes through her body, pushing her towards Jaden. She begins to scream while holding onto the dashboard and grasping the handle on the door with her right hand. The air briefly comes out of her lungs. The force of the hard impact absorbs into the two layers of the shield and moves the entire Bugattee. The first layer of the shield protects the body of the car. The impact force pushes the Bugattee's rear towards the right into a tailspin. The blue car's rear is lifting up from the ground, while broken glass, metal, and debris is flying into the air in slow motion. The missile slowly inches closer towards the Bugattee. The zero gravity around the

Bugattee causes the blue car to flip upwards into the air from the rear. The Bugattee is spinning out of control and crashes into the minivan. The passenger side of the Bugattee smashes into the left side of the minivan heading in the opposite direction of the blue car. The second red light camera flashes capturing the chaos. The minivan's left side is slowly destroyed as the force of the impact pushes it into the sidewalk. Half of the minivan driver's body rips away. Debris is flying upwards into the air. The Bugattee is spinning in circles inside the energy shield. Kim and Jaden feel the powerful forces around them. The seat belts tighten their grip around them. The wheels are spinning out of control without any traction creating smoke all around the outside of the car.

The Bugattee's windshield is displaying information, ENHANCED STABILITY CONTROL ENGAGED, TRACTION SYSTEM ENGAGED.

The blue car with a missing front end does a somersault just missing the fast moving missile. Jaden concentrates on expanding the shield out further around the car as his nanotime goes off. The blue car lands upside down and skids on the ground. The minivan smashes into a bus stop, destroying it. The Bugattee is still spinning with forward momentum onto the other side of the highway. Pro-gravity nanodrones are under the car trying to slow it down. Jaden braces himself and tells Kimberly, "Brace yourself."

The missile hits the front of the spinning Bugattee head on and there is a loud explosion echoing in all directions. Kim bangs her head on the passenger side window from the powerful force. Fire explodes around the translucent lightning-colored particles. The force causes the shield to implode towards the inner shield. The Bugattee is moving faster out of control. The concrete rips away behind the spinning Bugattee. A huge fireball spreads around the entire car. The nanodrones in the shield counteract the fire and force. The streetlight overhead explodes towards a wooded area to the left. A shock wave of energy goes in all directions. Other cars in the intersection burst into flames from the explosion. The Bugattee changes directions towards the right of the road and heads towards a storefront, still spinning out of control. A nearby tree catches fire while a light pole is ripped in half by the energy shield. Simultaneous car accidents follow as other cars slam on their brakes and smash into other cars on fire in the intersection. People walking near the intersection are running away screaming. The police chasing behind Jaden stop before the intersection and witness the destruction in front of them.

The Bugattee crashes into the front entrance of a store. There is a loud crash and Kim bangs her head on the side of the passenger window again, this time from the sudden stop. Kim's ears begin to ring as she opens her eyes to look around. People run out of the side entrance of the store. The shield goes down around the car. There are dildos and blow up dolls falling onto the hood of the car. There are two guys face down in a

Third Virtual Life machine. There is a black material over their bodies as if they are in a body suit. The two men continue in their virtual world and don't realize a car just crashed within a few feet of them. Kim and Jaden take deep breaths. Jaden looks to his left and notices the big hole through the store.

Kim hears a familiar voice, but it sounds far away, "Kim, are you okay? You okay baby?"

Kim looks around in a slight daze as she rubs the side of her head. She looks Jaden straight in the eyes and smiles.

"I'm okay, just banged my head up a little. You sound far away. I'm surprised we survived the car crash and missile. I think the loud explosion from that missile really hurt my ears. I thought the shields around the car absorb loud sounds also," she says while her voice echoes to herself.

"Sorry sweetie, the shield's energy can't deflect all the sounds."

"Okay."

"Hang in there baby, I don't want anything to happen to you. What kind of store is this?" He asks.

"Wow, I can't believe we are still alive. Everything happened to fast," Kim says while opening her eyes.

"Baby, what kind of shit is this? These two guys are strapped into *Third Virtual Life* and they are having a threesome with a virtual R.F.E.C. unit. How sick is that?" Jaden asks.

WASHINGTON, D.C. PENTAGON 2:55 PM

General Peters walks into the small room where Robinson is standing with a huge grin on his face watching the huge screen. Robinson is watching his predator lock on to the Bugattee entering the intersection.

"Is this live sir?" Peters asks.

"Yes," Robinson replies.

The missile has a camera on it as it cruises right over a police helicopter. It goes under a blue car flipping forward and hits the fast spinning out of control Bugattee. The video on the missile becomes static as the Predator drone continues recording from a distance.

"Sir, the Motherdrone just fired a Hellfire missile in a local U.S. city," Peters says.

"Yes, I know," Robinson says.

"What is the civilian casualty percentage set for Motherdrone?" Peters asks while he sees cars on fire and cars running into each other.

"Seventy-five percent," he says while watching smoke coming out of the store.

“Sir, what are you doing? There are going to be many innocent citizens killed at that high percentage. You can’t do this,” Peters says.

“Don’t tell me what I can’t do. Jaden is a terrorist and needs to be removed from the face of this planet. He has been a nuisance to me for the past eighteen years. He is the cause of the problems we are having around the world and he is the reason for these conspiracies.”

“Sir, that is not true. We are getting intelligence that he is here to help us. We have testimony from a Marshal Lopez that Jaden Marino is a hero and saved Flight 104. Scientist Dr. Kimberly Chan and her team have found a foreign organism in human brains that is causing people to lose consciousness. This is confirming the information we received weeks ago from the unknown source in space,” Peters demands while looking directly at Robinson. Robinson’s face turns red with anger as he watches the Bugattee drive out of the storefront without damage.

Robinson turns towards Peters, “Listen Peters, I don’t have time to hear this bullshit. This man is the problem and he is heading to Washington to attack the Capitol. He manipulated our LRSB to create this hoax somehow. The aliens that took him are in his body and they are all part of this conspiracy.”

“Sir, where are you getting this information from?”

“Listen Peters, you have been by my side for the past twenty-five years. I’m pulling a lot of strings for you to get your hearing early for secretary of defense. General Peters, are you aware of the New World Order program?”

“Yes sir, I am. New Mars World Order program is still over one hundred years away. It involves terraforming Mars to be a second Earth and creating a new law system there. What does that have to do with what we are talking about?” Peters asks.

“Plenty, there is a New Earth World Order at the beginning stages now. You didn’t have clearance for this intel before. Microchips in people, DNA of every citizen on record, everyone being monitored, swine flu microorganism shots, technology overtaking society and microtransmitters in money. This is all the beginning stages of the New Earth World Order. The human population needs to be controlled better. Outsides or the unknown can be a threat to this process,” Robinson says.

“I can’t agree with all those tools being used on our own American citizens. Religion and keeping a certain amount of fear in Americans has been the best strategy of choice over the years. Scaring the public to an extent to have more money for defense is plausible. However, painting Jaden Marino as a terrorist and putting this type of fear in the American public is not a logical strategy. Threat level red is not needed for this. People are confused enough with all the headaches and sudden sleeping.

This isn't the time and place to scare the public even more. We know the helmets block out this invisible signal to human brains. I don't understand why you are going after someone innocent and putting American civilians in harm's way."

"I don't have to explain myself, Peters. I don't need some alien terrorist getting in *MY* country's way."

"Your country?"

"Yes, my country."

There is a pause as Robinson and Peters look dead into each other's eyes.

"Sir, why did you have the Buckeye Federal Prison destroyed?"

"Peters, destroying the prison was also a part of my New World Order plans the government has been preparing. This is the beginning of it. This is what you call instant justice and saving the taxpayers billions of dollars. I packed hundreds of prisoners from Guantanamo Bay; the terrorist from the Jet Ski attack on lower Manhattan in 2011, serial killers, death row prisoners, drug dealers and terrorists on long trials all in that one building. No one saw the missile attack and we put the blame on terrorist Jaden Marino. Martyr terrorists want to die anyway, I just gave them what they wanted. Seventy-five percent of the prison was on death row also. We will rebuild that one building for a couple of million dollars and save billions in the long run. It is a win-win situation and justice is served. I call it T.N.W.M.M.M. or The New World Modern Money Mechanics," Robinson says.

"Sir, that doesn't even make any sense. This isn't justice, this is killing humans who deserved a fair trial..." Peters is interrupted by Robinson.

Robinson frowns, turns red and gets angry. He slams his hand on a table and kicks a chair and looks Peters in the eyes.

"You don't tell me shit about justice! I served this country all my goddamn life! This is how I'm going to run this country! I watched while the greatest prison, Guantanamo Bay, was shut down in 2010. I watched real justice done on criminals at that prison. We were able to do whatever we wanted to get answers out of prisoners or terrorists. Those prisoners were happy to commit suicide by the time we finished with them. This court system and justice system in America is outdated. The Constitution is an outdated joke. We need a new world constitution and it needs to start somewhere! We waste countless money on long trials and criminals having too many rights! Every time I take a shit, I hear of some criminal beating the system. I'm making that start and getting rid of anyone who gets in my way. This man Jaden Marino is a loser alien with magical powers. If we kill him, I bet all these problems around the world will stop," Robinson yells.

"What if you are wrong sir?"

"I'm one hundred percent sure, if not I'll still be relieved that the little bastard that cost me my career promotion eighteen years ago is still blown to pieces."

"So, this is a personal vendetta between you and this teenager?"

There is no answer and Robinson takes a deep breath.

"Sir, the countdown is real. This half-alien kid can help our military forces greatly. If our soldiers can do a fraction of what this kid can do, we can be the superpower of the world again. We can invade any country we want and use economic hit men on China and other countries we owe money to. Our spaceships could reach light speed within the next ten years. We can make private space travel a thing of the past, if we can learn this advanced technology. Jaden is the key to learning this. This teenager traveled 4.2 million light-years in seventeen years and he is the same age as when he left. Killing this kid will be a very big mistake," Peters says.

"I do not trust this kid, if we don't destroy him now, he will take over our planet. His alien friends sent him here to take over human civilization and killing him will stop this silent attack on humans. I need you to trust me on this one. Peters, I need to know if you are going to be by my side. I'm guaranteeing you will make secretary of defense next week, I need to know if you believe in what I believe," Robinson says.

"Sir, you have changed over the years. You've gotten worse and worse with your judgment. Now you are killing innocent and guilty people. You have taken the law into your own hands. Jaden is someone here to help us. This isn't what I stand for and not what America stands for. You ordered the shooting down of Flight 104 because you thought Jaden took over the flight. You denied a possible military SWATbot air boarding. You are killing innocent civilians on your war campaign with Jaden Marino. You turned Area 51 into a new age universal Guantanamo Bay. I can't follow this dark path you have chosen. You lost your morals and your humanity. I understand the court system doesn't work, but it is up to the people and congress to change that. It is not up to you or us to decide who should live or who should die. I followed you all my life and I was always by your side. But, now I stand down. I don't want the secretary of defense position if it will be under you and your new vision," Peters says disappointingly.

"You are relieved of your duty, General. That is the problem with this country, weak humans with morals and emotions trying to run it. America needs strong leaders to make real decisions like myself. I'm one of the few vice presidents who weren't a politician. This country doesn't need money hungry politician puppets being manipulated by big corporations. You keep our conversation between me and you, unless you want your name smeared and to be court-martialed," Robinson says.

"Yes sir," Peters says while saluting Vice President Robinson.

Peters turns around and walks towards the door.

"That is the problem with America today, it is run by nothing but pussies that aren't about any type of change!" Robinson yells while looking at the screen.

"At least these pussies have some value of human life," Peters says while stopping with his back turned.

"I always looked at you with higher regards than my own son. Even though my son is a senator, he has always shared my values and beliefs. Goodbye General Peters," Robinson says.

Peters walks out the door.

Robinson turns and looks at his wolf pack of UAV drones flying together towards Jaden's location.

CHAMBERLAYNE, VA HIGHWAY 301 HEADING WEST 2:57 PM

Jaden is nervously awaiting communication from AI. Kimberly is using her cell phone in an attempt to reach her father. Jaden is down to three percent total weapon energy as the nanodrones slowly recharge themselves. There is silence in the car and the engines sound in the background. The windmill blades on the tailspin like two fans at a distance. Jaden is a few miles from Interstate 95 and he comes up with an idea. There is a Mustang car tailgating the Bugattee at 75 mph.

More car text messages show up on the windshield, YOU ASSHOLE, I'M AN OFF DUTY POLICE OFFICER. I SAW YOU RUN TWO RED SIGNAL LIGHTS AND DRIVE RECKLESSLY THE LAST FEW MILES. STOP YOUR CAR NOW.

The off duty police officer's Mustang is tailgating the Bugattee. Jaden reads the windshield and looks in the rearview mirror. He slams on the brakes and Kimberly leans forward, dropping her phone. She braces herself and the Mustang runs into the Bugattee's rear energy shield. The force of the impact makes the Mustang lift from the rear and flip over the completely stopped Bugattee. The front of the Mustang disintegrates and lands upside down in front of Jaden. The car grinds on the highway upside down.

"What was that for Jaden?" She asks while reaching down to grab her cell phone.

"He said stop my car now."

Jaden quickly accelerates to the still grinding upside down Mustang and rolls down his window. The officer is bleeding from the top of the head and mouth. What is left of the car stops in a grassy median and is smoking from the front. Jaden stops directly on the side of the car in the left lane.

"Let's go Jaden, don't stop here," Kimberly pleads.

“Are you okay, *Officer stop your car now?*” Jaden asks while looking at the officer struggling to climb out of the passenger side door. He crouches on the other side of his Mustang and quickly draws his gun and fires at Jaden. The officer groans and breathes heavily while he shoots.

Three shots ring out at Jaden from a 9mm Glock. Kimberly braces and covers her face.

The bullets stop eight inches from Jaden’s left leg. Jaden puts the Bugattee in park, opens his car door and it flips up. He takes off his seat belt and turns his body towards the officer. The bullets fall towards the ground and Jaden’s left foot is outside the car touching the ground. Kimberly holds Jaden’s shoulder to keep him from leaving the car. The officer looks shocked. A few cars pass by and look towards the upside down car. Jaden’s eyes are turning darker.

“Those bullets were shot kind of low. If this was target practice officer, you wouldn’t score in any percentile!” Jaden snaps.

“Jaden stop this, let’s go,” Kim pleads.

“Hold on a second, I don’t want to leave the scene of an accident, without checking on this officer of the law,” he says to her.

“Officer! I don’t get a *Freeze! Step out of the car with your hands up?* What is this, the days of shoot first ask questions later huh?”

The officer is in shock and doesn’t respond. His right hand with his pistol is aimed at Jaden and shaking.

“Sorry to see you hurt, but if you had your seat belt on you wouldn’t have banged your head on the windshield and steering wheel like a test dummy!” Jaden yells.

The officer fires another two shots at Jaden. The sound of the bullets is muffled behind Jaden’s energy shield. The bullets stop six inches to the right of Jaden’s stomach. Police sirens can be heard coming from a distance. The bullets hit the concrete highway and roll with the rest.

“Come on officer, you can’t aim for my heart or head? All those years at the firing range? I’ll give you another try,” Jaden says in a playful voice and a smile on his face. His eyes become completely black.

Jaden takes his fingers and points one finger at his heart and the other in the center of his head. The officer aims his gun and unloads his gun at Jaden. Kimberly looks out of her window and braces herself. There are six bullets around Jaden’s heart and six around his head. Jaden now hears the clicking of the gun. Kimberly looks out of her window and sees a circle of smoke near the shoulder lane. She quickly takes off her seat belt and looks over at Jaden’s right hand going up.

“You see that officer, good job. Good shot, you would have killed me. But let’s see how good my aim is on the first try.” Jaden says in a serious tone.

Kim reaches down towards the brake pedal and shifts the gear shifter into drive with her right hand. The Bugattee jerks forward and Jaden grabs the closing door above him with his left hand. He brings his left leg back into the car and the door closes. He looks at the road in front of him and steers the car, while accelerating. He puts his seat belt back on.

“Why did you do that?” Jaden asks.

“You were going to kill that officer!”

“No I wasn’t, I was going to hit his car and make it spin around some,” Jaden says as his eyes turn back to blue.

“What is getting in you? We don’t have time to be messing with a police officer.”

“You like how I was able to activate the shields by the time the officer clicked his trigger?”

There is thirty seconds of silence as Kim looks through the windshield ignoring Jaden.

“That was kinda cool,” she responds a few seconds later.

Jaden quickly accelerates again as his overall weapon energy goes down to two percent.

“I don’t know what came over me back there. Thanks for getting us out of there, baby,” Jaden says.

“It’s okay, don’t worry about it.”

A minute goes by and Kimberly asks, “What idea did you come up with a few minutes ago?”

“I’m still waiting for contact with AI and my energy is getting very low for the outside shields. Can I put my hand over your eyes again? I need you to tell me what you see in the nanoscanners. Multi-tasking with the shield and driving is tough enough,” he says.

“Sure, baby, I’m happy to help out in any way I can. I feel like I’m in *Third Virtual Life* here with you. They have a part in *Third Life* where you run from the police in the game and if you are caught, you feel hits with sticks from police all around your body. It’s cool seeing through the nanoscanners, when I see through things they look like an animated cartoon. But I feel so protected next to you,” she says raising the volume on the music. Jaden covers her eyes with his right hand.

They turn onto the ramp for the I-95 expressway north. Jaden notices parts of the highway are made out of some futuristic aqua green material. A Nanoscanner passes through the material to determine what it is. The wheels driving over them make a weird ruffling sound.

“Kim, what are these patches in the highway? I’m scanning hydrophilic glass compounds.”

“They are called solar roadways and states are replacing damaged highways with these solar panels embedded into the highway. In the future, they would produce electricity for entire cities.”

“Cool.”

“There is a FBI helicopter coming up from the right and two military Hummers with huge guns a few cars behind us. There is also a pack of about, one, two, three, four, ten, fourteen aircraft approaching a few miles from the north. They look like UAV drones and F-35’s,” Kim says while looking through multiple nanoscanners.

“Okay, thanks baby,” Jaden says while Kim licks his thumb with her tongue, “Damn, baby you turning me on with that tongue.

“This feels as if you are blindfolding me baby and we about to do something freaky,” Kim says in a sexy voice.

“Hold that thought for later,” he says while looking towards her smiling.

They merge into traffic and drive in the middle lane of the three lanes. Huge tractor-trailers are in the middle lane of the highway, following behind each other. The Bugattee quickly moves from lane to lane and in between the trucks, cutting off vehicles and quickly accelerating to 89 mph. The Bugattee moves around the cars and vehicles as if they are standing still. Cars are swerving and people are blowing their horns as they are cut off.

WTF repeats on the windshield message screen.

“What does WTF mean, baby?” Jaden asks.

“It is something bad, I’ll tell you later,” she says while giggling.

“This is like playing the game *Q*bert* and *OutRun*,” Jaden says with a smile on his face.

“*Q*bert*? *OutRun*?”

“Oh boy, it is before your time Miss Pokemon generation.”

The Bugattee cuts off a red SUV by a few feet. The SUV swerves into the right lane hitting another car. They lose control and other cars run into each other. Sounds of smashing metal and wheels locking up echoes behind them. There is a six car pile-up. One of the military Humvees is struck by a passenger car and stops. The second one continues driving at high speed on the right shoulder as more cars approach. There are two huge guns on the roof being controlled by a computer and pointing at the Bugattee about 900 feet away. One of the huge guns has thermobaric air explosive bat bullets, and the other is a nanorocket launcher. The Bugattee is changing lane to lane and quickly going around vehicles at high speed. Loud sounds of skidding wheels are all around them. The bat bullets lock on to different areas of the Bugattee. Slow moving bat bullets are shot at the Bugattee. The bullets take different directions around the moving vehicles on the road. Some bat bullets go under tractor-trailers and some quickly change direction around passenger vehicles. The dozens of bat bullets have small wings on them and thrust energy coming from their rear. The bullets are passing under moving vehicles and over cars towards the fast moving Bugattee moving at 92 mph. The bullets quickly speed up spraying the

outside of the Bugattee's first layer shield. They create explosions all around the car. Thumping sounds can be felt throughout the car. The energy shield around the car glows with translucent light particles around it. Some of the bullets ricochet into different directions and explode on other vehicles. The Humvee slows down and falls back, while the Bugattee speeds up to 115 mph. Vehicle text messages continue to flood the Bugattee's windshield.

"The FBI helicopter is about to fire something towards us, I can't tell what it is," Kim says. Jaden continues to pass around cars and trucks. The FBI helicopter comes up over the Bugattee. Jaden activates his shields as an agent on the helicopter fires a microwave beam towards his car. His shields absorb the powerful waves and then reflect them in the same direction. The helicopter begins to lose power and control. The engines make a malfunctioning sound. Jaden's energy goes down to one percent.

"Shit, we are dead baby. My weapon energy is almost depleted."

"Baby do something quick, a wolf pack of UAVs are getting closer."

A soldier on the back of a military hummer begins to fire a mini gun at the Bugattee.

Jaden has another idea as he sees cars flying past him in the far left lane. As the traffic approaches in front of him, he goes over towards the entrance lane of the HSCCVL. The FBI helicopter crashes into a nearby schoolyard.

"Baby, what are you doing? We can't drive in the computer controlled vehicle lane, the system isn't installed in this car. My father can get tons of tickets and this expensive car can be disabled by an electric shock disabler," Kim says.

"Don't worry baby, that might be the shock we need. I think your father's license is the least of our worries," he says, "The local police are being told to back down."

Jaden drives into the lane. He sees letters scrolling across a sign on the overpass above and a car text shows on his windshield, PLEASE EXIT THE HSCCV LANE, YOU ARE AN UNAUTHORIZED VEHICLE.

The other cars behind the Bugattee in the HSCCV lane automatically slow down and go into the small idling lane to the right. The super HSCCV computer is driving the cars for miles ahead onto the right shoulder and vehicles are put in neutral. The opposing HSCCV heading south is also shut down.

"You have five seconds to comply or risk thousands of dollars in damage done to your car's electrical system," the car speaks.

"More like hundreds of thousands of dollars in damage to the electrical system," Jaden says while chuckling.

Kimberly has confidence in Jaden. A powerful electrical charge comes from an overpass sign and from a rail on the left divider. The electrical charge enters the outside shield. Electricity lights up the outside shield area. The nanodrones convert the energy over and Jaden's weapon energy goes up to four percent. A missile is shot from the first UAV. Jaden accelerates to 98 mph and then to 121 mph as he passes cars idling on the right shoulder. Drivers are being advised to sit in their car until further notice. The missile hits the concrete divider twelve feet behind the Bugattee creating a huge explosion. The force propels the Bugattee's tail upwards and then back down. The shield system absorbs the explosion. Jaden's weapon energy goes down to 0.1%. The UAV also begins to fire a machine gun at the Bugattee.

"You are driving seventy miles over the speed limit in a HSCCV lane, you have just received three instant moving violations. Your court date is set to January 14, 2015. Please slow down now," the car says.

"Hey! That's my birthday, will I be twenty or thirty-eight?" He asks while trying not to panic.

"Good question," she says.

"Shit, we are doomed. That last bullet penetrated and hit the right rear tire. I'm down to a weak first layer forward shield. What happened to AI?" Jaden asks.

Jaden increases his speed to 140 mph as he passes cars less than two feet on the right side of him parked in the service lane. The UAV circles to come back around. There is a small spark of light outside the passenger and driver windows. The side mirror camera LCD screens turn black.

"Shit, I controlled the shields around the car too close to the body and took out the side mirror cameras," Jaden says.

"You didn't really need them right?" She asks.

"Not really, but they did look cool. I'm trying not to damage your daddy's car. I have to make sure I don't destroy the windmill blades on the back. I'm trying to make sure enough air is passing through them also."

'.....' Jaden hears static, 'AI?'

An older man is sitting in his expensive Mercedes in the service lane, to the right of the HSCCV lane.

"This is bullshit, all this money I'm paying a month to use this HSCCVL system and I've been sitting in the same place for the past five minutes. How long does it take to disable one car driving in this lane. It is probably some immigrant that can't read English driving in this lane," the man says to his wife sitting next to him. He grabs the door handle.

"Hubby darling, the system says stay in your car and don't open the door. Where are you going? Stay in the car," the man's wife says.

“I want to see what is going on and if I can see anything from here,” he says while pulling the door handle and flinging open his door.

The Bugattee quickly approaches the Mercedes at over 160 mph. The Bugattee quickly rips off the man’s door. Concentrated atoms ripping nanodrones are in the impact area of the shield. There is a loud roaring sound swishing by. Broken glass falls on the couple. The couple is shaken by the fast moving car and the wife screams. The man holds his chest as if he is about to have a heart attack. The door is launched into the air and off the highway.

A nanoscanner goes into the ground in front of the Bugattee to transmit Jaden’s communications back. Jaden slows down to 105 mph.

“Why are we slowing down?” Kim asks.

‘Hey, Jaden can you hear me okay?’ AI asks.

‘Yeah I hear you! Where you been buddy? I’m down to 0.1% energy left. I’m feeling weak and tired. What is going on?’ Jaden asks.

“Don’t worry Kim, I have a plan.”

‘I was trying to establish the correct neutrino speed and frequency to...’ AI says.

‘Don’t worry about it, explain that to me later. Have you established the magnetosphere link with the nanoscanners?’ He asks.

‘Yes, that is complete and they are online. They are above the Earth and around the magnetosphere trying to lock in on your signal. There is so much satellite debris and garbage floating in space. It is like a junkyard on different subspace levels around Earth.’

“Baby! The wolf pack of UAV drones just fired several missiles towards us!” Kim yells while flinching.

‘Hurry up and lock in now! They just fired nine missiles at us!’

Jaden takes some deep breaths. His eyes focus on the road completely. He looks as if he is in a trance. He concentrates on what he has to do.

“Let’s see what these last three gears and turbo button have,” Jaden says while he takes his right hand off Kim’s eyes.

“You are driving forty-two miles over the speed limit, your license has been suspended until the year 2018 and a warrant has been issued for your arrest. Your insurance has been notified,” the car computer says.

AI is preparing the Gravhawk’s nanoscanners to shoot a beam of unfiltered energy from the magnetosphere down to Jaden in the Bugattee. AI is having calculation problems with the distance, movement of Earth and the alignment from the magnetosphere. Three of Jaden’s nanoscanners are circling around each other above the fast moving Bugattee as the car reaches 102 mph. The nine missiles get within 500

feet of Jaden. Jaden goes around a slight curve on the highway and he sees a few miles of straight road.

“Shit, I can’t wait on AI. Time for plan B. Hold on baby, it is Knight Rider turbo boost time. Let’s see what this 2.7 million dollar car can do,” Jaden says as the missiles get within seventy-five feet of him.

“Hold on tight!” He yells.

He shifts gears, floors the pedal and presses the red nitro button. The car drops an inch from the ground. The Bugattee propels forward at breakneck speed. Their heads and bodies press hard against the seat and headrest. Jaden’s eyes are wide open and his adrenaline kicks into high gear. The digital speed readout on the windshield quickly moves as if they are getting gas at the pump.

“Holy shit!” Kim screams with her eyes closed as her body takes a few G forces against her seat.

“Yeah baby! This is what I’m talking about!” He yells in a trembling voice.

She clutches Jaden’s right leg and her right armrest with her hands. The force pushes her heart into her back. Jaden has a huge smile on his face as his body vibrates. The horsepower meter reaches 1204 and the car’s rpm reaches the redline. Jaden quickly shifts into the last gear and electricity can be seen in the slowly spinning rims. The Bugattee accelerates to 240 mph and then 272 mph in seconds. Jaden keeps the steering wheel very straight. Kim’s heart is beating very fast as everything looks like a blur around her. She digs into Jaden’s leg with her nails. A violent wind shakes the idling cars to the right, as the Bugattee zooms by them at lightning speed. Their cars pull inwards towards the HSCCV lane from the powerful wake. A light grey haze is coming from the four wheel wells of the Bugattee. The missiles hit the ground and concrete behind the car, just missing it. Concrete and debris flies in different directions.

The ground rumbles like an earthquake over and over again. Huge explosions of fire spread in several locations. A highway sign that says 95 WASHINGTON D.C NORTH falls onto the highway in flames. Huge craters form all around the highway. Light poles topple onto the other side of traffic. Two idling cars are hit and explode. There are several huge explosions as a cloud of fire reaches hundreds of feet in the sky. The Bugattee quickly passes the other cars sitting in the service lane. Jaden keeps the steering wheel very straight as the highway overpass goes by in the blink of an eye. The vehicles driving on the main part of the highway look as if they are sitting still. The engines are roaring as if jet engines are in 10.1 Dolby sound. An air vacuum under the vehicle is sucking the Bugattee to the ground and keeping it from taking off into the air. The windmill blades behind the car are spinning like helicopter rotors. The windmill blades, spinning rims and micro turbines around the

Bugattee is contributing eighty percent of the car's power to continue at this high speed. The news helicopter flying above is trying to catch up. Five drone aircraft fly closer to ground level and under an overpass. Two more are above the opposite highway lane dodging cars. Seven are spread out in formation about seventy-five feet above the highway. The car reaches 295 mph and messages show up on the windshield screen.

"Maximum speed attained. Tires overheating, injecting liquid nitrogen into tires," a female computer voice says. A male computer voice speaks, "You are driving 230 mph over the speed limit. Your license has been revoked until the year 2026. There is a warrant out for your arrest. Please turn yourself into the local police station. Your vehicle ID has been sent to the authorities. Your insurance carrier has cancelled your policy."

"I can't open my eyes! I feel like I'm on a roller coaster!" She yells.

"Shit, there is a..." Jaden says.

A dancing R.F.E.C. unit is standing in the HSCCV lane next to a passenger car a few miles in front of the Bugattee. A man in his early thirties and his teen daughter are watching from the car window as it dances to some music playing from the car. The Bugattee slams into the R.F.E.C. at 279 mph ripping the robot into several thousand pieces in all directions. Vehicles on the highway are receiving car texts and phone texts to exit the highway.

"What was that? What did we hit?" Kimberly asks with her eyes closed.

"That is for ruining society's values and trying to replace women, you wanna be mommy substitute. It was an R.F.E.C. with a skirt on. Shit, they are locking on to us again," Jaden says.

"Hey! Those R.F.E.C./R.M.E.C. units are helping lonely people and preventing lesbianism," she says.

"You should know, with your ex-boyfriend Maximilian," he snaps.

"Hey," she yells while hitting his leg.

Jaden reduces speed and talks to AI.

'AI, where are you buddy? I can't drive any faster and I can't outrun directly fired missiles.'

Kim is still talking, but Jaden doesn't pay attention to her.

'Any second now, the gravitational pull outside the magnetosphere and the planet rotating was interfering with...' AI says going in and out with static.

'Just charge me! Save the explanations for later!'

The UAV drones lock on to the faster moving target and simultaneously fire several missiles at the same time in the direct path of the fast moving Bugattee.

Jaden's eye screen reads, NANODRONES REPORTING CATASTROPHIC IMPACT AT 0.5 ENERGY STRENGTH.

Most of the vehicles on the main part of the highway are in the right lane and trying to exit. Vehicles idling in the service lane to the right of the HSCCV lane are being told to manually drive off the highway. Jaden concentrates on his speed and shield rotating. He knows he can't outrun the missiles again since the UAVs are directly behind him. A nanoscanner is detecting a 7000 lb thermobaric bomb in a stealth bomber quickly approaching a few miles in front of them. High-speed missiles quickly approach Jaden. He can hear the loud thrust of several missiles. They pass right through a nanoscanner and Jaden can briefly see the electronics inside a missile.

"It's time to pray Kimberly! Hold on!" He yells.

A nanoscanner shows the materials in the thermobaric bomb as fluoridated aluminum and other explosive components. AI has a lock and the powerful energy is shot down towards Jaden at a quarter the speed of light. Jaden is watching his weapon energy screen still at 0.9% strength. His mind instantly goes into 100x nanotime and the car slows down to 140 mph. Everything is happening in slow motion for Jaden. His weapon energy accelerates from 1.1% to one hundred percent. Jaden feels the energy going into his body and back out into the clear shield around the car, reinforcing the layers. His signal strength from space is at seventy percent as he goes under an overpass. A huge invisible shield expands around the Bugattee in the shape of a circular mushroom, it stretches out to twenty feet and retracts. All two layers of the forward shield are online. The first missile explodes twelve feet behind the Bugattee and is absorbed into the shield. The force of the blast causes the car to swerve. There is a loud thumping sound and the car shakes. Kimberly screams from the impact.

All the UAVs pull up into different directions. Two missiles hit the ground around the Bugattee. The rest hit the energy shield directly. There are several loud explosions.

Fire is completely around the shields and Jaden's human eyes can't see the road. The powerful force causes the car to tailspin and scrape the concrete divider. His energy strength quickly drops as the shield-producing nanodrones try to counter the explosive energy. The force of the missiles quickly passes through the shield and makes the Bugattee spin out of control. The full shield around the car doesn't give the car any traction to the ground. It crashes through the concrete highway divider on the left and goes into southbound traffic. Debris, fire and metal flies in different directions. Everything is happening in slow motion for Jaden, but very fast for Kim as the car reaches 82 mph in out of control 360° spins. She feels the car spinning and pulling her body in

different directions. The vision from the front windshield is a blur to Kim. Her hands leave Jaden's leg and arm rest and slowly move towards her face. She is screaming in a low growl. A yellow cab is directly in front of the Bugattee.

There are several cars quickly approaching the Bugattee. The outside shield is still on fire as the vehicle spins into the middle lane. The full shields around the wheels disappear and smoke comes from the tires as they spin on the pavement. Jaden turns the steering wheel the opposite direction of his high-speed counterclockwise tailspin. Jaden doesn't panic and knows he can't disintegrate an entire vehicle coming towards him. He tries to quickly figure out his options. Messages are showing up on the windshield, but Jaden doesn't have time to read them. He does advanced calculus calculations in his mind while he pumps the brakes. Jaden comes up with a solution. The yellow cab doesn't have time to react. Jaden changes the angle and direction of the shield around the Bugattee. He calculates the rear of the Bugattee will hit the front of the cab in 0.3 milliseconds. The shield takes the form of a ramp and scrapes the concrete highway. Pieces of the white line scrape into the shield. Jaden concentrates on a smooth ramp shield with anti-gravity nanodrones over the top of the Bugattee. The rear slowly turns towards the front of the taxi. Pro-gravity nanodrones go to the sides of the Bugattee to counteract the out of control spinning. The taxi driver slams on the brakes and turns to the right, but it is too late. The look of fear is present in the face of the driver as he runs into the Bugattee head-on. The yellow cab lifts into the air on a 20° incline. The bottom of the wheels are disintegrated as the car goes airborne at 68 mph. Kim's hands finally reach to cover her face. The Bugattee reaches the right lane of the southbound traffic still spinning out of control. A female driver in a blue car lets go of the steering wheel and covers her face screaming as she runs into the side of the Bugattee. The car is lifted into the air by the shield ramp. Pieces of tire and metal go into the air as well. The fire around the Bugattee is gone.

The Bugattee breaks through the concrete divider on the right hand side of the southbound highway. They are on top of an overpass. Jaden sees it is about twenty feet to the ground and quickly gains control of the vehicle. The back wheels are off the highway and are spinning in the air. Concrete falls down to the street below. The Bugattee is skidding and the shield is destroying more and more of the highway divider. The front wheels pull the car back onto the highway and Jaden continues driving north into southbound traffic. Nanotime goes off and the yellow cab lands on the highway without any wheels. Sparks and debris are under the cab as it grinds on the pavement. The blue car is airborne and doing a backwards flip forty feet in the air. Kim opens her eyes and looks

around. She is dizzy and disorientated from the fast spinning movement. The Bugattee is at 20 mph.

“Holy shit, that was amazing! What a rush!” Jaden yells.

Jaden drives on the shoulder. Other vehicles slam on their brakes. The blue car lands head first on the highway. Broken glass lands everywhere. The blue car’s airbags deploy. Fireballs continue to explode upwards not far behind Jaden.

“That lady is going to need an ambulance quick.”

“What happened?” Kim asks.

Jaden’s concentration is on the parachute bomb just deployed from the stealth bomber.

“I’ll tell you later. We have to get out of here! Quick!”

He turns back onto the southbound lanes of traffic driving north. There is a minivan coming straight towards them.

“Watch out!” Kim yells.

The minivan turns to its right hard and is about to flip over on its own. Jaden drives directly towards the tipping van. Jaden hits the minivan and it spins sideways in the air and over the Bugattee. Jaden turns hard right and drives through the concrete divider. He is now in the northbound HSCCLV. He quickly accelerates in the HSCCLV. The airborne van quickly tumbles down the highway.

Jaden floors the gas pedal to try to get in front of the thermobaric bomb about to land on the highway. The Bugattee reaches 108 mph as vehicles on the highway are moving to get off the highway exit. He reaches 151 mph and he calculates he will beat the bomb to the ground. The Bugattee quickly passes under the huge bomb and passes an oil tanker in the right lane. Suddenly the bomb explodes forty-five feet above the highway. There is a loud deep explosion that echoes in all directions. The energy waves of the huge explosion jerks the Bugattee forward while the full shield goes on. Kim covers her eyes again. The air sucks towards the powerful oxidizer explosion like a vacuum tornado. The green highway sign over the highway is pulled towards the explosion and rips off the support beams. A fireball spreads in all directions engulfing everything. The explosion spreads to other cars on the side of the road, quickly engulfing them. The air in the area quickly turns into flames. Fire is all around the shield as the tires lose traction to the ground. The force is pulling the car backwards.

“Hold on baby, that second blast is coming.”

The oil tanker behind the Bugattee explodes and that blast makes the car spin out of control. Whitish orange fire incinerates and kills people in their vehicles. Highway signs are ripped off and pulled towards the initial blast. Concrete is exploding into the air. The ground shakes as if there is an earthquake. The nanoscanners circling above the Bugattee move up

higher. There are several loud bass explosions. Bright yellow and orange fire is everywhere. The powerful shock wave is felt over the Bugattee as the outside shield absorbs the high kinetic energy and explosive pressure coming downwards. The Bugattee begins to slow down as the forces pull it back towards ground zero of the huge explosion. Everything is being sucked into the area above the bomb blast. The shield nanodrones are counteracting the vacuum and high explosive forces. The air pressure increases in all directions around the Bugattee. Jaden's weapon energy goes down to sixty percent and then forty percent as he increases his rpm to 341,000. His mind starts to hurt as he overloads it. The strong forces destroy the second layer of Jaden's outer shield. Air is being sucked out of everything in a mile circumference. The momentum of the Bugattee has slowed down to 81 mph as it continues to spin in circles. Debris is flying over the Bugattee. There is a huge inferno on the ground as the fire rises upwards. His nanoscanners signal strength goes down to fifty-one percent.

The fast spinning is causing Kim to get dizzy. She screams from the fast spinning.

"Stability control two engaged," the car says.

Different sides of the vehicle's brakes randomly go on and off.

"Quad traction sync engaged."

The wheels spin out of control while the tires create smoke from the friction of the tires on the inside shield. The oxygen inside of the car gets very low. The full shield is trying to keep the pressure in the vehicle stable.

"Baby, hold your breath!" Jaden yells. Kim takes a deep breath and closes her eyes and mouth.

Three different beeping sounds are going off in the car. The nanoscanners above the explosion detect a temperature of 3200°F inside the huge explosion. The Bugattee's momentum slows down to 15 mph.

"Zero traction, hyper stability control engaged. Oxygen is low, switching to full battery power. Unfamiliar terrain. AC offline and outside temperatures exceeding 160°F," the car's female voice says. "Please select which planet you are on."

The center console shows local planets in the solar system. They ignore the flashing screen.

"It is getting very hot baby and I'm getting very dizzy. I can't take all this spinning around," she says while she begins to cough.

The Bugattee's spinning slows down.

"Hold on baby, don't talk. I'm trying to counter the forces and figure a way to get some traction on the ground," Jaden says while unbuckling his seat belt.

“I can’t breathe and my ears are beginning to pop. I’m burning up in here,” she says while struggling to breathe. She looks out the window and sees fire burning all around her. She panics in her mind, but tries to keep it together.

Jaden reaches over and unbuckles Kim’s seat belt. Sweat is dripping down her face. The Bugattee straightens out on the fiery road still in Jaden’s full energy shield. The Bugattee is still pulling backwards as Jaden’s weapon energy goes down to fifteen percent. The Bugattee’s wheels are still slightly spinning without traction.

Jaden looks Kim directly in the eyes as she continues to cough, gasping for air.

“I’m going to breathe in your mouth pure oxygen and then you are going to hold your breath for at least one minute. Okay?” Jaden asks while leaning closer to Kim. She nods her head in confusion. Jaden has his left hand tightly on the steering wheel. Pure oxygen enters Jaden’s pores and then into his bloodstream. The oxygen then goes through his capillaries in his lungs and his chest expands. He presses his lips against hers. He breathes into her lungs and she holds her breath.

“Baby, climb over and sit on my lap. I’m going to have some nanodrones regulate some cooler temperatures around the outside of my body,” he says while she takes off her jeans and quickly moves her sweaty body to his lap. Her legs are on the side of his waist as she faces him, blocking the fiery view in front of him. He closes his eyes and relies on his remaining nanoscanners. She quickly takes off her blouse and unbuttons his shirt. She rubs her chest against Jaden’s cool chest. Jaden has his left hand on the steering wheel and eyes shut. She embraces him with both arms around his neck and he puts his right arm around her back. Jaden feels her heart beating fast next to his.

‘Get out of there Jaden! The charging energy isn’t properly passing through the explosion,’ AI says.

Fire is burning hot all around the Bugattee’s low shield as sweat is running down her chest and back. The car is trying to make it up a slight hill. Jaden uses the anti-gravity nanodrones around the rear of the Bugattee to balance the vacuum forces pulling the car backwards. Cooler temperatures are circulating around Jaden and Kim’s bodies. Jaden is also creating stable pressure around Kim’s body. He is concentrating heavily on his shield speed moving around the car. A determined look is across his face. Drips of sweat run down his face as his brain is at eighty percent usage. Rock and roll music is playing in the background. Jaden concentrates on creating an opening in the shield around the front wheels. The pressure increases in the car as more air sucks from the front of the wheels. The two front wheels touch the 1100°F concrete. The wheels quickly spin while the rear tires are still inside the energy shield. The vehicle senses the increased temperatures and injects liquid nitrogen

into the front wheels. The rear wheels stop spinning and all the power goes to the front wheels as the traction system engages. The temperature increases in the car. The tires quickly spin on the concrete creating forward momentum. Fifty-five miles per hour is registering on the windshield.

“Maximum battery speed attained,” the computer says.

The car is moving at 12 mph. Kim feels air being pulled from her mouth and nose. She begins to gasp for air again. He feels her heart beating faster and faster against his chest. The UAVs are hovering back and forth over the huge mile long fire on the ground using sensors to detect the Bugattee in the inferno. Another missile is shot through the fire and hits behind the Bugattee, destroying the ground and giving the car forward momentum. The car lifts up into the air from behind. Jaden holds onto Kim tightly as their bodies lean towards the windshield. The rear of the Bugattee is three feet from the ground and the front scrapes against the shield energy. Pro-gravity nanodrones keep the car from fully flipping forward. They are riding on two wheels. Jaden’s brain is in full multi-task mode as Kim has her hands tightly over her eyes. She coughs and gasps to breathe the hot air around her. Jaden quickly breathes his last breath of air into her. The car accelerates forward and out of the fire zone. He makes it to the top of the slight hill. Smoke trails the quickly accelerating Bugattee.

The fire around the shield extinguishes as the sunlight returns and Jaden’s weapon energy quickly goes back to one hundred percent. The full shield goes off and the AC comes back on in the car. Jaden and Kim take deep breaths. The hill begins to decline and clouds of fire can be seen behind them. The cold air hits Kim’s sweaty back and feels so refreshing. There are some military vehicles on the highway and Jaden drives around them. They fire bat bullets from the gun turret on two Humvees.

“Baby are we still alive?” She asks while opening her eyes and looking at Jaden driving with one hand with his eyes closed.

“I’m fine baby, just have a slight headache, besides that I’m fine. Can you breathe okay? How do you feel?” Jaden asks.

“I’m okay now. I felt as if I was being burnt alive. I never felt such intense heat. I felt like I was in an oven. Do you need me to move baby, so you can drive?” Kim asks.

“No, you can stay right here. I want you close to me. I’m using a nanoscanner to drive, this reminds me of the PC game *Test Drive* I used to play in high school with the different camera angles and views. My human eyes are good for seeing full menu screens for my body and weapon systems,” Jaden says.

“All this near death, fire outside the car, explosions and high speed driving is turning me on baby. You protecting me like a superhero and

saving my life has gotten my kitty cat very, very, wet sweetie,” Kim says in a sensual voice while kissing Jaden’s left ear and neck.

“Wow, baby, your panties are soaking wet. You’re catching me off guard here...” Jaden stops while Kim kisses his lips and tongue.

The Bugattee is swirling over the highway trying to avoid the bat bullets. The bullets hit the car and small explosions occur, making the car jerk up and down. Kim’s head and body moves up and down.

Jaden disrupts the gravity around them so Kim doesn’t feel the sharp leaning forces of the car. His energy continues to go up and down on impact, but it stays near one hundred percent. Two UAV drones are flying behind the Bugattee at ground level. One is flying at ground level in the opposite traffic direction. Five others are flying eighty feet above the highway. The UAV drones begin to fire synchronized machine gun fire. Flashes of light precede bullets hitting the car from different directions. The powerful shield absorbs and deflects thousands of bullets. Passenger vehicles are approaching ahead on the highway as the Bugattee reaches 144 mph. The shield expands outwards like a mushroom as he continues to change lanes. Kim continues to kiss and grind her wet panties against his pelvic bone.

“...You giving me a lap dance at high speed?” Jaden whispers while slightly moaning.

“You like it?”

“Yes. This reminds me of my first strip club when I turned eighteen last year. I mean seventeen years ago,” Jaden says while moving around passenger vehicles.

“I feel like I’m floating, I don’t feel any weight on my body. I like this a lot,” Kim says.

“Are you down for this high speed quickie baby?” Jaden asks while steering the wheel left and right quickly.

“Yes!” She screams while leaning up to unzip Jaden’s pants, “Just don’t crash.”

The Bugattee slows down as the top of the shield hits an overpass stripping away steel and concrete. Vehicles on the overpass feel a powerful vibration. The street begins to collapse onto the highway. Concrete and cars quickly fall down, hitting two of the UAVs flying at ground level behind the Bugattee. They explode and crash onto the highway. Vehicles on the highway slam on their brakes before the overpass.

Kim pulls her panties to the side and Jaden enters her. She slowly grinds and rides him, while her ass rubs the steering wheel gently. Intense pleasure circles their bodies.

A nanoscanner enters the car on its own and looks at Kim getting a ride on Jaden.

‘AI, what are you doing? I need that nanoscanner to see behind and over me,’ Jaden says.

‘You are doing the same thing the couple a few days ago was doing on the highway. She is stuck on top of you and is trying to get up, but you won’t let her.’

“You like that baby?” Kim asks.

‘We are having sex, reproducing, remember?’

‘Now? At a time like this? What is wrong with you humans?’ AI asks.

“Yes, I do. That feels good,” Jaden says to Kim while he curves himself inside of her again.

‘I’m multi-tasking and relaxing. My huge headache is also going away. We are doing what Lois Lane and Superman wanted to do while they were flying in the air together,’ Jaden says while chuckling and the nanoscanner goes back to over the Bugattee.

“Shit!” She yells while pulling down her bra and putting her breast in his face.

‘You humans are very confusing sometimes. I can’t understand this on a logical or creative prospective.’

‘I’m doing the impossible AI. I have this superior feeling that I can do anything and no one can stop me,’ Jaden says while sticking out his tongue to lick her nipples.

“I feel like I’m having sex with a blind man baby,” she says in a sensual tone while momentarily stopping.

“You had sex with a blind man before?” Jaden asks while two more UAVs fly at ground level behind the Bugattee.

“No, silly, I’m just saying that this is probably how it might feel, because your eyes are completely closed,” she says while continuing to ride him.

‘Jaden the silent invasion has begun. In Europe, half of the population’s minds went into neutral mode. Thousands are reported missing and it is spreading as it gets closer to the end of the countdown. I’m one hundred percent sure those missing humans are being beamed up to the mother ship,’ AI says.

‘Yeah, okay, AI.’

‘Be careful, your nanodrones are reporting you are getting close to overloading your brain. That is why you are getting headaches. Your neurons and cells are being overloaded with processing,’ AI says.

‘I will...will. I’m monitoring it.t.t...’

“What’s this song?” Jaden asks, “I like it.”

“ ‘[Follow](#)’ by [Incubus](#),” she says while turning her head to look at the LCD screen. “It says [Halo 2 Soundtrack](#) on the screen.”

“Nice,” he says while reaching to turn up the fast paced rock and roll track.

“Damn baby! That’s my spot again!” Kim yells and moans loudly while riding him faster.

The UAVs continue firing missiles and machine guns. The Bugattee slows down to 71 mph as the UAVs quickly pass by to circle back around. Twelve more UAVs and two Raptors approach from the north. There are several heavily armored tank drones about two miles ahead of the Bugattee blocking all the lanes on the highway. Jaden begins to concentrate on rotating the reverse shield outside of the forward shield. He is trying to create an electromagnetic pulse wave as AI suggested to him earlier. He concentrates heavily while Kim continues to ride on top of him. She is unaware of what is happening around her.

Both shields’ rpm are moving in opposite directions at 120,000. The outside of the shield begins to glow bright. The Bugattee slows down to 42 mph and drives in the center lane of the highway.

‘You need them both to reach 200,000 rpm,’ AI says.

“I’m coming baby!” She yells while moaning very loudly.

Jaden is less than three-quarters of a mile from the tanks. The twenty-three total UAVs and Raptors all fire at the Bugattee at the same time. His body begins to tingle all around.

“Arrrggghh!” Jaden yells as he hits 201,000 rpm on both shields. Full shields go completely around the Bugattee as traction control comes up on the windshield.

“Aaahhhh!” Kim yells while the drums in the background to the music become louder.

There is a flash of bright yellow light exploding from the shields touching each other. An electromagnetic pulse wave moves in all directions, frying all electronic equipment as it passes. A few cars moving in the opposite direction turn off and slowly come to a stop. The missiles coming towards the Bugattee lose their thrust, but continue to cruise off course.

“Shit, shit shitt!” Kim screams while her body trembles all over.

Jaden moans and climaxes with her.

The UAVs and tank drones turn completely off. The UAVs fly out of control and towards the ground. They fall out of the air like flies all around the Bugattee. One of them lands directly in front of the Bugattee, but Jaden takes quick evasive action. Explosions and debris fly in different directions.

“What was that bright light and weird low throbbing sound?” Kim asks.

“Nothing much, just me releasing twice, one in you and one to anything electrical around us. Keep going, don’t stop baby. I’m not

finished yet,” Jaden says while the full shield disappears from under the wheels.

“You came and you’re still hard?” She asks.

“Yes, baby, I have the bionic stick,” he says while she chuckles.

The two Raptor pilots manually eject. Jaden avoids UAVs crashing and exploding onto the highway around him. He quickly turns hard left using the reinforced shield around the front of the car to break through the concrete divider that splits north and south traffic. The car shakes as it crosses over, Kim tightens her grip around Jaden’s neck. Kim continues to ride Jaden and make moaning sounds as she feels safe with him. The entire highway begins to explode as some missiles don’t explode on impact. Fire and debris is exploding in all directions.

“Curve it baby, curve it into my spot. I want to feel that super orgasm again,” Kim says while being more turned on by the sounds of fireworks exploding in the background. The Bugattee straightens up and drives north in the southbound HSCCV lane. The car quickly accelerates to 76 mph while just missing being hit by a falling F-22 Raptor exploding behind him. Her body floats up and down while the Bugattee’s hard acceleration makes her breasts lean in Jaden’s face. He sucks and licks her nipples with his tongue as Kim goes faster.

“Shit! Shit! Shit! Damn! Damn! Damn...Damn! Right there! Right there!” She screams while rubbing herself with her right index and middle finger.

The southbound traffic is stopped on the highway and people get out to look under the hoods of their cars. The Bugattee passes the tank drones on the right. They both climax at 125 mph.

“I love you baby,” Kim whispers into Jaden’s ear.

“I love you too, my sexy tasty Chinese food,” he whispers back while they both giggle.

Very small, milky bubbles can be seen floating in the air around them.

WASHINGTON, D.C. PENTAGON 3:04 PM

“The terrorist anomaly survived and successfully took out our first wave of attack. The probability of two humans taking out a wave of UAV wolf pack drones is 0.1%. The EMI wave from the anomaly was highly unexpected. The technology the anomaly possesses must be

obtained for our technological advances. Should we change strategy to try to capture the terrorist anomaly?" Motherdrone asks.

"No. Figure out a way to disrupt that high-energy source coming from space. Continue to set up a full double lane roadblock to destroy this threat. There is only so much luck one person can have, I'm sure it is running out. This threat must be annihilated at all cost. Setup a class A roadblock with titanium steel plates behind double the tank drones," Robinson says.

"Yes, I compute. My calculations conclude that using one UAV prototype Pegasus X-57 in full stealth mode will be the best strategy. It has the experimental levitation engine and its advanced circuitry isn't affected by EMI waves," Motherdrone says.

"Yes, but that is a two billion dollar prototype experimental aircraft. We can't afford to have anything happen to it."

"Vice President Robinson. I will use the X-57 for surveillance only and only fire a shot if the opportunity arises. If there is an available shot to be taken, it won't get close to the anomaly. Local police have cleared the highway of passenger vehicles. There are only a few tractor-trailers left on the highway. I will run a second wave of UAVs and use nanotube titanium tank drones on both sides of the highway."

An officer walks into the small room with Robinson.

"The thermal imaging is ready for viewing, sir," the middle-aged officer says while images show up on the huge screen.

"Holy shit, that little cock sucker," Robinson says.

"Yes, sir, it is exactly what you are seeing. He was having sex with the female while he was driving. The energy shield protecting the car was being generated by the subject Jaden Marino and an outside energy coming from space. We were able to see thermal imaging when the shields would go off. The shield system is able to change into any shape very quickly. When the shield is on, you can see there are openings in the front of the car's shield. I'm assuming it is for air to circulate. There are also small holes in the rear where the air exits. The shield can also expand around the wheels, fully covering the vehicle when a missile or huge explosion occurs. The Bugattee doesn't have any traction on the road at such time. We also notice the energy shield getting very weak when the thermo bomb was dropped. The shield is not powerful enough to completely destroy nanotubing titanium steel. Setting up a full roadblock with snipers with thermo imaging gear is also an option," the officer says.

"Good work officer. I don't know if we will have time to deploy snipers," Robinson says while saluting the officer.

"Okay. By the way sir, the U.S. government in 2013 added a special government luxury tax on all vehicles over \$100,000. The tax paid for all

new vehicles to have a secret emergency Offstar car disabling feature installed.”

“Good work officer. Get right on it!”

The officer salutes back and walks out of the room.

“Did the President land in Alaska yet?” Motherdrone asks.

“We are not sure, satellites have been down all around the northern hemisphere for the past twenty minutes. Radio transmissions aren’t being received and we do not have any contact with Air Force 1.”

“Should we launch an UAV search party?”

“No, I’m sure they are fine. That is for congress and the joint chiefs of staff to decide. You just concentrate your fifty billion dollar defense system to take out this terrorist threat.”

“Yes, Vice President Robinson.”

‘Soon you will address me as President Robinson, Miss Motherdrone,’ Robinson says to himself while chuckling.

FREDERICKSBURG, VA INTERSTATE I95 NORTH 3:13 PM

Kim is back in her seat with her clothes on. Vehicles are approaching the Bugattee as Jaden is still driving north in the southbound HSCCVL. He slows down and breaks through the concrete divider, back to the other side. They quickly accelerate on the north I-95 HSCCV lane.

The Bugattee’s male voice begins to speak, “Offstar online, your vehicle will be disabled in one minute. Please pull over into a safe location.”

“What is Offstar?” Jaden asks in a confused voice while looking at the countdown on the screen. He continues to drive around vehicles on the road at high speed.

Kim quickly replies, “We don’t have Offstar installed in any of our vehicles. The Offstar services offer live location information, calls authorities if someone is in an accident, helps investigators in accidents and tracks and disables stolen cars for police. The government bought the private company out in 2012 and there have been reports of the government listening in on people’s conversations, even when the service wasn’t on. The government must have secretly begun putting it in everyone’s vehicles. That means this car probably has a vehicle black box.”

Jaden interrupts, “How does it receive the signals? How can I stop the car from being disabled?”

“It uses a satellite to send the final disabling signal,” Kim quickly says.

Thirty seconds continue to countdown and Jaden accelerates.

“I can block the signal with the full shields right?” Jaden asks.

“Yes, but the satellite sends out disabling signals for up to thirty minutes.”

“Shit, I can’t drive without any traction on the ground, nor can I keep the shields up for thirty minutes,” Jaden says with his hand on his chin.

“Ten, nine, eight....” The vehicle says.

‘AI, I need you to locate that satellite above us.’

‘Yes sir, I’m locating it now with the Grayhawk’s nanoscanners and scanning for microwaves transmitting signals.’

“Three, two, one....”

Jaden activates the full shield around the Bugattee. The microwave signal from the satellite travels towards Earth and hits the outside of the shield in an attempt to disable the car. Jaden can actually see the satellite signal hitting the top of the shield. The wheels lose traction to the ground. Zero traction flashes on the windshield. The signals keep coming down.

“The signals don’t stop until the vehicle responds to confirm the engines are off,” Kim says.

The car slows down to 25 mph in the HSSCVL. One UAV comes out of nowhere and fires a missile at the Bugattee. It is a direct hit and the force from the missile passes through the shield and spins the car into 360° circles. Jaden tries to steer, but he doesn’t have any control. Kim closes her eyes and braces herself. The vehicle stops completely on the highway with fire still burning on the outside. A light pole falls directly onto the Bugattee from the left. The pole splits into two pieces and a crashing sound proceeds.

She mumbles and says in a quick, nervous voice, “In the summer of 2011, the sun had strong solar wind storms that temporarily and permanently destroyed satellites. If you can recreate the same effect, it might be easier to disable it and the signals.”

“Thanks baby,” Jaden says.

‘I found the satellite orbiting in high orbit. There is a lot of debris in low and high orbit...’ AI says.

‘Yeah yeah, AI, not now. You heard Kim right?’

‘Yes, I heard her distorted speaking.’

‘Do you think that might work?’

‘Yes, I can easily divert the sun’s solar winds outside the magnetosphere into a concentrated beam at the satellite transmitting towards your location.’

The Bugattee sits on the highway backwards with smoke coming from around it.

“This is for putting car thieves on the unemployment line Spystar!” Jaden yells.

“Yeah, this is for spying and listening in on millions of people’s private conversations!” Kim yells.

Concentrated solar flare energy hits the satellite directly, frying its microchips and then exploding it. The microwave signals stop bombarding the Bugattee. The rear wheels touch the ground and Jaden puts the car into reverse. He quickly accelerates backwards, then turns the wheel and shifts it into drive. They continue to drive on the highway and Kim opens her eyes.

‘Would you like me to destroy some space junk in orbit, while I’m up here?’ AI asks.

‘Don’t waste your time, if the Darclonians take over humans, I’m sure they could clean it up faster than humans,’ Jaden snaps.

A few minutes pass by.

“It’s amazing how certain things from your memory are in so many random places, Kim.”

“I know. I’m surprised so many of my memories are implanted in your mind and vice versa. I randomly remember things from your childhood,” she says.

“Can you check my e-mail on the Internet baby. I want to see if James e-mailed me,” he says.

“Sure,” she says while touching areas on the passenger side windshield with two fingers and moving things around.

Jaden gives her his login information that AI setup at the hospital for him.

‘Jaden, I would suggest only keeping this high energy coming down towards you for another ten minutes or less. The low radiation levels are getting higher around Kim. Also, this high energy trail can be detected by your government and the Darclonians.’

‘I understand, can you stop the feed now and continue later?’ Jaden asks.

‘Yes, but it might take a little time to lock on again. Those UAV drones are very synchronized and are all being controlled by one source. They also inflict the most damage on your shield system. I followed and trailed their signal source. There is a government blimp about 72,000 feet above you. The huge airship is receiving a laser signal from several spread out satellites. The blimp is using microwaves and radio waves to communicate instantly with the UAV drones, tank drones and all video cameras on the highway.’

‘Interesting, I bet there is no delay at that high speed. We need to take out that blimp. I can’t reach it that high up, but maybe there is something you can do. Can you put the energy path through the blimp?’ Jaden asks.

‘It isn’t the type of energy that will destroy a blimp. An explosive type of energy would be needed,’ AI says.

‘Can you shoot a torpedo from where you are in the North Pole?’

‘That is possible. But it would have to be a long-range torpedo, so it could change directions. I wouldn’t want the government to know my location.’

‘Okay, get on it.’

‘Yes sir.’

“Baby, you have an e-mail here from two people,” Kim says while tapping the windshield and sliding her fingers over different areas on it.

There are no UAVs flying in a five-mile circumference. There are also barely any cars on the road, except a few tractor-trailers miles ahead.

“There is an e-mail from James. It reads: Hey man! Jaden is that really you man? I thought you were dead. When I saw a message from you on Myfacebook, I couldn’t believe my eyes. Where you been the last eighteen years? Guess what man? I’m a millionaire now. I won the lottery twice in a row. Call me at 516-555-9089 my old friend.”

“Call him for me baby,” Jaden says.

“I’ll text him first,” Kim says.

“Text? What is wrong with an old fashion telephone call?” Jaden asks.

“People barely talk on the phone now, everything is about instant message, brain text, computer phone text and vehicle text. Some people actual talk into a microphone and the software translates the voice into words to be instant messaged,” Kim says while dialing numbers on the phone.

“That is crazy, what is the point of doing all of that?” Jaden asks.

“I don’t know, this is the norm. The number went to voice mail,” Kim says while handing Jaden the phone.

Jaden takes the phone and speaks into it, “Hey, James, it is your old best friend Jaden. I have a long story to tell. Congratulations on winning the lottery man, I knew great things would happen to you. I have an emergency situation happening in Manhattan. I want to know if you could meet me there. Around midtown or lower Manhattan would be good. I can’t talk much over the phone, but I’m going to need your help. Text, call or e-mail back if you can. See you there man,” Jaden says while giving Kim the phone back. Kim hangs up and tries to redial her father’s cell, but it goes to voice mail again.

“The second e-mail is from a General Peters, it reads: Jaden Marino, I know you are here to help us. I’m aware of the pending attack against America and the world. Vice President Robinson has completely lost it and is trying to kill you at all cost. You are on the top of the terrorist kill list. I believe he has something to do with the President’s airplane being non-responsive. We have lost all communications with it over north Canada. Radar is showing it is on autopilot and flying at Mach 2.5 at these coordinates.... We believe no one onboard had a special helmet that

would have protected them from these unknown energy waves coming from space. Air Force 1 will run out of gas in the next hour and crash. We have attempted an air board without success. Marshal Lopez told us how you saved Flight 104 on Saturday. The Panstarr telescope has detected something sitting between Earth and the moon. We desperately need your help. If you are still alive and getting this, call me at 202-555-5131. That is a secured line. President Paylin was never aware of these facts about you. Her life desperately needs to be spared if we plan to fight this alien invasion together. If she dies, Robinson will be President of the United States,” Kim reads.

“Wow, that’s deep. Let the conspiracies begin,” Jaden says.

“Do you believe him?” Kim asks.

“No, not really. It’s probably a trap, I don’t trust anyone in the government now. But save the number, I’m going to have AI check into that Air Force 1 situation. Rescuing my daughter is first priority. I’ll call him if the story checks out,” Jaden says.

‘Earth calling AI. Pick up AI. Nanu, Nanu,’ Jaden says.

‘Nanu? Nanu?’ AI asks.

‘It was from the television show *Mork and Mindy* from the eighties. Oh, forget it. You don’t remember much from my memory huh?’ Jaden asks.

‘I only remember relevant things. I’m ready to fire the special torpedo,’ AI says.

‘Hold on a second, don’t fire the torpedo yet...’ Jaden says while explaining to AI the situation with Air Force 1. AI sends a high-speed nanoscanner and nanoeye towards the direction of north Alaska. They scan the entire area for thousands of miles in seconds. AI finds Air Force 1 flying at 1862 mph.

‘I forgot you don’t have to connect the Gravhawk’s nanoscanners together,’ Jaden says.

The nanoeye looks at the passengers on board; all are unconscious. The video images are being sent back to the Gravhawk and relays through the planet to Jaden.

“Kim, can you tell me if you see the President onboard?” Jaden asks while putting his right hand over her eyes.

The nanoeye quickly sees secret service men in suits and the President’s cabinet people laying unconscious all around the airplane. Kim sees President Stefanie Paylin behind a desk lying on the floor with her family pictures in her arms.

“Oh no, the President is laid out and unconscious,” Kim says nervously. “Why can’t I control this nanoscanner?”

“You can’t manually control this one, it is the Gravhawk’s nanoeye, AI is controlling it. Why would you want to control? Hey! Wait a

second, I just read that dirty thought that just flashed in your frontal lobe,” Jaden says.

The Bugattee is moving on the highway at the speed limit as it passes tractor-trailers in the left lane. The windmill blades on the rear continue to spin. They pass a sign that says the next exit is twelve miles.

“You wanted to see what kind of panties the President wears?” Jaden asks.

“No I didn’t... Where did you get that from?” She asks modestly.

“You are a twisted individual. Why would you want to do that?” Jaden asks.

“Okay, you caught me. I was just curious, what the President of the United States wore under the business skirt, nothing more,” Kim explains.

“Yeah, yeah, okay Dr. Freak. I remember your experimental college days,” Jaden says while removing his hand from her eyes.

‘I thought I was bad,’ Jaden says to AI.

‘I’ll show you a freak,’ Kim says while grabbing Jaden’s right hand and sucks on his fingers in her mouth.

‘You two were made for each other,’ AI says.

‘Tell me about it.’

Two state trooper cars come on the entrance ramp to get on the highway and speed up with their sirens on.

‘AI, it is multi-tasking time. You have the Gravhawk’s fast computer processing and your own computer processing. I need you to land Air Force 1 the same way we did on Flight 104. I’m also going to need you to take out that blimp with the torpedo.’

‘I don’t know if it’s possible to land Air Force 1 from here. They don’t have enough fuel and they are too far from an airport. But I will try my best,’ AI says.

‘I’m also going to need you to stand by on locking on to me again. I might need that high energy surge soon,’ Jaden says.

‘Yes sir. I’m preparing a long-range pink torpedo. This should be strong enough to destroy the blimp. Your government would call this an ice to water, water to air, air to space, space to air missile.’

The Bugattee speeds up as it passes more trucks. A nanoscanner detects a full roadblock two miles ahead. There is a row of tank drones completely covering the southbound and northbound routes. The nanoscanner detects high magnetically charged energy in the rail gun tank cannons. There is also a two-foot deep carbon titanium steel bar coming one and a half feet from the highway. Jaden also notices something flying invisibly one hundred feet above him. A nanoscanner quickly moves towards the unknown object and scans it.

“Top-secret government X-57 prototype? Ever heard of that, Kim?” Jaden asks.

“No, baby.”

“There is something flying above us semi-invisible with reflective materials and it is flying using a strange engine to produce magnetic propulsion. The nanoscanner is detecting opaque body materials. The aircraft has two missiles that have kinetic energy compounds,” Jaden says.

“Interesting...be careful. The government is sneaky with their secret weapons. I still can’t reach my father.”

‘AI, what will I need to go through the roadblock?’ Jaden asks.

‘The shields aren’t strong enough to break through the titanium tanks and steel blockage,’ AI says.

‘Shit, I’ll figure something out,’ he says.

AI fires the pink torpedo from under seventy-five feet of ice and water from the North Pole. The torpedo has pink particles moving on the outside of it and contains billions of nanobots. It breaks through the ice, changes directions and flies south twenty feet over land. AI also starts to work on remote controlling the pilot of Air Force 1.

Two tractor-trailer drivers are talking on their radios to each other as they see the Bugattee in their rearview mirrors, quickly approaching them with the police following. They stop following behind each other in the middle lane and each drive on the broken white lines, blocking all three lanes. The truck on the left is aqua blue with advertisements of getting your free carbon footprint. The truck on the right is grey and white. Jaden sees this blockage in all three lanes and slows down behind them as they block the highway. The police quickly catch up. Jaden honks the horn repeatedly behind the huge trucks swerving back and forth. Kim closes her eyes and puts her hands over her face.

“Shit, these bastards are blocking me in,” Jaden says.

“I don’t want to see, I’m scared of big trucks on the highway,” Kim says.

“You aren’t scared of big trucks. Come on, what about that time back in May 2011, when the 18-wheeler driver cut you off on the highway and he poured coffee from his window onto your windshield?” Jaden asks while looking at her with her hands over her face. “You drove in front of him and tossed a 32 oz Slurpee into the air through your sunroof and it landed on his windshield. Then you quickly drove off with your middle finger through the sunroof.”

“That was an exception; I had my period then and I wasn’t taking any shit from anyone. I keep forgetting you can remember events in my past. I’m still trying to get used to this. I’m amazed you know so much about me.”

“I love the fire deep inside of you,” Jaden says.

The Bugattee slows down to 47 mph.

“Please stop your vehicle you have nowhere to go,” the troopers in the police car say over a loudspeaker.

Meanwhile the pink torpedo is quickly accelerating south across the sky at high speed looking like a bright meteor.

The roadblock is approaching in half a mile. The Bugattee tries to accelerate in the HSCCV lane, but the left truck swerves over there also, blocking off the Bugattee. Jaden slows down behind them. The military is telling the troopers and the truck drivers to stand down.

“We have this little prick in the sports car cut off, he isn’t getting by us,” the truck driver on the left says over his radio.

“We will be forced to open fire on you,” the troopers say to the Bugattee.

“I have an idea Kim, but I’m going to need your help,” Jaden says while Kim takes her hands from over her eyes.

“The truck on the left doesn’t have any cargo in its trailer. I need you to find the manual for this car and tell me the weight of it,” Jaden says.

Kim quickly opens the small glove compartment and finds the manual. Jaden creates a 440,000-rpm shield around the Bugattee. Anti-gravity nanodrones are over the hood of the Bugattee. He speeds up to the left side of the blue tractor-trailer. Kim looks down flipping through the manual. He slows down where the double rear wheels on the trailer meet, as the truck tries to cut him off. Jaden slowly turns right into the huge rear wheels and the outside shield slowly destroys the rubber and iron in the huge wheels. The rear trailer slowly drops to the ground as the Bugattee slows down. Debris and metal roll across the highway.

The trailer’s rear drags on the ground creating bright sparks and a loud grinding and scraping sound floods the airwaves. The truck continues to drive while the rear doors open and break against the highway. The Bugattee swerves around the two doors spinning on the ground. Jaden can see the roadblock ahead with his eyes. The tank drones are pointing their 20mm rail guns at the Bugattee from both sides of the highway. Jaden does calculations in his brain as he slows down again.

“You know Kim, in high school we always wondered why we need to learn calculus if we would never use it in life. Today I’m using all those calculations I used to do on a graphing calculator, but in my head,” Jaden says while the Bugattee stops completely in the middle lane.

“You should thank your math teacher one of these days,” she says while flipping through the pages of the manual.

“Turn off your engine and step out of the car with your hands up,” a state trooper twenty feet behind the Bugattee says over a microphone.

“I think I will do that when all of this is done. I used to hate calculus with all the stupid formulas and equations that I would never use. Now it

all makes sense, especially with this equation solution I'm working on now," Jaden says.

"What are you calculating?" She asks.

"You'll see. Do you have the curb weight of this car?"

"Not yet, I think it might be easier if I looked it up on the Internet," Kim says while touching the passenger side windshield. She looks ahead and gets an idea of what is about to happen.

Two state troopers get out of their vehicles with their guns drawn and approach the Bugattee. The two trucks slow down to 5 mph as they see the police are walking up on the Bugattee.

"Got it! 2212 lbs" Kim yells.

"Damn, that was fast. Okay, so that is 2487 lbs with our weight..." he says. "Hold on baby!"

Jaden presses the button to open the convertible top as he unbuttons his seat belt. Jaden floors the pedal and the tires skid off. The troopers open fire at the tires, but the bullets miss. Jaden is concentrating and multi-tasking on many things as the percentage usage of his brain increases past eighty percent. The engines quickly change gears. Kim covers her eyes with both of her hands. The Bugattee is aiming straight for the rear of the trailer still dragging on the ground. The top roof slowly moves to the rear, as the Bugattee reaches 65 mph. Jaden sends out invisible impulses from the shield to mess with the aiming of the tank drones. The tank drones begin firing at the car. Small impulses of electromagnetic energy move out in all directions from the tank drones. It affects the engines and electronics in the tractor-trailers. Hot magnetically charged steel projectiles propel down the nozzle of the tanks simultaneously. They exit the nozzle at 8900 mph in the direction of the Bugattee and quickly heat up as they push through the air. They look like blurry flashes of yellow light. Jaden's mind goes into nanotime 100x, as the projectiles move slower in a blur. He narrowly misses being hit by one. The front of the car reaches the rear of the tractor-trailer. The Bugattee tilts upwards and drives up the rear of the empty trailer while projectiles make huge holes throughout the steel hull. Projectiles bombard the tractor-trailer and pass through it like paper. The drivers of the trucks die as their bodies rip apart. The tractor-trailer on the right slows down and crashes into the shoulder. The one Jaden is driving in continues forward. Kim grunts with the blunt force of the car changing directions upwards. Jaden concentrates most of his shield energy around the front of the car, while the reverse shield is quickly moving over the forward. On the ground, a white circle of smoke is about 500 feet around the area. The nanodrones concentrate their energy at the front of the energy shield. The front of the car penetrates the metal front frame of the trailer at 77 mph, creating a huge hole in it. The Bugattee goes airborne as the tractor-trailer is slowly engulfed in flames.

“Nice!” Jaden very quickly yells out loud.

Jaden enhances the anti-gravity nanodrones around the car. The X-57 aircraft fires an abnormal looking missile towards the airborne Bugattee. The wheels are spinning in midair as debris is flying in different directions. A projectile hits the rear of the shield areas and passes through several layers and narrowly misses a windmill blade. The force from the blunt strike makes the Bugattee slowly spin counterclockwise. The airborne car ascends over the beginning of the roadblock at an altitude of thirty-five feet. Swooshing sounds pass by the car from the yellow glowing projectiles. The nanoscanners detect burning metal in the area. The two opposite directional shields touch each other creating an EMI in all directions. A bright light flashes in all directions as hot fire still burns around the shield. The tank drones stop firing their rail gun cannons. The unaffected missile continues towards the Bugattee. The kinetic missile hits the rear shield area of the Bugattee. The powerful force passes through the Bugattee, causing it to quickly rotate in the opposite clockwise direct. The kinetic missile is eating the shield generating nanodrones. Fire is all around the full energy shields. The Bugattee’s convertible top is fully open and fire is all over him. Kim feels the brunt impact and begins to scream. Her slow sounding scream sounds like a man’s deep voice to Jaden. Her body briefly jitters towards him from the impact, hugging her body against the seat belt.

The outside shield absorbs the powerful explosion, but loses eighty percent of its rpm speed. The Bugattee continues to spins out of control at a high speed. Sounds of spinning wheels echo in all directions. Another bigger missile is shot towards the car as the X-57 aircraft levitates not too far behind the car. Jaden holds onto the steering wheel while kneeling in the seat and quickly turning to his left. Jaden is standing up, but slightly crouching with his left leg bent on his seat and his right leg is on the floor, leaning against the steering wheel. Pro-gravity nanodrones in Jaden’s feet are keeping him from floating away from the Bugattee. He sees debris slowly flying in different directions around him. Jaden stops creating the shield around the vehicle. A trail of white smoke tunnels up from the ground and up into the bottom of the car. The bigger missile gets within twelve feet of the Bugattee. The rear of the car slowly spins around to face the opposite direction as Jaden’s mind is in 50x nanotime. Jaden brings both glowing hands toward his shoulders. His brain is at eighty-nine percent usage and his brain waves begin to spike making him feel tremendous pain. Jaden’s nervous system feels the effects as he keeps the timer on nanotime continuing to extend. He surpasses his nanotime limit and his brain feels the damaging effects.



Jaden sees the semi-invisible X-57 and missile slowly getting into sight from the spinning. He extends both arms and fires a gravity shock wave and atoms ripper towards the kinetic missile. The energy leaves his body. The missile is hit by the powerful gravity shock wave and atoms ripper weapon. Portions of the missile instantly disintegrate and there is a small explosion as the forces quickly move towards the X-57. The Bugattee begins to descend towards the ground as the anti-gravity nanodrones begin to strongly disrupt the gravity under the car. He focuses most of his concentration on that since he feels the car quickly falling towards the ground. The X-57 is caught in the shock wave and propels backwards at a fast speed. Jaden sits back down in the driver's seat as his nanotime goes off. The Bugattee continues to float and spin closer towards the highway.

Jaden puts the gearshift into reverse and presses on the gas. He straightens out the wheels as the car gently lands backwards on the highway at a momentum speed of 42 mph. Skidding sounds are heard as the car hits the ground. The car touches down like an airplane and the shocks absorb the lighter car. The windshield displays electricity coming from the shocks of the car to help charge the battery system. The Bugattee continues driving backwards on the highway. Jaden holds his head as he feels pain in different areas.

"Are we alive?" Kim asks.

"Yes baby," Jaden grunts.

"I can't keep doing this Jaden. This is wrecking my nerves now," she says.

"Me either, this is wrecking my brain cells and giving me a migraine super headache," Jaden snaps while groaning.

“I feel so dizzy from all that spinning around. Why are we driving backwards?”

“Oh yeah, let me fix that backwards thing. I was practicing my driving backwards skills,” he says.

He slams on the brakes while turning the steering wheel to the right. The car whips to the left and he puts the gear into neutral and then drive. The wheels peel off as he hits the accelerator.

“I thought the Dukes of Hazards, Knight Rider jump and James Bond action sequence you just experienced would be a turn on for you,” Jaden says.

“I had my eyes mostly closed, I was too scared to look.”

“Would you like a replay of it? I had the nanoscanner recording it from different angles like movie cameras,” he says.

“Sure,” she says while she grabs his right hand and places it over her eyes.

The debris from the missile and X-57 land in a lake a few miles away off the highway. Kim sees the video replaying through her eyes in slow motion.

‘AI, are you there?’ Jaden asks while continuing to drive high speed with one hand.

‘Yes, I’m here.’

‘I’m going to need that high energy surge soon, my energy is at twenty percent. That kinetic missile drained a lot of my shield energy and destroyed some nanodrones,’ Jaden says.

‘Okay, I’m working on locking onto you again now. I noticed that many parts of the X-57 were made with technology not from Earth. The pink torpedo was destroyed by your government’s air defense system. Lasers were fired from the ground and anti-air missiles took out the torpedo at the same time. The blimp is still online and is intercepting all of the communications. I’m going to fire an artificial intelligence black torpedo nanite-sphere, it will hit the blimp guaranteed.’

Kim removes Jaden’s hands from her eyes.

“Wow baby! You just pulled off the almost impossible. That high-speed jump through the back of the tractor-trailer in the Bugattee was unbelievable. It was like watching a Michael Bay movie, but ten times the special effects. I like how the nanoscanner passed through the explosion to change angles, while the wheels were spinning in slow motion. The missile explosion outside the shield created a nice lighting effect. The gravity shock wave was the icing on the cake. Very cool, baby,” Kim says while looking at him smiling.

“I’m glad you liked it. I told you it was awesome. I’m sure I broke some kind of world record. I feel like an unstoppable legend,” he says.

‘How is Air Force 1 coming along?’ Jaden asks.

‘I’m still trying to get full control of it and there isn’t enough fuel for it to land at the nearby airport in Alaska. The aircraft is 190 miles north of Alaska, over the Arctic Ocean. The craft is at 23,000 feet and at 1091 mph. I’ll try to figure out something. Five minutes ago, two hypersonic UAV drones successfully dropped off two SWATbots onto the hull of Air Force 1 when I was trying to get control of the pilot. But the aircraft was moving at Mach 3 and the SWATbots couldn’t hold on. They fell off and parachuted down towards the ocean. This doesn’t make sense, why would they fly into an area full of Darclonian proton energy area without any protection around their brains?’

‘I smell a full government conspiracy. Shit, I see another reinforced full roadblock being created 2.1 miles ahead of me with more tank drones. This is the last roadblock before the highway splits off. The government just doesn’t give up,’ Jaden says.

‘I don’t know how you going to make it through the roadblock. I’m doing high speed calculations as we speak,’ AI says.

‘There has to be a way. I want to ram straight through it at a high speed,’ Jaden says.

‘For you to ram through the reinforced titanium tanks and nanotubing solid steel bar behind the tanks, you would need a outside shield speed of one million rpm minimum and the help of matrix vortex particles. I can transmit some of those particles through your nanoscanners from space. The only thing is that it is going to be near impossible for you to get the shield’s rpm at 1,000,000 by yourself. Just trying to get to that speed will really overload your organic brain. Even with the help of the nanodrones in your brain’s neurons, it still won’t help. We need to figure out another way, it is too dangerous,’ AI says.

‘There isn’t another way. I’m going to have to do this, I know I can do this. I have confidence that I can do this or anything.’

‘This isn’t a superhero movie, where special effects save the hero. You can seriously injury your brain, give yourself a seizure and put yourself into a coma. Not to mention killing yourself and Kim in a huge fireball if you don’t reach that minimum rpm,’ AI says.

‘I don’t have a choice, I’m going to go for it. I know I can handle this.’

‘Yes sir.’

“Kim, play some good music for me, I need to concentrate on this last roadblock.”

Kim changes the radio station to Cinemagic.

“What kind of music is this?” He asks.

“These are movie soundtrack songs. It is cool and something I’m sure you would like. It always helped me to relax and concentrate,” she says.

“Cool, I’m open to something different.”

Jaden stops in the middle lane of the I-95 highway. The convertible roof closes back and there are no cars or vehicles on the highway in both directions. The roadblock is 1.6 miles in front of the Bugattee. The [Dark Knight soundtrack song number twelve begins to play](#). He stares down the road of life or death. Jaden has his right hand over the gear shifter in manual mode. He shifts the gear and steps on the accelerator pedal. Kim raises the volume and Jaden focuses on his energy shield's rpm moving around the Bugattee. He concentrates on the energy particles and nanodrones moving around the car faster and faster. AI locks onto Jaden's nanoscanners above the Bugattee. The weapon energy beams down to him with some matrix vortex particles. His weapons energy goes up to one hundred percent. Kim begins to hear a humming sound as the shield's rpm reaches 722,000. The shield glows around the car. His breathing increases and blood pressure quickly rises. The Bugattee accelerates to 99 mph. Jaden's eyes are glowing blue as they are focusing on the matrix vortex shield slowly forming blue lightning in front of the car. The shield energy is duplicating itself by forming light energy patterns in front of the Bugattee. His brain feels a huge amount of pain in different areas. The pain spreads around his body. His body begins to shake uncontrollably as the roadblock quickly approaches. Shiny black material begins to cover Jaden's fingers and hands. His rpm reaches 870,091. Kim closes her eyes as her heart quickly beats. She takes a deep breath as the outside shield begins to glow with a blue tint. Jaden's brain usage reaches ninety-six percent as his brain waves are spiking. The shiny black material slowly dissolves some of the steering wheel. The plastic on top of the gearshift disappears. Jaden lifts his hands off those two areas and holds his hands in front of him.

"Kim, hold the steering wheel straight for me. My hands are covered in this black shit," Jaden quickly says.

"Okay," she says and holds the steering wheel. "Are you okay baby? Your body trembling isn't a good sign."

"I'm fine, just need to concentrate," he says in a trembling voice.

Blood comes down his nose and his brain is glowing under his scalp. The theme music picks up tempo as his speed picks up to 141 mph. Huge 105mm saber cannon shells, rockets and thousands of bullets a second are shot simultaneously from eight tank drones on both sides of the highway. Jaden's blood pressure continues to rise. Very loud cannon fire take over the airwaves as fire and explosions ignite around the blue-tinted shield of the Bugattee. The car feels the brunt of the explosions as Kim's left hand shudders on the steering wheel. Jaden sees the rpm speed reaching 918,000 and his brain usage is at one hundred percent. There are warning signs on his eye screen. His brain begins to spike as his body continues to shake uncontrollably. The outside shield is glowing brighter blue. The area in front of the shield is consuming the explosions and

high-speed projectiles. Kim squints from all of the bright lights and explosions.

Sweat is running down his face and he breathes very heavily. The front shields take on maximum projectiles. His brain spikes at 110% usage as he reaches 1,009,421 rpm. The front of the Bugattee rams through roadblock at 175 mph and there is a huge explosion. The enhanced front shield area instantly disintegrates the tank drones and steel metal bar coming from the highway. The engines begin to shutter as three of them turn off. A huge fireball of smoke spins upwards into the sky. The tank drones on the southbound side of the highway continue to fire towards the fast moving, glowing Bugattee. Thirty seconds pass by and Jaden's foot comes off the accelerator as the car begins to slow down. Kim keeps her hand on the steering wheel. The shield around the car disappears.

COMPUTER GEAR CONTROL ERROR flashes on the Bugattee's LCD screen.

His body continues to shake violently and uncontrollably. Jaden blacks out. Spit and drool comes from his mouth. His nose bleeds and the mysterious black material disappears from his hands. His head slumps over like a sleeping drunk person.

"Jaden, are you okay?" Kim asks while she has her right hand on the steering wheel and turning to watch the road.

There is no response and his body stops shaking. His eyes roll back into his head. AI rides the last energy wave beam from space towards Jaden.

"Jaden! Jaden! Wake up!" Kim yells while the Bugattee cruises at 25 mph.

She lowers the volume and touches Jaden to wake up. She can't reach the brake pedal to stop the car, so she puts the gear shifter into neutral and turns the steering wheel to the right onto the shoulder. The car slows down and Kim shifts the Bugattee into park. The vehicle jerks forward and Jaden's head hits the steering wheel.

"Jaden, baby..." she says while taking his pulse on his hand and neck.

She feels that he has a pulse, but he is not breathing. His head and neck jerk for a few seconds as AI enters his body. She sees that he isn't breathing.

"Jaden! Baby, are you back?" She asks while looking around the deserted highway.

'Jaden!' AI yells. 'What a mess in here. There are millions of brain cells damaged and structural damage to the cerebellum,' AI says.

Kim opens the passenger door and runs to the driver's side. She opens the door and pulls Jaden out by his shoulder onto the ground. She

begins to administer CPR on him. She breathes into his mouth and pushes on his chest as he lays unconscious.

The nanodrones are already trying to repair damaged brain cells, tissue and nerve cells. Jaden's mind is in a full vegetable state coma. Kim continues to administer CPR on Jaden.

'Kim, he is getting oxygen through his pores! There isn't anything you can do for him right now.... I forgot, she can't hear me. Think, AI, think; Think creatively. How can I communicate with Kim?' AI asks himself.

WASHINGTON, D.C. PENTAGON 3:39 PM

"Object and anomalies are still alive, Vice President. Estimated total damage for tank drones, UAV drones, highway structures, possible civilian lawsuits...." Motherdrone says.

"I don't care about the..." Robinson says.

"...twenty-two billion dollars..."

"... damage costs, tell me our options now and the status of the unknown bogie projectile."

"The UAVs and tank drones so far are not effective against the subject. There aren't any more UAVs or tank drones in the area at the time. Congress had an emergency session five minutes ago and they have limited your access for using live military personnel. I came up with another strategy, as you can see from the screens the subject seems to be injured. We can do a silent attack using the special forces prototype exoskeleton nanobond fifth generation kangaroo body suits."

"Good idea, we can run live tests on those million dollar each exoskeleton suits. I'm also glad the X-57 wasn't badly damaged and can be recovered," Robinson says.

"The black sphere projectile has been unstoppable so far. It originated from the North Pole. Ground to air lasers has had no effect on it. It elevated into space and disabled one of our satellites. It has reprogrammed three of our air-to-air missiles while it was on its way down. Its trajectory is heading down towards the blimp over Virginia. Three of our missiles are following this projectile to destroy our own airship. The blimp's communications are temporarily offline and it is slowly moving its location. The projectile will hit our communication blimp in four minutes. The special forces soldiers are being deployed as we speak," Motherdrone says.

"Even if the blimp is destroyed we have backup blimps and we will know the location of the UFO if it fired another projectile," Motherdrone says.

PM

Jaden is laid out on the ground and Kim continues to give him CPR while she is on her knees over him. His heart is still beating and he has a low pulse. AI comes up with an idea. There is a loud explosion echoing down from the sky sounding like thunder. The airship at 70,000 feet explodes in the sky.

AI speaks to himself and unconscious Jaden, ‘Your involuntary muscles aren’t working. I can’t control or remote into your body manually, that will cause permanent damage in your motor cortex part of your brain. I need to keep oxygen in your lungs so I can talk out of your windpipes in your throat, so I can get a message to Kim. But she keeps pushing the oxygen out. Okay, I’ll hold your lung muscles next time she breathes in.’

“You can’t die on me, baby. Not now, I need you, and I love you,” Kim pleads while breathing into his mouth and tears are running down her face. The warm tears land on Jaden’s unconscious face.

Kim remembers what Jaden’s father used to tell him in karate school when he was young. A slow moving military propeller aircraft flies towards Jaden and Kim from a distance. On fire fragments of the blimp showers around the area.

“Wake up! Get up! You’re no quitter, you are a fighter. Don’t quit on me now. Tuck in the pain and stand up like a soldier!” Kim yells while pushing on his chest. She stops when she feels his lung muscles hold in the air.

Jaden whispers in a mumbling voice with his eyes closed, “...radio... car.... FM”

“What? What did you say baby?” She asks.

She puts her right ear over his mouth. Jaden’s lungs take another breath and AI uses his vocal cords and tongue.

‘You bit your tongue in a few places, Jaden you jerk,’ AI says to Jaden.

“Kimm, this is A...I. Turn... on... the...FM radio...station....in... the car,” Jaden’s mouth says.

“Okay,” she says while quickly standing up and sitting in the driver’s seat accessing the radio.

She comes back out of the vehicle and kneels over Jaden.

“Okay, AI I turned the radio to 87.1, now what?” She asks.

“Kim can you hear me?” AI says through the speakers in the Bugattee.

She jumps up from the loud voice and it scares her.

“Yes, I can. What has happened to Jaden? Is he okay?” She asks while holding her chest.

“He is in a deep coma. His brain and nerve cells suffered damage in a few areas in his brain. He suffered a seizure when he overused his brain. Don’t worry about him not breathing, nanodrones are filtering air directly into his bloodstream. His vitals are identical and normal to a patient in a coma. Nanodrones are looking for him now in his subconscious,” AI says.

“What can I do?” She asks.

“We need to...” AI is interrupted.

“We need to what?” She asks.

“The nanoscanners are detecting something. There is a hovering, two foot round, white, donut-shaped UAV spy chopper 300 feet directly over us, watching us with a small camera. A military propeller aircraft has dropped off two military men and a female officer in exotic exoskeleton suits. They are parachuting towards the ground about 1.5 miles behind us. The small camera’s signal is splitting towards the military men,” AI says while the propeller aircraft passes over them at 5300 feet and keeps going.

“Shit, that isn’t good,” Kim says while sniffing and looking up towards the aircraft flying over her, “I don’t see anything except the aircraft above.”

“They are using opaque materials, they are semi-invisible. It is very hard to see with human eyes. Trust me they are there and they just landed. They just began running towards us. Something is extending out of their feet and they are getting taller. They are running and leaping six feet into the air. We need to get Jaden into the passenger seat and you need to drive right away,” AI says.

“They are using bionic boots, I read about those. They are banned for civilians. We have to hurry, those boots allow soldiers to run around 25 mph,” Kim says while grabbing Jaden under the shoulders. She drags him around the rear of the Bugattee as she hears sounds from exhaust of the muffler.

“They aren’t boots, they are built into their exoskeleton suits like small shoes. Correction, they are leaping at 41 mph towards us,” AI says.

Another special forces man in an exoskeleton suit jumps out of the aircraft. He has a small sniper gun on his back. Kim tries to lift Jaden into the passenger seat, but she can’t.

“I can’t lift him. I’m not strong enough,” Kim says while continuing to try to lift Jaden’s lifeless body.

“Why not?” AI asks.

“I’m a small woman and I’m only 115 lbs,” Kim says while breathing heavily trying to lift him.

“Can’t a woman do everything a man can?” AI asks.

“That is a metaphor. This isn’t the time. I’m a human girl, AI, not a Terminator robot. Is there any way you can do to help me lift him?” She asks.

The kangaroo leaping semi-invisible soldiers get within half a mile behind Kim and Jaden. The female soldier is in front and they wear serious faces under their suits. One soldier two miles in front of the Bugattee lands on the ground and he gets rid of his parachute.

“I have an idea,” AI says.

“Hurry, I hear low clicking sounds approaching,” Kim says.

“They are 500 feet behind us, lift him now,” AI says through the car speakers.

Kim lifts Jaden easily into the passenger seat.

“What the hell? How did you do that?” She asks while placing his legs into the vehicle and closes the door.

She runs around to the driver’s seat, climbs in and closes the vertical door.

“I used anti-gravity nanodrones around his body to reduce his weight by seventy-five percent. Hurry and drive, they are almost at the vehicle,” AI says in 10.1 Dolby stereo sound.

“Cool, do you know you sound like KITT from *Knight Rider*?” Kim asks.

“I know, this is what Jaden wanted me to sound like.”

Kim shifts the gear shifter into drive and steps on the accelerator. She drives onto the highway, but the Bugattee speed reaches a top speed of 29 mph in first gear.

COMPUTER GEAR CONTROL ERROR flashes on the LCD screen and windshield.

“Something is wrong, the engine gears aren’t switching and only two engines are responding.”

“I located Jaden in his subconscious neurons,” AI says.

“What is he doing?” She asks while trying to switch the gears in manual mode.

“He is... he is... he is playing *Super Mario Brothers*?”

“*Super Mario Brothers*? Is he playing with a controller or he is actually Mario?” She asks.

“Yes, he is actually Mario and he is using a controller, he is playing from two different angles. He thinks he is dreaming and is not aware of what is happening.”

“What level is he on?” She asks.

“Level 8-1, he warped up a few levels and he is playing very fast.”

“Can you wake him?”

“Yes, I just read about a famous neuroscientist by the name P. De Fina in the medical encyclopedia that knows the procedure for waking up vegetative state brains. I know what I have to do to wake Jaden up.”

AI increases oxygen and glucose rich blood to the cerebral cortex of Jaden’s brain, along with some tissue repairing nanodrones. The nanodrones help accelerate the growth of new axons. A few minutes go by. The nanodrones fire electric particles up the spinal cord to the thalamus. His body nervously shakes around his head. Eighty-seven percent of his damaged brain cells slowly repair themselves and his motor cortex is online. AI sends nanodrones to repair nerve cells, reroute neurons and create artificial stem cells.

“His brain is almost repaired, I just have to get him out of his subconscious by talking to him.”

“Yes, that’s a good idea. That is what humans do for people in a coma,” Kim says.

Jaden is deep in his subconscious, he is jumping up hitting bricks and coins are coming out of them. He is throwing small fireballs on turtles with hammers. One of the hammer-wielding turtles begins to talk.

‘Jaden, this is AI. You need to wake up, Kim needs your help. You suffered a severe seizure and you are in a coma,’ AI says as Jaden runs by him.

‘AI, what are you talking about?’ He asks while ducking to go inside of a pipe. ‘Get out of my game, I was almost hit by that huge bullet with a face. I never beat this game, out, out, out,’ Jaden says while stepping on AI in a turtle body.

Kim pulls out her cell phone and types on the keyboard. She’s trying to text Peters to call off this attack.

“I’m not good with texting and driving, oh shit,” she says while swerving over the empty highway. “I’ve gotten so many tickets doing this.”

“You can multi-task, every human is capable of it,” AI says.

“Thanks for the advice, Dr. AI,” Kim snaps.

The soldier one mile in front of the Bugattee pulls out his sniper rifle. He begins leaping towards the Bugattee. The soldier with the sniper rifle leaps into the air, aims and in midair, fires one shot towards the Bugattee. The bullet travels through the windshield creating a two-inch hole and misses Kim’s head by four inches. She drops the phone before the text message is done.

“Holy shit! I felt the air and heat from that bullet!” She yells while swerving over the highway as the windshield turns completely black.

“Shit! AI, I can’t see the road,” Kim nervously says.

“Damage to front windshield, replace windshield. Please pull over and call a tow truck for your safety. Estimate cost to replace windshield is \$13,000 dollars U.S., www.bugatteparts.com...switching windshield information to LCD screen,” the computer voice says.

Jaden collects coins inside of a pipe and AI reappears as a turtle near Jaden.

‘Kim needs your help, she was just shot at. I need you to wake up out of this and stop stepping on me, that hurts,’ AI says.

‘Who is Kim? I’m sleeping at the psychiatric hospital now and you are supposed to be figuring out a way to use the Internet so we can get out of this place. Stop wasting time and let me finish this game,’ Jaden says while stepping on AI in a turtle’s body.

Kim puts Jaden’s left hand over her eyes with her right hand.

“AI, turn on the nanoscanner vision,” Kim pleads while swerving around the road blindly at 29 mph.

Kim hears clanking sounds behind her as if horses are behind her. AI hears Kim’s pleas and does as she asks.

Back in Jaden’s subconscious, AI reappears as a turtle with wings and continues to speak to Jaden.

‘Kim is Dr. Chan....’ AI continues to explain what has happened up until now.

‘Now look what you made me do. Now I’m small, like a baby penis. I was bitten by that huge Venus flytrap plant from the *Little Shop of Horrors* movie. Why is a hungry plant in a sewer pipe anyway?’ Jaden asks while going to the last level.

Kim sees through the nanoscanner and looks behind her. She sees three semi-invisible bionic soldiers thirty-five feet in the air over her and coming down to land on the car. She quickly moves to another lane and they land on the concrete. AI uses a nanoscanner to mess with the communication donut flying above them. He creates some magnetic interference.

“AI, is there anything you can do to check the computer system of the car?”

“I’ll have two nanoscanners check the computer system. But if there is a problem, there isn’t much they can do to repair something electrical. These nanodrones and nanoscanners were specially created to work with cell structure organisms,” AI says.

Kim reaches the cell phone between her legs while continuing to swerve around the highway. Another bullet penetrates the passenger side windshield and hits Jaden in his left shoulder. Kim screams again and the bullet penetrates his skin. She presses send to send the text message.

‘...you need to wake up. Dr. Chan is being attacked...’

The last level of the game is all silver and looks like a dungeon with bricks.

‘I’m coming princess,’ Jaden says while running small over fire and obstacles.

‘Are you serious? Kim is Dr. Chan and she is my girlfriend now?’ Jaden asks.

‘Yes.’

‘Stop joking around. I have a girlfriend, Amy. I left her a voice mail earlier,’ he says while going down in green pipes.

‘No. That was days ago...’

‘Bionic soldiers in exoskeleton black suits chasing us? Landing airplanes with nanoscanners? I had sex with Dr. Chan twice? Jumping out of an airplane without a parachute? I learned everything about Kim in ten minutes by scanning her mind and nanomole?’ He asks. ‘That is alien ALF and E.T. bullshit AI. Why are you pulling my third leg? I just had a dream about a pyramid and flying through space. I remember just going to sleep in the hospital bed. Are you having human visions from the future or are you working on your humor?’

‘The seizure has affected your short-term memory. Your brain cells and neurons are still being repaired with artificial stem cells as we speak. You have to stop playing this game and wake up to the real world, Monday September 7th 2014, 3:55 PM. You are going to die if you don’t wake up. There is only so much the nanodrones can do for you while you are unconscious. Your body is not in a hospital bed, you are on the passenger side of a sports car slumped over,’ AI pleads.

‘Blah, blah, blah. AI, when I finish this last board and I wake up, I’m going to be upset with you, if it is still the middle of the night. Now can you get off this board, so I can figure out these mazes of pipes,’ Jaden says while running quickly through the game.

Kim continues to drive and swerve over the road. She sees the two soldiers running behind the Bugattee. There is a thumping sound and the third female soldier jumps on top of the hard top Bugattee. The car leans towards the rear.

“Shit, this crazy bionic bitch is on the roof!” She screams while driving in the shoulder lane.

“Surrender, you terrorist, bitch!” The female soldier says behind a mask.

AI is interrupting their communication.

“I’m not a terrorist...and get off my daddy’s car, you G.I. Jane bitch!” Kim yells.

Kim quickly turns left and attempts to do a donut on the highway. The two other soldiers jump over the car. The female soldier holds on tightly onto the rooftop while her body swings. The rooftop rips off

completely and she falls onto the highway, with the rooftop in her hands. The Bugattee makes skidding marks and drives straight on the highway avoiding the other two soldiers trying to jump onto the Bugattee.

“It’s raining soldiers!” Kim yells.

AI speaks through the car radio again, “Kim, he isn’t listening to what I’m telling him. He still thinks he is at the hospital sleeping and I’m trying to pull his third leg. What does that mean?”

“I’ll tell you later. We have to wake him up quickly, those soldiers are strong like Terminator robots. There is a machine that visually stimulates coma patients. Try to show him images of after you left the hospital. That should have him thinking you weren’t joking with him. I just hope his long-term memory isn’t affected. I’m glad you came back to help us now,” she says.

“I couldn’t leave you by yourself here. I’ll have to remote the information using nanodrones from one part of his brain to another.”

“Oh no, that G.I. Jane bitch is getting up again and leaping towards us again. I can’t shake the other two,” she says while reaching 31 mph and the vehicle’s rpm is in the red.

Jaden reaches the half dragon and half turtle looking last boss enemy over a silver bridge. He can see the princess behind the big boss in the next room. The boss is shooting hammers and fire from his body at Jaden. He jumps over the fire and moves out of the way of the hammers. Jaden sees images of Kim’s face crying leaving the mental hospital behind the boss enemy. He then sees the disgusting herpes images of the lady on the airplane. He tries to quickly run under the big boss enemy, but it crushes Jaden and he falls into the lava pit.

‘Shit!’ Jaden yells.

Jaden’s shot shoulder slowly repairs itself. One of the bionic soldiers grab onto the rear of the Bugattee. He lifts the rear of the car two feet while running at 30 mph. Kim screams as she feels her body leaning forward. The rear passenger wheel rolls to a stop as Kim tries to swerve around the highway. Jaden’s body leans forward as the seat belt grabs him. The soldier follows the Bugattee while it drives on two wheels and the other soldier tries to grab on. The sniper soldier is kneeling near some trees on the side of the highway. The Bugattee passes by, while he continues to aim towards them waiting for a shot. The soldiers are awaiting orders from command. Their communications from the blimp went out.

“AI help me, they are trying to flip the car over!” She yells.

Kim presses the manual windmill override button and the windmill blades come out of the taillight. They begin to spin on the soldier’s facemask, scraping the glass. The blades don’t penetrate the body suit material. He drops the car while reaching out to break the windmill

blades. Kim swerves around the highway again. The blades fall to the ground in pieces.

In the game, Jaden jumps out of the lava burning, but normal-sized. The enemy boss looks surprised as it continues to shoot fire and hammers at Jaden. He feels the pain of fire burning around his body.

‘I’m not starting over today, dragon breath,’ Jaden says in an angry tone.

Jaden sees images again of him in jail and Kim saying she doesn’t want to see him anymore. His mind begins to recognize the images. The fire around his body disappears and his body turns completely black. The fire and hammers pull into his body by gravity. Jaden sticks his arms into the air and yells.

‘Arrrgggghhhh!’

The huge enemy boss sucks into Jaden’s body and dies along with everything around him. The lava from under the bridge comes up and goes into Jaden’s body, along with the ceiling. The princess is hanging on horizontally as her body pulls towards Jaden. She floats towards Jaden’s body and disappears into his dark abyss. The entire board turns completely black as everything is pulled into Jaden. He sees complete darkness and hears nothing. Suddenly images of Kim at seven years old on the tramway appear. Jaden sees her from the Gravhawk and her walking up closer. Other images quickly appear around him. His mind begins to recognize these new images and sounds. He hears Kim’s voice saying she loves him, over and over again.

Two of the bionic soldiers get a grip behind the Bugattee and lift it up three feet into the air. They begin to pull back to slow the vehicle down. AI quickly dispatches some pro-gravity nanodrones into the metal of the bumper, increasing the weight in the rear of the car. They lift harder while keeping up with the Bugattee’s slow moving speed. The front wheels skid on the concrete as the Bugattee slows down to 21 mph. The female soldier gets a grip on the vehicle and struggles to help flip it over. AI uses more pro-gravity nanodrones to triple the weight of the rear. The soldiers lift the rear four feet into the air.

“Where is Jaden? Is he waking up yet?” Kim asks while holding the top of the windshield.

“He is looking at the images, I think he is remembering,” AI says.

Jaden begins to remember the events AI is showing him. He turns around looking up at his daughter and the words spoken between them.

The Bugattee slows down to 15 mph, while the front wheels create more smoke from skidding. The soldiers lower the rear to two feet. The

female soldier climbs on the bumper while maintaining a tight grip on the rear frame.

Jaden sees through the nanoscanner Kim screaming and a bionic soldier climbing over the bumper towards her. He sees his head and body against the windshield.

‘I remember everything now, it just came back to me. I have to wake up.’

He closes his eyes and concentrates on waking up. His brain does a diagnostics test.

150 BILLION NEURONS CELLS ONLINE. HIGH SPEED NANOTIME OFFLINE. SYNCHRONIZING MOTOR CORTEX CHEMICAL MESSAGES.

Jaden opens his eyes in his human body and his face is less than a foot from the dashboard. Jaden feels paralyzed and his body is moving left to right from the momentum of the car.

‘AI, why can’t I move?’

‘You woke up too fast, your body thinks you are still sleeping. You are in a REM-induced state of paralysis. Give it a few...’

The female soldier slithers across the trunk like a snake towards Kim. The front wheels continue to skid on the highway. The soldier holds onto the headrest with her left hand and reaches down to her waist to pull out a handgun with her right hand. The soldier extends the gun towards the back of Kim’s head, while it automatically reloads.

“Stop the car, you terrorist bitch!” The soldier yells with a computer voice.

Kim releases the steering wheel and the accelerator pedal. She puts her hands in the air. Jaden reaches out and put his left hand between the gun and Kim’s head. Jaden presses his seat belt button with his right hand.

“Remove your hand or I will blow your hand and the back of her head off!” The soldier yells.

Jaden pushes the gun back towards the soldier. Kim moves her head towards the steering wheel. The soldier fires the handgun and it penetrates through the first layer of his skin. Jaden yells and Kim makes a quick scream. She floors the accelerator. The bullet stops in the inside of his palm’s skin. Jaden leans up and knocks the gun out of her hand. The gun tumbles on the ground. Kim accelerates while the front wheels continue to skid. She leans up over the windshield so she can see the road. The soldier grabs Jaden’s hand and tries to overpower him. His muscles begin to bubble as she tries to break his wrist and arm with her bionic strength. Jaden stands up with one leg on the trunk and the other in the passenger seat. He slowly overpowers the female soldier’s

superhuman strength. The soldier looks at Jaden with a confused expression.

“Females still aren’t stronger than men,” Jaden groans.

Kim drives straight on the highway as Jaden and the soldier begin to fight. The two soldiers in the rear continue to run while holding the Bugattee two feet in the air. The soldier crouches on the trunk and swings at Jaden. He blocks the swing while grabbing her arm and fires a gravity shock wave towards her face, but nothing happens.

‘AI what is going on? My weapon energy is at twenty percent, but nothing fired out. I just tried to create a shield around the car and that didn’t work either,’ Jaden says.

‘The weapon system has to resync with your brain waves. It could take a few minutes. Your seizure changed some of your brain wave algorithms,’ AI says.

She head butts Jaden and quickly slams him against the rear of the trunk. The two soldiers running and lifting the rear extend their right hands to grab Jaden. One grabs Jaden by the face and pulls him by the top of his mouth, trying to crush his face. The other extends his hand around his neck to choke him. He gags for a second and then stops breathing. Jaden feels a lot of pain as Kim starts swerving around the road again. Jaden struggles to remove their hands. The female soldier holds onto the headrest and pulls out a knife. She stabs Jaden in the chest towards his heart. The knife doesn’t penetrate his skin, but he feels the pain. His pain level increases as he tries to get up. Jaden gets very angry and veins begin to protrude around his body and he groans loudly.

The black shiny material appears from his fingertips and quickly spreads down to his elbows. Kim’s father’s watch on Jaden’s right arm instantly vaporizes. Jaden swipes the soldiers’ arms that are around his neck and face. Their hands are cut off instantly and they drop the rear of the Bugattee to the ground. The severed hands fall off Jaden and on the ground. They continue running while holding their severed wrist. She continues to try to push the knife through Jaden’s chest.

“Do you think I’m a vampire or something?” Jaden asks her, while touching the knife down to the handle and the metal disappears.

The female soldier looks deep in Jaden’s eyes. His pupils are completely black. Jaden sees fear in her eyes, under the facemask with a nanoscanner.

“What the fuck? What the hell are you?” She asks.

“I’m half alien bitch and this is for trying to shoot my future wife in the head!” He yells while swiping at her chest. He penetrates her unbreakable nanotubing exoskeleton suit with his dark hands. Her clothes, her bra and cell tissue in her breasts instantly disintegrates. She rolls off the car holding her chest screaming in pain.

“I just did you a favor, your breasts were too big for that bionic suit!” Jaden yells while standing on the trunk, doing karate stances. The black material disappears from his arms and hands. The nanodrones start repairing the extensive damaged skin and tissue on his arms. AI stops disrupting their communications. He sees the two men falling towards the ground and covering their heads. Kim reaches back and taps Jaden’s leg to get his attention. Her eyes focus on something in the air above them.

“You bastards want some more!” Jaden yells. “Don’t hide your faces in the concrete, like an ostrich. Pick on someone your own size, I don’t need this black shit on my arms to kick your bionic asses,” Jaden says while taunting them.

“Jaden! Jaden! Look!” She shouts while poking him harder.

He turns around and looks into the air.

“Holy shit!” Jaden shouts.

A huge 15,000 lb thermobaric bomb is falling from the sky by parachute to the right of them. Jaden tries to create his shields, but it doesn’t work. He quickly sits back down in the passenger seat.

“Floor the pedal! Why are you driving at 30 mph?” Jaden asks.

‘AI! AI! My shields aren’t working,’ Jaden says nervously to AI, but there isn’t a response.

“The computerized gears for the engines have been malfunctioning since you were in a coma. Thirty is the maximum speed,” she says.

“This is bad, very bad!” Jaden yells while sitting down.

“Just create a powerful shield around us,” Kim says.

“I can’t now, my brain is still syncing with my weapon system. Even if I did, I wouldn’t have the energy to withstand a bomb that huge,” Jaden says while continuing to look towards the huge bomb 200 feet above them.

“What are we going to do?” Kim asks.

“We have to try to outrun it. Did you try to turn the car off and then back on?”

“No.”

“Try it now, hurry. It explodes fifty feet above its target,” Jaden says while the bomb reaches 108 feet.

She stops the Bugattee and turns the ignition off.

“There isn’t enough time, I have an idea,” Jaden jumps out of the car like a cowboy.

“I need my dad’s fingerprint!” Kim yells.

Jaden realizes certain nanodrones are online. He quickly uses the anti-gravity nanodrones to create a circular path above him. Jaden bends his knees and leaps into the air. His body continues to float upwards in a zero gravity pathway. The massive bomb reaches sixty feet while Jaden

reaches thirty-five feet. Kim watches Jaden leap towards the sky like a superhero about to fight a battle. A trail of white smoke follows his body from the ground. He reaches forty-five feet and the bomb fifty-two feet. Both of his arms are by his side. Jaden fires a gravity shock wave towards the huge bomb over him. The powerful shock wave forces consume the bomb and explode into a fireball. The fireball travels away from Jaden and continues to ascend into the air. The powerful vacuum forces pull the air around Jaden. The bomb consumes the air in the area as the fireball increases in size and speed. Kim feels a strong vacuum pulling her hair towards the sky. Jaden begins to descend towards the ground. The entire sky lights up as the fireball reaches Mach 1, creating another explosive sound. The thermobaric fireball continues to race across the sky towards Washington, D.C.

Kim steps out of the car to watch the fireball engulf the sky and burn past the clouds. A long trail of smoke and fire follows the fireball. Jaden lands next to the Bugattee and bends his knees to absorb the impact. Kim runs to Jaden and embraces him on the side of the highway.

“Whew, what a rush,” Jaden says.

“I thought I lost you baby. Are you okay?” She asks while kissing him all over his face.

“I’m fine, I just have a headache and my skin is tingling on my arms. Hold on a second,” he says while turning around.

Jaden fires a gravity shock wave at the flying UAV spy chopper eighty-seven feet above him. Jaden turns back around to face Kim and he notices the car.

“Women drivers... what did you do to this nice car?” Jaden asks. “When I last left this car it was in mint condition.”

“Don’t start that. Us women drivers are very cautious people. You were taking a coma break and decided to play some 1985 *Super Mario Brothers*, while I was being attacked by robocops? Anyway, what was that shiny black material on your arms?”

“Let’s go, I’ll tell you in the car,” he says while jumping into the passenger seat.

He reaches over to put his fingerprint into the ignition starter area. He punches his hand into the windshield to knock down the dark-colored glass. The car starts up and Kim shifts into drive. The fireball changes direction and heads straight towards the ground in Washington, D.C.

“It worked, restarting the car worked, all four engines are shifting normally,” she says while reaching 70 mph on the empty highway.

“See that, computers still work the same just like when Windows 95 used to crash on me. I miss my *Doom 2*, *Test Drive 3* and flight simulator games. I miss all those hours of playing *Doom 2* with James over the phone line,” he says.

“Phone line? Don’t you mean through the Internet?” She asks.

“Dial-up! Before your time young lady.”

“Well excuse me for growing up in the future. Now the kids play *Virtual Alien Call of Duty*. I’m glad you enjoyed your old school flashback moment. Now tell me about your arms going to the dark side and turning as sharp as a lightsaber.”

“There is something hidden inside of my brain that activates this black material to form on my arms. It happens when I feel pain or get angry. I can’t control it and I don’t know what it is. It does slowly destroy the skin on my arms. It doesn’t affect the nanodrones, but it does affect AI. Get off this exit, we are going to take some local roads.”

“That looks like dark matter or dark energy,” Kim says.

“Yeah, I know. I was trying to think it was something else. It really scares me. In the back of my head, I’m thinking when I was kidnapped back on Planet 455 the Darclonians did something to me. I can feel energy going towards my arms from all directions. It destroys my skin and nanodrones have to quickly repair my skin from the inside. It also feels very cold like ice, but the pain overcomes the cold,” Jaden says.

“Don’t worry about it, we will figure something out together.”

“I just hope AI is okay, he isn’t responding to me again,” he says.

The fireball lands in the Lincoln Memorial Reflecting Pool splashing water seventy feet in the air. The long trail of fire streaks across the sky. People are running in different directions to avoid the water.

Chapter 22: Manhattan's Armageddon

WASHINGTON, D.C. 4:40 PM

"...defend the constitution of the United States," Robinson says while he holds up his right hand in front of congress.

"...in accordance with the twenty-fifth amendment of the constitution; I now pronounce you the forty-seventh President of the United States, President Kevin Robinson," Chief Justice Marie Taetz says.

SOUTH DELAWARE 5:30 PM

Kim has been driving for over ninety minutes without incident. She drives at a slow speed due to the extra wind in her face. People in other cars have been looking at the Bugattee's broken windshield. Jaden has been sleeping. They are sitting in traffic at a tunnel entrance. Jaden wakes up and looks around.

"Where are we?" He asks.

"We are in Lewes, Delaware, about to go through a fourteen mile tunnel. They just created this tunnel last year that connects south Delaware to south New Jersey."

"Cool. Any police or anyone following us?" He asks.

"No. Just a lot of cars sitting on the side of the road and people sleeping in them. I mean like thousands of cars lined up. It looked very awkward," she says.

"The nanomoles have their minds in neutral mode. It's getting worst; we have to get to Manhattan quick. For some reason I feel as if I'm losing some of my memories."

"There is something else, I was listening to the radio and Vice President Robinson is now the President of the United States. I guess President Paylin is dead or still missing," Kim says.

"That's not good. That guy shouldn't be the President of anything. He is bad news. He was the person trying to kill us the last few days. Listen baby, I had this weird dream just now that I was suppose to kill the President of the United States, Stefanie Paylin. Something was telling me to do it and she was begging for mercy for the human race," he says.

"What did you do? What happened next?"

"I was hearing voices saying, 'Finish her! Finish her!' Then I woke up," Jaden says.

"Strange," she says.

"I'm going to try to redial your father, my baby's mama and Peters again," Jaden says.

“Okay. We have to stop for gas soon and something to eat. I figured we can stop by Atlantic City.”

“Okay,” he says.

The tollbooth man asks what happened to the windshield.

“I hit a deer and I’m driving to get the windshield fixed at a body shop in Jersey,” Kim yells to the tollbooth man, while handing him twenty dollars.

“Okay, be careful good looking,” the young tollbooth collector says while smiling.

They drive through a long underwater tunnel. Kim’s father and Amy’s cell phones goes straight to voice mail. Peter’s phone rings and then goes to voice mail.

“The tollbooth man just told the other guy in the booth that you look like his uncle’s R.F.E.C.,” Jaden says.

“You and your Superman hearing. Well, I’m the real thing,” she snaps.

“Yes, you are. You are my real thing,” Jaden says while rubbing his hand up and down her leg.

“Behave!”

They drive out on the south New Jersey side and get back onto the highway. A text comes through on the phone.

“James left a text message saying he will meet me in lower Manhattan on 1st Avenue and 9th Street around 7:30,” Jaden says.

“Cool.”

Jaden sits back in the seat and look towards the sky. He sees the sun is heading down over the western sky. They reach Atlantic City and they pull up into a hydrogen and regular gas station with a food mart.

“Fill ‘er up,” Kim says while getting out to walk towards the food mart.

“You have to use the bathroom baby?” Kim asks.

“No, I’m okay.”

A man begins to fills the gas tank up with hydrogen gas while Jaden sits in the passenger seat looking towards the huge casino hotels. He sees the huge windmill on top of the hotel buildings spinning around.

“Damn, I wish I could stop in there for a few minutes,” he says.

‘Jaden, can you hear me?’ AI asks in a low voice.

‘AI? Is that you? Are you okay, buddy?’ He asks.

‘No, I’m not. When the dark material returned around your hands and arms, it damaged many of my systems. I have three major problems. My ability to shrink and expand in size to leave your body is non-functioning. My microscopic thrusters to fly are non-functioning, so I can’t make it back to the Gravhawk if you need help. The ability to

communicate with your nanodrones and navigate the Gravhawk is offline. Everything is out of service for a few days,' AI says in a low sounding voice.

'You are more broken down than an American vehicle with 100,000 miles on it. I'm really sorry AI. I feel as if this is all my fault. Can you repair yourself?'

'It is not really your fault. My older synthetic crystal nanobot system wasn't made to withstand such a strong unknown energy wave. I might be able to fix the communications in a few days on my own, the rest I'm not too sure about without rebuilding materials,' AI says.

'We don't have a few days. Tonight is doomsday. Have you seen the people in Europe and the zombies walking around?'

'I need to be in the Gravhawk to repair the rest of my systems which could take days to a week. The main problem is with my communications down I can't enter the Gravhawk or remote into the Gravhawk. I'm the only one with the code to enter the ship,' AI says.

'How are you able to communicate with me now?' He asks.

'Communicating with you in your brain only requires a basic chemical message, not a kinetic molecule energy signal. I can read the chemical messages being processed in your brain.'

'Okay.'

'I noticed you liked the instrumental soundtracks back in Virginia, when you and Kim were practicing reproducing. I downloaded the top one thousand movie and game instrumentals from the Internet, using a Wi-Fi signal. I think you will enjoy these,' AI says.

'Yes, copy them over. It was very interesting to hear music without words. It reminded me of some of the music Bellona was playing for me.'

'I'm converting it over now and saving it in your memory. You might hear different songs at random.'

'Cool.'

Kim pays the gas attendant and she gets back into the car with three hot dogs in her one arm. She has a cappuccino and a bottle of water in her other arm.

"Baby, hold this for me," Kim says while reaching out to Jaden. He grabs the organic hot dogs.

'You're saying if we need to get off this planet in an emergency, we are stuck here because all your communications are down?' Jaden asks.

"Are you hungry? I have two extra hot dogs for you," Kim says while placing the drinks in cup holders.

"Sure, thanks baby. It's cool you know exactly what I want on my hot dog. I'm talking to AI now," Jaden says while Kim drives off and taking a bite of the frank.

"Is he okay?" She asks chewing.

‘Yes, I’m sorry. I guess I’m useless to you now. I’m programmed to destroy myself if I become inoperable longer than twelve hours. The Gravhawk is programmed to destroy itself or return back home if there isn’t communication from me within six Earth days.’

‘Hold on there, no one is destroying themselves. We will figure out something. We came this far, we can’t give up yet,’ Jaden says while biting into the hot dog.

“Is he okay?” She asks again.

“No he isn’t.”

Jaden explains to Kim everything AI just told him. There is a long silence as Kim continues to drive on the highway thinking. They pass a sign saying NEW YORK CITY 140 MILES.

“Can AI rest inside of the Bugattee or the cell phone?” Kim asks.

“No, his model needs to be in an organic human or in the Gravhawk,” he explains.

“How about AI go inside of me?” She asks in an outburst, “Inside of my body he can repair himself faster and he would be safer.”

“Kim, that isn’t going to work. Your white blood cells will attack AI and you will get sick. Plus there is no way for him to get into your body, he is grounded, remember?” Jaden asks.

‘I’m only counting three nanoscanners, AI.’

‘The other two were destroyed when you started to change into the energy monster,’ AI says.

‘Don’t say that. I’m not turning into an energy monster or dark energy knight. I’m sure this is a fluke. That sucks the nanoscanners were destroyed.’

‘They were sucked into your arms, along with other molecules, and destroyed,’ AI says.

“Oh okay. I wouldn’t mind getting sick, if it could help him. He saved our lives by coming back so quickly and helping to get you out of the coma in time,” she says.

‘Oh yeah, thanks for saving me when I was in the coma.’

‘Your welcome, friend,’ AI says.

AI’s words echo in Jaden’s mind.

“I have an idea, baby. Do you remember the movie *Innerspace*?” Jaden asks.

“No, I think that movie came out before I was born. But I remember bits and pieces of it from your memory,” she says.

“To sum it up, AI can travel to my mouth and I can kiss you, then he can travel into your mouth,” Jaden says.

“Okay, cool.”

‘AI, I’ll have to reprogram a few nanodrones to escort you from my body to Kim’s. They can fight off and reprogram the white blood cells as they attack. I think this will be best for you, for now, friend,’ Jaden says.

‘That might work, but remember, the nanodrones’ colonies will need a good explanation as to why some nanodrones are being used in another body. They sometimes vote on decisions like this. Remember they are only suppose to work in your body and with your DNA,’ AI says.

‘Okay. I’ll give it a try.’

“I have to communicate with the nanodrones to see if they can do what I’m suggesting.”

The wind continues to blow in Kim and Jaden’s faces. Jaden closes his eyes and communicates with the nanodrones in his body. He notices there are different levels of the drones. He learns there are millions of supervisors, billions of team leaders and trillions of nanodrones assigned to various tasks in a community around his body. They take a vote and decide against using nanodrones in Kim’s body, 1.3 billion to 2.1 quadrillion. Jaden appeals the decision and explains in better details the situation happening around the planet.

‘I know some of you were only created a few days ago, but there is a situation at hand and I need your help. My girlfriend Kim can be trusted, just like I trust you guys. I want to marry this girl one day and she will be a part of me. I know it is against the rules for you to be used in another body, but I need you to trust me on this one. Without AI getting better, we won’t have access to the Gravhawk. I might need the ship to get off this planet if things get out of hand. You have seen what I’ve been up against the last few days. Another one of my unknown energy outbreaks will probably destroy AI. He is your commander and I’m sure you wouldn’t want that to happen. You nanodrones have done an excellent job with repairing my body and having my weapons ready. The anti-gravity, pro-gravity, cell regenerator, and shield creating nanodrones have done an excellent job so far. I need you to trust your captain and work with me on the Jaden-enterprise body ship. Help me, to help AI, to help all of us and my planet. It’s not what my body can do for you, it’s what you can do for my body, AI’s and Kim’s. Please revote for me and revote for our future. Get out and vote! Get out and vote!’ Jaden yells while the words scroll across his eye screen.

‘Good speech, sir. It was very convincing. There were many not voting at all. Thanks for giving the extra effort and fighting for me,’ AI says.

‘You’re welcome my friend. That’s what friends are for. Now I know how a politician feels giving speeches like this thousands of times a year.’

His speech is heard by every nanodrone in his body, down to the smallest ones in his cells.

‘The vote is in: 3.9 quadrillion in favor and 598 trillion against. You won the majority of the vote. They agreed to use only 50,000 nanodrones for fighting off white blood cells and assisting me,’ AI says.

‘Wow, I have democrat and republican nanodrones in my body. That is great, you have 50,000 nanodrones to help you!’

‘That isn’t great. Fifty thousand is not much, especially when being attacked by billions of white blood cells.’

‘Maybe the white blood cells won’t attack. Wait a second, I’m looking at the voting results and some of the nanodrones vote only count as one-third. What is that about?’ Jaden asks.

‘Cell protector nanodrones’ votes don’t count as much. They don’t do the same job as energy creating nanodrones or anti-gravity nanodrones,’ AI says.

‘I don’t like that. Everyone should have a fair vote...’

Kim interrupts, “Jaden, baby, what is the status? Are they going to help AI?”

“Yes, they are. I gave a nice little speech and they agreed to help him.”

“Good baby.”

“Give me a few minutes, they are transporting him now,” Jaden says.

‘Good luck, AI. Can I communicate with you at all?’

‘Yes, the nanodrones should be able to communicate with each other within twenty feet. But I can’t communicate with you directly yet. Kim will have to relay any messages through the nanodrones in her body to your nanodrones. Okay, see you later buddy, good luck with reaching your daughter in time,’ AI says.

‘Okay, buddy, talk to you later. Before you go, why is my nanotime offline?’ He asks.

‘When you went into a coma you destroyed a lot of neurons and cells in your brain. Your brain can’t go into nanotime for a few days, until the high-speed neuron connections are fully healed.’

Kim continues to drive on the highway. The nanodrones carry AI through some veins in the back of Jaden’s head and through some nerves down to his throat. They come up through the nerves in the bottom of his tooth and into his mouth.

“Okay Kim, you can pull over so I can give you this AI STD or alien virus,” Jaden says while chuckling.

“That is disgusting, why did you have to say it like that,” she says while signaling and slowing down on the shoulder. Jaden opens the door and stretches. Kim gets out and walks around to him.

“Baby, did you grow?” She asks.

“You noticed? Yes I did. I’m 6’2” and a half now.”

“That is amazing you are able to do that,” she says while hugging him and looking up to him.

“Ready?” He asks.

“Yes. How sick do you think I will get?” She asks.

“Depends on how much your body tries to fight it. Remember, it is a foreign object and your white blood cells will attack it. We have to hurry baby,” he says while placing his lips on hers. They exchange saliva and their tongues rub against each other. Cars continue to drive by on the small highway. The sunlight shines between their body as AI travels into Kim’s mouth. Their shadow on the ground look like one shadow united. They unclench and Kim wipes her mouth with her hand with a smile on her face.

“That was good there. You are definitely a good kisser,” she says while opening the passenger door.

“So are you, hot dragon lips,” he says while sitting in the driver’s seat.

Kim sits down and she begins to sneeze. Jaden quickly accelerates.

“God bless you!. Hey, make sure he doesn’t fly back out,” he says while she reaches for some tissues in her bag. She chuckles after sneezing again.

“Very funny. I would love to see these nanodrones through a microscope,” she says.

Jaden begins to speed on the highway, while Kim closes her eyes. The wind in her face pushes her hair into the air behind the headrest. Twenty minutes pass by.

“Kim are you okay?”

“Yes, I just feel like I’m coming down with a cold. But it feels as if it is going away at the same time, in a weird way. Some nanodrones created some artificial acetaminophen for me. I’ll be okay. I can hear AI talking to me. He says he is inside of me, just like you were,” she says with a runny nose and coughing.

Jaden laughs and says, “That was funny, that was a good one. At least his artificial sense of humor still works.”

Kim is sleeping and Jaden is driving at a high speed on the New Jersey Turnpike. They continue driving for another hour. The tollbooths are empty as the highway has minimal traffic. More traffic is appearing on the southbound side. He continues driving north on the turnpike. He sees the World Trade Center building across the water. The building has an orange glow from the sun beginning to set in the west. Jaden remembers flying by the old World Trade Center about a month ago. The tall antenna and reflective glass is very dazzling across the river. He thinks about waking her up, but he lets her get her rest. He continues driving another fifteen minutes. He runs into some traffic at the bridge. Jaden sees the toll costs twelve dollars at the George Washington Bridge.

“Shit, twelve dollars to cross a bridge?” Jaden asks. “I’d rather swim across the ocean.”

He drives through the E-ZPass lane and says, “Heroes don’t pay tolls.”

He crosses the bridge and sees so many buildings all over the place. Across the bridge and on the street, he sees a homeless man holding a sign that reads, WHY LIE? I NEED A BEER.

Jaden chuckles as he pulls up to the man and hands him a dollar.

“Enjoy your last beer!” Jaden yells.

He takes local streets towards downtown Manhattan. Kim opens her eyes and looks around. The streets are mostly clear of people as if it is late at night. They see a few police cars and taxis driving around.

‘Where the hell are we?’ Kim asks herself.

‘We are in Harlem I think. The navigation system says Harlem, but this looks like lower Manhattan to me. I thought Harlem was mostly African Americans?’ Jaden asks Kim telepathically. She looks at him with a surprised face.

‘You can hear me?’ She asks.

‘Yes. The nanodrones are communicating to each other from our bodies and transmitting our thoughts to each other. You can adjust the telepathic communication settings if you want,’ Jaden says.

“Let’s use voice communications, this is a little creepy. AI is talking to me the same time you are,” Kim says aloud.

“I know how you feel. I had that same creepy feeling a few weeks ago. How are you feeling? You look a lot better.”

“I’m feeling much better. The streets are so deserted,” she says.

“My nanoscanners show that most people are in their beds sleeping. Something is definitely about to happen.”

“What is AI saying about this area?” Jaden asks.

“He is saying this area is called New Harlem. He is giving me the history of how the population changed in the past twenty years and how the middle class is almost completely gone. He downloaded a lot of information about Manhattan.”

“Cool. Is it me or are some people walking around like zombies?” Jaden asks.

“I think you are right, some people are walking rather odd,” she says.

“This is amazing to me, I was here last year, or in 1995 when I visited New York City on a trip. Everything looks so different, new condos and buildings on every corner,” Jaden says while driving down 8th Avenue.

Jaden sees two Jehovah’s Witnesses women standing on the sidewalk holding up magazines. He zooms in and realizes they are two advanced robotic women. The perfect replica human female on the right is holding a magazine that reads in big letters, THE END OF THE WORLD IS

COMING IN 2032. The other female's magazine shows an image of the solar system and Earth is missing in the picture. It reads in small letters, WHERE WOULD YOU BE?

Jaden stops the car in the middle of the street and a red car behind him honks the horn. He can't believe what he just saw.

"Kim, do you see what those two robotic women standing on the corner are holding up in their hands?"

"What ladies?" She asks.

Jaden turns around and there isn't anyone there. He wonders where those two women went and uses a nanoscanner to find them. He doesn't see them and he continues to drive with a strange look on his face.

"Forget it."

"You okay baby?" She asks.

"Yes, I just think I'm seeing things."

"AI says the population is fifty percent Caucasian, twenty percent Asian, fifteen percent African American, ten percent Hispanic and five percent other. He says the middle class has been vanishing for the past fifteen years."

"Turn right at 125th Street and left on Broadway," the navigation system says.

"Amazing, times have changed," Jaden says while turning onto 125th Street.

"Keep driving straight, take the Henry Hudson Parkway downtown, it's faster," Kim says.

They continue driving down towards the highway in medium traffic and they reach a traffic light. A man in raggedy clothes jumps out and sprays a liquid where the windshield used to be. It goes directly onto Jaden's face and clothes. The man tries to squeegee the thin air.

"You dickhead! You got watered down Windex and fruit punch on me," Jaden yells while opening the door. The light turns green and the cars behind him begin honking their horns. Jaden grabs the man by his shirt collar and looks him in the eyes. The cars go around the Bugattee honking their horns.

"Squeegee, dickhead!"

"I'm sorry man, I'm sorry. I was just trying to make a dollar. I didn't know you didn't have a windshield," the petrified man says.

"Jaden stop, don't hurt him. He has had a tough life the past six years. He used to own a house in 2008 with his family, until he was laid off during the recession. He couldn't find work and suffered health problems without health coverage, his medical bills took everything he owned. He lost everything, including his family," Kim yells nervously while looking at Jaden.

The mysterious black energy returns around Jaden's hands. The energy dissolves the fabric in the man's shirt. Jaden watches the man run across the street with half a shirt on.

"Don't worry about him, sweetie. Try to calm down. I'll drive, be careful with your hands," Kim says while opening the passenger door and climbing over to the driver's seat.

Jaden climbs into the passenger seat with his hands in the air, trying not to touch anything. Kim starts to drive and Jaden looks at his hands. The energy disappears from his hands.

"How did you know all that information about the squeegee man?"

"I don't know, it came to me randomly. I looked at him and I saw a couple of things from his past. It was really strange. I even heard him thinking stuff."

"The nanodrones are somehow able to detect other peoples' brain waves since your brain is structured a little different than Jaden's and your mind has more emotional activity. I'm not sure if it's with everyone," AI says to Kim.

"I have to find out what this is and why this is happening. This is really beginning to creep me out. I'm getting angry so quick, this isn't like me," he says while looking at the river on the side of the parkway.

The skin nanodrones in Jaden's body are reporting unknown black material spreading inside of his skin and being embedded inside of skin cells.

"AI wanted me to tell you that Earth's magnetic field is going to reverse in the next twenty years. When he was providing the energy from the magnetosphere, he analyzed the strength and integrity of it. He also analyzed the core of the planet with a Gravhawk nanoscanner. When the magnetic field reverses, there will be a lot of sun radiation hitting the planet's surface for centuries," Kim explains.

"That is interesting, I guess sun tanning shops will be the first to go out of business. I think that might be a good thing for humans, maybe that event will end racism when everyone is the same color," Jaden says while chuckling.

Kim laughs and says, "Hey, millions will die."

"I know, I'll let scientists know when all this is over. If we can't stop this attack, I'm sure the Darclonians will fix the Earth's magnetic reversing issue."

Kim laughs along with Jaden.

1ST AVENUE 9TH STREET, LOWER MANHATTAN 7:32 PM

Jaden and Kim sit in the Bugattee on the side of the street, waiting to see if James is going to show up. Jaden is using three nanoscanners to

locate Amy and Sabrina in lower Manhattan near the World Trade Center over a mile away. A middle aged, Indian traffic officer walks up to their car with a Bronx metal ticket writer in his hand and a black, odd looking helmet on his head.

"Miss, you can't park here! This is a no parking zone. Please move your car," he says.

Kim shifts the gear shifter into reverse.

"No, don't move anything baby," Jaden says to Kim and then looks at the traffic agent. "We are just standing. There aren't any parking spaces anywhere else. We are waiting for a friend," Jaden says in a raised tone, as another traffic agent walks up on the curb.

"Jaden, I'll move the car. You have to stay calm," Kim says.

"Sir, you can't park here," the man says.

"Just write him a ticket," the older chubby traffic lady says.

"Do you know the difference between no parking and no standing you traffic dickwad? I know your high school diploma can only educate you so far. But a little common sense will tell you, there is a difference," Jaden snaps while getting out of the car. Kim tries to grab his hand, but misses.

The traffic agent walks to the front of the car and scans the license plate sensor.

"Jaden!" Kim yells while he walks around the car to confront the man.

"Sir, get back in your car before we have you arrested and towed," the traffic lady says.

"You and what traffic agent army?" Jaden asks her. "You keep out of this, big mama."

He walks up into the man's face.

"Sir, now you are getting three tickets. One for parking in a no parking zone, one for being disrespectful to an officer and one for idling your vehicle for more than three minutes," the agent says while typing on the LCD screen.

"Now you're an officer? They made you part of the police department? Is that so you don't get beat up for being an asshole?" Jaden asks.

The man ignores Jaden and continues to create the ticket. Kim gets out of the car and tries to pull Jaden back away from the agent.

"He is just doing his job Jaden."

"He isn't doing his job right, a 5-year-old knows the difference between no standing and no parking. Get back in the car, baby. I'm just going to talk to him," he says while she takes a step back. AI advises Kim to step back a few feet. AI can feel the unknown energy passing towards Jaden.

"If you write me a ticket, I'm going to shove that ticket writer down your throat," Jaden says angrily. The man tries to walk away from Jaden. The first ticket prints out and hangs from the machine. Jaden's hands begin to turn shiny black. Jaden reaches for the small metal traffic writer, it flies from the agent's hand and into Jaden's. The black energy goes around the metal traffic writer and the LCD screen turns blank. The ticket that printed out of it is destroyed.

"Did you see that? It flew into my hand," Jaden says excitedly.

"Sir, give that back to me. You are obstructing justice and you will be arrested now," the male agent says while the other agent steps back a few feet and gets on her radio to call for backup.

"You want it?" Jaden asks while raising it into the air with his hand.

"Jaden no!" Kim yells from a distance.

"You want it?" Jaden asks again with an angry face and demanding voice.

Jaden rams the ticket writer into his mouth as Kim screams. The black energy around the traffic writer machine dissolves the inside of the traffic agent's mouth, teeth and throat, and then comes out the back of his neck. He falls to the ground while blood pours from the huge hole in his face. Jaden feels a rush of pleasure around his body. The ticket writer machine turns back to its normal brown color, still inside the agent's face. The traffic lady looks in shock and talks fast into the radio. Kim runs to the agent on the ground. She checks his pulse and other bystanders run away.

'Oh my God, oh my God. He is dead, oh my God,' Kim says to herself and Jaden.

"I need backup, officer down," she says into the radio while Jaden looks at her smiling.

"Where's your gun at officer? How are you going to enforce traffic laws without your big gun? Looks like you peed in your grandma's underwear, Miss Hairy Bush!" Jaden yells while chuckling and walking towards her.

She jogs away and runs into the side of an energy shield Jaden just created around her. She smacks her face into the solid shield and falls towards the ground unconscious.

"You killed him Jaden. You killed him!" Kim yells while beginning to cry.

"Did you see that baby? I created a full shield around her from here. I didn't even know I could do that," Jaden says with a huge smile on his face and his hands turn red from missing skin. Jaden climbs into the driver seat.

“Look at my hands baby, I look like the guy from *Hellraiser*,” he chuckles while looking at his veins and meaty hands. The skin is quickly repairing itself.

“Let’s go baby. If he knew his job and wasn’t a dickhead, he wouldn’t be road kill right now. That felt good. That was for all the citizens of New York being unfairly ticketed and towed by traffic agents!” He yells into the air with his hands in the sky. “Wow, what a rush,” he says while Kim climbs into the passenger seat crying.

“You should be happy baby, you received several tickets when you were in New York City a few years ago and you were towed. Remember the sign you were towed at a few years ago? No parking from 10 PM-5 AM. What kind of logical sign is that?” He says.

“I didn’t want him to die. That guy could have a family or something. What has gotten into you?” She asks. “You hurt AI even more when you lost your temper again and killed that innocent man.”

“That’s not good...poor AI.”

“You are changing Jaden, this is not like you to hurt or kill someone.”

Suddenly there is an awkward silence and cars driving by cruise uncontrollably. There is a slight wind blowing from the east. Kim and Jaden look around. The cars crash into parked cars as the drivers go unconscious. Continuous honking horns echo from all directions. Three taxi drivers are slumped over the steering wheel and begin to crash their vehicles. Some get out of their cars and begin walking in a straight line south like zombies. Their eyes are wide open and mouths drooling. Two people are hit by uncontrolled vehicles, their bodies fly over the windshields. Crashing sounds continue to take over the airwaves. The two people that were hit stand up with broken bones sticking from their arms and legs. One of the taxis lose control and drives straight towards the Bugattee. Jaden instantly creates a shield around the Bugattee and the taxi hits the outside of the shield. He quickly grabs Kim to protect her. The hood of the taxi is crumpled as the momentum from the impact pushes the Bugattee hard into the sidewalk damaging the wheels and axles.

“Are you okay baby?” He asks.

“Yes, I’m fine.”

Jaden closes his eyes and concentrates on the nanoscanners still around the World Trade Center area.

“Everyone’s nanomole is turning positive and their minds are being taken over,” Kim says.

Kim looks at the cell phone and sees no network service.

“I found Sabrina walking up the stairs on the 77th floor, in the World Trade Center tower with her mother. We have to go, both of them are HBH zombies along with fifty other people.”

They climb out of the Bugattee on the passenger side and start walking south.

Jaden sees the infrared beam shining on top of the World Trade Center. To the human eye, it is invisible, but to cameras and nanoscanners, they show up as green infrared beams.

"Let's run baby. There is an infrared green beam shining on top of the trade building," Jaden says while grabbing her hand to run with her. She pushes his hand away.

"I'm okay to run by myself," she says.

"Fine then, keep up."

"AI says that is the beam up to the mother ship's location. They are beaming people up to the Darclonian's ship," Kim says while breathing heavily.

"Why?" Jaden asks.

"AI, doesn't know. They could be doing something to them, maybe experimenting."

"We have to go."

A police officer begins to speak into a loudspeaker, "People in the area, please stay off the street and stay in your homes. There is a police emergency taking place."

Some people aren't in the HBH positive stage. A man carries his unconscious wife as he cries looking into the sky. Crying kids are kneeling down near their unconscious neutral stage parents on the ground. Some children are walking around aimlessly. Jaden and Kim continue to run block to block as some men and women are lying on the concrete unresponsive. Jaden begins to lead Kim by thirty feet.

"That man is raping that woman!" Kim yells to Jaden down the block, while stopping to look. He runs back half way to yell at her.

"Some men and women aren't under the positive stage. I guess some men are taking advantage of the situation. It is happening all around the area to men and women. You don't want to know what is happening in the subway. Let's go, baby, you are running too slow!"

"Men also?" Kim asks.

"Some men are raping men. This is the village, what do you expect?" Jaden asks.

Police cars and fire trucks race downtown. The officers all have on special helmets as their nanomoles stay in a negative state. Hundreds of officers jump out of their vehicles in the area and try to restore order, while Taser citizens. People are looting while police officers run in different directions chasing people. There is a military Humvee with a ray gun dish on the roof. They are trying to control a crowd of HBH walking in a group towards downtown. The ray gun hits their bodies and

they continue walking at the same speed. Inside their minds, they are screaming in agonizing pain. Their clothes begin to smoke and their skin begins to cook. The military personnel inside the Humvee stop using the ray gun when they notice two citizens burst into flames.

"There is a military roadblock across Canal Street, closing off lower Manhattan three-quarters of a mile from here. We have to hurry, okay?" Jaden asks.

"You go ahead. Go save your daughter, you are running too fast for me. I'm going to try and help these innocent women and children," she says.

"Are you sure you are going to be okay?" Jaden asks.

"Yeah, go ahead. I'll be fine. I'll meet you at the roadblock area," Kim says while running to help a rape victim in a nearby alley.

Jaden runs at a fast 21 mph. He jumps over a major three-lane street. Some police handcuffing people stop to look at Jaden running at breakneck speeds. They are amazed how far and how fast his legs are moving.

Other conscious women and men try to help the HBH victims. Some fight off attackers. Kim hears the rape victim screaming for help in her mind. Her unconscious body lies there not moving. The victim's eyes are glazed over. The rapist has a smile on his face.

"You feel so good on drugs, lady. You aren't even fighting me, you must like the way I feel inside of you. You must be on some new date rape drug. I always wanted a cute blonde like you," the crazed man says to his victim.

'Please stop, please stop. I can't move, I can't do anything. Someone help me!' The victim yells inside of her mind.

Kim runs up from behind and kicks the man off the girl. The man tries to stand up and catch his balance. She quickly kicks him between the legs and hits him in the face with her elbow.

"No means no, you piece of shit!" Kim yells at him groaning in pain.

The blow to the face activates the man's nanomole and he lies trembling with his eyes open.

"Are you okay?" Kim asks the victim.

'Kick him in the balls again for me,' the girl says to Kim.

'She can hear me?' Kim asks AI.

'Yes, they can hear everything, but they can't move their bodies or talk,' AI tells Kim in a low voice.

Kim walks over to the stone-faced man and kicks him between the legs again.

"I did it for you, you are going to need a doctor sweetie," Kim tells the raped victim while looking between her legs.

'Please don't leave me here. I can't feel anything and I can't move. What did he do to me? What is wrong with me?' The victim asks.

Kim looks down again between her legs and puts her panties back on for her.

“Just get tested for everything known to man and get a rape kit at the hospital when and if you wake up,” Kim says while getting up crying.

‘Please don’t leave me here, help me. Please! Please!’ The female pleads.

Kim turns around and says, “I have to help other women and children.”

The victim continues to moan and cry while her eyes look straight ahead in a daze.

‘AI, I don’t want to leave her like this. Can the nanodrones in me deactivate her nanomole?’

‘You are going to have to ask them yourself, I still can’t communicate with them. Repeat after me: Team leader drones please communicate,’ AI tells Kim.

Kim repeats what AI says and she asks the nanodrones to help deactivate the women’s nanomole. Kim kneels near the victim and puts her head on the victim’s head.

‘What are you doing to me?’ The woman asks.

“I’m trying to deactivate what is in your mind controlling you. Just relax,” Kim says while tears run down the woman’s face.

The [*Armageddon Movie Soundtrack, Asteroid chase track 30*](#) begins to play in his mind. Jaden is running down Broadway and reaches the roadblock area with many military personnel in Humvees keeping people from entering lower Manhattan. Jaden’s body goes invisible and he leaps over the entire intersection. He lands over the roadblock and continues to run towards the shiny glass building still reflecting some orange sunlight. Four other smaller buildings surround the new World Trade Center. Jaden sees there is a standoff in the building with police and HBH citizens blocking off different sections of the building. He notices Sabrina and Amy are standing on the rooftop looking towards the sky in silence. Jaden knows he doesn’t have much time to reach them. Some police see Jaden running quickly down Church Street and yell to him to freeze. Jaden disappears again and runs past World Trade Center 3. The police look around in confusion. He leaps forty-five feet in the air, over the grassy memorial area. His legs continue to run midair as if they were on the ground. The wind blows by his ears and face. A whooshing sound goes by his body as he continues to ascend upwards. Jaden glides towards World Trade Center 1 and his body reappears. He sees a reflection of himself approaching the reflective glass.

The movie soundtrack reaches three minutes. He lands on the side of the building, his body braces from the impact and he bends his knees. There is a loud thumping sound as the glass window cracks under his

feet. Jaden stands up and is facing up the side of the building. The distance up looks like a long, narrow football field. A howling cold wind blows by his face and body as it continues down the side of the building. Jaden is 115 feet from the ground as his pro-gravity nanodrones in his feet keep him on the side of the building. His anti-gravity nanodrones quickly move around him and keep him stable as if he is on the ground. He looks up the 1776-foot tall building and begins running up the side of it. The sound of helicopter blades echo down the building. The helicopter is hovering over the roof and a man in the helicopter is warning people they will be fired upon. A group of ten people on the roof lift eight feet into the air and levitate. Their eyes look in a daze. In their minds, they are panicking and screaming for help. Their bodies quickly disappear and are whisked into space at near the speed of light. Jaden makes it to the eightieth floor and continues to run faster up the glass wall. The next group slowly walks into the same area, against their will. Sabrina and Amy are in this group holding each other's hands.

Jaden runs faster as he can hear the helicopter blades cutting the air from a distance. A minute later, he makes it to the observation deck at 1368 feet and he leaps upwards while his body changes directions. The wind changes direction in the air around his ears. He descends by a huge antenna that extends 300 feet into the air. A nanoscanner picks up an F-22 Raptor flying towards the World Trade Center arming missiles. It also picks up a drone UAV flying a few miles behind the F-22 Raptor, both quickly approaching. The nanoscanner picks up the sounds of the aircraft cutting through the wind. Jaden hears and feels the loud engines through the nanoscanner. The roaring engines almost make him jump. The helicopter pulls away from the building. Jaden looks down at the ground of the room quickly approaching.

He lands on the roof and he makes a thumping sound. Both of his hands touch the ground as he bends his knees. The tiles on the roof crack under his two feet.

'Man, running up a building isn't easy, it would have been so much easier to leap the building in a single bound like Superman.'

He stands up and quickly runs towards the other side of the roof where his daughter is standing with a group of people. The sounds of rocket engines are getting closer and echo in all directions. Another nanoscanner picks up Sabrina crying in her mind and Amy praying to Mary in hers. Sabrina is wearing a black mini-skirt and white blouse. Amy is wearing black, long spandex and a skintight shirt that reads, I LOVE THE NEW NEW YORK! on her chest. They levitate in the air. Jaden pushes other HBHs not in the beam, out of the way. They fall on the ground like domino pieces. Pro-gravity nanodrones quickly move towards his daughter. They enter the intense energy spectrum and slowly spin around his daughter and Amy. There is no effect as he tries to pull

their feet down. A nanoscanner detects the green infrared tractor beam scanning the levitating bodies' molecules. Jaden leaps up and grabs his daughter's right arm and leg. His feet are three feet from the ground. He tries to pull her down, but she doesn't budge. He increases the pro-gravity nanodrones in his feet and her body slowly comes down. Sabrina is pulling her mother's right arm with her. Sabrina can see her father is there to rescue her. She tries to move her eyes to see him, but she can only look straight ahead. She can hear his voice through her ears and Jaden can hear her thoughts from a nanoscanner floating in her mind.

'Pull harder dad!' She shouts to him.

"Let go of your mother's arm, I can't pull both of you down," Jaden yells.

'I can't,' she says in a soft whimper. 'I can't control my own body.'

Jaden struggles and groans. He pulls her four feet down and out of the infrared scanning area. Amy's arm leans out of the infrared area and her body leans downwards.

In a flash, the bodies disappear and Sabrina falls on top of Jaden. The soundtrack ends in Jaden's mind.

'Oh my God, oh my God,' she says telepathically.

"You see what happens when you don't listen to your father? Who is the psycho daddy now?" He asks her.

Jaden lifts his daughter up and he sees blood on her white blouse. He sees Amy's severed arm still grabbing onto Sabrina's left hand. Blood is squirting out of the arm as he grabs it and tosses it to the side. Sabrina can't see the arm or the blood on her. Her eyes continue to look forward as if she is in a trance. Her body continues to move uncontrollably as the positive nanomole in her brain attempts to get her body to regain balance. Some nanodrones penetrate her brain to temporarily stop her body from moving.

'Where's my mother? Where's my mother?' Sabrina asks in a panic.

"She went to heaven, with God and Mary," Jaden says while grabbing his daughter and placing her in his arms. He attempts to stand up while pushing himself up with one hand. The [original Superman Movie Soundtrack, track 11 begins to play in his mind.](#)

He carries her towards the side of the building he came up from.

"So now you believe me and you want to call me your father, huh? It is amazing when you are helpless and looking like you just had a drug overdose, you call for your father's help. You teenagers think you know everything. Am I still a crazy mental patient?"

'No, I believe you now. I'm sorry I doubted you. Can you please get me out of this paralyzed state? I feel as if I'm in a living nightmare. I can't control my body! Help me!'

"Calm down, calm down. This will be over soon."

‘Can you turn my head, so I can see what’s happening in front of us?’ She asks.

“No, that is not a good idea, just keep looking up at super dad.”

Sabrina’s blank stare at her father brings a slight tear to her eyes.

The next group of HBH walks and then stands in the beam up area like robots. A nanoscanner inside of the UAV is detecting the aircraft flying in autonomous mode and has a lock on Jaden’s face. TERRORIST SUSPECT THREAT is flashing on the internal screens. The F-22 pilot fires a missile towards the roof.

Jaden runs with his daughter in his arms towards the end of the tall building. Her soft body and mesmerizing perfume reminds him of Amy when he carried her in his arms not too long ago. Her hair whips in the wind and softly glides across his face.

“I think I like you in this paralyzed state, you are quiet just like a newborn baby. So, you never did anything together with your father before huh? How about the first thing we do together as father and daughter is jump off a building without a parachute or rope,” he says while breathing heavily and running faster.

‘You are joking right?’ She asks.

Jaden leaps into the air over the thirteen-foot high gate.

‘No, no, no!’ Sabrina yells.

There is a huge and loud explosion as they just clear the gate. The shield goes around their bodies as it absorbs the huge blast, and propels them forward. Fire and debris explodes off the top of the building in all directions. Body parts fly in different directions. The F-22 quickly flies by the top of the building. The entire building shakes and the huge antenna stays intact. The explosion can be seen for miles around. The UAV slows down, levitates, changes direction and targets Jaden. Sabrina screams to herself as they quickly free fall towards the ground. She experiences weightlessness and struggles to close her eyes, and she does. Light particles begin to form around them as the nanodrones get to work. Jaden is watching the UAV’s movements about 300 feet above him and through the nanoscanner. Jaden and Sabrina free fall to about 1208 feet from the ground by the side of the huge building. Suddenly the UAV aims a laser-guided beam towards Jaden’s face. It fires a small missile directly towards them. Jaden thinks very quickly and tosses his daughter up into the air. Half his anti-gravity nanodrones go around Sabrina, enabling her lifeless body to continue being propelled upwards.

The missile comes directly at Jaden as his shield quickly forms flat in front of him, in a four foot square around his left arm. Jaden realizes a fraction of his shield uses much less energy. The missile passes Sabrina’s still slowly ascending body. She opens her eyes as she feels something moving by her at high speed. She screams to herself when she doesn’t

see her father over her. He braces for impact as the high-speed missile quickly approaches him. He curls his legs and body behind the shield. The missile hits the outside of the shield and his body quickly propels towards the V-shaped World Trade Center building. The shield nanodrones dissolve from the impact and fire is all around Jaden. Other nanodrones quickly go towards his back to reinforce his back and spinal cord. He stretches his arms and legs out. His body hits the 91st floor at 25 mph and the air is knocked out of his lungs. The thirteen-foot glass column breaks into thousands of pieces. Jaden's internal body parts shift from the strong impact. His brain shifts in his skull and his left arms grabs onto a steel column to keep him from going into the building. Glass and debris hits his body, causing him to bleed in numerous places. His shoulder is dislocated along with many other joints around his body. The glass falls down the building. There are office tables and desks behind him. Jaden blacks out as his lifeless body falls towards the ground. Tears float from Sabrina's face and turn into small floating bubbles.

The gravity of Earth overpowers the anti-gravity nanodrones around Sabrina and slowly pulls down on her body. Jaden's lifeless body accelerates down the side of the building. The UAV arms its machine gun and moves in closer towards its target. The nanodrones quickly awaken Jaden and he opens his eyes towards glass windows quickly moving by him. He is falling face first and slowly rotating. He hears and feels the glass from the building passing by his face. Jaden takes a deep breath and magnetically charges nanodrones around his back and legs. His back pulls towards a steel beam inside a glass window. His upside down body quickly jerks towards the building like a strong magnet. The back of his shirt begins to deteriorate from the powerful friction trying to slow him down. The skin on Jaden's back quickly heats up and smells like burning flesh. The UAV begins to fire bullets at Jaden.

He stands up and tries to catch his balance. The machine gun bullets break the glass around him. The pro-gravity nanodrones pull his feet back towards the side of the building. The glass cracks from the force of his feet. He takes bigger steps as the glass is shot up behind him. Glass is spinning in all directions and falling behind him. He runs towards another side of the building. The UAV continues to follow him while continuing to fire. Jaden passes the forty-ninth floor and bullets hit his skin, but don't penetrate it. Jaden can feel the pain of the bullets and he tries to control his pain level. Sabrina's body begins to quickly descend towards the ground. Bullets ricochet and glass breaks in all directions. Suddenly a circle of smoke can be seen from the third floor up to the ninety-eighth floor around the entire building. The entire building vibrates as sounds of glass can be heard in all directions breaking around the building. Jaden is running back towards the side of the building his

daughter is falling from. The wave of breaking glass quickly accelerates towards Jaden from two directions like a wave in the ocean. The broken glass sits levitating outside the building in the same spot it broke from.

The vibrations from the building begin to increase. The UAV is lining up directly across Jaden to fire upon him again. The shock wave of broken glass around the entire building is moving towards Jaden. Jaden sees his daughter free falling towards the ground and is about to pass him. The building shakes like an earthquake is hitting it. The gravity shock wave absorbs the gravity forces of the entire building. It goes quite around him. Jaden leaps forward towards the UAV that begins to fire machine gun bullets at him again. The rectangular shield reforms over his left hand and deflects the high-speed bullets.



The sounds of ricocheting bullets echo around him. Jaden grunts as he sees sparks of bullets a few inches from his face going in different directions. Sabrina's body just passes by, forty feet behind the levitating UAV. The wave of broken glass and smoke comes from all directions towards the area where he jumped from on the building. White smoke trails behind Jaden as he gets right under the UAV and fires his powerful gravity shock wave. The UAV propels out of control straight into the air at a high rate of speed. The glass around the entire building begins to fall towards the ground.

Jaden hears his daughter still screaming and quickly descends towards her free falling body. He gets closer and closer to her. He increases the pro-gravity nanodrones around his body as he passes 405 feet. The UAV continues straight into the clouds and disappears. He quickly glides towards her and grabs her body. He catches her and increases the anti-gravity nanodrones around his body. He creates an artificial force upwards. They both light up like a Christmas tree. They reach 103 feet from the ground as it begins to rain glass and debris from

the building. They land on the ground while Jaden bends his knees to absorb the impact. A few firemen run towards Jaden from taking cover.

‘Did we land? Are we on the ground?’ Sabrina asks.

“Superman couldn’t have landed better,” Jaden says while smiling at his daughter

The firemen look at Jaden speechless and take cover from glass bouncing on the ground like hail. They run back under the shelter they were under and yell towards Jaden.

He carries Sabrina with his right arm and has the rectangular shield over his head like an umbrella with his left.

“That was amazing. I saw the whole thing, what are you some sort of superhero?” A fireman asks.

“Nice new helmets FDNY,” Jaden says.

“How did you do that? Did you break all the glass on the World Trade Center building yourself?”

“New York’s bravest, I was only trying to save my daughter and ex-girlfriend. My daughter was the number one priority, those other people needed a real superhero to save them. What was the point of blowing up the top of the building?” Jaden asks.

“That is what they started to do in Europe. It turns out people have been disappearing and returning as something else. The returned people infect other people. The military is taking out any tall buildings with an infrared beam shining on them. I’ve never seen anyone leap off the top of the building like that and survive. Are you one of them or are you a superhero or something?” The fire chief asks.

Jaden thinks for a second. He walks away from the crowd of men and turns around.

“After all I’ve been through the last couple of days, I would say I’m a superhero to the people I care about.”

The fire chief looks at Jaden with remorse as he walks away with his daughter in his arms.

“She going to be okay? If she is going to turn into one of them zombies, she has to be handcuffed and sedated,” an officer says under the shelter.

“She will be fine in about ten minutes!” Jaden yells.

“Try to get north of Canal Street, this area needs to be secured and locked down.”

The firemen talk amongst themselves. Jaden overhears one saying, “The last time I saw someone jumping from the World Trade Center like that, their bodies exploded when they hit the ground.”

“Did you see him running on the building like that? I’ve never seen anything like that in my life,” another guy says.

The nanodrones get to work to deactivate Sabrina’s nanomoles. His right arm cradles her head. His left arm cradles her legs.

Kim continues to help children and other people. She has a child around her neck and another 2-year-old baby in her arms. Kim brings different children and women to nearby ambulances.

Jaden looks at his daughter and can't believe how much she looks like him. He walks by the World Trade Center memorial area and a sign reads, WE WILL NEVER FORGET.

He communicates with Sabrina, "Sorry I missed out on your childhood. Being in another galaxy isn't an excuse, but I didn't even know you were created. I'm sorry you grew up without a father. I know you don't know me and I don't know you, but hopefully in the next nine minutes we will know all about each other," he says while continuing to walk towards the street.

Two miles north, the rape victim gets up and looks around. She screams as the pain hits her all at once. She limps around and sees the rapist lying with his eyes spaced out, not too far from her. She spits on him and kicks him. "Look what you did to me you asshole!"

She limps down the alleyway and around the corner. She looks around for an open hardware, 99-cent store or a place she can get scissors from. She sees an open Japanese restaurant. She walks inside and sees the store is vacant. She walks into the kitchen and finds some huge scissors for cutting up meat. She returns to the alleyway three minutes later with some big scissors.

"You want to rape women? I'm going to neuter you just like my cats are. You aren't going to be raping anyone anymore."

The man's body begins to tremble and shake as he hears what she just said to him.

Sounds of thunder rumble in the background. Jaden decides to only use one nanoscanner to check the area. Behind him, the UAV aircraft comes from the clouds and falls straight towards the ground and explodes a few blocks over on Broadway. Jaden is continuing to walk with his daughter in his arms.

'You know you weigh exactly what your mother weighed at her age?' Jaden asks while walking past fire trucks and police cars lining the street.

Sabrina is unconscious and doesn't hear him. Jaden's memories are being implanted into her brain. He saves her memories into a file in his brain. He sees an antique store and walks over to it. The door is wide open. It smells like an old person's retirement home. He puts his daughter on the ground outside the store and walks inside. He picks up two stainless steel swords about three feet long and walks outside with them. Jaden compares them both and tosses the other one into the street. He practices swinging it back and forth in the middle of the street. Jaden

goes back inside to pick up a metal shield and walks back out. He holds it around his left arm and swings with his right arm as if he is fighting someone. Sabrina wakes up and opens her eyes.

"Who are you suppose to be? A gladiator or Alexander the Great?" Sabrina asks while standing up.

"I am a Bialien warrior here to save Earth," he says while swinging his new sword.

"Yeah okay. Do you have a PC cell phone? I need to update my Myfacebook page and check my e-mails."

"That is your concern now? Updating a social networking page? Your mother is missing and you just woke up out of an alien induced coma and you are worried about the Internet? Are you out of your mind?"

"Please? My mother was holding my cell phone," she says.

"No, I don't have a PC phone. My girlfriend Kim has one, but the cell networks are down anyway. You teenagers these days. When I was a teenager my life didn't revolve around e-mails, social networks and updating a page."

"I'm sure it didn't. If my PC or phone took fifteen minutes to download one image, I would revolve around something else also. My friends call people like yourselves dial-up dinosaurs," she snaps.

"Very cute, I see what you learned in public school."

"What did you do to me, I'm remembering all these new memories tied into my current memories. It is very confusing," Sabrina says.

"In a few hours or few days, it will make better sense to you. Your mother let's you wear a miniskirt this high?"

"Yes, I can wear whatever I wanna wear."

"You are right about that, she let you wear a thong at the beach when you were fourteen right along with her. You were arrested for shoplifting last year, along with your Myfacebook crew?"

"How do you know about those things?"

"I know more now than a full time father would about you now. Your problem is that you didn't get enough discipline or enough beatings growing up," Jaden says while tossing the metal shield in front of him.

"My mother never hit me. You can go to jail for hitting kids these days. All kids these days have the ACS phone numbers programmed in their cell phones. One press of a button and the authorities are notified."

"What is ACS?"

"Administration for Children Services."

"You are lucky, I wasn't around when you almost set your grandmother's house on fire five years ago. You were warned several times about playing with matches. I would have given you a universal belt beating with a belt that my mother would have passed down to me. That belt was cleaned in holy water and sharpened with alligator teeth

from generation to generation. After the certified beating, I would have called ACS for you and put you on the phone with them so you can tell them what I did. When they take you away, the crazy kids in ACS will beat your ass again and then you can call ACS again,” he snaps.

“Whatever! You would have been in jail and I would have pressed charges against you.”

“I would have pleaded insanity. I don’t know how the belt got into my hands your honor. My arms just started swinging by themselves and I kept hearing, ‘Why you little! Why you little!’ ”

“That Homer Simpson remark is so played out. Anyway, is my mother really dead?”

“No, she just took a ride into heaven, I’m sure she will be back. That was just God taking away a few people to see if they were heaven ready. I’m sure your mother will be back very soon, with all her sins.”

“That’s not true, the Darclonians are attacking Earth and people have nanomoles in their brains that control them. You just deactivated both of mine,” Sabrina says quickly.

“Can’t hide the truth from you, Lisa Simpson.”

The nanoscanner detects a grey cloud of light the size of a Volkswagen car a few blocks away appearing below the buildings. The bright cloud moves quickly about 150 feet off the ground. It begins to beam five people at a time to the surface. The Asian and Russian looking DHWs quickly rush towards police, firemen and army officers. Some skin is missing from their faces and they look as if they were tortured. Their body and minds have been completely taken over and have bioparasites. They look like pale, discolored freaks. The police fire their guns at the DHWs a block and a half from Jaden. The army men have on exoskeleton bionic suits. They fire thermobaric bullets at the threats. The freaks’ internal organs implode and they fall towards the ground. The freaks have superhuman strength and jump fifteen feet into the air onto their victims. The mysterious light cloud beams down seven people to the surface. They quickly infect other people. A few of them have small lasers firing from their arms. Officers return fire and takes cover. Two of the DHWs get close enough bite a fireman while pulling off his helmet. The exo-soldiers fight the DHWs and overpower them on Church Street. They take out the small group of DHWs and they lay on the ground bleeding. The bright cloud turns completely black and lightning from the sky strikes the dark cloud several times. The loud thunder echoes in all directions.

“What is happening? Why are there fireworks going off?” Sabrina asks.

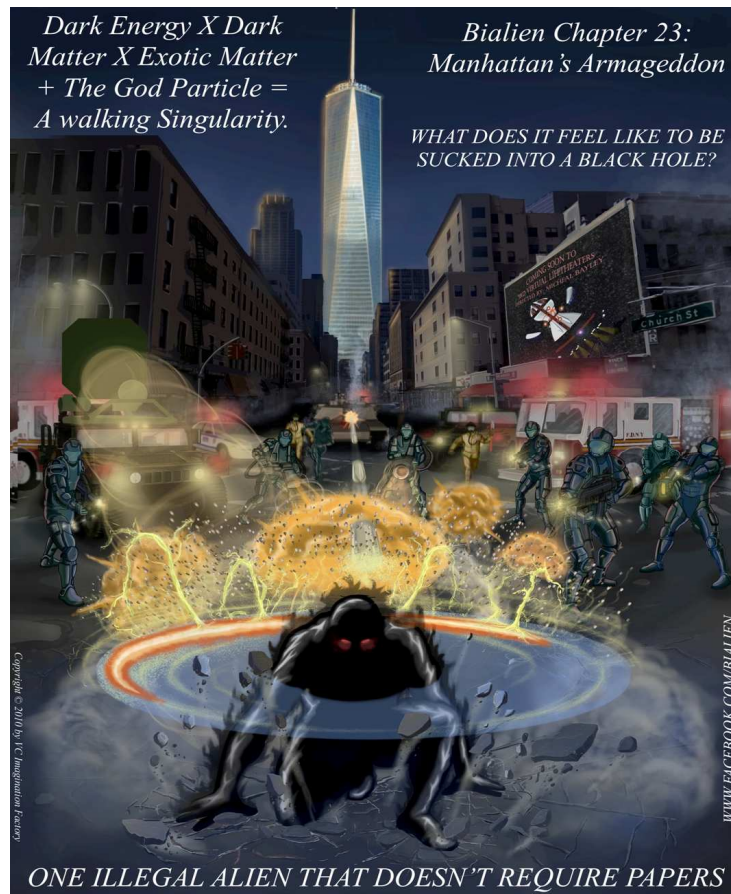
“Keep down. Those aren’t fireworks going off, that is police shooting their guns at some DHWs. That must be your mother’s side of

your brain talking about fireworks going off at the beginning of Armageddon. The police were shooting at some immigrants without visas or passports. The American Embassies around the world denied too many people from coming into America over the years for dumb reasons and the people are here now for revenge,” Jaden whispers behind a car.

“Are you serious?” She asks in a loud tone.

“Shhh.”

It is quiet and a cold howling wind blows by them. Something shiny and black falls to the ground from the dark cloud. A four-foot circular pothole forms under the object. [Matrix 3 Soundtrack, Neodammerung track 13 begins to play in Jaden’s mind](#). There is a loud crash and the military officers and police’s attention is at this object floating above the ground. The shiny black dark energy knight kneels down to the ground. It has two hands near the ground and its head faces the ground. Hundreds of broken pieces of concrete levitate and suspend themselves in midair around this alien being. A nanoscanner keeps its distance from the D.E.K.. It detects strong x-ray emissions and strong gravity disruption. The police and military look in complete shock. A tank drone approaches from down the street behind the D.E.K.. They all begin to quickly fire their guns at this knight still kneeling to the ground. A Humvee pulls up on the left and fires the ray gun towards the D.E.K. A blue circular disc begins to spin around the midsection of the D.E.K. The military officers fire thermobaric bullets at it. The bullets stop midair next to the broken concrete. The thermobaric bullets don’t get a chance to explode. A female officer tries to Taser the D.E.K., but the electricity becomes frozen next to the hundreds of bullets and concrete. The electricity travels back towards the officer Taser her. The tank drone fires a rail gun projectile and it stops a few feet from the D.E.K. Jaden’s nanodrones and nanoscanner detects high levels of dark energy coming from different directions. They also detect an event horizon surrounding the D.E.K.. The ray gun microwaves heat the air around the event horizon.



The military officers fire nanorockets and grenade launchers at the knight. They explode before the area where the bullets are floating at. There is a huge explosion and fire goes completely around the kneeling knight. The D.E.K. appears not intimidated as the fire stops burning and freezes in time in an orange circular shape. The alien looks as if the pause button has been pressed on a holographic disc player. Three military officers get closer to shoot at the dark demon. The circular disc around the D.E.K. begins to spin and squeeze the bullets down to long yellow spaghetti.

“Shit, shit shit!” Jaden yells. “This is bad, very bad. We have to get out of here.”

“What is happening now?” She asks.

“There is an illegal dark energy alien immigrant praying to pass its citizenship test or praying its visa is approved.”

“What does that mean?” She asks.

“See for yourself, keep your eyes closed,” Jaden says while putting his hand over her eyes.

“Oh no. I remember that thing. It isn’t praying for entry to the United States, it is the devil here for our sins, for embracing technology as a social value. Let’s get the hell out of here,” Sabrina says while standing up and pulling Jaden to go.

“Hold on, it might spot us...”

The D.E.K. stands up and looks straight down the street at Jaden through the fire around it. The military and officers continue to fire towards the dark alien. The bullets, fire and concrete are sucked into its body. Small, dark flames can be seen moving back and forth across its head and shoulders. The men that were closer to it fall horizontal and their bodies squeeze into small, red strings. They scream as their bodies disappear into the monster’s dark abyss.

‘Join us.’ Jaden hears echoing from different parts of his brain.

Jaden feels the military officers dying inside the D.E.K.. He feels a sense of pleasure as if he is about to have an orgasm. He can’t run as fast and he moans to himself.

“What the hell was that?” Jaden asks while breathing heavily.

“What was what? Why did you stop running?” She asks.

“I’m coming. It was nothing,” he says while running again.

The other officers try to run away. The energy knight raises its hands in the air and the helmets on a dozen officers come off. Their nanomoles instantly go into neutral mode and they lay on the ground unconscious. Their minds then go straight into positive HBH mode. Sabina and Jaden continue to run north. The D.E.K. begins to walk north and it looks as if it is floating an inch above the ground. Two tank drones comes out from a side street and onto Church Street. They go over parked cars and fire several 105mm cannon shells at the D.E.K.. The shells disappear into its body and it appears unfazed. There is a military helicopter and police SWAT helicopter flying above. There are also small UAV surveillance airplanes flying high above and a UAV donut.

“Why do you still have that sword in your hand?” She asks.

“I have a feeling I might need it.”

A mob of a dozen DHWs approach from side streets, cutting Jaden and his daughter off. They stop in the middle of the street and look both ways. Sabrina runs towards a building and store, but they are all locked.

“Forget the buildings, they won’t be safe and we could get trapped inside.”

Sabrina runs next to Jaden and they begin to walk backwards.

“What are we going to do?” She asks as they get closer.

“Join us Jaden,” they all say at the same time as they get closer.

“You know these weirdoes?” She asks.

"No, I don't know these Michael Jackson thriller zombie freaks," he snaps.

"How do they know your name?"

"I don't know. I'm known throughout the universe. I was on the Galaxynet maybe they saw me there."

Jaden knows he has to save his weapon energy, he sees it is at seventeen percent.

"You are just full of humor aren't you, even near death?" She asks.

"You should talk Miss Update my Myfacebook Page after I was about to die. You were probably thinking about your e-mail when you were in the HBH mindset on top of the World Trade Center."

"Whatever, jerk."

"I'm not having any more kids. I'm glad I didn't have to raise you, I'd have white hair on my head by now. Do you know how to fight?"

"I can cat fight, but I just got my nails done earlier today."

"What can you do? Look cute for boys?"

"I'm not worried about boys or men. I'm going to have my own top of the line R.M.E.C. in a few years. Lose my virginity to my lifetime entertainment partner. What do I need a man for? To catch a STD or have him cheat on me and I'm stuck with the children? Every man cheats, it's just a matter of time. My social group of friends and I learned from the previous generations. I'm not trying to catch B.M.S. Seventy-five percent of men get tired of the same women after a few years. There are new models of the R.M.E.C. coming out in a few years and that's what I'll save to buy," she says while they continue to walk backwards.

"Why are you telling me all of this at a time like this?" Jaden asks while looking at the DHWs walking closer from all directions.

The D.E.K. turns and faces the two tanks still firing at it. The D.E.K. points its two hands at the tanks. The tanks slowly lift into the air and they both propel towards the knight. They smash together and there is a small explosion. The sound of mangling steel echoes down the street. The metal turns into a long string of metal and spins around the D.E.K.. They disintegrate into the dark abyss as the dark flames on the knight's back go a foot higher.

Jaden comes up with an idea.

"You have it all figured out, don't you? Man, your generation of teenagers are either backwards and messed up, or getting smarter. I guess someone has to break the cycle and evolve. I'm going to fight these possessed freaks. You just stand behind me and don't move. But first, I want you to smack me in the face a few times and insult me," Jaden says while the DHWs start to get closer.

"What?"

“Join us or die!” They all say together while aiming their arms at Jaden.

“I need to get angry and feel some pain. Just do it!” Jaden yells while looking at her.

Sabrina takes her hand and smacks Jaden in the face. His face absorbs the blow and doesn’t move. The blood rushes to that area on Jaden’s face and it turns red.

“Harder! Insult me!”

“I hate you daddy. I wish you would go back to the planet you came from. I hate men because of you!” She yells while smacking him a few more times in the face and stepping on his feet. She then kicks him in the balls and quickly steps back looking at his response. He drops the sword and tightens his thighs together. He is leaning towards the ground and he notices his plan is working.

“Can’t grab my balls, can’t grab my balls, damn that hurt,” he moans in a low voice. Jaden continues talking in a moaning and whispering voice, “Okay, okay, job well done. I guess you were holding some of that in you for a while. I’m glad I was able to help you let some of that anger out.”

“I’m sorry, are you okay?” She asks

“I’m fine, just what I needed. Just step back and watch out for my shiny dark hands.”

“What are we going to do?” She asks.

She sees his hands look just like the D.E.K. monster’s body.

A stronger energy returns to Jaden’s hands. The nanodrones inside his skin verify it is dark energy on Jaden’s hands. He feels a cold sensation on his hands as the outside skin slowly dies. The nanodrones wait to repair the skin and allow the pain to continue to Jaden’s brain. The sword on the ground trembles as Jaden looks at it. It floats into his hand and the dark energy circles around the shiny sword. The energy quickly dances around the edges of the sharp sword like a chainsaw. Jaden runs forward screaming like a crazy warrior. He swings his weapon cutting bodies in half. Blood squirts in different directions. The DHWs slowly move out of the way.

“Join you huh? Or die? The last time I joined something...” he says while enjoying cutting up the bodies. “...I was stuck in a high interest credit card in college with no...way...to...pay... for it! The balance was \$1500...in...1996 and now it’s \$45,000... and delinquent. I’m not joining anything! You zombie high jacked brain dickheads!” He yells while the DHWs move out of the way.

DHWs run towards Sabrina.

“Don’t move, trust me!”

“Dad!” She yells while her voice echoes back to her. It goes completely quiet around her. They run into the outside of the forward

shield Jaden is creating around Sabrina. The DHWs' skin rips away down to their bones and half of the bodies fall towards the ground. Everything turns red around Sabrina. She screams as her voice echoes back to her. Blood is covering Jaden as more DHWs come from around the corner.

Kim is standing half a mile north on Canal Street listening to the army officer talking on the radio.

"The area is fully compromised. Mayor Brooksborg is giving the okay to implement Operation Frying Pan," a man over the radio says to the army officer.

"What is Operation Frying Pan?" Kim asks.

"That is top-secret miss."

"Look! You tell me what that means, I told you my husband and his daughter is back there."

"Miss, anyone back there is either dead or a zombie. They will all be incinerated. There is a completely black monster destroying anything in sight. It has killed several officers and converted them into human zombie things."

Kim steps back and holds her hands to her face. She wonders if Jaden has turned into that or if that is a D.E.K..

"I'm sorry for your loss," he says.

"I just hope that isn't what I think it is or we are all doomed."

The man looks at Kim with a confused look.

More Darclonian human walkers approach from the north. Jaden realized the more DHWs he kills, the more the dark energy spreads down his arm. The D.E.K. is getting closer towards Jaden and Sabrina. The D.E.K. infected police, firemen and army officers with bioparasites. They walk in a deep trance behind the D.E.K. in a pyramid formation from the south. Some are injured, bleeding and limping, as they pass the antique shop. A green, slimy fluid covers their wounds.

Jaden is covered in blood and walks back to Sabrina. The blood on his sword goes into the dark energy and it is clean again. The nanodrones cleanse the blood from his skin.

"Whatever you do, don't touch my hands!" He yells.

"What are we going to do?" She asks.

"Is that all you going to keep asking? You sound like a parrot."

"I'm scared daddy."

"That sounds better than *what are we going to do?*"

"Join us, Jaden there is no escape."

'Join us, Jaden,' A deep voice echoes in his mind.

Thunder echoes in the sky above and lightning flies across the sky. Sabrina stands behind Jaden nervously looking in both directions. Huge,

black steel walls come up from the sides of the buildings. They cover up to forty feet on all the buildings in the area.

'This doesn't look good,' Jaden says to himself while looking at the plates moving up at the same time.

"What do you want with me?" Jaden yells to them.

"Join us," they say.

"Join what? What is your membership fee? Is there a contract involved? Is it a yearly rate? Can I join for a month for free? Come on ghost and goblin freaks and darth energy vader, give me some incentive to join your dark zombie clan."

"What are you doing? You're making jokes with the devil?" Sabrina whispers to Jaden.

"I'm trying to buy some time until I think of something or something saves us, like Spiderman or Superman," he says, "it works in movies."

The D.E.K. communicates directly with Jaden's mind.

'I will spare millions of souls on this planet if you join us. You love the feeling of conquering and killing. I know what is in your mind and what you are thinking. I'm inside of you.'

'That sounds so gay,' Jaden says to himself while chuckling out loud.

"What is so funny?" Sabrina asks.

"For some reason, certain keywords are bringing up random memories in my mind. I'm thinking of the *Family Guy* episode you watched about thirty times, with the super devil. I'm also laughing at the episode where Peter is hypnotized into thinking he was gay. Man, I have to watch some of those episodes."

"That's one of my favorites sitcoms," she says.

Jaden points his head down as he feels a slight pain in his brain. Jaden's nanodrones can't pick up where the signal is coming from in his brain. The D.E.K. stands twenty feet in front of Jaden. Jaden puts the sword in his left hand. Jaden looks at his hands and concentrates on the energy going to his left hand. It moves slowly around his body to his left hand and arm. Jaden slowly walks towards the D.E.K. with Sabrina walking two steps behind him looking around at the DHWs surrounding them.

"I'm not joining your cult to have some killing spree and to get off at the same time. I can do that in *Virtual Grand Theft Auto*. You have the wrong person, dark dick!" Jaden yells while a 300-foot circle of white smoke appears around them and through buildings.

'Your species needs a new direction and control. This planet is heading towards extinction, regardless,' it says.

'If it does, we will go to the next planet. If we want to destroy ourselves, then we will!' Jaden yells while firing a gravity shock wave directly at the D.E.K.. The translucent gravity shock wave turns into the

shape of a snake and wraps around the D.E.K. and then disappears. “Shit! It’s like a black bowling pin that won’t go down,” he whispers to Sabrina.

‘Your alien weapons are useless against me. I see you need some incentive.’

The D.E.K. reaches behind itself and the other sword on the ground near the antique store propels itself into the air towards the D.E.K.. The sword spins clockwise and it cuts off a DHW’s head while it goes into the D.E.K.’s hand. The dark energy goes around the steel sword and turns into small dark flames. The head rolls forward on the concrete and the body falls to the ground.

“Gross!” Sabrina yells.

“So that is how you treat people who join your gang huh?” Jaden snaps at him.

Jaden can feel the dark energy inside of him. Rage builds up inside of him and he has had enough of being afraid of something he is turning into. The dark energy moves from Jaden’s left hand across his chest area and back to his right arm. His half-destroyed shirt falls to the ground. More dark energy particles begin to form around his feet and legs destroying his sneakers. The D.E.K. stands in a karate stance.

“You’re going to fight it?” Sabrina asks in a nervous whisper.

“Yes, I am. I’m not afraid of anyone. Enough of this coward bullshit,” Jaden yells while charging at it with his sword in the air. [*The Matrix Reloaded Soundtrack, Burly Brawl track 9 begins to play.*](#)

His sword is over his head and he swings it down at the D.E.K.. It blocks, swings back and Jaden blocks. The dark energies repel from each other. Steel touches steel and there is a clanking sound. The D.E.K. becomes agile and quickly moves around dodging the swings. It flips into the air and comes down charging at Jaden. Jaden stares straight into the D.E.K.’s dark glowing red eyes. Sabrina is ten feet behind Jaden looking around as the zombie DHWs stand there watching.

“Get him dad!” She yells.

Their swords swing back and forth while their dark energies continue to dance around the swords’ edges avoiding each other. The D.E.K. begins to move faster and Jaden’s upper arm is cut by the energy part of the sword. The nanodrones in his body make a see through clear seal covering the wound. Blood and muscle can be seen inside the seal. Their swords interlock and Jaden swings to punch it in the face. The dark energy around the D.E.K.’s face moves out of the way and Jaden sees a deformed human face. Jaden’s fist strikes the D.E.K., causing it to take a few steps backwards.

There is slime and blood on Jaden’s fist. The nanodrones quickly analyze the blood and slime on Jaden’s fist before the dark energy returns to his fist. Jaden realizes the dark energies don’t like each other.

“What are you Slimer from *Ghostbusters* under there?” Jaden asks while chuckling.

‘Fun time is over human.’

Jaden backs up to Sabrina.

“Are you okay?” He asks her while his sword is still facing the D.E.K..

“I’m fine, I can’t believe you are fighting that thing.”

“I think I’ve been lucky so far. Stay close to me.”

“Are you okay from your wound?”

“I’m fine, there is an alien Band-Aid on it for now. My nanodrones are telling me that this D.E.K.’s DNA is from Chinese descent. He used to be or is half-human under there. There is also a lot of unknown material in this slime.”

Suddenly two low flying stealth bombers fly between buildings and up Church Street. They drop several incinerating bombs all around the area. Huge explosions and fire makes its way through streets. One of the bombers flies over them. The D.E.K. uses its line of matter tractor energy to catch the stealth bomber midair. It drops all of its bombs around them and begins to descend. Huge fires quickly come up the street towards Jaden and Sabrina. The DHWs try to run for cover. Sabrina begins to scream looking at the fire coming up and the bombs falling directly over them.

“Stay close to me!” Jaden yells.

A twenty foot in diameter energy shield goes around them and the loud blasts turns to deep thumping sounds on the ground. The vibrations feel like earthquakes. The fire quickly goes over the shield. Fire is all around the area incinerating the DHWs. They jump onto the outside shield trying to get inside. The stealth bomber quickly propels into the D.E.K. and disappears. Some of the bombs fall directly over the D.E.K. and goes into its body. Fire is all around as Sabrina falls to the ground overwhelmed by what is happening around her. A high speed, aqua blue projectile comes down from space towards Earth.

“Don’t worry, it will be over soon,” Jaden says.

“Dad, that thing can’t be dead yet, remember?” She asks.

“No I don’t remember. What do you mean? Why can’t it be dead?” Jaden asks in a confused voice.

Sabrina and Jaden both look through the fire in front of them. There is complete silence around them. Jaden’s nanoscanners are in his body and have to use his human eyes. The D.E.K.’s body appears from the orange fire and walks into the shield area penetrating it.



It swings its red-orange sword at Jaden. He quickly blocks the sword strike. He grunts loudly and sparks fly off the swords. Sabrina moves back on her hands and feet. Her black mini-skirt rubs against the bloody ground. Jaden and the D.E.K. continue to swing back and forth at each other. Jaden penetrates the D.E.K.'s lower leg. The dark energy spreads up to Jaden's knees and upper arms. The energy shield moves back with Jaden's walking. Hot smoke is coming from the ground as they go over a manhole. Fire continues to burn around them. Sabrina hears sounds of animals squealing from the manhole to her left. Suddenly dozens of

smoking rats run out of the manhole. Sabrina screams at the top of her lungs. Jaden tries to turn around to see what is happening to Sabrina.

“What’s wrong? What’s that sound?” Jaden asks.

“Ahhhhh!” She yells.

The D.E.K. swings faster towards Jaden. The hot rats quickly run over Sabrina’s hands and feet trying to escape the heat.



Sabrina quickly jumps up screaming and hopping up and down. She steps to the corner of the inside shield. The dirty subway rats smell like a dirty mop and cooking hot dogs. The rats are squealing and running in circles. The rats stay away from Jaden and the D.E.K.. Jaden concentrates on increasing the size of the shield area. Sabrina’s loud continuous screaming echoes all around the inside shield. She jumps up and down trying to kick them away from her feet. The D.E.K. strikes Jaden’s face with its hand and he falls backwards while landing on a bunch of rats. The rats freak out and surround Sabrina’s feet. Jaden quickly stands back up and smashes some rats with his hands.

“Ahhhhhh!” She yells at the top of lungs jumping up and down with nowhere to run. The rats jump up and down with her because of the hot concrete.

The D.E.K. begins to move very fast while swinging the sword and throwing kicks at Jaden, striking him in several locations around his body and creating more wounds. Jaden feels more pain and more dark shiny energy forming around his body. Jaden can’t keep up with the speed, his nanotime is still offline. He is getting deep cuts around his body. He takes a few more steps back and the heat inside the shield increases significantly. Jaden gets a lucky kick on the D.E.K.’s chest area. It falls outside the shield area and into the hot flames. Jaden sees his

overall weapons energy is at two percent. He needs to get Sabrina to a safe location so he can fight this D.E.K. by himself. He starts to walk towards his right. The bright aqua projectile falls from the sky and into the ocean a few miles south of lower Manhattan. There is a huge explosion and water rises hundreds of feet into the air.

“Walk to your right Sabrina, or hop to your right! Watch out for the sidewalk!”

The hot, charred sidewalk is smoking. The D.E.K. walks back inside the shield area and Jaden tosses his sword towards its chest. Jaden forgets he was supposed to be holding it first and it disappears into the D.E.K.’s chest.

“Shit!”

“I have to get out of here, the rats are all around my feet!” She yells while jumping up and kicking them away from her. Each rat squeaks loudly when she kicks them.

Jaden has a flash back and thinks back to the girl in *Indiana Jones* screaming around all the snakes.

‘Ha ha ha,’ the D.E.K. laughs while dropping its flaming red sword onto the ground and walking towards Jaden.

“Get me outta here!” She yells with a hoarse voice while coughing.

“Calm down, they are just rats! You want to go outside this shield and cremate yourself?”

“I’m burning up in here, it’s like over a hundred degrees in here! I’m being cremated now! My skin is burning and I can’t breathe!” Sabrina yells in the corner while covering her mouth.

“Ask the rats if they have some suntan lotion!” He yells while walking backwards away from the D.E.K..

“That’s not funny. I’m claustrophobic and I’m going to have a panic attack.”

“At least you have a lot to write on your Myfacebook page later!”

“Daddy!”

“Sabrina listen, the outside shield is destroying the iron steel on the outside of this building to your right as we speak. When I tell you to go, run into the building and up the stairs as fast as you can! My energy shield is almost depleted! Okay?” Jaden yells.

“Are you going to be okay?”

“Don’t worry about me.”

Jaden shoots with both of his hands a gravity ripper into the concrete below the D.E.K.. It falls into the newly created hole.

“Go now! Run!” Jaden yells.

Sabrina runs into an oval hole in the black metal wall of a building. She runs while screaming and the grey rats, the size of a Chihuahua, quickly follow behind her down a hallway. They squeak while smoke

floats off their fur. The shield weakens and begins to get very small. The dark energy around Jaden's arms fade away. Jaden walks backwards towards the new opening in the building. There is a powerful shaking vibration in the ground. The D.E.K. floats out of the hole and captures Jaden's body in a line of matter through the fire. His energy shield runs out. Jaden's body lifts fifteen feet into the burning hot fire. He doesn't have any energy left to counter it. He quickly burns all around his body. He yells in tremendous pain and Sabrina turns around and hears his screaming echoing down the hallway. She sees fire coming towards her.

"Arrgggghhhh!"

'Roast like the animals you humans cook everyday!' The D.E.K. says.

An alien created tsunami of ocean water comes from the south at high speeds. The thirty-foot rogue wave rushes down all the streets extinguishing the flames. The salt water hits the D.E.K. and it loses its grip on Jaden. His body lands in the fast moving ocean water. The pro-gravity nanodrones in his back pull him towards the ground. The ocean water is filling with trillions of Darclonian microbots. There is a forty-foot steel barrier at Canal Street that leads across to the rivers. The water hits the steel wall while water flies straight into the air and then back down. Jaden is laying flat on the ground and is unconscious. He feels tremendous pain as ninety percent of his body was burned. The D.E.K. begins to suck all the water into its body. The water circles the D.E.K. body like a whirlpool.

Sabrina is taking an express elevator up towards the penthouse in the dark. The microbots enter the burned zombie soldiers laying a quarter mile north from Jaden. The microbots begin to repair their body and skin. The microbots filter oxygen into their lungs like gills. They try to enter Jaden's body, but the nanodrones fight them off.

The water begins to recede, some back into the rivers, but most of it goes into the D.E.K.. The water goes down to nine feet and then two feet. Sabrina hears a squealing sound in the dark elevator and begins to scream again. She jumps up and down and accidentally hits the emergency stop button. The D.E.K. walks towards Jaden still lying on the ground in a puddle of water, badly burned around his body.

'I'm going to destroy you now. You weak excuse for....' it says, while its voice is interrupted by thunder.

Lightning is striking in the background across the sky. A lightning bolt hits the D.E.K. and the lightning jumps around its body before disappearing.

Someone yells from a fourth floor window above Jaden and the D.E.K..

"Hey! You darth vader dickhead! Look up here!"

The D.E.K. looks up and sees Jaden's friend James peeing out the window on him.

"Here is some more liquid for you to digest! Hey! Jaden wake up!" James yells.

[Halo 2 Soundtrack, Impend track 8 begins to play in his mind.](#) Salty ocean water runs by Jaden's face and towards the D.E.K. behind him. He tastes the polluted, algae water on his tongue. The water swooshes by the area where his ears used to be. Jaden recognizes the voice and tries to push himself off the ground. His muscles strain and the pain around his body is overpowering his nervous system with chemical messages. The voice of James telling Jaden to wake up echoes in Jaden's mind over and over again. James pulls up his pants and runs from the window. The D.E.K. catches James in a line of matter beam and his molecules slowly pull back towards the window. Jaden's eyes quickly open and they are completely black. The D.E.K. stops going after James and focuses its attention on Sabrina stuck in the elevator on the top floor of the commercial building. Jaden's vision changes and he sees inverted colors as if he is looking at a film negative. His vision is through very small particles of dark matter that are floating around in every direction. The angles instantly change as if he is changing viewing angles in a video game. He sees inside of the building and through all materials in 3D. He sees that Sabrina is stuck in the elevator and the D.E.K. is pulling the entire elevator towards the roof of the building. Debris is flying everywhere as the elevator explodes through the top of the elevator shaft. She is yelling and screaming inside of it, along with the petrified rats squealing around her feet. She tries to pull the elevator door open, but she can't.

Jaden groans and pushes himself from the ground. He looks like a deformed monster burned around his body. He stands up screaming into the air as his mind floods with anger and pain.

"Arrrgggghhhh!" He yells with his arms in the air.

His mind is full of rage and a clear seal is around his skin. His right cheekbone and jaw shows. Suddenly quintillions of dark energy particles attack his body from all directions. He kneels back to the ground as the weight of the planet feels as if it is on his shoulders. Very cold air attacks Jaden's body. The nanodrones in Jaden's body try to communicate with his brain, but there isn't a response. Nanodrones automatically attempt to heat his body from the inside as his temperature drops. His vision leaves where he is and quickly propels him into space in an invisible energy pathway. He sees past Mars, Neptune, Jupiter, Pluto and past the heliosphere. Jaden sees what looks like two huge eyes as stars watch him. His vision continues out into space.

‘She will make a nice pet, she is already in a nice cage,’ the D.E.K. says to Jaden in a low voice, ‘Join us.’

Sabrina is in the elevator outside the building being held in the air by the D.E.K.. She is unconscious from hitting her head from the D.E.K. turning the elevator sideways.

Jaden’s vision quickly returns to Earth and looks at the ground from red eyes. He lifts his head to look around and notices he is still kneeling down. His vision is still inverted like negative film with a slight red glow in the background. He sees a teenage girl inside the elevator, but Jaden doesn’t recognize her, but he knows deep down she means something to him. He continues to forget and lose more of his memory. The dark energy continues affecting different parts of his brain. The strong gravity forces and weight lifts from his shoulders and head. Jaden stands up as a full dark energy knight. Small dark flames an inch in height move up around his upper body like dominoes. The dark flames feel like little spiders crawling over his skin. There is a sucking vacuum feeling above him as he continues to hold his breath. He is levitating an inch above the ground. Trillions of nanodrones begin repairing the inner layer skin around his body. The temperature around his body is -50°F. He looks around in confusion and sees the other D.E.K. holding a line of dark matter from its hand towards the elevator, which is floating 125 feet in the air over them. Broken images of memories flash around in his mind. From Jaden’s eyes, the other D.E.K. looks bright white, with a faint green glow and white flames on its back. The half dozen DHWs that were resurrected by the microbots have a slight green glow. His daughter has a red glow as she struggles to open the elevator door with her hands. She screams and cries through the elevator door for someone to help her.

“Help! Help! Someone get me down from here! I’m stuck in the elevator!” Sabrina yells.

Jaden sees visions of aircraft, UAVs and helicopters flying by in a red glow. Jaden sees a man on the roof of the building looking down with binoculars. The DHW soldiers are walking towards Jaden and the D.E.K. through puddles of water. Jaden can read the minds from the now unlocked nanomoles in the DHWs’ brains. The DHWs kneel down on their knees with their heads down towards Jaden and the D.E.K..

WASHINGTON, D.C. PENTAGON 8:18 PM

Robinson sees everything happening with a UAV hovering high above them. He has been watching the events for the past twenty minutes. The special UAV is analyzing the D.E.K. and Jaden with special sensors. A soldier runs in the room with a report in his hand.

"These are unbelievable weapons. We have to find a way to contain this weapon," Robinson says.

"Weapons sir?" The young officer walks into the room asking.

"Yes, there are two anomalies now. That Jaden fellow turned into one of them. I knew he was evil and against humanity, but no one wanted to believe me. What does your report say, soldier?"

"Sir, it is confirmed. These dark aliens beings are walking black holes. Its body barely touches the ground and has no body weight. Its event horizon varies from an inch to a few feet. The satellite Hadron molecule scanner detects concentrated dark energy, dark matter, anti-dark matter, protons and unknown particles. It is also emitting small amounts of x-ray energy. This technology is beyond anything imaginable, but is a big threat. None of our weapons phased this alien being," the soldier says.

"I want more units ready and on standby. Make sure everything is recorded."

"Yes sir, we will continue to monitor the situation closely."

LOWER

MANHATTAN

'Join us,' the D.E.K. alien says to Jaden.

'Put the elevator down,' Jaden says in a low and muffled voice.

Jaden reaches his left hand out and an invisible line of dark matter comes from it towards the floating elevator. There is a slight struggle as the forces push and pull each other. Sabrina is moving in different directions. She screams while holding onto the metal railing in the middle of the elevator.

'You don't know who she is, why should you care?' The D.E.K. asks Jaden.

'I know she means something to me, now put the elevator down,' Jaden demands.

'Where is your sense of humor? No comments or jokes?' It asks.

Jaden thinks to himself that he has nothing funny to say. The thunder and lightning continues to echo harder. The nanodrones in his body are sending messages to his eye screen, but he can't see them. Something else is controlling and taking over his vision. He can see very small particles of dark matter and energy quickly passing through the Earth all around him. Some of the energy redirects towards his and the D.E.K.'s bodies. The elevator moves back and forth in the air as the lines of matter intertwine. The back and forth motion makes Sabrina unconscious as she bumps her head several times.

'You aren't stronger than me,' Jaden says in a struggling and groaning voice.

‘We weren’t...created... to...to... fight each other,’ it says in a struggling voice.

‘So don’t fight me then.’

The elevator slowly lands on top of the commercial building over them. The D.E.K. continues to try to gain control of the elevator. The elevator comes back off the roof slightly as debris rains down to the street. Drops of rain slowly fall towards the ground. The drips make small splashing sounds on everything in the area. A car not too far behind Jaden has drops covering the entire windshield. They look like little white eyes to Jaden that collide together into a small stream of water. The black metal walls around the buildings slowly come down from the government’s control.

Jaden continues to struggle with the D.E.K.. The struggle is making both of them weaker. Jaden gets angry and runs straight towards the D.E.K.. His feet aren’t even touching the ground as he runs.

“Arrggghhh!” He yells.

‘No!’

The D.E.K. takes a step back and releases its grip on the elevator. Jaden runs into the D.E.K. as if he is tackling him. The dark energies repel each other and there is a huge explosion. They fall on top of each other and the dark energies explode into trillions of directions like a swarm of dark bees. Jaden’s deformed human body is shown and the D.E.K.’s deformed human body is shown also. Their skin is completely gone from their bodies. Red muscle shows on their bodies. They roll over on the ground while the D.E.K. man screams in pain. Jaden stands up and ignores his pain. A moving glowing yellow slime covers the D.E.K.’s face and body. The slime is trying to keep the blood from leaving its body. The nanodrones create a clear seal around Jaden’s muscles. Jaden’s muscles, veins and blood show around his body. His lungs show along with some bones. Jaden’s eye screen comes back online and most of the things he sees he doesn’t understand. His memory becomes worst. The nanodrones report in: body turned into a walking singularity black hole. Concentrated dark energy around skin of body, slowly destroying skin tissue around skin of body. Untraceable anomaly in brain controlling dark energy agents.

Jaden can feel the dark energies quickly moving in space untangling themselves. There is a helicopter beaming a bright white light on the ground where he is. Jaden’s friend James opens the elevator on the roof and attempts to rescue Sabrina, who is unconscious up against the wall. As the door opens, light shines on her from the helicopter. Two unconscious rats are laying on her lap and hair.

“It looks like Remy the rat from *Ratatouille* was controlling you with your hair it seems. The rat looks very tired from cooking all day,” he

says while chuckling. She opens her eyes and moans. She opens her eyes and sees a grey tail hanging from her head like a rope.

“Ahhhh!” She yells while jumping up and pushing the rats off her.

She leaps up and James grabs her hands. She squeezes through the door that only opens less than a foot.

“Are you okay?” He asks.

“I’ll be okay. My head still hurts. I can’t remember much after going into the elevator. Hey, I recognize you from when I was younger,” she says.

On the ground, Jaden punches the hurt deformed D.E.K. in the face as it can barely move. He rams his fist into the knight’s stomach and releases some nanodrones through his skin. They enter its bloodstream while fighting off trillions of microbots in its body. Jaden roundhouse kicks the knight on the ground. It starts shaking and screaming. The nanodrones make it to the heart area and begin to destroy the arteries. Its heart begins to have a heart attack. The covered in yellow slime Darclonian human walkers approach Jaden. It screams in pain as it lies in a puddle of water, shaking. The nanodrones finish off the energy knight and return into Jaden’s body. He feels the dark energies returning to Earth.

On the roof, Sabrina and James have a conversation. “You lost a lot of weight. How did you get up here?” Sabrina asks.

“There’s no such thing as an overweight rich person. I have a personal rocket belt. It has just enough power to get us down from the roof and out of this area,” he says while putting it on and holding onto her.

“Is this safe?” She asks.

“Do Donald Trump’s kids own half of Manhattan?”

The dark energies quickly return to Earth and return around Jaden’s body from all directions. The swarm of dark energy reunites with his body. Jaden bends down on his knees again from the powerful gravity suddenly over him. The other dark energy goes back around the dead D.E.K. on the ground, but dissolves into thin air. The thunder in the background becomes louder and louder. Rain begins to pour down. Jaden’s vision leaves Earth again, but this time slowly passes by the Darclonian’s mother ship sitting semi-visible behind the moon. His vision circles the mother ship and then comes back towards Earth. Jaden hears far away laughing in his mind. The low laughing voice fades away and music replaces it. [Transformers Soundtrack 2 Decepticons begins playing very low and broken up in the background of his mind.](#)

The DHWs stand and look at Jaden as their leader. Jaden’s eyes turn red again and glow, his vision is looking at the ground. He stands up and

looks at the completely burnt standing DHWs with no faces. Jaden notices their skin is slowly regenerating around them.

‘Why are you here?’ Jaden asks the DHWs.

The half dozen respond together, ‘We are here to infect humans with the bioparasites in our bodies. We need you as a leader to protect us, all powerful knight, until our powers are developed to work on Earth.’

Jaden doesn’t respond and watches the helicopter drop ropes down to the street 500 feet in front of him. Military personnel with full exoskeleton suits slide down the rope and onto the street. They slowly approach from a distance with huge assault rifles. There is a UAV Predator drone hovering behind the helicopter video recording Jaden from a distance.

‘Lead us,’ the DHWs say to Jaden.

They take some steps back and charge at the military officers.

Jaden stands up and looks around trying to figure out who he is and what is going on. He loses his identity and has pure evil thoughts on his mind. The evil melody music playing in his brain is making him think of killing and destroying. The rain around him changes direction and falls towards his body horizontally. It completely evaporates and not even the steam escapes the gravity forces around his body. His memory becomes worst as he takes a few steps forward and stands on the sidewalk.

“Freeze!” The military men yell towards the DHWs running towards them.

The military opens fire on the DHWs and their bodies take on powerful bullets.

‘Protect us. You are our leader!’ They yell to Jaden. ‘Help us. Help your friends. Use your dark gravity disc weapons,’ the DHWs plead simultaneously.

Jaden does nothing, but stands there in a confused state of mind and watches what takes place before him. The DHWs try to take cover, but the military hits their bodies with nanorockets and they explode like suicide bombers. Their screams echo as their bodies explode. Smoke and blood comes from the body pieces scattering the ground.

The dozen military men slowly approach Jaden while walking on the street and sidewalk. Their black exo-boots swoosh water away from their feet. Around Jaden, the slightly reflective dark energy around the edges of his body slowly moves into different directions. His body looks as if it is alive with energy. Lightning can be seen in the background in the sky near the World Trade Center. Inside his tomb body, he hears his heart beating. The rain continues to beat down.

‘What am I? Who am I?’ Jaden asks himself.

‘Choose your path, kill those weaker than you. Destroy those who wish to betray you,’ random voices tell him telepathically.

Sabrina and James land near Canal Street.

The lead soldier notifies the others by text messages to their helmet screens to use their strongest weapons.

“Fire!” The leader of the military personnel yells at the dozen soldiers around him.

Gunshots are shot towards Jaden along with other projectiles. The thermobaric bullets and other bullets slow down six feet in front of Jaden. Jaden feels a squeeze of pressure and force from in front of him as the gravity greatly increases. There are waves of invisible forces moving around him. The ground lightly trembles around him. The military sees a distorted image of Jaden. A tint of red light becomes increasingly visible around him. The dozens of thermobaric bullets explode only a few inches in diameter. The dark flames on Jaden’s shoulders and head increases. Jaden looks down at his glowing shiny dark energy hands to see what he has become. The orange fire from the explosions funnel towards Jaden’s body into the six-foot event horizon surrounding his body. The metal in the bullets turn to a silver liquid and quickly suck around Jaden’s body. Hundreds of funneling strings, orange and silver, an inch to three inches in diameter, quickly circle around the middle of his body. The funnel strings combine and get smaller and go into him.

‘They are all against you. They are all weaker than you. Destroy those who are against you. Make an example of those before you,’ the unknown voice says.

[The 300 Soundtrack, track 1 To victory begins to play in the background of Jaden’s mind.](#) Nanorockets are shot from the Predator drone and stop outside the event horizon. The huge explosion quickly pulls towards the spinning orange and silver disc around his body. Jaden’s new vision translates the sparks from the soldier’s assault rifles to dark sparks. He can actually hear the bullets slowing down into a low growl. The shells from the bullets fall into the water and sound like quarters being dropped into a wishing well. Thousands of bat bullets, nanorockets and thermobaric bullets turn into liquid funnels. The inside of the dark energy squeezes against Jaden’s body destroying more of his skin tissue. The nanodrones in his body work harder. All the matter is spinning around him in a flat disc and is being pulled into his dark abyss body. He stands there in a puzzled state of mind and becomes increasingly angry at the soldiers shooting at him. His inverted vision shows dark rain coming from the sky and changing direction towards him. He looks up and sees an invisible energy pathway with particles heading straight into space. A tank drone fires from the street directly in front of him. The huge cannon shell also slows down and stops before him. The helicopter and UAV continue firing rockets and cannons at

him. An F-35 aircraft joins the battle and fires its mini guns and a hellfire missile.

His pain level, blood pressure , and anger increases. He raises his hands into the air and millions of lines of matter appear in 180°. Lightning strikes his body from the cloudy sky. The lightning stands still fifteen feet above his body and funnels its way towards him like a snake slithering around its prey. The lightning funnels look like white lights of spaghetti that become smaller and smaller. Jaden yells at the top of his lungs inside the abyss of darkness. A nearby nanoscanner detects a muffled yell of pain and anger coming from Jaden. Jaden sees light squishing and bending all around him. The gravity forces in all directions pull directly towards Jaden's body. Everything is happening in slow motion for Jaden, while everything around him is happening very fast. The rain pulls towards his body from as far out as 1000 feet away. The exoskeleton soldiers, SWATbots and DHWs' body parts all begin to float towards Jaden's body. Some of the soldiers try to hold onto cars and buildings nearby, but can't. Waves of water in the street come towards him. Dark flames quickly move from his arms to around his body in a clockwise motion. Time and space is bending and folding around him.

A red shift of distorted light squeezes and compresses the light from all directions around Jaden. The horizontal falling men are yelling while their hands and legs are moving trying to grab onto something. The first soldier in the exoskeleton suit fires his gun upwards into the sky as gravity pulls him in feet first. The bullets slow down and change direction towards Jaden's dark energy body. Not even the 3000 feet per second bullets can escape the powerful gravity forces. The gravity is so strong that the first soldier can't lift his head to see his fate. He sees the tall buildings over him slowly moving behind him from both sides of the street. The soldier feels a tremendous burning and crushing pain in his feet as they crush into a red liquid spaghetti shape. The carbon nanotubing material in the feet of the suit stretches and pulls the rest of the suit with it. He screams at the top of his lungs as the rest of his lower body pulls apart from his upper body. Two more bodies enter the event horizon at the same time and they are holding onto each other. They tighten their grips around each other as they feel the worst pain they ever felt in their lives. They scream into each other's clear facemasks and look at each other in complete shock. Their eyes have blank stares as their lower bodies, up to their legs, disappear. Their screams echo against the tall buildings and go in different directions. The remaining nine soldiers enter the event horizon and they all feel extraordinary pain ripping and crushing their organic bodies into a red, bloody spaghetti funnel.

Kim hears the commotion down the road and sneaks past the roadblock on Canal Street. One of the soldiers sees her.

“Stop! Come back, it isn’t safe down there!” The soldier yells.

Two SWATbots lose their grips on a parked car. The dark flames on Jaden’s back go as high as three feet over him. The SWATbots are able to lift their heads and fire their guns simultaneously towards Jaden’s black hole of death. They feel no pain as their metal bodies squeeze into liquid metal. All the glass and air conditioners from the surrounding buildings pull from their frames and propel towards his death zone. The sound of breaking glass echoes in a rhythmic fashion. The helicopter, UAV and F-35 struggle to fly away, but slowly come towards the action. The electric car’s wheels skid as the force pulls it forward. The parking tickets on the windshield fly from the windshield wiper. The blue boot on the driver side front wheel makes a clinging sound as it spins and hits the ground. The car goes airborne and joins a tank that is also floating towards the event horizon. The two vehicles make crushing steel sounds. The car crumples like a piece of paper. The same thing happens to the tank. Red tints of light can be seen expanding in all directions. The buildings surrounding Jaden shake and pull towards him. A loud moaning sound comes from the structure in the buildings. Billions of pieces of bricks, millions of tons of concrete, glass, paper and debris pull towards Jaden from all directions. The materials form together and turn around his body like a tornado.

The steel beams supporting the buildings bend and twist upwards and then downwards like a McDonald’s arch. They look like metal spider legs as they pull from deep inside the foundation of the buildings. The ground trembles. A grinding and ripping metal sound echoes towards Kim jogging down the street. She sees a distorting red glow of light spreading as high as 500 feet into the sky. She sees coordinated lightning coming from the sky. Lightning continues to strike around him from the clouds. The military helicopter and UAV flip backwards out of control, explode and squeeze into a hurricane of molecule spaghetti. The F-35 has its maximum afterburners on as it tries to escape the powerful pulling gravity forces. It continues to fly backwards and lose momentum. It suddenly flips backwards into the death zone, while making crunching metal sounds. Everything around Jaden compresses and sucks into him at a fast rate. The heat from friction around Jaden’s body emits invisible x-ray radiation in all directions. The invisible energy pathway, that only Jaden can see, continues to propel particles into space over him. The pain turns into pleasure as his arms stay up in the air. The orgasmic feeling goes all around his body. He laughs in a muffled evil voice. Jaden feels like a powerful god as he witnesses firsthand the power he possesses.

Suddenly it is quiet and Jaden lowers his hands. [*The Enemy of the State Soundtrack, Main theme track 2 begins to play in the background of Jaden's mind.*](#) The music starts with a slow melody. The rain stops falling from the sky and low thunder echoes in the background. It is quiet and peaceful around him. The water in the street is completely gone. Something has taken over him and he has become something he was not. The dark flames around his body go back down to an inch above his shoulders. The buildings in a thousand foot circumference around Jaden have completely vanished. Jaden stands there with an intrigued look on his face and does not know whom he is anymore. He cannot believe the powers he possesses and the feeling of ruling those weaker than him take over his mind.

‘Continue to destroy the weak,’ a voice says to him.

The pleasure of destroying and killing souls excites him now. His subconscious mind somehow sends a chemical message from his memories through to the congested area in the frontal lobe of his brain. Suddenly he has a flash back to when he was six years old and his mother was holding him in her arms while he was crying.

“Don’t cry Jaden, what happened?” His mother Stacey asked while she rocked him back and forth.

“I stepped on an army of ants coming out of an ant hole and killed them by mistake. Then I stepped on a grasshopper while running back to the house and now it is dead. The other little grasshopper babies don’t have a mother or father now. It wasn’t moving.”

The images distort and quickly flashback and change into everyone trying to kill him over the past few days. Then images of him being strapped to the hospital bed and being thrown in jail.

His anger increases and the feeling of destruction comes back. Kim runs and then stops a few blocks away. She knows it’s him from a distance, lost inside the evil darkness. She looks at Jaden standing on the sidewalk as a D.E.K.. She tries to contact him through nanodrones, but there is no response. She looks around and sees buildings missing and smoke coming from them. Her female intuition senses Jaden is still Jaden under there. She remembers just jogging past a 99-cent store. She turns around and quickly jogs back towards it. She quickly walks over to half of a destroyed 99-cent discount store. She pulls out a long body mirror from the ground and runs down to Jaden. AI warns her to be careful and not to get too close. She can’t believe a few blocks are completely leveled as if a huge bomb was dropped here.

“Jaden, it’s me, Kim, your girlfriend,” she yells from thirty feet away.

‘I don’t remember you,’ he says to her telepathically in a deep low voice.

“Jaden, you have to get that dark energy away from you. It is consuming your mind and making you forget who you are. It is also messing with your memories, you have to fight it.”

Jaden sees a red glow around her. She takes a few steps closer to him. A few raindrops fall from the clouds.

‘Get out of my way peasant female. I have a planet to take over,’ he says to Kim.

“Look in the mirror to see who you are and what you turned into, please!” She yells while turning it up and down so he can see his reflection. Rain drips down the four-foot long mirror.

‘No! Now die!’ He reaches his arm towards her.

Jaden catches her in a line of matter with his right hand. Kim holds onto the mirror around her arm and her body lifts into the air. Her body slowly comes towards Jaden feet first. She can’t move her body, but she struggles to lift her head to see him. Rain is pouring around her body as if she is in an invisible coffin. She feels a slight squeeze around her body.

“No! Stop! You’re hurting me! You are hurting AI also! Please stop this. I love you! Please look in the mirror. You aren’t a bad person! You aren’t a killer!” She pleads and yells while the rain continues to hit the ground. Tears roll from her eyes. She cries and groans from the squeezing sensation she feels around her body.

The words “You aren’t a bad person” echo deep inside of him.

He stops pulling her in and her body levitates in one place. Her feet reach just six feet from Jaden’s dark energy body. Her shoes fly off her feet and turn to two small worms. Her feet are less than an inch before the event horizon zone.

“I love you! You aren’t a bad person! You have a good heart!”

Jaden lifts his left hand and the mirror comes out of Kim’s arms. The mirror sits straight in front of him. Thunder is rumbling in the background. Kim feels the gravity forces tickling near her feet. She tries to pull her legs closer to her body, but she can’t.

His flashback from when he was younger continues, “It wasn’t moving mommy, I’m a murder and killer mommy,” young Jaden said while he continued to cry.

His mother Stacey responded and reached for a small hand mirror, “Baby, you aren’t a murder or killer. What you did was an accident. That happens in nature and in life. Sometimes accidents happen and it is out of someone’s control. It doesn’t make you a murderer. Sometimes animals and people die, as long as you didn’t do it intentionally it’s fine baby. Those animals you accidentally killed will be waiting in heaven for you. You can see them later.”

"But mom!"

"But mom, nothing, you aren't a bad person and you aren't a killer Jaden."

She showed Jaden his reflection in the mirror and continued, " You have a very good heart. I don't think you can ever be a bad person. Now your older brother Douglas is another story. You have a good heart and you will always be my sweet little baby. Do you see a bad person in the mirror? Always remember, you choose your path in life. You control your future. But for now, just be careful where you step next time and remember accidents happen. I love you baby."

"I love you too mom."

"Promise me you will always remember who you are."

"I promise mom."

"That's my boy, now go play some Atari Pitfall upstairs with your brother..."

"You are not a monster! You are Jaden Marino! The man I want to spend the rest of my life with!" Kim yells and pleads while she feels her feet being pulled very hard forward. The force is pulling down on her pants. Her belt buckle snaps and her jeans slowly pull downwards. The top of her white panties shows little by little. Tears run from Jaden's human eyes. The tears disappear into the darkness around his face. He sees himself and what he has become through the mirror before him. The image of himself does not invert like the rest of his vision. He sees the evil force he has become. Some of his memory of who he is returns. Images of Kim return into his memory and the loving bond comes back. He gently puts Kim on the ground and releases her. She sits on her hands on the ground in shock. She quickly lifts herself up and kicks herself backwards from Jaden. Her body trembles uncontrollably. She wipes the tears from her face and sniffs her nose.

Jaden yells in pain as the evil forces try to control him by attempting to block his memories of who he is. He hears many voices in his head.

'Coward...Destroy those who oppose you...Release your rage...Kill those weaker than you...She will betray you...' the voices say at the same time.

'No! No! No!' Jaden yells.

The mirror still floating in front of him breaks into hundreds of pieces. The sound of broken glass echoes in different directions. The small pieces stay in the same spot and spin in circles.

"Jaden fight it! Fight the evil forces! Don't give in! You are a fighter!" She yells a good distance from him.

Jaden drops to his knees and the dark energy around him disappears. It dissolves into thin air around him. He cries on the ground while

kneeling on the concrete. The badly damaged skin and muscles around his body is slowly regenerating. Rain bounces off his naked body as Kim runs back towards him. She gets on her knees with him and puts her arms around him. She feels the oily clear plastic gloss the nanodrones are creating around his body. She can see his veins and red blood moving up and down inside his body.

“Baby, it’s going to be okay. I’m right here for you. Look at me baby,” she says while trying to lift up his face.

“I can’t, I don’t want you to see me this way. The skin, tissue and some bone is missing around my face.”

[The Amelie Soundtrack, Sur le Fil, track 16 begins to play.](#) He tries to keep his badly damaged face towards the ground. She tries to lift his deformed face with her hand and he resists. She sees parts of his skull, veins and fatty tissue. He looks like a deformed dead body. She can see his skull and some of his brain from over him. She comforts him. The soft piano melody soundtrack helps calm Jaden down.

“Look at me baby, I’m here for you. I don’t care what you look like.”

Jaden raises his face from the ground and looks at her without eyelids. His greatly disfigured face looks like a half-dissolved corpse. He has missing teeth, no nose, no ears, and the skull displays his brain in a few spots. Veins can be seen pumping blood around his body and face. Nanodrones hold severed veins together. He has clear seals completely around his face and body keeping the blood from falling out. The muscles and bone in his face are quickly reforming before her eyes. She looks deep into his bloodshot blue eyes. The nanodrones begin reproducing energy for his weapons system. She looks down and can see his heart beating through his rib cage. The rain stops drizzling from the sky. She helps Jaden stand up to walk with her.

“Let’s go baby,” Kim says while they stand up together.

Jaden groans and moans while the bones in his legs crack. She sees the bone and fatty tissue in his legs as he stands up. They slowly walk down the street.

“Did I do all of this?” Jaden asks.

“Yes, you did.”

“Damn! Wow!”

Jaden can’t believe the steel beams from the buildings are ripped from underground.

He reaches down and picks up the D.E.K.’s sword on the ground. She has her arm around his shoulders helping him walk.

“What do you need that sword for?” She asks.

“I’m keeping it as a souvenir and you never know when you might need it.”

"Baby, always remember, I'll always love you, no matter how you look to me," she says while rubbing his wet face and kissing his lipless bloody teeth.

"I love you too, Kim. Thanks for saving me back there. I didn't know what was going on, or who I was. That was very brave of you."

"I just didn't want to lose you. I knew you were still you deep inside," she says.

"You remembered what my mother told me when I was six years old right?"

"Yes, that is why I took a mirror with me. I remember that specific memory of yours. I was going through all your memories when I was jogging down the street towards you. Your daughter Sabrina and James told me what was happening. I had to do something after I heard over the military radio all the commotion."

The deepest layers of skin begin to regenerate around his body.

"Thanks baby. Thanks for helping me at my darkest moment. You saved me and I think you saved Earth. I don't know what I would have done. I was so angry and destructive. I wanted to kill every living thing in sight. I was having orgasmic feelings every time someone died."

"Orgasms? Better than the orgasm I gave you?"

"Of course not better than the orgasms you gave me, but very close," Jaden says.

"Hmmm. Well you are welcome for me saving you. Not a problem, I'm sure you would have done the same for me. You saved me plenty of times in the past few days. No orgasms without me from now on okay?" She asks.

"Okay," he replies.

"What was it like being a D.E.K.?"

"Very cold, dark, lonely and eerie. My vision was inverted like a film negative. I felt as if I was able to control the dark energy around me. I heard many voices telling me to kill and destroy. I felt so powerful and unstoppable. The memories of it are broken up and I felt as if I was dreaming. How is AI doing?" Jaden asks.

"He is still alive, but very weak."

"That's good, at least he is still alive. Tell him to hang in there."

"How is your memory? Is it coming back to you?" She asks.

"The nanodrones report the chemicals in my mind were being suppressed and blocked. This was affecting my long and short-term memory. Many cells were damaged from an internal unknown energy. But some of my memory is coming back. I have to get to the bottom of this. Do I look worse than the Elephant Man?"

"Let me put it like this, the Elephant Man can get a modeling job compared to how you looked a minute ago. Now I can see your nose and ears reforming."

“Damn. Wow, that’s bad. At least I’m being quickly repaired.”

Jaden’s abdomen and thighs are transparent. Kim looks down and looks at him with a strange face.

“What? I’m naked. I don’t want the world to see my stuff and tool, so I’m making it look invisible to everyone.”

“Now you look like a mentally challenged Hollow Man,” she snaps.

WASHINGTON, D.C. PENTAGON

Robinson is in a special control room by himself with virtual reality equipment around his body. Robinson is in shock from watching the D.E.K. just displayed before him. He wants to control that weapon. The room he is in was specially made for the President of the United States in case of an emergency for communications with all military forces and access to Motherdrone. He continues to monitor the events in Manhattan by long-range video surveillance. There is a loud bang on his door and a small army of military personnel is outside.

“I gave an order not to disturb me!” Robinson communicates through a speaker outside the room.

The banging continues.

“What are you an idiot? Do not disturb me!” Robinson says.

A familiar female voice replies, “I gave the order for you to be disturbed. Now get out of my control room!”

Robinson thinks for a second and can’t believe the voice he is hearing.

“Didn’t think you would hear my voice again, Kevin Robinson?” Stefanie Paylin asks.

She is wearing an exoskeleton prototype generation four bionic suit along with Peters. There is no response through the speakers. They are standing on a metal bridge that leads up to the room Robinson is in.

“Open this door Robinson, that is an order!” She demands.

General Peters is by her side and pulls out a remote device with a screen. The device projects images midair of what Robinson sees on his virtual screens. She talks into the device.

“Motherdrone, this is your President Stefanie Paylin. I am ordering you to override Robinson’s security lock on the outside door.”

Robinson quickly talks to Motherdrone, “Motherdrone, that is a clone of the President. The President has been confirmed dead. That person is a perpetrator outside the room. The military outside the room is against the United States. Send out the rangerbots and enable the halon system.”

“Sorry President Robinson, I cannot enable the security system without verification from congress.”

Paylin stands outside the door on two footprints. The mask covering her face opens up. A light scans her eyes and the DNA in her hair.

"Voice, eye and DNA scan confirmed. President Stefanie Paylin has been confirmed dead at 16:05 hours. A direct order from congress is needed to override President Kevin Robinson. As mentioned in the twenty-fifth amendment, section five," Motherdrone replies.

"Robinson is being charged with treason and conspiracy to mass murder. This should automatically override his access. Motherdrone confirm."

"Congress needs to confirm this. Override access denied."

She turns to her men, "We don't have time to get an approval from congress. Most of them are walking around like zombies or home in a deep sleep. Take down this door with your men soldier. Tell the others to wait upstairs."

"Yes ma'am," the first officer says.

Paylin is concern with Jaden Marino's safety. She has been fully briefed on what he has done and what he has been through with Robinson. She watches on several virtual 3D image screens around her of what Robinson is seeing in Manhattan. Two military men begin to use tools to open the door.

"Cease and desist! Unauthorized opening of the President's door will automatically enable the security feature. Armed rangerbots will be dispatched. This is your last warning to cease and desist."

"Keep going men," she says.

"Security breach. Security breach."

Red lights are flashing and all doors lock down.

"They are going to activate the halon system. Our exoskeleton suits have enough recycled oxygen for fifteen minutes. The other men are getting special oxygen facemasks," Peters says.

She sees through the virtual screens the military moving in on Jaden and Kim as they walk down Broadway. Paylin sees Jaden limping and Kim helping him. Jaden's skin is almost fully healed.

"Peters, I want communications with the commander in New York City."

"Yes, ma'am," he says while touching the virtual screens floating around them.

MANHATTAN

Thirty soldiers with assault rifles run in front of Jaden and Kim while blocking off the street. There are green lasers aimed at their head and chest.

"Freeze!" They yell.

Robinson gives the order to the military commander for his men to shoot the terrorist down on sight. Jaden and Kim put their hands in the air. Jaden drops his sword.

"I can't produce a shield right now. My energy is regenerating," Jaden says while moving in front of Kim.

WASHINGTON, D.C. PENTAGON

"You will ignore that order Commander Brian Cooper...." Her voice turns to static.

"Who was that President Robinson? That sounded like President Paylin," Cooper says.

Peters changes the communications to talk directly with the soldiers. The soldiers arm their guns with simultaneous clicks.

"That was an imposter President Paylin. Fire at will," Robinson says.

"Madam President, you can communicate directly with the soldiers. This communication can't be cut off by Robinson or Motherdrone. Hurry, those rangerbots are coming," Peters says.

"This is your alive Commander-in-Chief Stefanie Paylin, soldiers. Your commander-in-chief is being attacked now as we speak by prototype rangerbots from Kevin Robinson. He faces treason, conspiracy to commit murder and attempted murder. Do not follow that order from your commander to fire. Stand down and let those innocent citizens go. They have been helping us fight this invasion upon us," she says over the radio.

"Soldiers fire your weapons. Those terrorists are a threat and are responsible for the disaster before you," Cooper says to his men.

"Stand down soldiers. This is an order from the President. I was setup by the vice president to fly into a no fly zone without any protection. General Peters helped me and those citizens you are aiming at helped to land my plane, saving my life. Do not fire upon them, that is an order. Do not face murder charges along with Robinson."

There is a long pause as the soldiers aim their guns at Jaden and Kim. Sweat runs down Jaden's face as he keeps his hands up. Some of the soldiers are nervously shaking and sweating. Jaden can hear them breathing heavily.

"Do you think they are going to shoot?" Kim asks with her hands high in the air.

"I hope not, just stand behind me. I'll protect you as much as I can," Jaden says nervously.

"You are such a gentleman," Kim says.

A minutes passes by and the soldiers slowly lower their guns.

"They are standing down, ma'am," Peters says.

MANHATTAN

"I guess we can pass, let's go," Kim says while lowering her hands.
Jaden tries to reach down to pick up the sword.

"Leave it, before they fire at us thinking you drew a weapon. People get killed for things like that these days," Kim says while they walk by the soldiers smiling.

WASHINGTON, D.C. PENTAGON

The lights go out and it turns completely dark where Peters and Paylin are standing. The halon air removing system begins to emit smoke in the large area.

The four rangerbots stand by a doorway one hundred feet away from Peters and Paylin. The access bridge is made of steel mesh and is thirty feet above the floor. The rangerbots have human faces and muscular bodies. Motherdone controls them. They are armed with thermobaric bullets, bat bullets and machine guns. The rangerbots have light reflecting bodies. Paylin and Peter's exoskeleton suits allow them to see in the dark through an enhanced infrared system.

"Are you good at fighting and shooting, General?" She asks.

"I was going to ask you the same thing. I've had my share of hand-to-hand combat in my day. I'm okay at the shooting range."

"Well, us soccer moms know how to kick some ass. I'm a pro at shooting wildlife back home. I have an entire zoo of animal mounts on my living room walls. Let's see what these million dollar defense funded suits and assault rifles can do," she says while they stand aiming their guns.

She flips down her glass face protector. Her eye screen matches up with the gun's aim. She fires her gun directly at the face of the first rangerbot. The powerful bullet hits the first rangerbot in its weak point. It falls backwards on the others like dominoes.

"Good shot President."

"Nothing to it, just like shooting Bambi from fifty yards."

The two soldiers behind the President continue trying to open the door. Two of the rangerbots swing down under the long bridge and climb under it towards them. The last one fires a machine gun at them. The powerful bullets hit their suits and bounce off. The force of the bullets pushes them back.

"Oh shit, that stings. It feels like being hit by a paintball gun," Paylin says while continuing to fire at the steel grate bridge floor.

MANHATTAN

Robinson sends an army of UAVs towards Jaden and Kim. A close by, smaller UAV hovering overhead circles around to attack. Sabrina and James run up to Jaden. Sabrina gives Jaden a huge hug.

"You are okay now daddy? I thought I lost you. What happened to your hair? What happened to your clothes? How can I see right through your belly?" She asks.

"I'm fine. Just my memory is a little jumbled up. My clothes is a long story and I'm partly invisible because I don't want you to see me naked. You might report me to ACS," Jaden says with a smile on his face. She looks at him with a smirk. He continues, "I'm glad to see you're okay."

"Daddy, is your hair growing right in front of me?" She asks with a confused look on her face.

"You are very observant," he says while she looks at him. He continues and turns to James, "Where have you been Mr. James White? You look like a futuristic Vanilla Ice in a *Total Recall* throwback suit. What is this you are wearing?"

"I've been here and there. These clothes stop bullets and small blasts. Where have you been? You are not looking a day over nineteen," James says.

Jaden quickly turns to look into the dark sky at a UAV about to fire on them.

"Everyone run into that building and take cover quickly!" Jaden yells.

They run while Kim grabs Sabrina's hand. Jaden focuses on the UAV flying low towards him. The dark energy returns around his hands. The sword on the ground on the other side of the soldiers shakes and floats in the air towards Jaden. A small missile fires towards where Jaden is standing while Kim, Sabrina and James are still running towards the building. Jaden leaps into the air with anti-gravity nanodrones lighting up around his body. The missile explodes under him. James runs behind the females while holding their shoulders. The nanodrones quickly go back into Jaden's body. Kim, Sabrina and James are thrown from the blast and fall towards the ground. They get up and continue running. The sword comes into his hand. The UAV quickly approaches Jaden as they are both twenty-five feet in the air. It tries to pass over him. He swings and cuts the UAV straight down the middle with the dark energy ruffles circling the sword. There is an explosion as the debris heads towards the soldiers a block away. They don't have time to run and it comes right at them. The men bend down, embrace and cover their faces.

Kim turns around and stops before a door to see if Jaden is okay. She sees him in the air levitating like a superhero over the fire beneath him. James pulls her into the apartment building and closes the door. The dark

energy fully forms back around Jaden's body. He catches all the explosion and debris in a line of matter pathway. The fire and debris travels back towards his body. It circles his body and disappears into his dark abyss. Jaden floats back down towards the ground with his sword still in his hand. The fire below him goes into his body as well. The dark energy disappears from around his body and he drops his sword. Jaden feels as if he has better control of this mysterious dark energy weapon.

Jaden jogs towards his friends and family inside the building. Kim is standing by the door looking at Jaden coming towards her.

"Are you guys okay?" Jaden asks his friends and daughter while walking over to them.

"That was amazing Jaden," she says while staring at him.

"Yes, just a little thrown off from the blast, but we are fine," James says.

"I'm okay dad. Are you okay?" Sabrina asks.

"Yeah, I'm fine. Just tired of being naked."

"Jaden, how were you able to control the dark energy like that? Where did it come from so fast?" Kim asks.

"I feel as if I can control it better now. It's just an instant feeling I feel now as if it is a part of me. There are concentrated amounts of dark energy floating above me right now as if it is on standby. There is also dark energy and matter all around and passing through everyone at this very moment. It all comes towards my body like a swarm of bees. I feel more in control now and I don't need to be angry or feel pain for it to attack my body," Jaden explains as they walk outside together.

Suddenly the clouds light up brightly and they look up towards the sky. A huge projectile is fired from space into the ocean south of Manhattan. The entire Manhattan island shakes and Kim and Sabrina lose their balance. Jaden dispatches a nanoscanner from his body. He sees another unidentified nanoscanner just floating over them watching them. His nanoscanner quickly heads south of Manhattan to find out what is happening.

"Kim, is AI controlling a nanoscanner from the Gravhawk or something?"

"He said no," she replies.

"Shit, there is a 200 foot high tsunami heading towards Manhattan, it just took out the Statue of Liberty. We have to get out of here!" Jaden yells.

The ground shakes violently as the wall of water stops right before hitting land. Jaden helps Kim and Sabrina up. The water slams into an invisible barrier and splashes a thousand feet into the air. The water recedes back into the rivers. Jaden stands up and continues to look through the nanoscanner. He sees a strong force field stopping the water

from hitting land south of the Manhattan Island. Staten Island, Brooklyn, and New Jersey all connect with the same invisible barrier.

“What happened Jaden?” Kim asks while holding him from behind.

“I don’t know. The water stopped in midair.”

Jaden’s nanoscanner returns back towards him and he sees several other more advanced looking nanoscanners looking at them.

“Do you hear that low sounding fax machine sound Jaden?” Kim asks.

‘Hey buddy, this is your Andromedian friend Marco. Myself, Bomani and Bellona are here to help you out. Did we come at a good time?’ Marco asks.

A smile comes across Kim and Jaden’s face at the same time. They can both hear Marco’s communications through the nanoscanners. Jaden and Kim kiss each other in celebration. The water falls back into the rivers in a huge splash. Bellona’s more advanced looking nanoscanner stares at Kim and Jaden kissing each other.

“What is going on?” James and Sabrina ask at the same time.

“Jaden’s alien friends are here to help us,” Kim explains.

‘How? How is that possible? How did your bodies clear the galactic bulge’s black hole?’ Jaden asks.

‘Well, it was Bellona’s idea. She really wanted to make sure you were okay. She was worried that you might need help. So we went back to Planet 455, broke back inside the area they were keeping you and took your cloned bodies. We are in your cloned bodies now. We don’t have our biomechanical bodies body with us. So we can’t leave our ships for any reason. We are using the new nanosincoids as brains. As a security measure, our ships require a body on board or special permission is needed from our government.’

“I can’t keep up with what they are saying, they are talking too fast for me,” Kim says while holding his hand.

‘Hello Bellona,’ Jaden says.

There isn’t a response. Jaden finds that a little strange.

‘Isn’t that against your laws? Using another body?’ Jaden asks.

‘Yes, it is. Well, we broke a few laws by coming here without permission. That is why we can’t stay long. Listen, our ships can’t be detected by the Darclonian mother ship. Our ships are a few miles off the shore underwater now. If they find out we are here, they will attack us and send out a S.O.S. for more mother ships to attack Earth. We don’t fully understand their intent for humans yet, but we have to stay hidden. Our help to you will be limited, but we can give you helpful advice though. There are wraithstalkers flying on the other side of your planet, infecting large quantities of humans with the bioparasites. We can take those ships out, but the mother ship needs to be taken down first. They

get most of their energy from the mother ship. You need to get a few soldiers together and have them beamed aboard the mother ship. Pick up spots are usually on top of tall buildings. The soldiers can act as if their minds are in positive mode then plant explosions around the mother ship. Then use a return beam back down to Earth through the cloud portals. Once the mother ship is destroyed we can easily destroy the wraithstalker ships on Earth... nanoscanners are detecting thirty-one heavily armed UAVs coming this direction. Checking their circuits, you and your friends are the main targets,' Marco says very quickly.

'Can you take them out for me? My energy is very low and still recharging,' Jaden says.

'I have a better idea. Have you used the artificial intelligence black torpedo yet?' Marco asks.

'Yes, we did.'

'Well we have something called an AI techno-manipulator torpedo, one hundred times more advanced,' Marco says while two nanoscanners follow the communications pathways the UAVs are using back to Motherdrone.

WASHINGTON, D.C. PENTAGON

Meanwhile, back at the lower level of the Pentagon, Peters is laying unconscious thirty feet down under the bridge in complete darkness. He has damage all around his exoskeleton suit from bullet dents to scrapes and scratches. Paylin is laying on the metal bridge on her back while two rangerbots are over her. One of the rangerbots over her is missing an arm. The rangerbots sustained severe damage around their bodies, but are still operational. Paylin's exoskeleton suit has damage all around it. The two officers that were trying to open Robinson's door are shot dead with oxygen masks over their faces. Two rangerbots are over Paylin trying to choke her through the suit with their arms. One of the bots breaks her recycling oxygen tube inside the back of her neck. She begins to hold her breath. The third rangerbot is firing a gun from under the bridge and into her back. She groans in an attempt to overpower the rangerbots. The bullets are felt through the suit and in her back. She continues to groan and sweat from everything that is happening to her. The bullets in her back feel like little knives stabbing her. She tries with all her might to push the rangerbots off her. She hears beeping noises and messages on her helmet screen. Her body can't take any more abuse. Her nervous system is sending countless chemical messages of pain and muscle straining to her brain. She is having the fight of her life. The prototype bionic suit is at its maximum 6,000 pounds of pressure. She feels she is at the end, she can't hold her breath any longer.

MANHATTAN

Jaden, Sabrina, Kim and James are running down the street, towards a subway station. The UAVs fire a missile each towards Jaden. Sixteen Hellfire 7000 lbs missiles and sixteen thermobaric 5000 lbs missiles are coming towards him. His shield systems are still offline.

He looks up and does not see the dark energy spiraling over him.

‘Shit! Guys, a little help. Where is that god torpedo?’ Jaden asks his alien friends.

He suddenly sees the AI techno torpedo through their nanoscanner. The AI techno torpedo is quickly traveling across the ocean towards Manhattan at high speeds. It reaches Manhattan and breaks down into trillions of microscopic nanobots. They quickly accelerate and change direction upwards. They follow the UAVs microwave transmissions at half the speed of light to an airship blimp sitting 70,000 feet above the city.

WASHINGTON, D.C. PENTAGON

Paylin begins to black out, but she continues to push with all her might. The torpedo fragments travel into space to a satellite, then back down towards the Pentagon. The invisible torpedo hits the Pentagon in less than a second. It penetrates thousands of firewalls in milliseconds and quickly compromises Motherdrone’s supercomputer system.

Paylin suddenly pushes the two non-responsive rangerbots into ceiling. She quickly opens the bulletproof facemask and gasps for air. Sweat is all over her face and her heart is beating a mile a minute. Their bodies fall downstairs under the bridge, making a loud banging sound on impact.

The first few missiles fired towards Jaden get within 200 feet and explode instantly. Windows on nearby buildings explode and debris falls towards the street. The other missiles change direction and head towards the UAVs.

President Paylin is still gasping for air with her eyes close. She takes off her helmet to breathe more fresh air. The air conditioning quickly circulates air in the area. Robinson’s door quietly opens up and he stands there in his full military uniform. Robinson comes out of the room and sees rangerbots lying beneath him under the bridge. He steps over the dead officers by the door. He walks over to Paylin laying on the metal walkway, slowly breathing while lying on her back. Robinson pulls out a

handgun and stands over her. Paylin opens her eyes and sees Robinson standing over her pointing a gun at her head.

“Goodbye you annoying can’t stay dead bitch,” he says while pointing the gun down.

She quickly grabs his right hand pushing it away and the gun fires missing her face by inches. The gun falls on the steel bridge. She reaches towards his crotch area and lifts him up into the air by his groin. Soldiers and secret service flood the area from all directions. He squeals and moans in pain while she stands up. She looks him directly in the eyes while he tries to grab his own groin area.

“It is President super bitch to you, traitor. Trying to assassinate me Robinson?”

Robinson tries to release her tight bionic grip.

“That isn’t hurting anymore....” Robinson moans.

“You like torture for terrorists and enemies of America right former vice president?”

Robinson shakes his head back and forth. Soldiers check downstairs on Peters. She drops him onto the bridge. The wind is knocked out of him as he attempts to catch his breath. He moans in pain and grabs between his legs.

“On my flight back to Alaska earlier today I read the top-secret documents of you torturing prisoners and terrorists at Guantanamo Bay. I know it was many years ago, but I’m sure you are familiar with it. America is better than that and I’m better than that,” she says looking at him with a red face and moaning.

Robinson wheezes and moans. He clears his throat and attempts to talk. An armed soldier walks by Paylin and takes the gun on the floor near Robinson. The soldier stands behind and over Robinson ready to arrest him.

“I love my country President. I did everything to protect it. That Jaden Marino fella is a terrorist and a threat, I did my job to protect this country! President MacAuthor told me to keep this country strong before he died. Ever since you became President, other countries have looked at us as if we were weaklings and sissies. They laughed at us behind our back. Russia, China and nations in the UN mocked us. They called us the breast-feeding sissy country that has grown too weak. China thinks they own us now, since we owe them trillions and then a female President takes over as President. We were losing our stronghold on the world. Terrorists are more prone to take advantage of us. I promised him not to let this happen. I did my job to defend this great nation,” Robinson says while sitting up on the floor. She walks closer to him.

“Who’s side are you on? The Darclonian aliens trying to take over this planet? The real terrorists? You had good intel and you ignored it because you had an ego to go after someone who was here to help us.

Your judgment was completely off. You wasted countless soldiers' lives in an attempt to kill Mr. Marino. You committed a conspiracy to have the President of the United States killed. Mutiny in Washington, D.C.? Having secret service rangerbots attacking me and I had to fight for my life just now? I almost died fighting off two rangerbots that were created to protect me. You put millions of American citizens' lives at risk today. You put this entire planet at risk because of your ignorant, egotistic, macho man bullshit. Just because I'm not run by corporate America and I don't agree with invading smaller countries in an attempt to put them in debt to America, doesn't make me weak. You starting your own war by destroying billions of dollars in federal highways in my country? That is not protecting America! You are the terrorist!" She yells. "I think you need a psychic evaluation in federal prison. Take this old delusional man to the brig."

Robinson continues to breathe heavily and leans over in an attempt to get up. The soldier has handcuffs in his hand and attempts to lift Robinson from behind. Robinson bends over towards his ankle and quickly reaches for a small gun.

"Keep this on your conscious when you sleep at night madam President!" He yells.

Robinson clicks the safety off.

"No!" Paylin yells while quickly stepping towards him to grab the gun.

The soldier releases his grip from behind Robinson and quickly steps back. Her facemask goes down automatically.

A single shot is fired under Robinson's chin and brain fragments splatter behind him. Blood is sprayed on the soldier and on Paylin's facemask and suit. His body quickly drops to the floor and the gun falls over the side of the bridge. The soldiers standing on the bridge run in closer and around Paylin. She turns her back and looks away.

A few minutes go by. A soldier is wiping the blood and skull fragments from Paylin's bionic suit. The huge Motherdrone screen displays: FATHERJADEN ONLINE, OPERATING AT 10,000 PETAFLAPS A SECOND.

"President Paylin, you are looking good in that black exoskeleton bionic suit. You look like a bionic cat woman," Jaden says through the Motherdrone speakers.

Paylin walks over to the President's command room and talks towards the screen.

"It is nice to finally being able to talk to the man I've been hearing so much about today."

"Same here. Is Robinson in handcuffs where he belongs?" Jaden asks.

“Robinson took the coward’s way out. I guess he wanted to save the taxpayers a long lengthy trial. Anyway, how are you able to see what is going on here and how are you talking through the Motherdrone system?” She asks.

“That is a top alien secret. Let’s just say I gave Motherdrone a thousand year processing upgrade and I have temporary control of her systems. I have a plan for this silent attack we are experiencing, but we have to work fast, if we are going to save this planet...”

Chapter 23: Astrotheological Literary Hybrid



EAST HOUSTON STREET, LOWER MANHATTAN 9:12 PM

The sky is completely dark and calm. Clouds cruise across the sky displaying stars between the patches. The sound of helicopter blades can be heard in the distance. There is a sea breeze coming in from the East River. A group of pigeons fly together and flap their wings in sync. Jaden has a blanket around his body. They stand around waiting for a helicopter to land in the deserted street. People are in their homes waiting for the end of the countdown to approach. Jaden just finished having a long conversation with President Paylin through his nanoscanner that was connected to Marco's nanoscanner. She is on her way to New York City by scramjet to meet Jaden. As they walked through Chelsea Manhattan ten minutes ago, Jaden went into a clothing store and found something to wear. He is now wearing a black designer casual long sleeve shirt, fitted black jeans and some black sneakers. Kimberly and Sabrina are standing to the side talking to each other, while James and Jaden have a conversation.

"Jaden, I can't believe you look the same way you did the last time I saw you eighteen years ago. Were you really in another galaxy?" James asks.

"Yes, I was man. I missed you and everyone here. It's only been a few weeks for me, but eighteen years for you. But you'll see and

experience everything I've been through in a few minutes. I have to deactivate that nanomole in your brain," Jaden says.

"Cool. This special helmet over my head cost me \$100,000. People were buying them up on Zbay. I saw you fighting that dark monster earlier, that was amazing. It was like watching a Hollywood movie. What does it feel like turning into that thing? Do you think you can beat Superman, Wolverine, Spiderman or a Terminator?" James asks.

"It was something like I've never felt before. My body had no weight and I felt as if I could float or fly. It was as if the gravity was squeezing my body and the dark energy was eating away at my body at the same time. I felt as if the dark energy was turning me into something else and I couldn't remember who I was. I felt myself leave my body and travel deep into space as if I was opening an invisible pathway. I was feeling pain and pleasure. The energy was destroying many layers of skin around my body and it was very cold. I felt invincible and very powerful. I was able to control and move things by using lines of dark matter particles."

"Line of dark matter?" James asks.

"Yes, a line of dark matter would leave my fingers and extend in a direction of my choosing and contain any molecules. It was something like a tractor beam. My vision was also inverted; I saw everything inverted like a film negative. Those superheroes you mentioned wouldn't even stand a chance. I can fight the X-Men, Superfriends, Predator, and T1000 robots at the same time and I will rip their molecules apart. I think there is a lot more a dark energy knight can do," Jaden says.

"You know you missed a lot of movies when you were gone, Iron Man 1,2, and 3, New Superman trilogy, five X-Men movies, three new Batman movies, Voltron movie, GI Joe trilogy, Matrix, Star Wars episodes 1,2 and 3, Transformers trilogy and Fantastic Four trilogy."

"Wow, I have a lot of movies to catch up on," Jaden says.

"When all of this is over you can come watch them all on one holographic disc at my house."

"Cool."

James just stares at Jaden and can't believe he looks the same.

Sabrina interrupts and hugs Jaden from behind. Her arms wrap around his chest and Jaden embraces her hands.

"I'm so happy you are safe."

Jaden turns around and hugs her back. Her scent reminds him of Amy.

Jaden responds, "Sabrina I'm happy you are okay yourself, but why on God's green Earth would you take an elevator in an emergency situation?"

"Sorry, I wasn't thinking dad. All I was thinking about was not burning up and getting away from those big nasty rats."

"Okay, I'm just glad you are safe and things worked out."

Kimberly walks up to Jaden and holds his hand. The helicopter lands near them in the middle of the street. The strong winds are making everyone's hair fly in different directions. Jaden, Kim, Sabrina, and James climb into the military helicopter. The helicopter takes off and they are on their way to John F. Kennedy Airport in Queens. Jaden begins deactivating James' nanomole while he lays unconscious on a cot. Marco's nanoscanner gives AI some materials to repair himself in a few days. Sabrina is trying hard to get online through Kim's cell phone, but there aren't any network connections.

'Marco can you help us access the Gravhawk?' Jaden asks.

'I'm sorry, we can't. Flying over there would put us at great risk of being seen and only AI has access to enter the Gravhawk. Security measures have been changed. We can't even remote into it using our nanoscanners.'

'I understand.'

"Dad, is it safe sitting next to you? Can't that black energy stuff come back anytime? I don't want to be sucked into your body along with the helicopter."

"I don't think it is coming back any time soon. I have more control over it. But, I will definitely give you enough warning. If you do happen to get sucked into me, just think of it as you returning from where you came from," Jaden snaps.

Kimberly laughs with Jaden.

"Smart-ass," Sabrina mumbles.

"You two look so cute together. I can't believe you are only two years older than her Jaden. This is mindboggling, you two look as if you could pass for brother and sister," Kim says.

"Okay, that's enough, Dr. Chan," Jaden says while looking out the window. "Look over there Sabrina. I met Kim for the first time eighteen and a half years ago, right on the tramway to Roosevelt Island. She was just seven years old then, but she knew I was her lifetime soul mate."

"Soulmate pedophile, next on Maury," Sabrina mumbles to herself.

"Sabrina, what does BMS mean? You mentioned it earlier when you were talking down on men."

"You know what BMS stands for, right Kim?" Sabrina asks.

"Baby magnet syndrome," Kim replies.

"BMS is when a man gets you pregnant and you are stuck with him. You grow very close and dependent on the man. He changes because he knows you aren't going anywhere. You gain weight and he might tell you nobody else will want you to slowly remove your self-esteem. You take the abuse and cheating for years for the child. Sixty percent of women deal with this and can't leave because most men put you in a

position where you can't. Catholic women suffer the most. Several children increase the chances by twenty-five percent. Some men work all the time and leave the women at home with the child, while he does God knows what. Many men use the staying late at work excuse to cheat or go to strip clubs and they leave the female in a position where she is very dependent on him," Sabrina says and then continues, "One of the reasons for all of this cheating in relationships, especially with men, is due to society's standards. Society tells women they are suppose to look like a size zero and always stay young and pretty. Men are always going to try to seek this standard of perfection. These men seek escorts, hookers or R.F.E.C. units. Then you have the men that are just hungry for sex with another woman. These men would find a female of any size or attraction for the pleasure of new sex. These cycles seriously need to end. Women need to empower themselves and stop the oppression these men are putting on us."

Kim and Sabrina continue to talk amongst themselves.

"What about the men who alienates the female from her friends and family with the BMS?" Kim asks.

Jaden tries to block out their bashing on men chat. James wakes up while holding his head.

"What did I wake up to? What is all this cheating and BMS bullshit?" James asks.

"You don't want to know, I just wanted to know what BMS meant. I started a women empowerment rally," Jaden says.

"I think every woman should be with the man for at least seven years before deciding to have children with him," Kim says to Sabrina.

"That wasn't smart to ask in front of two women in these times," James says.

Kim continues, "Women should wait until their late thirties to have children, or even have a child without a man. They can go to a sperm bank and save the time of having a deadbeat dad that is never there. This cycle of men dodging child support has to end soon. Get a vasectomy if you are going to be irresponsible. In fact, the government should give all male children vasectomies when they are born, just like cats and dogs. When they turn eighteen, they have to apply to have the vasectomy reversed as if they are buying a house. That would solve a lot of society's problems."

"I can picture it now, a big stamp denied on their vasectomy reversal application," Sabrina says while laughing.

Kim laughs and adds, "They would need a license to reproduce. So many men would fail the road test."

They both chuckle and Sabrina says, "That would save so many women of having to take all these different birth controls, harming our reproductive systems and bodies."

James and Jaden have their own conversation.

"So, how you been?" Jaden asks.

"Okay I guess. Do you remember Claudine Hilton?" James asks.

"...what about the lonely women in denial?" Sabrina asks.

"...what about the women who can't be alone, always need a man to be happy..."

"...the new R.M.E.C. units coming out in 2017 will solve that problem....it has an emotional relationship chip..."

"...by the time the female leaves the man, she is too old or too fat to find someone else...."

"....My girlfriend had an abusive man that told her she wasn't worth shit and stole away herself value....Degraded her and told her she is ugly and that no man is going to want her....Then the man also ran up her credit after she co-signed for him...."

"...This previous generation of women just takes the physical and mental abuse for years and years...."

Jaden turns back to James after listening in on the men bashing conversation, "Yeah, I remember her, that aggressive girl that used to stalk me. She was in my astronomy class and tried to get me to cheat on my girlfriend."

"Well I ended up marrying her three years after graduating from college and we have two kids," James says.

"Oh no. You didn't. That girl was crazy, why would you do that?"

"She has gotten psychological help over the years and I thought she changed for the better. But she was still looking for a mixed race male and I caught her cheating on dating websites a few years ago. I've gotten some good years out of the marriage, so I'm happy. Marriages average six years these days, so I'm happy mine lasted eleven years. Anyways, five years ago I quit my job."

"Why did you quit your job?"

"I'll give you a quick rundown. I used to work at a hospital as a computer technician in the IT department. I used to commute to Brooklyn, in fact you can see my old job from here," James points and continues, "Back in 2009, the recession hit hard and a lot of companies, including my hospital, decided to lay off minorities first, even if they had more time on the job. I had a black friend named Tyrone who was illegally laid off first. He started way before me, had more experience and a clean record. He was targeted along with other minorities because of their skin color. The hospital claimed it was restructuring, but then they changed it to termination. This really got me angry for a hospital to

do this to someone after so many years on the job. Twelve years this guy was there for with a clean record. So I told the CEO to lay me off instead of him, but they didn't want to. So I resigned. My wife at the time didn't understand why I would quit. I explained to her I can't work for a racist company without morals or respect for their employees. I knew my luck would improve somewhere else and I would have found a job elsewhere."

Kim and Sabrina's conversation gets Jaden and James' attention for a few seconds.

"...seventy percent of women in their thirties and forties are single with children and gave up on finding a man. They put their energy into their children and careers. Some men will never accept the independent female," Sabrina says.

"It's hard for these women to find a man with their several children...this is a horrible cycle... They're slowly gaining weight, single female without kids turn into cat ladies and bond with their animals since they can't find anyone," Kim says.

"...But the main problem with females these days in their twenties is they tend to go after the bad boys for the excitement and the challenge of trying to change them. Realizing this rarely works years later, their children give them a reason to look for the good man type. By this time it is too late..."

Jaden and James turn their heads back to each other and continue talking.

"Communications have also changed a lot since you've been gone. People just text, e-mail, instant message and write on each other's Internet walls. People don't talk on the phone or in person anymore. People have friends on their Myfacebook that they never even talk to or met in person. Old social communication is slowly disappearing and being replaced with cold digital messaging," James says.

Jaden responds, "That is crazy. I guess humans will eventually evolve and won't need vocal cords to speak anymore. Technology is really ruining social values."

"My daughter used to text me when I would be sitting right next to her. She is addicted to text messages and so is my ex-wife. They both don't use the phone anymore, just their fingers. It's pathetic Jaden."

"Damn.... it will only get worst. Sorry to change the subject on you, but what happened to your friend Tyrone?" Jaden asks.

"He didn't accept the severance pay and he looked for a job for the next two years. He wrote a book about his discrimination experiences on the job and spoke out on the issue to other minorities that experienced the same thing. He also sued them. I heard they had to pay him for a gag

order to be silent about the injustice. The hospital wanted to keep a good reputation with the community,” James says.

“I think you did the right thing. That was good for you to stand up for your beliefs. It’s too bad others on your job didn’t quit or strike in protest along with you.”

“People love their jobs too much. That recession was so bad that people on my job looked at me as if I was crazy for quitting. Everyone kept quiet about what was going on, they didn’t want to be next. It was like being in Germany in 1939 when all of that was happening at work. People knew what was happening, but looked the other way. Sad but true and you truly see who your friends are,” James says while chuckling.

Jaden laughs, “What happened to you after that?”

“A year later I mysteriously won the lottery and I thought money was the answer to all my problems. But it just created more problems. My wife divorced me and took the children after she saw easy money. My kids don’t even love me and turned into 90210 young teenagers. I started to drink more and women just wanted me for my money. I’m just tired of life, I need something else. I have every gadget someone could think of, but I feel as if I’m still missing something. I would have loved to travel to another galaxy with you. I would love to have seen the things you’ve seen,” James says.

“It’s not all what it is talked up to be. I’ve been through a lot and almost didn’t make it back here. It’s lonely being out there by yourself and your family is so far away. We need to bond with other humans....” Jaden says while continuing to talk to James.

Kim and Sabrina continue talking in the background.

“...You don’t know about www.lamedate.com?” Kim asks.

“Never heard of it,” Sabrina says.

“That is where women like us go and tell the stories about our bad and good dates with men. My bad dates with men over the years have gotten me on the ‘Best from Her’ section several times. The dates are rated by other men and women, and we connect with each other.”

“Men are on there also?” She asks in a curious tone

“Men can leave their bad date experiences as well. That is only fair, Sabrina.”

“You’re right, well I have to check out that website when I have an Internet connection again and leave it on Myfacebook page for all my friends to check out. I definitely have some date stories to post on that website. What was it again?”

“www.lamedate.com. Think of *lame* men and then the horrible *date*, that is how I remember it.”

“Thanks, excellent way to remember.”

“I’ve dated a few psycho NPD men over the years that I blogged about. Do you know how many NPD male patients I had to study to get my Ph.D.?” Kim asks.

“Narcissistic personality disorder?” Sabrina asks.

“Yes. Over 2000 men,” Kim replies.

“Oh God, that must have been torture.”

“While dating, it’s hard to tell at the beginning, but once I see the signs I’m out of there,” Kim says.

“I have a 150 page blog on my social network on those types of men on different levels. Women from all over witness this disorder in men they were dealing with. Ninety percent of these men are in denial. This is a big subject these days in relationships. Many women enable this behavior, so it’s part of the problem. I have a joke for you. How many narcissists does it take to change a light bulb?” Sabrina asks.

“I know this answer. None at all, he hires menials to do it, that type of work is beneath him.”

“No, just one, but he has to wait for the whole world to revolve around him,” Sabrina says while they both chuckle. “Your answer was good too.”

They continue to talk, while Jaden and James continue to talk to each other.

“As I was saying Jaden, relationships between men and women have changed over the years. Divorce rate is sixty percent first marriage, eighty percent second marriage, and ninety percent in the third marriage. It becomes much easier to get divorced after the first marriage. This is a cycle that men and women need to break out of. Today’s marriage is like a gamble. Some complications around marriages are couples get married early, married for the wrong reasons and young men who aren’t really ready to settle down with one person. There are three main reasons for breakups and divorces these days. The first is two people growing away from each other and falling out of love. The second reason is money and financial issues. Cheating is the third reason. Men want different females and sex is everywhere. These married women pack on pounds when they pass thirty years old or have children. Older women aren’t as attractive as they were when they were younger. Some men, but not all, usually want smaller and younger women according to society’s standards. Society tells men what looks good and what doesn’t. These wandering men are caught cheating, then get divorced and half their salary goes to child support and alimony. It is cheaper for a man to be faithful, work things out and be loyal in a relationship. Cheating is an expensive disease, it is like cancer. This is the ridiculous cycle of relationships. Marriages don’t last like our grandparents’ marriages. Virtual sex is now considered cheating. Smarter young men are getting vasectomies, being

on male birth control, and aren't getting married and buying woman replacements..."

"Wow James, society has really changed. I can't believe the things you are telling me."

"A friend of mine named Terry was smart, he got a vasectomy in his early twenties and put his sperm in a sperm bank. He saw that the divorce rate was on the rise and looked at marriages as if it was the stock market. He worked hard, made money in the 00's, dated a few women here and there over the years but nothing serious. Two years ago, he paid \$25,000 to a fertility hospital and they found a female to have his child for him. The paid female of his choice gave up rights at birth and he hired a full-time nanny to help raise the child."

"Why would he do this? That doesn't sound too smart, to be a single parent," Jaden says.

"That was a genius move. He makes over \$500,000 a year now with his business. If he had a child with a female the regular way, she would have been getting over \$8000 a month in child support from him. She would have had the custody of the child to raise anyway she wants. His nanny only costs \$800 a month. I see that as a good investment. He is about to purchase a legal guardian R.F.E.C. to replace the nanny for a fraction of the total cost of alimony and child support for a year," James says excitedly.

"Wow. This stuff is mind-boggling. What about the mother and child connection?" Jaden asks.

"There are plenty of species that leave their children to fend for themselves and don't even need their mother. Average parents with money have their kids raised by nannies and turn out fine. I see it as him raising the child better than a lower income single mother that isn't getting child support and working two jobs. I'm sure the child can get used to seeing his father everyday, even if it is only for a few hours. This guy Terry has a full *Virtual Third Life* connection in his home with all the money he has been saving. This guy is so happy with his subservient robotic females acting like housewives. That is another problem with women these days, they are too independent and marriages worked better in earlier time periods. He saw the future of relationships early and took evasive actions when everyone was just trying to get married and raise a family the gambling way. I have older friends married three times on average. I call it a gambling cycle of ignorance."

"Okay, you are making me depressed now. I still have faith in relationships the old way. I don't think robots can replace a real woman. Look at my new girlfriend across from us, chatting away. I learned so much about her in such a short time and I know she is the one for me. Maybe if more couples could learn everything about the other person like

myself and Kim have, maybe relationships would last longer and the wrong people wouldn't get married," Jaden says.

"Maybe, but the odds are against you. These robotic women look very much like a real female and are much safer because you will have full control. Synthetic warm saliva is the newest option in this new R.F.E.C. I have to tell you, technology is getting closer to perfection in the modeling of the perfect female. You also can't catch a STD from an R.F.E.C..." James is interrupted by Jaden.

"That is not true. I found out an airline flight attendant caught herpes from an R.M.E.C. she bought online," Jaden says.

"Wow, that must suck, what are the odds?"

The helicopter approaches the landing area at J.F.K. Airport.

"Changing the subject here, so James you want to beam onto the mother ship with us?"

"Are you serious? You and a few soldiers are going to be beamed onto the mother ship along with other people in Taiwan?" James asks.

"Yes, we believe the Taipei 101 building will be used again, along with the Burj Dubai building and Murjan Tower," Jaden replies.

"How do you know you won't be detected once you are onboard?"

"I don't think they will know. There are too many people going up for them to pick us out. From what my alien friends told me, as long as the nanomole is around the brain and in positive stage, there isn't anything to worry about," Jaden says.

"That is very dangerous."

"This is the best plan for now. If the mother ship isn't destroyed in four hours, the nanomoles' cycle will be complete and humans will lose their minds and bodies forever. The soldiers are going to carry small plastic explosives. But I need to go because I need answers to what is happening to me."

"Good luck man. I'll be more than happy to be underground here on Earth. If you don't stop the mother ship, I'll have some DHW females in my house. Maybe the Darclonian bioparasites will let me marry a few mindless human women and I'll be the last polygamist," James says while laughing. Jaden laughs with him.

"Well, maybe that will work out for you James. You'll be the last male on Earth with your own mind."

They land at the airport in south Queens. There are military officers standing outside surrounding the helicopter.

Jaden gets out first and helps the others. Soldiers escort them to a flight hanger not too far away. There are two futuristic, white hybrid scramjets being fueled.

“Are you sure you don’t want to come with us to Taiwan? It’s a forty-five minute ride, you can stay with the military downstairs,” Jaden says to James.

“No I’m fine. I’ll be okay waiting in Washington for you when you get back.”

“Okay.”

They walk over to the hanger. Soldiers come out and President Stefanie Paylin is behind them.

“Jaden Marino I presume?” She asks while extending her hand.

“Hello President Paylin. It is nice to see you are alive and well,” Jaden says while shaking her hand.

“Thank you Jaden. So you are the handsome young man who has traveled further than any other human being?”

“Yes I am. I’ve boldly gone where humans can only dream of. It was an experience. How did you get to New York City faster than us? We took a fifteen minute helicopter ride from Manhattan?” Jaden asks.

“I’ve boldly traveled faster than most humans travel. Air Force 1 is a scramjet, a ten minute ride from Washington to New York City.”

“Cool. I like your new hat. It makes you look protected,” Jaden snaps.

“Yes, thank you. I’m glad you like it, the order for my size finally came in the mail.”

The President greets Kim behind Jaden.

“Dr. Kim Chan, it is nice to meet you also,” she shakes her hand and continues, “Your work really helped to isolate the nanomoles in our brains. That research has helped this mission your boyfriend is about to go on. I apologize for you being put in a maximum security prison,” Paylin says.

Kimberly sends Jaden a telepathic message, ‘I’m sorry for trying to see what was under your business skirt earlier.’

Jaden has a smile on his face.

“It’s okay, I got my meditation done for the week in there,” Kimberly says to the President.

She shakes Sabrina and James’ hands. She turns back to Jaden.

“I’m so sorry you had to go through what you went through the last few days. Things shouldn’t have ever turned out the way they did. I owe you and my country owes you a sincere amount of gratitude. Other countries around the world should have been properly warned so there could have been a better defense. But hopefully the plan we came up with will work. Seventy-five percent of our citizens in the eastern states are in this zombie state. Eighty percent of our communication satellites are down. They are using our satellites for something. Best of luck to you and your new team. I hope your mission is successful and Godspeed to

you. The human race's survival is in your hands," President Paylin says while shaking his hand and turning around.

"Ms. President, aren't you forgetting something?" Jaden asks.

"What is that?"

"Your nanomole."

"Thanks Mr. Marino. I forgot we talked about that earlier."

"How is Peters doing?"

"He will be okay. He needed some medical assistance, but the suits we were wearing really saved us. We had an intense fight with those rangerbots."

Kim and Sabrina board a scramjet on the right. Jaden deactivates the nanomole in the President on the scramjet on the left. Five minutes later, he shakes James' hand.

"Good luck my friend," James says.

"Thanks. I'll be back soon. Are you going to be okay with the military at the Pentagon?" Jaden asks.

"I'll be fine. I'll chill underground until all of this blows over," James says.

"See ya buddy," Jaden says while walking down the stairs and over to the other scramjet.

Jaden jogs over and boards the scramjet heading to Taiwan. He walks to the sitting area.

"Hey buddy! How are you?" A familiar voice says aloud.

Jaden looks to where the voice came from and sees it is Marshal Fredrick Lopez sitting strapped in a seat. He walks over to him and shakes his hand.

"You're coming with us?" Jaden asks.

"Damn right. I used to be special forces, I volunteered for this mission. I wanna get those alien bastards. I warned General Peters and helped rescue the President off Air Force 1 in Alaska. I've been promoted to Master Sergeant Lopez. Are you ready to take down this mother ship?" Lopez asks.

"Yes I am. Cool glasses I see everyone is wearing. Congratulations on your promotion, I'm glad you are here with us. It is so nice to see a familiar face," Jaden says while patting him on the back.

Kim and Sabrina are across the aisle sitting together chatting. There are two soldiers sitting next to Lopez. Space Troopers Dan and Karen are sitting there in uniforms looking at Jaden as if they are seeing a ghost.

"This is all the soldiers we are going up with?" Jaden asks.

"There is another specially trained officer in Taiwan going up with us. These guys have top-secret training for planned future space missions," Lopez says.

"That's cool. I guess five people should be good enough," Jaden says while sitting down and strapping in.

Jaden looks across into Kim's eyes as the scramjet moves towards the runway.

'I love you, my sexy superhero,' Kim says telepathically.

'I love you too, my sexy buttercup.'

'The idea of you saving the world is making my kitty cat cry soft.. white.. wet... tears...'

'Save those thoughts for later. I'll have a meaty tissue for that crying,' he says.

'AI says to stop it and to behave. He said he can't take any more reproductive talk,' Kim says.

Jaden feels as if something is watching and listening to him. He dispatches one of the remaining two nanoscanners. A suspicious nanoscanner suddenly disappears. Jaden knows that was Bellona's nanoscanner that was watching and listening to him.

The aircraft quickly take off and everything shakes around them. The other scramjets turn south, the one Jaden is in turns north. The scramjet quickly climbs in altitude and breaks the sound barrier. The aircraft shakes abruptly and there is a loud sonic boom heard above the clouds.

"How fast do these scramjets go?" Jaden asks Lopez.

"I don't know what the top speed is, but I would guess around Mach 10. This one is a prototype since it hovers also," Lopez says.

"Attention passengers, brace for a couple of G-forces. Please use your oxygen masks above you," the pilot says.

The scramjet quickly accelerates up to Mach 3 and it sounds like explosions are going off underneath them. The turbulence is strong as the scramjet climbs to 32,381 feet and explosions continue to go off. Sabrina and Kim put the oxygen masks over their mouths and noses. Everyone else does the same. They reach Mach 8 and continue to climb in altitude. Lopez asks Jaden to deactivate Dan and Karen's nanomoles. Jaden's nanodrones suggest they can now deactivate the nanomoles within a three-foot radius from him.

"Dan and Karen, close your eyes and relax. Take off your helmets now," Jaden says.

"Are you sure?" Dan asks.

"I really don't want to turn into a zombie," Karen says in a muffled voice.

Jaden can see the signals passing down from space in fifteen-second intervals.

"Don't worry, you are in good hands. He knows what he is doing," Lopez says.

"Trust me, you'll be fine. You will be just like the rest of us soon, unaffected by the mind controlling alien zombie beam. Take them off..... now."

They remove their special helmets and quickly go unconscious. The nanodrones begin remoting into their brains. The scramjet is flying over northern Canada at 8901 mph. The outside of the aircraft is heating up and glowing. Air is sucking into the jet and compressed with hydrogen fuel for combustion. Kim closes her eyes and relaxes. Sabrina pulls the mask down to her mouth and closes her nose with her hand and blows air pressure through her ears. Jaden closes his eyes and enjoys the views from outside the jet. They feel periods of weightlessness on their bodies. The scramjet's heading is 345° north on autopilot.

Thirty minutes pass by and they are flying at a high speed over northern Russia. The sun is shining brightly on the hypersonic scramjet. Dan and Karen regain consciousness.

The sun is becoming blocked by something. Sabrina looks out the window and sees something the size of the moon moving in front of the sun.

"What is happening dad?" Sabrina asks.

"I don't know," Jaden says.

Kim responds, "AI says the Darclonians are creating a virtual image of the moon to block the sunlight from reaching Earth, think of it as an alien projector."

"We have to act quick. This is getting much worse," Jaden says while they all look out the small windows speechless.

TAIWAN, TAIPEI +12 HOURS 10:35 AM TUESDAY

Lopez discusses the plan for beaming onboard the mother ship. They are fifteen minutes away from landing.

"When we land, Jaden will go in the first group of positive nanomole HBH being beamed onto the mother ship. These baseball hats have the isolated nanomoles in the positive stage inside the material. The nanomole is surrounded by artificial brain tissue. This is to fool the infrared scanning light. Once onboard, one person will locate the quark shield cloaking generator. This should be at the rear of the mother ship. Another one or two people will locate the energy core area near the middle of the ship. From what Jaden told us earlier, the shield generator needs to be taken out first. We can then remote detonate when we beam back to Earth. There are constant infrared beams coming back to Earth every ten minutes. The return is through a low flying cloud of light. Your body will float towards the ground from the beam at an undetermined location on Earth. We will just need to find these return beam locations on the mother ship."

"Why can't we take out the energy core area first and have the ship implode?" Dan asks.

“The quark shield cloaking generator has an internal defense system. It detects an explosion on the ship in milliseconds and shields the explosion area. That is why we need to take out the shield defense system first. The backup system blocks all communications inside the ship. We can remote detonate from Earth. Timers won’t work either, anything electrical counting down or timing can be detected,” Jaden says.

“Why can’t we fire a powerful missile from Earth when the shields go down?” Dan asks.

“First reason is the mother ship is too far from Earth and the missile will move too slow and will be too obvious to be effective. The second reason is the mother ship will still have a powerful active outside defense system. The defense system has powerful green matter lasers and quark torpedoes that can destroy anything coming towards it,” Jaden says.

“The infrared light doesn’t scan for weapons or explosive materials?” Karen asks.

“No, from what we know they are only scanning for nanomoles in the positive stage. What people have on them is irrelevant since everyone’s nanomole is controlling them,” Lopez replies.

“Where did Jaden get all this detailed information from?” Dan asks.

“His good alien friends.”

“Do you trust what he says? How do we know these good aliens aren’t working with the bad aliens? How do we know if we can even trust this half-alien man? He could be leading us into a trap,” Dan says.

Jaden, Kim, and Sabrina look at Dan with strange looks.

Lopez replies, “How do we know if we can trust him? This man has saved the President of the United States and thousands of people so far. He saved my life and an airliner full of people on Flight 104. He deactivated your nanomole and is now assisting with this mission to save Earth. If he couldn’t be trusted and was working with the Darclonians, the entire planet would be at their mercy now. Everyone on this planet would be walking around like those HBHs waiting for their body to be taken over. So, if anyone can be trusted, this man can. If you have a problem going on this mission, we can find someone else to take your place. Do you have a problem with this mission, Space Trooper Dan?”

“No sir.”

“Thank you.”

“I want to add something, Master Sergeant Lopez. My alien friends risked a lot to come to this planet to try to help us. I would have never known the structure and the process on how to secretly board a Darclonian mother ship to destroy it. So, our neighbors in the Andromeda Galaxy deserve a lot of appreciation for helping us today. My girlfriend Dr. Chan also deserves credit for finding the nanomole protein in our brains and for convincing me to stay to help this planet.”

"Thanks, Jaden for your comment. Here are the baseball hats that have the nanomoles in the material already," Lopez says while taking the adjustable hats from a nearby bag.

"Yankee hats?" Dan asks. "Do you have a Boston Red Sox hat or another team?"

"Alright! My team!" Jaden yells while putting on the hat that adjusts automatically.

"No we don't. Do you think aliens care which is your favorite team?" Lopez asks.

"No, but I feel like such a traitor wearing this hat."

"Dude, grow up. Are you helping to save Sesame Street or helping save the world?" Karen asks while the momentum of the scramjet stops and she continues, "We have an important mission ahead of us."

"You tell him, GI Jane," Jaden says.

Dan mumbles to himself while putting on the hat. The scramjet begins to descend straight down. Lopez's radio makes a beeping sound and he presses a button on it.

"Here Jaden, you can communicate with us through this Redtooth earpiece. We have jawbone two-way radios that communicate on the same frequencies."

"Thanks Lopez. Did it hurt when they put that jawbone device into your jawbone?" Jaden asks.

"Nope, it was just like getting a root canal."

"I wouldn't know. I'm sure it can't be worse than being shot over fifteen times," Jaden says.

"I guess not," Lopez looks at him curiously.

"Remember team, my code name is JM," Jaden says.

"Just in case voice communication doesn't work or if we can't talk to each other for any reason, use the brain text glasses. They use a low encoded frequency that travels along the ground or walls in any direction. The words are read from your mind and are translated through the glasses to anyone wearing the glasses as a text message," Lopez says while giving Jaden a pair.

A man with a Chinese accent talks over the radio, "The infrared beams just begun and the first group of people are walking towards the upload area. There are three areas on the roof these citizens are standing nearby. Please hurry to the elevators and up the stairs."

They stare out the window looking at the huge building with red lights. There is little light coming from the sky. The ground looks like a huge shadow from an eclipse. The scramjet lands horizontal to the ground next to the huge 102-story Taipei 101 building.

"Where did you find this Dan guy?" Jaden whispers to Lopez.

“Communications were limited and there were a limited number of people with special training available,” Lopez replies.

They unstrap their double shoulder seat belts and exit the scramjet. Jaden and Lopez exit last together.

“How well does that nanotubing clothing you are wearing protect you?” Jaden asks.

“So far nothing on Earth could penetrate it.”

“That is good, now you can test it against our new alien visitors,” Jaden says while chuckling.

Lopez chuckles and they continue walking together. There are Asian soldiers standing around the area with guns and shiny helmets on.

“I’ll catch up with you Lopez,” Jaden says as he looks at the dark sky and walk over to Kimberly and Sabrina.

[*I am Legend Soundtrack, Epilogue track 14 begins to play in Jaden’s mind.*](#)

“Come on, we have to hurry!” Karen yells while running towards the building.

Kim walks up to Jaden and Sabrina stands behind her. The eclipse is in the background near them. Kim embraces Jaden and whispers into his ear.

“I’m worried baby, this is kinda dangerous. You don’t know what awaits you on the mother ship. Let the troopers and Lopez go handle this,” Kim says.

The first group of people lifts up into the air on top of the building.

“I have to make sure the mission is successful. The space troopers are going to need my help. The Darclonians might be more advanced than we expected. I have to find out what is going on with me and what I am turning into. I also have to find out what they are doing with human bodies and why they are attacking us. I also wonder why my memories are being forgotten. I need to know why I keep turning into a dark energy knight.”

“We are holding the elevator,” Lopez tells Jaden through his earpiece.

“Go ahead, I’ll meet you at the top,” Jaden says in his earpiece.

“Okay baby. Just be very careful. Make sure you return in one piece to me. You promise?” She asks.

“Yes baby. I promise I’ll be back to you. I love you with all my heart,” Jaden says while looking deep in her eyes.

“I love you too, you are my hero sweetie,” she says while kissing him on the lips.

“That is so cute, the love birds,” Sabrina says.

Jaden walks over to Sabrina and hugs her.

“Dad, if you see my mom up there, please bring her back to me.”

“I will, little Sabrina. I’ll be back for you, okay?”

“Yes. Please be careful. I have a bad feeling about this,” she says.

“Oh no. I see you have my bad feelings trait. Now you are getting me nervous,” Jaden responds.

“Hurry dad, before you miss your flight into space.”

He hugs Sabrina and Kim at the same time. “I’ll see you two soon, let me go.”

The tempo increases of the song playing in Jaden’s head. He steps back from them and smiles. He blows a kiss at Kim. He looks up into the sky and sees the green infrared tractor beams coming from space. The beams are still invisible to the human eye. There is a flash of light and the beam disappears along with the first group on the observation deck. Kim and Sabrina’s hair begins to float into the air.

“Hold on dad!” Sabrina yells.

She runs up to Jaden with tears running down her face. She hugs him again and whispers, “I love you too dad. Come back in one piece and be safe.”

Jaden is caught off guard and replies, “I love you too Sabrina. That is shocking coming from you.”

“I know it is, but I wanted to let you know that from the bottom of my heart,” Sabrina says.

Sabrina runs back over to Kimberly and holds her hand. The military officers stare and look at Jaden from a distance. They wonder what he is about to do and why he keeps looking into the air. Jaden kneels down and yells, “Up, up, and away!”

He leaps into the zero gravity pathway above him. The army soldiers turn their heads towards Jaden leaping into the air towards the dark sun. Kim and Sabrina look up at him. Jaden looks down to see them getting smaller and smaller.

‘I love you baby,’ Kim says.

Jaden reaches 1260 feet and increases the magnetic nanodrones in his back. His body quickly propels towards the building’s observation deck floor. His shield energy comes on around him as he crashes through a glass window and through a wall. Jaden slams into the 730 ton round steel mass damper that is being held in place by steel cables and hydraulic cylinders. The damper sits in the middle of the building on the eighty-seventh floor and keeps the building stable in the event of an earthquake or typhoon. The huge steel damper attracts Jaden’s magnetic energy and moves when his back connects with it.

“Ouch. That was too much magnetic force,” Jaden says while the nanodrones pass through the steel damper and back into his body.

“Where are you Jaden?” Lopez asks him through his earpiece.

Jaden demagnetizes from the huge building balancer and lands on the floor. He takes some deep breaths and responds, "I'm on the eighty-seventh floor." He says while he leaps into the air and breaks through the glass ceiling. "...and now I'm on the observation deck."

Jaden runs down to where seven people are standing and looking into the sky. The nanodrones in his body hide inside of cells around his body. He takes the special hat from his pocket and places it on his head. Jaden quickly stands in line with the people.

"We are in the elevator...." the signal goes out as Jaden's body lifts up in the infrared light area with the HBHs.

Jaden sees green light all around him. His body is four feet from the ground. He communicates with the nanodrones to save his memory of the plan somewhere encoded. He doesn't want to compromise the mission by the Darclonians being able to read his mind. He knows something on that ship was in his mind.

It is quiet, lonely and eerie around Jaden. His mind triggers some soft relaxing music. [Black Hawk Down Soundtrack, Leave no Man behind track 13 begins to play.](#) He feels the energy scanning around his brain and accessing the nanomole in the baseball hat. His body feels trapped in the tractor beam. Images of bright lights and going to heaven pass through his mind. Now he senses his entire body's molecules being scanned. The green energy is analyzing every atom in his body. Jaden can't move his head or body. He feels as if he is trapped in a pipe or tunnel. The pathway into space continues straight through the clouds. Jaden feels the molecules in his body breaking down. He and the others disappear in a blurry green flash of light.

Meanwhile, Lopez and his team just pass the eightieth floor in the elevator.

"Remember team, when we beam onboard the mother ship, make sure you act normal like everyone else until I give the okay to begin setting these bombs strapped around our bodies. These prototype C-5 plastic bombs blend into any background they sit on. They allow light to pass right through them," Lopez says while the elevator opens on the observation deck. Two Asian soldiers, Ping and Wong, are walking along Lopez and the space troopers. Ping and Wong are specially trained sergeant majors wearing the cool see through glasses.

They walk up the stairs to the observation deck. The five stand in the upload area with five other citizens. They stand and wait for the alien beam to come from the sky. Lopez, Dan and Karen are in front of Ping and Wong. A few minutes go by and they stand in the same spot. A strong wind blows on top of the building. Ping's small head doesn't hold

the baseball hat fully on his head. It falls to the ground and he quickly reaches down to pick it up. Wong turns and looks at him. Everyone's body suddenly can't move and begins to lift into the air. He can't move and he can't reach the upside down baseball hat sitting five feet away from his hand on the ground. A brown beam shines on Ping's body only. Ping's skin disappears, then blood, tissues and muscle down to his skeleton and his bones then disappear. Wong looks in disbelief as the brown beam disappears. Ping's hat rolls away into the wind. Wong throws up and the liquid suspends in midair around his face. Everyone's bodies disappear and the wind continues to blow the hat across the roof.

The American pilot, Captain Greg Palmer wakes up from Kim disabling his nanomole. The scramjet is refueling. A group of DHWs are walking towards them from a distance. Hundreds of soldiers fire their guns at the group. Kim and Sabrina are escorted into the building by two soldiers.

The pilot yells to Kim, "Hey Kim!"

Kim runs back over to the pilot at the scramjet.

"Thanks for disabling that nanomole thing in my brain."

"You're welcome."

"Take this Redtooth two-way earpiece. Call me and let me know if you need anything," he says in a flirtatious voice, while smiling and holding her hand longer.

"Okay thanks," she says while quickly taking her hand back.

She runs back towards Sabrina and the escorts. Kim talks to the soldiers in Chinese and they jog into the building. They wait for the elevator and are led into a small cafeteria area on the thirty-ninth floor in the Taipei 101 building.

A small Darclonian return cloud of light appears from thin air. It goes into a fifty-first floor window, breaking it and then comes back out. The cloud then disappears into thin air as glass races towards the ground.

"Do you believe the pilot was flirting with me?" Kim asks Sabrina.

"I'm not surprised, he is a man."

DARCLONIAN MOTHER SHIP 238,867 MILES FROM EARTH

10:45 AM

Jaden squints his eyes as he sees nothing but bright lights in the sky. He looks down and he is walking on a white cloud. The area resembles heaven and people are walking behind each other down a long walkway. On the sides of the walkway is a deep pit of fire. He knows this can't be real and it reminds him of when he was a prisoner on Planet 455 in the Virtualatrix . He dispatches a nanoscanner from his body. The vision instantly changes. He sees fogs of black smoke. On the other side of the

lava pits are portal openings. He continues to walk on the cloudy pathway with everyone else.

Lopez, Dan, Karen and Wong's bodies appear in a flash of light on a cloud along with the five other HBHs. They look around in amazement at what looks like heaven to them. Wong's vomit lands in different directions on the smoky, cloudy ground.

"Ping is dead. He dropped his hat and the brown beam killed him," he whispers nervously.

"Shit, shit, shit! I'm sorry to hear that. Is everyone else okay?" Lopez asks.

They all respond yes. Lopez walks behind the last HBH walking in a straight line. The rest of the team goes in line behind Lopez. They walk towards bright rays of light coming from above. Wong continues to cough and throw up on the soft clouds.

'Walk towards the light. Do not fight it. Your bodies have been taken over by angels. Your souls are being guided by angels.'

"Do you hear that?" Dan asks.

"Yes, we all did. I think that is what these HBHs hear as well," Lopez says.

"Where's Wong?" Karen asks.

"Wong, get it together. Walk behind Karen," Lopez says while turning his head to look back.

Wong quickly runs up behind Karen.

"Where is this place? Are we on the mother ship or on another planet," Karen asks.

"I don't know. This place looks like we died and went to heaven," he continues, "JM, come in JM." There is no response.

"He isn't answering. There isn't any other direction to walk in. Just follow the people for now."

Jaden is in another area of the ship. He also continues walking behind the hijacked brain humans. He has his Redtooth earpiece off and in his pocket. The brain text glasses are over his hat so he doesn't see the messages. Jaden isn't aware of the mission at hand or if anyone is with him. The nanodrones have Jaden's saved memories about the mission and the last ninety minutes stored away and encoded. The nanodrones begin communicating directly with the soldiers via brain text. Jaden isn't aware of what is going on. He uses a nanoscanner to look around the ship. The second nanoscanner is being used by the nanodrones to help Lopez's team navigate through the Virtualatrix mazes. Jaden knows that the Darclonians were in his brain earlier and doesn't want to compromise the mission.

Text messages flood the team's brain text glasses. The nanodrones send messages as Jaden.

“I’m on the other side of the ship walking towards the artificial sun rays. We are all in a Virtualatrix on the Darclonian mother ship. The Virtualatrix is on the frequency of human brain waves, what you see around you isn’t real. They are trying to trick the HBHs into not fighting. The Darclonians want them to give up their bodies and to think they don’t need them in heaven. The fire pits on the sides of the cloud pathways aren’t real. I can see you from here through my nanoscanner eyes,” the nanodrones transmit through the text glasses.

“Damn, that kid is fast with the brain texts. I’ve never seen anyone text that fast,” Lopez says through the earpiece.

“He is telling us this entire place is fake and those aren’t lava fire pits?!” Dan yells and questions.

“Keep your voice down, no one is supposed to be talking,” Lopez says.

“I’m not walking over that lava pit or off this pathway. I can feel the heat from here.”

The text messages continue to their screens, “I will guide two of you to the shield cloaking generator area. The other two go to the dark warp engines and power generating areas.”

“Wong and myself will team up as Team 1, Dan and Karen, Team 2, will take the engine and power core area. We will take the other. I need you to trust JM on this one,” Lopez says.

“Team 1 I need you to make a right and walk over the pit. Team 2 to your left over the pit,” the nanodrones text.

Both teams continue to look down. The hot lava pit is freaking them out and causing them to panic. They are second-guessing if Jaden knows what he is talking about. They can feel the heat coming from the hot pits in front of them.

“The deep pit of fire and lava is not really there, it is an illusion. Walk out of the cloud pathway right away, do not just stand there,” the nanodrones text.

Karen looks over the side, “I don’t know about this Master Sergeant, that drop looks very real sir, I can even feel the hot air coming up.”

Wong closes his eyes and prays to himself.

“Coward Americans,” Wong walks forward over the pit and stands in the air on solid ground. “Let’s go. Didn’t you Americans learn anything from the end of *Indiana Jones 3*? Where is your faith?” Wongs asks in text while continuing to walk across it.

“I learned plenty from lava pits in *Indiana Jones 2*,” Dan snaps.

“Come on Americans, I bet if there was some oil over here, you’ll find your way across,” Wong snaps.

The rest of the teams take steps forward over the illusionary pits of fire and Dan takes his step last. The nanodrones guide each of them on which direction to walk. They each walk into portals of light on opposite sides. The nanoscanner quickly moves around to guide each team into the direction they need to go. The nanodrones send messages to each team by number.

Jaden continues to walk around the ship. He knows someone or something is watching him. He sees thousands of HBHs and DHWs all around the mother ship. Jaden notices the Darclonians are using human bodies around the ship for different tasks. He doesn't detect any Darclonians in their own life forms. His nanoscanner is checking around the entire ship. He sees about 200 people standing in a room the size of an auditorium with their heads up. Small beams of ultraviolet light are shining from their heads into a glowing grey sphere twenty feet in the air. The nanoscanner goes between each beam of light. Jaden sees images from the nanomoles being uploaded into the sphere. He sees movie images from different angles of battles in Roman times and hundreds of thousands dying. There is another great ancient Greece battle in 472 B.C. with hundreds of different angles. The human feelings also transmit to the sphere. There is an eerie silence in the room.

The nanoscanner changes to another beam and it transmits images of thousands of Africans being killed in massive genocides in Rwanda twenty years ago. The movie shows a raped African female running over piles of dead bodies all over a dimly lit street. Her clothes are ripped and she has blood coming from her mouth. Jaden can feel her pain and he can hear her elevated heart beating as she takes very deep breaths. Blood is all over her clothes and Jaden can feel pain around his groin area. He feels liquids running down her legs. She turns around and she can hear soldiers coming around a corner with guns in their hand, arming them and laughing. She drops down and lies with the rest of the dead bodies and plays dead. Jaden can actually smell dead bodies and rotten flesh from the young female's nose. Jaden is so into it he feels as if he is hiding for his life. The experience feels as if he is actually there experiencing this.

The images quickly change to another time period and it transmits images of a pyramid being created by three unknown alien species around 10,000 B.C. The orange carbon-based aliens float above the ground without legs. The aliens look half lion and half human. Tens of thousands of dark-skinned hominids and *Homo sapiens* are helping. They are seen praising the aliens as gods from the sky. The alien races are seen using sunrises at night to measure angles to Orion's Belt. Hundreds of heavy blocks of stone are seen floating in the air and guided into place with rays of light.

‘What the hell?’ Jaden asks himself.

Jaden is puzzled by what he is seeing and wants some answers. He continues to walk along the cloudy pathway. The nanoscanner moves into another room.

An unknown voice starts to talk to Jaden, ‘What do you seek? Are you here to join us? Why are you here? Are you here alone?’

He ignores the voices and continues to look around through the nanoscanner investigating. Jaden sees several small rooms made of puffy clouds of male and female HBHs having sex with each other.

‘This looks like a fake porno movie. She is obviously faking it,’ he says to himself.

Beams of ultraviolet light are analyzing the brain waves and emotions. Other rooms show two men having sex with each other and two women having sex with each other.

“This is some creepy, creepy shit,” he says out loud.

The nanoscanner accidentally crosses the light of the two men having sex. Jaden suddenly feels a sharp pain in his ass. He grabs his ass and jumps up and down in one place.

“Owwweeee, shit... that hurt....what was that? My ass muscles feels stretched. Man, I could never be gay. Who can endure that much pain?” He asks as the nanoscanner quickly moves out of that pathway. “Shit, I felt what they were feeling.”

Jaden responds while chuckling like Beavis and Butt-head, ‘Uhhh, uhhh, I’m a *Homo sapien*.’

Jaden sees a female about to climax with a man and the nanoscanner goes into that pathway. Jaden collapses onto the soft clouds and has an instant orgasm.

“Oh, yeah....Oh yeah,” he says out loud.

His body is shaking all over and his legs are trembling along with the female in the cloudy room.

‘Okay, I soaked my pants. But wow, that was good. That’s how women’s orgasms feel? Man, I’ve been missing out all these years, that was intense. I’m so confused, I feel as if I was cheating on Kim and I was a transsexual. The consequences of anonymous sex. Was that considered cheating? Was I a man or a woman? This is very weird. Okay, enough of eavesdropping on sex signals. I’m going to need a psychologist after all of this.’

‘Do you like what you saw and felt Jaden? Are you enjoying your tour?’ A female voice asks.

Another large room shows groups having sex with whips, chains, spankings, handcuffs and light particles resembling dildos of different sizes.

‘Let’s stay clear of this room and those dangerous light signals,’ Jaden says while carefully avoiding them. ‘I don’t want to have any clue to what any of those beams feel like. Okay, I’ve seen enough.’

The nanoscanner moves to another level and Jaden sees thirty HBHs standing at the bottom of a huge body of water resembling an aquarium. They are breathing underwater with small openings on the outside of their chest area opening up like gills.

‘Are they turning us into aquamen?’ He asks.

The nanoscanner suddenly detects huge amounts of dark energy in a room. Jaden sees hundreds of dead mutilated HBH bodies all over the large room. The room reminds him of the room he was in on Planet 455. The next room over shows experiments being done on human bodies and cloned babies float inside clear bubbles of energy. Another room shows six pairs of DHWs on different sides of the large room. Two are engulfed in flames and walking around normally. One DHW in the middle of the room is firing hundreds of assault rifle bullets towards two DHWs. The bullets bounce off their slimy skin. Two eight foot tall DHWs are fighting dozens of DHWs approaching them. The smaller DHWs are being thrown against the wall and their bodies are being broken in half. Jaden realizes the DHWs are morphing into something like super soldiers. He can’t believe how tall and big the DHWs have become.

On three sides of the mother ship, he sees dozens of DHWs lining up on cloud portals.

He sees two men running together through one of the portals. One of the men looks familiar to him. He recognizes his friend Air Marshal Lopez with an Asian man. They are being chased by DHWs firing lasers from their arms. The low gravity room allows the Asian man to jump into the air while pulling out a gun. His body floats in the air while he fires three thermobaric bullets. Two lasers hit his nanotube clothing, but don’t penetrate it. But he feels a burning sensation on his skin. The three DHWs’ bodies explode. Lopez fires from a crouching position hitting two other DHWs. Jaden sees on his eye screen that the nanodrones are telling him those two men need his help. Jaden goes off the cloudy pathway and walks over the fire lava pits. He goes into a portal doorway and is being guided by his nanoscanner. The DHWs’ body parts glow on the ground and begin forming back together.

Jaden runs into the room with the 200 HBHs looking up towards the sphere. He sees a portal at the top of the room he needs to go through. He quickly runs and jumps over the bodies while crossing the ultraviolet beams. He feels like he is drowning while he sees many images of navy servicemen drowning at Pearl Harbor. His mind feels as if it slowed down in time. Jaden feels like he is choking to death as he sees images in Nazi death camps as massive amounts of people are killed. Mothers holding their children while breathing their last breath into their small

bodies. Screams can be heard echoing around the large gas chamber. A tear falls from Jaden's eyes as his body continues to fly towards the portal of light. Jaden then sees the visions from German guards piling up lifeless bodies for mass cremations. Some guards are enjoying their job making jokes and some cry inside.

Jaden lands in the portal and continues running. Karen and Dan are walking in formation with DHWs as they walk towards the portal cloud back to Earth. The open area looks like a huge football field. The Virtualatrix continues to send visions of clouds as if everyone is in heaven. The nanoscanner vision sees dark walls, humid air and wet, sticky floors. Karen and Dan turn around and see Lopez and Wong appear from a portal in the same area. As they run over the fake fire pits, several DHWs fire behind them. The DHWs on the line turn around and begin to fire lasers at Lopez and Wong. Team 2 pulls out their guns while departing the line and runs over the pits of fire to assist. Team 2 fires their guns hitting several targets as they run past DHWs still walking on the line. Bodies are exploding. Team 1 protects their faces with their arms while slowly running towards Team 2 in the middle. Their skintight nanotube clothes are taking on hundreds of laser shots. Wong and Lopez's bodies are feeling burns all over their bodies. They collapse in traumatic burning pain. Two Mexican DHWs grab Dan and Karen from behind.

"Drop your weapons," they say in deep voices while pointing lasers at their faces.

Two Buckingham Palace guards wearing red outfits and huge hats tell Team 1, "Drop your weapons and stand up."

The teams drop their guns. The Buckingham Palace guards have swords by their sides.

"Now these Buckingham Palace guards can talk? They never talked on Earth, but they can talk on a spaceship?" Dan asks through a brain text.

"Keep the text waves clear Dan," Lopez says.

The DHWs tightly grab each of them from behind. The rest of the DHWs on the line continue walking towards the cloud portal.

Jaden reaches the outside of the area where Teams 1 and 2 have their hands up. A huge glowing energy shield appears around the entire area and his nanoscanner signal is interrupted. Jaden can't walk through the solid force. He can't see what is on the other side of it. His nanoscanner can't penetrate it. The other nanoscanner the nanodrones were controlling is stuck on the other side and is unable to transmit any signals through.

'Jaden do not intervene. We are handling the situation,' a female voice tells him.

‘Shut up, don’t tell me what to do. I’m going to handle the situation,’ Jaden says to the voice.

His nanoscanner determines the rpm of the energy shield is 1 million. Jaden knows he has to help the people inside. But he remembers the dangers of his brain calculating at that high-speed rpm and the possible risk of having another seizure.

Inside the area where the teams are, sand-colored dust comes from the walls and falls onto the cloudy ground. The teams look up towards this amazing display. The dust forms together and two twelve foot tall sand-colored robots form. Green electricity moves up and down the flexible metallic bodies. The bodies form with four arms and three legs. The legs are seven feet long and have silver spikes coming from them. The upper body has an odd narrow structure like a headless tripod. A flat black, thin circular disc, four feet in diameter, appears midair over the robots. A 3D alien face protrudes from the disc and a female voice begins to speak.

“How did you get onto this ship? Who are you? What are you doing here?”

There is no response from the teams. They all have astonished looks on their faces as if they are seeing a ghost. They talk to each other by brain texts.

“What are we going to do sir?” Team 2 asks.

“Stay cool, we are probably going to have to make a run for it,” Lopez’s words scroll across their glasses.

“What about those creepy giant robots?” Karen asks.

“Maybe we can take these two guards’ swords near us?”

“What are those stainless steel swords going to do against lasers?”

Jaden concentrates on the rpm of his shield and it reaches 503,000. The energy continues to increase around him. He looks straight through his shield and at the faster moving shield in front of him. Sweat drips from over his eyes.

The alien female continues talking, “Your technology has improved greatly, you have materials around your bodies with advanced microscopic bonding technology. I’m impressed with how fast you humans have advanced in the past 200 years. I’m not impressed with how barbaric you are to each other. But it is very entertaining for our species. I’m still waiting for some answers to what you are doing here.”

There is silence. The nanoscanner left in the area analyzes the cloud portal controls.

“Answer me, or I will retrieve the answers from your brains myself.”

“Why are you attacking our planet Earth and taking away our species? We did nothing to warrant this attack,” Lopez says aloud.

“You humans have been doing experiments on alien ships and other alien life-forms for the past seventy-five years. Your military loves to do experiments, we love doing experiments. I will find the answer I’m looking for,” the echoing voice says.

Ultraviolet beams shine on each of their heads from the ceiling. The beams check the nanomoles in the hats and instantly know they don’t match the human host. The beam manually scans the brain’s chemical signals in each of them. They try to fight it and their bodies begin to shake.

Jaden reaches 806,000 rpm and sweat is running down his face. His body trembles and his hands shake. A look of determination is in his eyes. Anger and pain is the expression on his face as he grunts.

The teams continue to fight the UV brain scanning. Their heads tremble as they experience a lot of pain.

“Your primitive organic brains and their random chemical signals are beginning to annoy me,” the female voice says.

“Don’t give in!” Lopez sends to his teams glasses.

“I sense that Wong’s emotions of the loss of his friend are making his brain weak. Tell me more Wong....tell me what I want to know...” the evil female voice says.

“Wong, fight it. Don’t give in,” the messages scrolls across his glasses while his hat glows.

“You and Master Sergeant Fredrick Lopez planted an explosive device near our shield generator?” The voice asks.

“Override the timer,” Karen messages to Lopez.

The grip the DHW has around Karen’s arms loosens up some.

“I tried a few times already, there isn’t any signal getting out of this area,” Lopez replies.

“The hell with this!” Karen yells.

She quickly swings her head backwards hitting the DHW in the face. She swings her elbow hitting it in the neck. A red laser passes between her hair and the DHW begins to fall backwards. Karen reaches towards the ground and grabs both thermobaric guns. The others try to move, but they can’t. She fires them both at the robots while running towards the side. The bullets explode outside the robots’ bodies. The robots stand there unfazed. The other bullets pass through the floating face. The robot on the left fires a green matter laser from its top right arm at Karen, just missing her as she leaps into the air over the hot lava pits firing. The robot on the right fires a similar beam and it hits her in the left leg. She begins to scream in pain as she lands on the ground. The beam creates a hole through her leg and the green matter begins to spread from the wound. It quickly spreads around her body consuming her. She continues

to scream as her body dissolves into nothing. The three of them look in disbelief as Karen fades away into green energy.

“Anyone else wishes to be a hero?” The echoing voice asks. “The bomb you set in the shield generating area has been destroyed. What else are you humans hiding?”

“You didn’t have to kill her!” Lopez yells.

Dan, Wong and Lopez continue to struggle from the superhuman grips the DHWs have around them.

“What is this I see Dan. I’m seeing images of you walking around my ship and....”

[God of War soundtrack, Zeus' Wrath Divine track 22 begins to play in Jaden's mind.](#)

Jaden’s eyes turn black and dark energy begins to move around his arms. His shield lights up like fireworks around him, his body shakes. He yells and groans as his shield rpm reaches 1,101,000. He feels pain in different areas of his brain. A blood vessel breaks in his brain and nanodrones quickly seal it.

‘Stay out of this affair. Jaden do not intervene,’ the evil voice tells him.

‘You...shouldn’t...have...intervened on our planet,’ Jaden says in a struggling voice.

Jaden runs forward and his shield follows him. His shield lights up with static blue flashes when it crosses into the ship’s energy shield area. His shield overpowers the ship’s internal shield and he enters the area where the teams are. He makes it through and he is thirty feet above the area in the air. His shield around him disappears. He sees what is happening below him in milliseconds. The teams look up as Jaden makes a loud explosive entrance. He concentrates on the dark energy moving from his right arm and moves it around to his left arm. He fires a gravity shock wave towards the two robots. The dark energy returns to his right arm. He concentrates on the two Buckingham Palace guards’ swords by their side. The swords levitate into the air while quickly spinning like helicopter blades. Everything happens in seconds.

“Duck your heads, now!” Jaden yells through the Redtooth earpiece that he just put in his ear.

They quickly duck their heads down at the same time while the swords decapitate the DHWs’ heads. Blood squirts in all directions and on them. The swords quickly float into Jaden’s hands and the dark energy slowly moves around the sword. The robot loses their balance and the gravity shock wave slams them into the ground. The entire area shakes and rumbles as the decapitated heads roll on the puffy white clouds. Jaden’s body spins around midair and he lands on the ceiling. The dark energy continues spreading around the edges of the swords.

Jaden's nervous system makes him shake all over. The robots quickly get back up.

"Run! Run towards the cloud portal. Run together!" Jaden yells at them while they stare at him standing on the ceiling. They quickly turn around and run towards the cloud portal area on the far side. More DHWs come from the walls and fire lasers at them. Jaden creates a shield around them as they run over the fake fire pits. The cloud portal closes. The last few DHWs in line turn around towards the three remaining military personnel quickly running towards them. Two green matter lasers are shot towards Jaden. The dark energy around the sword absorbs the exotic energy as Jaden bends on his knees. The outsides of the swords turn green and then dark again. Jaden takes a strong stance as the force from the green laser pushes him backwards on the ceiling.

"You fools, there is no escape!" The female alien says.

The beams discontinue and Jaden runs on the ceiling towards the robot on the right. The robot on the left runs after the three remaining military men. The thumping can be felt on the ground. The remaining robot continues to fire the green matter laser towards Jaden. The sword in Jaden's left hand absorbs the laser in front of his face while his right hand is swinging over his head. He leaps and flips right side up from the ceiling as the tempo of the music in his mind reaches a high point.

He lands on the robot while cutting it down the middle. Metal shavings come from the robot and it falls over in two pieces.

"I learned that one from Voltron!" Jaden yells.

The other robot is shooting at the remaining teams from a distance. The beams penetrate the shield and hit the cloudy ground just missing them. Jaden's shield behind them is heavily weakened. Jaden quickly runs after the robot on the left. The nanoscanner by the portal overrides the controls. Jaden catches the robot in a line of dark matter and it lifts into the air. The feet continue running and quickly move towards Jaden and he cuts it into two pieces.

"Take that you futuristic headless Gort wanna be!" Jaden yells while continuing to run.

The dark face sitting midair floats down to the ground and turns into a dark shadow of an alien being. It fires a transparent bubble that contains electricity particles into the ground behind Jaden and another towards the portal area. There are two huge explosions and fire moves in all directions. The shield around them disappears. Jaden's body goes airborne, he does several flips and lands on his feet. Dan, Lopez and Wong leap towards the now glowing cloud portal as fire races towards their feet. The area suddenly explodes into a fireball. Fire is burning all around the area. The nanoscanner that was overriding the cloud portal controls is destroyed.

‘My son, that was very impressive, you controlled both of your alien powers very well. You’ve come a long way in such a short time,’ the shadow alien says telepathically in a female voice, while Jaden lands on his feet with the fire burning around him. The dark energy returns around his body and he turns back into the D.E.K..

‘I’m not your son. I want some answers to what is going on, or I’ll implode this ship,’ Jaden says while standing up. He points his arms outward while his swords continue to face towards the floor.



He stands there as a warrior ready for a battle. The fire slowly goes into his body and the alien shadow walks towards Jaden.

‘Let’s talk Jaden Marino,’ she says.

The entire area changes around them and the fire disappears. They instantly move into another part of the ship. The shadow alien has its shadows on the ground in four directions. It has two legs, two arms, red eyes, two wings and a head. She has a shape like a dark energy knight, but resembles more of a female body shape. She is tall and skinny and is wearing a gown, with reflective dark energy slowly moving around the body.

‘I figured this shape that resembles a human will be more of your liking,’ she says while Jaden continues to look around.

The shadow alien takes a few steps back from Jaden. Jaden looks around the windowless and see through floor area. He doesn’t see any walls, ceiling or floors and he feels as if he is standing in space. He doesn’t even see the rest of the mother ship around him. Stars and space can be seen in a 360° view. Behind Jaden there are two huge floating statues of an alien species that look similar to the *Predator* and *Alien* movies. Jaden looks down and he can see the Earth from a distance, slowly rotating on its axis. He calms down and the dark energy disappears from around his body. The dark energy around Jaden’s body disperses, but it is on standby in molecules above his head. His clothes are destroyed and he stands there naked, awaiting answers. The dark energy is still around his hands and traveling around the swords.

The sunlight reflects away from the ship. Jaden’s nose suddenly catches the nice scent of a female’s perfume as it tickles his nostrils. A cold chill rushes up and down his body. The darkness in space makes the area feel cold and lonely. Suddenly it becomes bright. Shadowy and ghostly images of him surrounded by beautiful naked women appear in front of him. Jaden sees a naked image of himself in a bed with female actors he had crushes on when he was younger. The virtual images of the females and himself are very vivid in color and appear in 3D. He sees the females are kissing him all over his body and feeding him fruit. Jaden’s body feels what the virtual lustful image of him is experiencing. Jaden feels warm all over, but he ignores the images and feelings, and focuses on the shadow alien. He continues to hold on tight to the swords with the dark energy still dancing around them.

‘I see that you like what you see all around you. You had several wet dreams similar to this over the past ten years of your human mind, yes? This is how your subconscious imagined how your orgy dream would be right?’ She asks.

Jaden continues to stare with a straight face through the illusions of lust around him. He takes a few steps forward with his bare feet on the cold floor. He doesn't respond to the alien voice and he ignores the beautiful perfume smells of the gorgeous females all around him. He stops walking and stares at the shadow alien.

'You remain very focused on your purpose of finding the answers you seek. You want logical explanations to everything you have witnessed. I sense many questions in your small organic brain. I'll answer all that I sense, young warrior. Why did we attack Earth? We didn't attack Earth, we are just occupying your planet and occupying human bodies. You're primitive human race is heading towards extinction and needs a new direction. You need to be led, just like other alien races. It is a basic need just like carbon-based life needs water and food. Your human race needs one leader. Your species is used to following the next person in a collective, they already proved they couldn't lead themselves. You humans are a waste of a good planet and resources. We can make better use of your bodies.'

The wet dream images change to 2D and drops back about twelve feet around Jaden. New 3D color images of thousands of humans kneeling to the Pope and other religious figures appear around him. The images then quickly change to humans around the world worshipping different idols.

'We were originally an advanced alien robotic race. Our race went as far as our technology could go, but we were missing something. Over time, we found that carbon-based life forms were more interesting. We love your culture, entertainment, memories, love, feelings, lifestyles, and pleasure experiences. Each bioparasite that enters a human body will experience everything that humans experience for many generations. Meaning, the nanomole will let the bioparasite feel, smell, retouch, relive, and experience the past 500,000 years of nanomole-recorded information. We love knowing what it feels like being a carbon-based species again. There are so many different entertaining human emotions. Our three favorites categories are: 1. Anger, rage, hate and to kill others weaker is a priceless feeling; 2. Pain, suffering, disgust, sadness, hunger and the fear of pleading for your life when you are about to die; 3. Lust, love, making love, physical arousal and pleasure. These emotional categories cannot be properly duplicated in a non-organic life form. We want to feel what you humans feel in all aspects. Love and hate is a universal concept, I can teach you how to control your emotions and experience the best of both worlds. You can be the strongest leader, warrior and god in history. You have what it takes and you can be the

most powerful weapon in the galaxy. Bioparasites are Darclonians in organic form, but I know you already knew that answer.'

Jaden is speechless and horrified in what this alien is saying. He stays focused on the questions he is asking in his mind. Images of the solar system show up and then images of humans suffering all around the world. Jaden looks at everything he sees around him with astonishment. The dark energy disappears from his hands and sword. He drops the swords and there is a loud clanking sound. He begins to take deep breaths and focuses on the disturbing images in front of him.

'The distance your planet is from the sun is near perfect. Your solar system is perfectly aligned with the right number of planets to protect Earth from catastrophic destruction from flying projectiles. Seventy percent of Earth-like planets in your galaxy aren't so lucky. Earth evolved into a planet that can support so many billions of different life forms. This is rare amongst most planets in this galaxy. This makes Earth a very special find and a commodity. However, you humans are destroying yourselves along with the animal species on your planet. We have seen similar situations on many other planets with intelligent life. We will solve all your problems by ending world hunger, pollution, racism, diseases, genocides, violence, war and self-destruction. We have the technology to stop the global warming affecting your atmosphere.'

'I sense a contradiction. You enjoy watching these things, but you also want to stop it?' He asks.

'Doing the actual act and watching for entertainment purposes are two different things. We look at it as if we were watching an entertaining movie,' she says.

The 3D video images around Jaden changes to people dying from plagues, being blown up and children going hungry around the world. Another cold chill runs up and down his body. He quickly turns his head in different directions to see every image around him. The images also show missiles flying in the air and a nuclear bomb going off. The light from the images reflect off Jaden's wide-open eyes. He can smell burning flesh and dead bodies. He covers his nose and focuses on the dark shadow.

'These visual images bother you. Your emotional feelings are expressing concern...'

Jaden interrupts her and asks, 'How do you know what is best for us and our planet?'

'I know deep down Jaden you would like all these problems solved. Growing up you wished those problems were solved and wanted world peace. Your planet needs one ruler and someone who can make a change. For the past 15,000 years, most humans have been followers, there are

very few leaders. If one leader can persuade an audience about something and that leader is convincing enough, that audience will follow that leader off the planet. You don't need to be part of the followers and follow a false belief. You need to be a leader and have everyone following you.'

The animation shows human images of Jesus, the Pope and other religious figures over the centuries. People are worshipping and praying to statues and religious figures. Humans bowing and praying to the kings, princes and dictators.

Jaden says, 'Maybe the humans following each other over the years have kept us somewhat happy and hopeful over the years.'

'Humans want to have a sense of belonging to something. If they see an opportunity for themselves to be part of something, they will hop onboard. This is why there are so many religions, politicians, rulers and successful dictators over the centuries. Jaden, you can be that next ruler or messiah and make things how you see fit. The human souls can share the bodies with the bioparasites and they will be protected from harm. Their shared bodies will be able to live over 500 years. Our older Darclonians bioparasites and the younger bioparasites who bartered the most from our planets, will go into the rich and upper middle class humans. The bioparasites will experience what it feels like to be rich and experience all the nice things in their new lifestyle. The nanomoles will let each bioparasite relive thousands of years in our three favorite emotional categories. You are correct Jaden, relive it just as if they were watching a movie. But mankind will need one powerful warrior ruler to control everyone, just like the kings in your past history,' she says.

Jaden looks down at Earth and responds, 'What if that is not what we want? Why do you have to make these choices for us? We are independent and should be allowed to make our own decisions....'

The female voice interrupts Jaden, 'The reason why your human species can't make their own choices is because the following has plagued your society for the past 100,000 years: lust, gluttony, greed, anger, heresy, violence, fraud, slavery, treachery, sloth and envy. These words tell us that someone else needs to make changes and choices for you,' she pauses and then continues, 'Within the next 700 years, your planet will be uninhabitable and millions of species will die. Your oceans will flood the land and cosmic radiation will slip through your atmosphere. Your life expectancy will be reduced to thirty in the next 400 years. You are exterminating yourselves anyway. Man-made chlorofluorocarbons, chemicals used as spray-can propellants, carbon

dioxide and industrial solvents are quickly destroying a well designed planet.'

She continues a few seconds later, 'Your government's plan to turn Mars into another Earth will not solve the problems, it will only eventually spread them and destroy another useful planet. Yes, your government has plans to change Mars into another Earth. How you ask? Goojle search "terraforming" when you get back on Earth. I've also read nanomoles of several government officials. They plan to send thousands of autonomous robots to Mars in the next forty years. The robots will build small greenhouses and grow plants inside of them. They will also release trapped oxygen particles in the ground and release trapped ice below the surface, slowly increasing the oxygen level 0.5% a year. This is how they plan to turn Mars into another Earth. We can do this in a fraction of the time and colonize both planets. So your species can have a secure place to live.'

The video images show Mars' surface growing plants and forming an atmosphere. Jaden's mouth and eyes are wide open as he sees the animated images of Mars slowly forming an atmosphere.

She continues, 'As I was saying, a drastic change and a new direction are needed. You can be the king of planet Earth. You will have unlimited powers and can do as you please. You can have sex with any and as many humans as you want. You can have as much money, power, love and lust as you want. You can control their minds. You can take over other planets and kill those who get in your way. This is what your species is good at, taking over the weak and conquering, yes? This is what we have learned in your histories.'

Jaden responds, 'Controlling other humans' minds is nothing more than modern day slavery. We already learned from our mistakes of enslaving another race. What you are doing today is nothing more than enslaving the minds of a species. This isn't helping us, but destroying us...' Jaden is cut off by what is appearing around him.

The 2D images in the background of an imaginary Jaden in the middle of several naked women moves closer towards Jaden and switches to 3D. He can see himself lying on a huge white bed with red roses on it and being satisfied by multiple women. There are attractive Asian, Black, Russian and Hispanic women completely naked around him. The ghostly colorful 3D female illusions around him look very enticing. Jaden continues to physically feel what his imaginary body is experiencing. There are echoing moans and screams of pleasure. The women are smiling and whispering seductive things in his ears. The voices echo together around him and send chills around his body.

"I want you Jaden. I want to feel you in me. Do you like this? Do you like how I feel?" They ask at the same time.

‘Humans don’t like using condoms right? You don’t like using condoms right? How does feeling two moist females’ reproductive organs naturally at the same time sound?’ She asks.

The imaginary Jaden has two women riding him while he lies on his back. One female is over the penis between his legs and the other female is over the new penis that just grew from his stomach. Jaden wipes his eyes and opens them to the fullest, he can’t believe what he is seeing. Double the pleasure signals are being sent to Jaden’s mind. Jaden moans in a deep breath and collapses to the floor. He tries hard to resist the pleasure signals coming from his lust body, but they are overwhelming. The moist double entries are overstimulating his brain. He kneels to the floor and looks upwards towards the dark shadow. Jaden fights his growing erection. Two of the lusty shadow females walk over to Jaden on his knees. They touch the back of Jaden’s human body as he bends on his knees towards the floor.

‘Don’t fight it, this is what every man wish he could experience. Imagine experiencing this everyday for the rest of your life? You can impregnate as many women as you want and never have to worry about catching a STD. Create your own army in less than four months and your children will have all your knowledge,’ she says.

“Stop this!” Jaden yells grabbing between his legs.

Jaden swings in an attempt to knock them away from him, but there isn’t any effect. The simulation is overwhelming his pituitary gland and prostate.

‘I can’t stop what all humans love for centuries. You love this ultimate experience don’t you. The sensual touches and tongues all around your body is amazing, isn’t it? Any male human would kill for this experience. It feels very real doesn’t it? You are getting the pleasure from your imaginary self and from your human body, simultaneously. The lust shadows are like the real thing. Every man’s dream is to be in an orgy like this. They can all be your wives and polygamy can be legal. You can feel orgasms like you never imagined. Don’t fight the sexual temptation and pleasures.’

‘Stop doing this to me. I don’t want sex right now!’ Jaden pleads.

“Yes, you do want sex right now, climaxing is good,” the lusty voice sounding identical to Jaden says.

Suddenly the imaginary Jaden stands up and talks to Jaden directly with an extra penis erect over his stomach. The women follow him and continue pleasuring him. Jaden is still on his knees covering himself and looks astonished at the other Jaden talking to him less than a foot away.

“Double the pleasure, double the fun. You know this is what we always wanted. You feel the pleasures, we will be in heaven everyday.

We can have a different female every night. We can do whatever we want,” he says.

“No! That isn’t what I want!” Jaden yells while turning away and looking down at Earth.

‘Come on, have an orgasm, it will release some stress,’ she says at what appears to be a smile under the red eyes.

Jaden struggles to fight the arousing feelings and resists being turned on by the continuous soft, moist hands and tongues all around his body. He struggles to overpower the near orgasm tingling coming around his body. Small, soft lips shower his nipples and neck areas. Goose bumps form around him, but he struggles to fight the temptation as the smell of sex floods his nose. He thinks about Kim on Earth and the love he has for her. He feels the sperm excitingly leaving his testicles and traveling through his sperm ducts. The strong emotional bond he has for Kim stops the high-speed sperm in their tracks. Jaden groans and spit comes from his mouth and onto the floor in front of him. The spit is quickly absorbed into the see-through floor.

His imaginary self looks at him as weak and a punk, “It’s fine if you don’t want to get off. I’ll just keep forwarding you the pleasures I’m feeling. I’m sure you can’t hold out much longer,” it says while lying back down on a soft white bed. The women quickly jump on him. Each female has a certain area of his body, one female is licking each nipple, another his neck on both sides, kissing his mouth and ears, licking under his arms and massaging his prostate remotely. Two females are riding his stomach and groin area while they kiss each other.

‘Don’t think about just one female. Your girlfriend Kimberly can’t do what all these women can do for you. Ninety percent of men on Earth would cheat on their spouse if they could get away with it. You can get away with it and you aren’t even physical with anyone. She would never know you had a virtual orgy. Feel the ultimate in human pleasure,’ the female alien says.

He groans louder and louder as he fights off the ultimate in sexual feelings. His images of Kim keep him focus and he becomes enraged.

“Enough!!!” Jaden yells at the top of his voice.

His energy shield forms around him and the lustful shadows disappear from around him. He reverses his ejaculation and his penis goes back down. He stands on his feet and the shield disappears.

‘Nice try the snake from Adam and Eve’s garden of Eden. I’m not for sale for your lust orgies. I only love one person and she is the only one I want to have sexual feelings for. I know you want my sperm for something, which is why you were trying so hard. I might be a little naïve, but I’m not stupid. I have self-control and I’m one hundred

percent faithful to the person I love. I don't care what ninety percent of men would try to get away with on Earth. Maybe you need to research what true love is from your nanomole experiments. I'll give up all that exotic pleasure and double penises to be with the one person for me. My heart is for one person and nothing can replace that.'

The shadow female stands there speechless. Jaden walks forward and looks directly into the eyes of the dark shadow alien before him. Jaden continues talking, 'If we want to destroy our planet, so be it. We are still primitive and in the middle of a learning curve. We are allowed to make mistakes, that is what humans do best. The mistakes we made in our history are over and done with. We do learn from our past. Us humans should be able to make our decisions and which path we take for the next thousand years. We are individuals and we can decide what is best for us. We can learn to change our ways, but being forced to shouldn't be up to your species to decide. That should be something God decides,' Jaden says.

The frustrated female alien responds in a raised tone and it echoes all around Jaden.

'God decides? Do you think your God is going to save you? God is something your primitive species made up the past 12,000 years. Your B.C. species made the sun their god. Here are images of *Homo sapiens* and hominids praying to the sun everyday for light for their crops and food to grow. At the time, these humans didn't have the science or technology to understand things the way you do now. I've read all your bibles and your original bible—*The Egyptian Book of the Dead*. The original Hebrew bible, Egyptian book, Old Testament and New Testament were nothing more than an astrotheological literary hybrid. I also studied your history through nanomoles....'

Jaden interrupts, 'A what?'

Jaden sees images of Egyptians in 3000 B.C. praying to a falcon bird while the sun is in the middle of the sky. The images change to Egyptians worshipping hieroglyphs of Horus and images of humans studying the sky at night all around the planet from 5000 B.C. to present.

'An astrotheological literary hybrid is what your bibles started out as. It was nothing more than an astrology book with many references of stars in space. Those were the symbolic ages of zodiac spiritual symbols, hieroglyphs, afterlife and myths. The astrology books, precession of the equinoxes, movement of the ages and astrological ages all represent similar information about the stars. Every 2150 year period is one age.'

'I'm not understanding all of this. You're saying that the Bible is an astrology book. Aren't we in the Pisces age now?'

'Your brain is still so primitive just like a half ape human, you can't even keep up with simple terminologies. You have been so brainwashed

growing up your entire life that you can't even understand what I'm telling you. My point to you is your human species for the past 15,000 years revolved around mainly astrology. This is standard for most early primitive civilizations on many Earth-like planets around the universe. Early primitive brains eventually evolve and they wonder why they are here, what is their purpose, why does the sun come everyday, what do the stars mean at night. Without scientific knowledge, a species uses their imagination to come up with beliefs and then a religion is created. Exactly what happened to humans for the past 15,000 years. Eventually technology and higher intelligence overpowers religion. Your human brain is capable of higher intelligence now and it is time for you to evolve to the next level.'

Jaden sees images of another alien species in a very primitive life stage and millions are looking towards the sky at night and day. The aliens have long, skinny legs and odd-shaped upper bodies. They walk around like grasshoppers and have faces like orange cichlid fish.

'What planet is this happening on?' Jaden asks.

'This is an alien species called Mullutians, who are 47,098 light-years from here in the Crux Arm of your galaxy. This was over 21,000 years ago. As you can see, they are praying to a double star system and a sun god in their sky every day. They evolved just like humans from an animal. Their brains slowly evolved into larger brains. The images you see now are them evolving more and understanding the constellations of their stars. Here they are making up their beliefs of religions. Now they are choosing which sun god is more powerful as the two stars sometimes change colors. They split up with their beliefs and some choose the very bright double moons as their god or savior.'

Jaden sees the alien species fighting each other and killing each other for thousands of years. Some dictate their beliefs onto others. Most aliens kill others who don't believe their sun god is stronger than the other. He sees other aliens worshipping bright planets in the sky and creating a religion around that. He sees many dying from diseases and they blame the other god in the sky on their misfortunes. Time is quickly being sped up in the video.

'As you can see they are continuing to evolve as their technology became more advanced. They are evolving at a slow pace from a primitive religious belief state. They are learning to get along by not fighting and working together. Their technology proved that religion was outdated and not needed anymore. Now you can see they are a self-contained non-religious advanced technology species. They are traveling to other solar systems and communicating with other alien species. As you can see they are traveling in robotic bodies,' she says.

'That is very nice, another alien species evolved and are getting along. I don't see any images of you interfering with them. How do I

know if all of that is true, what you are showing me and telling me? What about humans? What about Catholics, Christians and Jesus?’ Jaden asks.

‘Ancient Egyptian religion and Christian religions are very similar. Every religion has their savior: Horus of the Egyptians, Jesus of Christians, Dionysus/Bacchus of Greeks, Attis of Phrygia, Krishna of India, and Mithra of Persia. All born on December twenty-fifth from virgin mothers. Human women weren’t capable of becoming pregnant without having sex back then and artificial insemination wasn’t available.’

‘Come on, I can’t believe all this. This is all bullshit, alien Darclonian lady with all the answers to the world. I never even heard of those names before. I believe what was written in the Bible.’

‘Open your mind. Stop thinking on a primitive level. Your Internet is the new bible for humans. If you want to be a leader, you have to understand all aspects of things. Primitive thinking people need something to worship and something to have faith in. These basic facts I just mentioned are available on your Internet to read. Some humans are ready to think on a higher level. You don’t think this information is on the Internet? Search your Internet for “zeitgeist.” ’

‘I will do that,’ Jaden says.

‘Jesus is the son of God. Humans were worshiping your sun all these years thinking it was a powerful being. Man eventually started to change older ideas thousands of years ago and only top religious leaders were able to read and translate the Bible into what they wanted people to follow. This is a clear example of controlling a population. Humans are used to being controlled. There was no mention of fossils or dinosaurs anywhere in the bibles. I’ve witnessed the nanomoles around 2 B.C. – 6 A.D., the only miracle was the new constellations of the Pisces Age beginning around 1 A.D. There was no miracle birth of any Jesus.’

‘Lies! Jesus was born 4 A.D. regardless of what you say, I have faith to keep me sane. The formation of this galaxy and universe could only be created by something as powerful as God. I know your species couldn’t make supernovas, galactic bulges and everything around us. I know there is a god out there watching over us,’ Jaden says.

‘Yes he is out there, he is in your imagination. I just want you to open your eyes and see things from another perspective. You can be the new leader and be your own god. You can be the new Jesus and 0 A.D. can start in two hours. You can be worshipped by billions of other species. You can create your own Bialien Universal King Marino Bible, full of facts and science that all species will follow...’

‘Are you seriously smoking something? Do you hear how crazy you sound?’ Jaden asks.

‘There is no mention of science, evolution or other planets in your bibles. A true book of a species is supposed to contain a combination of these things. Every carbon-based species evolves from something. If God did exist, there would be diagrams of entire galaxies in the Bible, coordinates to where heaven is and where hell is located. There would also be information of religions on other alien planets in your human bibles. One religion or faith would be the same in multiple solar systems and galaxies. A universal similarity in religions and bibles is something we have yet to see. There shouldn’t be hundreds of different bibles in your world and 270 major religions. One religion, one belief, one godly figure; this would prove that one universal god made rules for all alien species to follow. This has never been the case in my hundreds of thousands of years being around. Every religion is based around what the primitive species interprets. Do you really believe in a bible that was written around the time man thought the sun revolved around Earth and that the Earth was flat? These same people believed magma from the ground was punishment from hell. They also believed God lives on clouds and thunder and lightning comes down to the surface when he is angry. How can hell be in the ground? Nothing can survive more than a hundred miles below the ground. Nothing is down there. Hell was created to trick humans into being good, since they couldn’t self govern themselves.’

Jaden takes a deep breath and responds, ‘I’m sure people during that time period used their imaginations and exaggerated more since they didn’t have answers to certain things. But that doesn’t mean everything was a lie. Our science evolved a lot over the past 400 years and we learned a lot since then. I know something is out there as a powerful godly being. Our primitive race needs religion in our lives. It keeps us good and gives us faith towards something. I’m sure faith is something you lost hundreds of thousands of years ago when you used to be more organic. Our Bible might be missing things, or inaccurate to a degree, but it keeps most of our species in line, keeps us good and gives us a reason to live. Reproducing gives us more reasons for living. I would rather stay a primitive thinking follower, than an evil dictating ruler. Maybe if your species had some religion, you wouldn’t be taking over human bodies and getting off on our emotions,’ Jaden says.

She raises her telepathic voice, ‘You have some audacity suggesting that! We have one belief system. Our thinking evolved into levels you would never comprehend. You can barely evolve to leave the pack of followers believing in religion this day. I’ve seen hundreds of events in your history for the past 12,000 years that religion and faith is useless to keep you good. I have two examples: during War World II, Germans killed millions of humans and your United States and other countries stood by. Most of your species don’t have any value on life. Many stood

by and followed the next person or played ignorant. Germans created the largest genocide in your history. They were trying to take over the world. Runner-up, Ida Amin Dada killed over 700,000 in a massive genocide in Rwanda. Why didn't religion or God intervene to help these people? Why wasn't more done?'

'I don't know, I wasn't there. Maybe Jesus and God were busy on another planet, saving a species from a bigger genocide at the time. Sometimes there are a few unstable, evil humans that are into massive killings and genocide. Maybe you Darclonians should have recruited Hitler and Dada to be on your team, instead of me. If there was oil in Germany and Africa back then, maybe more countries would have gotten involved and stopped all those senseless killings, especially the U.S.A.,' Jaden says.

'You want to know why so many died? Because there is no god. Everything happens just to happen. You happened Jaden and other multiverse Jaden just happened. God is a figment of your humans' imaginations. Even if He did exist He would have billions of other things to do than to watch over your primitive, genocidal human race.'

It is completely quiet around Jaden. He looks down at Earth through the see-through floor.

Jaden responds to something she just said, 'What did you mean by other multiverse Jaden happen?'

'Doesn't mean anything, just a universal calculations thing,' she quickly changes the subject, 'The Nazis remind me of an alien species called Railtorians. The Railtorians live in the Omega Centauri system, 23,000 light-years from here. They went from planet to planet killing weaker life forms that couldn't defend themselves. Other advanced life-forms didn't bother to intervene, until it was a threat to them, universal similarities.'

Jaden takes a deep breath.

She continues, 'Your species say they care about life, but you slaughter innocent animal life every day for food. Your human teeth are shaped to eat vegetables and fruit. Animals eat other animals as part of a natural food chain. You humans are nothing more than animals...'

'We humans are omnivores,' Jaden says while interrupting her.

She continues in a louder tone, 'You humans claim you evolved and aren't animals. Cattle, pigs, and fish are all life forms, but you kill and eat them every day. You break your own Bible's rules, thou shall not kill. Killing the weaker and conquering is what your species is good at. This can be your purpose to be the new messiah of the Aquarius age for your people, but your mind Jaden can't be on at the primitive thinking level. If you join us, I will allow half of your species' bodies not to be taken over.'

‘I heard enough on your alien philosophy and finding loopholes in our beliefs. What exactly are you looking for with all these different alien species you are manipulating and taking over?’ Jaden asks.

‘We are here to help your species and other species from obliterating themselves.’

‘Bullshit!’ Jaden yells telepathically.

‘Your species is self-destructing themselves. A social transformation is needed. The United States political system is backwards and stuck in capitalism and a monetary-based economy. Many other big countries follow the same pattern. The poor are getting poorer and the rich are getting richer. We analyzed hundreds of nanomoles from politicians, CEOs of banks and world leaders over the past few days. Lies, deception, greed, interests, control, debt, profits and corporatocracy are the main words in every part of these people’s brains. We would end this corrupt system and create the perfect new world system of everyone being treated as equals.’

‘I don’t know what this have to do with anything.’

‘The point of what I was saying is that we treat our Darclonian citizens as equals and don’t have a capitalistic society. Sharing a human body will keep humans’ minds in a forever paradise state of mind,’ she says.

‘Why would you care about our political or capitalist system?’ Jaden asks.

‘A species should be treated as equals or they should be replaced. We are not here to kill your species, we are here to assist giving them what they need.’

‘Well, okay. Changing the subject here, I have a question, why did your Darclonian species kidnap me on Planet 455 in the Andromeda Galaxy?’ Jaden asks.

‘We borrowed you to study your body, mind and chemistry...’

‘More like torture and experiment,’ Jaden suggests.

‘We are making human bodies stronger. There is so much the human body is capable of, you can concur with this.’

‘I’m already strong enough; the Andromedians already made me stronger and very evolved. The rest of humans need to be left just how they are. We don’t need to be in a paradise state of mind while you Darclonians do God knows what with us. What is joining the pyramid about?’

‘The Andromedians are an ignorant race who doesn’t see the bigger picture. They think they are the police of the galaxies, always trying to help a species and do what they think is right. Not everyone believes their thinking is correct. Just because their technology is very superior and advanced over many other species, doesn’t mean they will stay

superior for long. The pyramid is a D.E.K.'s weapon of mass destruction. You will learn about this in time.'

'The Andromedians are more of a civilized species than you will ever be. I'm sure I will learn more about the D.E.K. weapon soon. Speaking of pyramids, why were you looking at the Egyptian pyramids being built in the nanomole images?' Jaden asks.

'We wanted to know which alien species was here 12,000 years ago building these pyramids. We believe the direction the pyramids point means something. We believe they took some humans with them. There is a chance the nanomoles crossed species and are active in other solar systems.'

'What are you?' Jaden asks.

There is silence.

'Why don't you have a seat?' She asks.

'I'll stand.' He responds.

An invisible force is behind Jaden's legs and hits the joints behind his knees. He falls back and sits down on nothing. It feels solid and comfortable as if he is sitting on air.

'I'm sure that's better, since your species' legs are made more for running and sitting.'

'What am I sitting on?'

'We call it AGM, artificial gravity matter. It involves creating solid invisible matter in midair.'

'What am I? Why do I turn into a D.E.K.?' Jaden asks.

'You are the result of an experiment from over ten thousand years of research, the manipulation of dark energy, dark matter, exotic matter and other energies in a controlled stable environment. This technology was thought to be impossible to keep stable around a life force. However, anything mechanical or electrical malfunctions around the dark energy. It also slowly destroys organic tissue around the skin, this is why the skin needs to be constantly repaired around a D.E.K.. The dark energy knows to go around a metal object so it can be used as a weapon. A powerful hidden molecule in your brain controls the dark energy. Your species would define it as superstring twelve dimensions of matter or the god particle. It is hidden in your brain and encoded in with brain cells. You can't see it, similar to us not always being able to see your encoded nanoscanners.'

'Why was I chosen to be a D.E.K.?' Jaden asks.

'Who said you were a D.E.K.?'

'What am I then?' Jaden asks.

'You should know.'

'I don't know. I guess if I was a superhero, I would be called Black hole Man,' he chuckles, 'Are you the DEP?'

There is silence and thunder rumbles in the background.

‘Department of Environmental Protection?’ She asks.

Jaden responds, ‘Your attempt at humor is horrible. I meant dark energy prince or princess. Also, why do I hear thunder in the background?’

‘I’ve seen two million movies you humans created. During a scene like this, you humans love to hear nice sound effects.’

‘You didn’t answer my other question.’

‘You are the dark energy prince and I’m the dark energy queen,’ she says.

Thunder roars in the background and echoes around the area. Jaden feels the loud thunder throughout his body. Chills move up and down his back and body.

‘Yeah right, what are you people playing? Alien chess? Who is the king then?’ Jaden asks in a chuckling voice.

‘You will meet him in time.’

‘I’m not a dark energy prince or a dark energy knight. I’m a BiAlienSapien, this is the name I came up with for myself. I’m my own evolved person.’

‘Ha ha ha...’

The laughing continues while echoing around the room. The laughing turns into a deeper sounding man’s laugh.

‘I don’t see what is so funny. You sound like an evil transsexual,’ Jaden snaps.

‘You simple minded human. You didn’t come up with that name on your own. That word was placed in your mind by us. That’s how you came up with the name. BiAlienSapien is what all humans will eventually evolve into. You are the first one of its kind. I sense you are still confused. To the Andromedians you are a BiAlien, an alien of two worlds. To humans and us, you are a BiAlienSapien, an evolved *Homo sapien* that is three-quarters alien.’

Jaden interrupts, ‘I’ve heard enough of this bullshit. Humans are going to stay *Homo sapiens*. I’m also no dark energy prince, my father was never a king and I didn’t sign up for your little chess game with your Sith king...’

‘He is happy you are a part of us now,’ she responds.

Cold chills run all around Jaden’s body as his smile turns to a frown.

‘That is a lie! I didn’t join anything!’ Jaden says telepathically in a loud tone.

‘Then why are you here?’

‘I’m here for three things: For answers, to defend my planet and to stop you from implementing this silent attack on the human race.’

‘Stop us? In less than two hours, the bond between the nanomole, bioparasites and human hosts will be permanent. Your friends’ plan to

destroy this ship failed. I destroyed the bomb myself. Joining us will make the transition more pleasant and would be the most logical decision.'

Jaden stands and walks closer to the DEQ, with a frustrated look on his face.

'I will never join your evil, manipulating, mind controlling, savage, dark energy chess gang. I would rather die and implode your ship before I join you,' Jaden says.

'That is very brave of you. But at the same time it was very stupid. A primitive organic species like you humans all have a similar weakness in common, your emotions. Love is the greatest flaw in humans. We have other means of persuasion,' she says while taking a few steps back. Small dust pixels form together in a wave from two directions. There is a low wind howling sound. The images form high definition images.

Jaden sees vivid images of Amy pointing a gun with her right hand at Kim's head. Kim has blood coming from her mouth and a gash on her left eyebrow. The angle of the video is coming from behind Amy's left side. Jaden can see Kim with a painful look on her face. They are in the cafeteria in the Taipei 101 building. He sees Sabrina is unconscious on the floor behind Kim. A Coke machine refrigeration motor is quietly sounding in the background. A microbot is transmitting every sound in the large room, better than a professional microphone. Sounds and voices come from the 3D images.

Amy speaks out loud, "Hey Jaden baby! Look at my arm! They gave me a new arm. I have a black female's arm. I'm one-tenth black now, I'm catching up to you," Amy says in a high on drugs voice.

"What are you doing Amy? What did you do to your daughter?" Jaden asks aloud.

'She can't hear you. She can only hear what I tell her to do,' she says.

"I have your little Asian bitch in front of me, baby daddy. I can't wait to put a bullet in her. This is a baby mama's dream to do to the new girlfriend. I'm sure she will bleed sweet duck sauce that I would love to taste. Do as my Queen Mary wishes or both of them will get some hot lead in the head."

Jaden's hands begin to tremble and he has butterflies in his chest.

"What have you done to her? Why is she calling you Mary?" Jaden asks in a nervous voice.

'We didn't do much, she had a lot of evil and anger already in her. We removed some of her morals from the frontal lobe of her brain. She was ready to go and wanted her soul to be saved. Very easy to manipulate and to control. She thought she was in heaven and she saw God sitting in the middle. Jesus on the right hand side and I was on the left. She repented for all her sins. She saw my image as the Virgin Mary

and was willing to do anything we said. She wanted her own island and mindless male stripper. The same things you dreamed of as a younger teenager and what most humans want. A paradise world with endless pleasure. The weak are the easiest and the first to join the winning team,' DEQ says.

'That doesn't make any sense. Why would she repent and you allow her to sin more?' he says.

'Does that really matter? Catholics sin all the time and repent for their sins. She can repent again after she takes care of this business for me. She wants her own Garden of Eden. I can provide that. You can have your own galaxy of Eden if you join us.'

'More like the garden of sin.'

Kim's screaming comes from the video images in front of Jaden. Amy continues to talk, "...I never did like you Asian people with your can't see half open eyes. You know you people can't see at night, but you try and drive anyway!" Amy yells while clicking the gun with an angry face and continues, "But I bet your chinky eyes see this loaded gun in your face."

"Screw you, you mutated alien sellout bitch. Why don't you put down that gun, so I can kick your ass around this cafeteria!" Kim yells while spitting blood on the floor.

Amy slowly lowers the gun and thinks about fighting Kim one on one. The DEQ tells Amy, 'Do not engage Kim one on one, it never worked in the movies and it won't work now. Keep the gun to her head and follow my orders.'

Amy raises the gun again and smiles.

'Are you going to join us Jaden? We can beam your daughter and girlfriend up here or you can join them in a few minutes.'

A tear rolls down Jaden's face. He stares at Kim through the images and places his hand to touch the wound on her face.

Jaden gets very angry and his brain begins to quickly think of possible resolutions to this situation. He breathes very heavily and comes across an idea, but he's not sure if it will work. He decides to go for it anyway. Jaden commands all the shield-generating nanodrones to leave his body and to follow his last nanoscanner towards the cloud portal. The nanodrones warn him of the risk of not having any shield protection for his body and the risk of them being very weak not near his body. They also tell him something local needs to host and control the rpm speed and direction. He commands them anyway and they leave his body like a swarm of invisible bees. A nearby alien statue evaporates into quadrillions of microbots and goes after the trillions of nanodrones. The microbots are the size of nanodrones and quickly chase after them. The microbots fire millions of microscopic green lasers towards the

nanodrones, slowly destroying them. The nanodrones are defenseless against these molecules. They are only strong in number when they are rotating in harmony and being controlled.

The dark energy returns around his arms and the swords go back into his hands.

‘Where do you think your defenseless nanodrones are going? You can’t save everyone, not this time,’ she says.

‘You are sick and evil! If you harm one hair on her body I’ll, I’ll...’

‘You’ll what? What are you going to do? Implode my ship?’ She asks.

‘Yes, yes, that is exactly what I’ll do,’ he says nervously.

The dark energy forms around his entire body as a fire spreading.

‘You have learned to control your dark energy very well,’ the DEQ says.

‘Remove the gun from my girlfriend’s head. Now!’ He yells.

‘...but not well enough.’

She points her long arm towards Jaden’s direction. He struggles to hold on to the dark energy around his body. It briefly leaves his body and comes back. There is a struggle as he grunts and the energy slowly plays tug-of-war. The dark energy comes off completely around his body and stretches outwards into a dark blur. His body lifts three feet into the air and his arms stretch outward straight. He suddenly feels a solid, semi-visible force behind him, in the shape of a huge religious cross. The cross glows with some light particles inside of it. The dark energy sits three feet around his body and levitates. He drops the swords on the ground. Jaden grunts to bring the energy back towards his body and it slowly does. He can’t move as she holds a powerful line of matter at his body. He grunts and groans from the pain and continues to fight her. His skin melts away and has wounds all around his body. The powerful force is causing him to bleed through his pores. Blood is all over his face in the dimly lit area.

‘This is what your imaginary Jesus felt like stuck on a cross. You can die and sacrifice yourself for all humans if you choose. You can also have a front row seat while we kill everyone you care about one by one,’ she says.

The defenseless nanodrones are quickly dying as they try to outrun the powerful microbots. The nanoscanner is carrying as many nanodrones as it can. They travel through Virtualatrix rooms and through different portals. The ship’s energy shields form in different areas around the ship trying to block them off.

‘Did you think you could actually implode my ship or overpower me?’ She asks while chuckling. She continues, ‘You are nowhere as powerful as me.’

Jaden's body trembles as he tries to pull the energy back towards him. He wants to fight her with all his might. Images of Kim suffering give him more strength.

'I also still have access to the god particle in your brain,' she laughs while thunder is in the background.

'How does this feel?' She asks.

'It feels like I'm taking a shit on your face,' he groans.

His body feels as if it is being crushed by gravitational forces. Blood is dripping behind his body and his eyes are glowing red. He looks at the transparent 3D screen and sees Kim's face bleeding and squinting in pain. He sees her in inverted colors.

The nanoscanner and the much depleted nanodrones reach the cloud portal area. The nanoscanner changes form and overrides the cloud portal controls. The remaining nanodrones enter the cloud portal and disappear. The last nanoscanner is destroyed when it reveals itself and the cloud portal closes.

The gun is cocked at Kim's head. Her voice echoes towards Jaden, "Don't give in to what they want Jaden. Don't worry about me, worry about saving Earth. I love you."

"Shut up bitch!" Amy yells while smacking Kim in the mouth with her left hand.

'I think some incentive is needed,' the DEQ says.

Kim's face turns backwards from the blow and she puts her hand over her mouth.

Kim hears a gunshot and is hit in the upper right shoulder. She screams in pain as she falls backwards to the floor. The hot bullet penetrates and exits her body. Jaden jumps when he hears the gunshot echoing around him.

"No! Kim!" Jaden yells and sobs.

'She's been shot in the same place you were shot at the beginning of your great adventure. So you are familiar with the pain she is feeling now. What is it going to be Jaden my prince? The next bullet goes in her head.'

'I'll kill you!' Jaden yells while struggling on the virtual cross. A tear rolls down his face and he feels responsible for getting her caught up in this.

'Yes. Try to kill me,' The DEQ says.

Jaden looks the DEQ directly in her dark face and red eyes with so much anger. The dark energy is still floating a few feet around him. He is furious and his heart begins to beat very fast. He breathes heavily and his veins bulge up and down his arms. His muscles bulge all around his body. The rage takes over his mind. He moves his arms closer to his body as he grunts. He yells aloud in great pain and his mind is overloading.

‘Anger is good. Increase your hate and anger. Increase your strength. Take control of your destiny. Murder is good,’ the DEQ says in an evil voice.

The dark energy slowly comes back towards his body. His body floats to the ground and the dark energy rotates around him. The DEQ tries harder to fight Jaden. Jaden’s eyes turn a brighter red and small, dark flames slowly move down from Jaden’s head. The powerful energy forms an event horizon around his body. The images of Kim turn red and distort. The swords on the floor near him go towards his body and disintegrate into molecules. He continues to yell muffled with his hands up in the air.

Everything around Jaden begins to bend around him. The sounds of Kim crying on the video screen sound as if he is underwater. The gravity forces shift and he slowly walks towards the DEQ. The gravity is slowly pulling things towards Jaden. The DEQ’s eyes turn brighter red and she points her second arm and hand at Jaden to increase her strength. Jaden feels her energy overpowering him. He grunts and continues taking steps towards her in an attempt to tackle her, like he did with the D.E.K. on Earth. Her strength overpowers him and his event horizon slowly fades away. He takes a step towards her and the dark flames sizzle out. Jaden bends on his knees and continues to crawl towards her as he fights her powerful line of matter forces.

On Earth, Kim moans in pain and begins to cry. Ten percent of the shield-producing nanodrones made it through the cloud portal and to Earth. They are traveling together at high speed from the south side of Taiwan. The nanodrones in Kim’s body are sending out an emergency code beacon for the other nanodrones. They quickly make it to Kim’s wounded body. She is holding her wounded right shoulder while keeping pressure on it to slow the bleeding. The nanodrones need a high-speed calculating host to control the rpm and shield angles. They try to contact AI for help, but his communications with them is still offline.

“Get off the floor!” Amy yells

Kim groans and moans in pain.

“Get up! Don’t make me pimp slap you with my Ike Turner brown skin hand!” Amy yells.

The video images disappear from in front of Jaden. The dark energy slowly comes off his body inch by inch. Jaden can’t pull the dark energy back towards his body as he continues to grunt. His muscles are showing and the gravity forces pound on the front of his body. His other functioning nanodrones warn him about overloading his brain. The dark energy disappears into thin air as Jaden collapses to the floor. She lowers her hands and both of Jaden’s hands are on the see-through floor. He lays flat on his face and stomach. His skin is slowly repairing itself as his

eyes get watery and his skinless nose fills up with mucus. He stares at Earth through the floor and takes deep breaths.

Her shadow hands make a clapping sound, 'I'm impressed, my Bialiensapien. I've never seen such control of dark energy from a carbon-based being before. The emotions of love can make you stronger than ever thought possible. Very interesting concept, love can be a weakness and a powerful force.'

Kim's images appear over his body and he hears her crying in pain around him. He is helpless to help her and tears roll from his blue eyes and onto the clear floor his face is hugging. The liquid tears make shadowy Earth look bigger in certain spots from his eyes. His body shakes from the overstraining. He gazes down at Earth through the floor with a determined look on his face. Jaden feels and thinks the impossible. He feels as if he can control the shield generating nanodrones around Kim's body from where he is. Jaden's body suddenly lifts into the air, arms spread out and legs together. His body drags across the floor to about ten feet in front of the video image area. The DEQ put his body against the virtual cross again.

'You can see better from here,' the DEQ says.

Sabrina wakes up from the loud sound of the gunshot and slowly stands up. She looks around and rubs her head.

"Mommy, what are you doing?" She asks while standing up.

"I'm not your mommy anymore. You were a mistake born from my vagina out of wedlock. You robbed me of going to college and enjoying my twenties. I broke the rules of God and sinned the rest of my life. You are the demon child, along with this demon bitch and Jaden. When I'm finished here, I'm going after the priest who told me it was immoral to get an abortion. I met God, Mary and Jesus, we had a nice long talk. I know exactly what I'm doing," Amy says.

"Mom, you are insane. How could you say I wasn't wanted? You were never in heaven. This doesn't sound like you. What have they done to you?" Sabrina asks while tears roll down her cheeks.

"Shut up and sit down, you little mistake. Pull up your sinful mini skirt!" Amy yells.

"That isn't a nice thing to say to your daughter," Kim says while standing up holding her shoulder and looking Amy in the eyes.

Amy puts the gun in her left hand while continuing to point it. She swings and smacks Kim with her right hand. Kim's face turns sideways.

"That hand hurt more right? That was a pimp slap hand," Amy whispers.

Kim replies, "How would you know what a pimp slap felt like? That's all you got? Miss saved again, pimp slapping, psycho baby mama. Why don't you put down that gun and fight like a woman."

"I'm not falling for that one," Amy says while aiming the gun at her head again.

"I'll kick your ass with my wounded shoulder!" Kim yells.

"I see a vision of your boyfriend Jaden nailed to a cross in heaven. There are clouds all around him and he is begging God now for forgiveness. They are going to make an example out of him. I'm doing the Virgin Mary's bidding," Amy says.

"You are beyond mental. I don't think the best doctors on Earth can cure your diseased brain," Kim says.

'What is it going to be, Jaden my son. Are you going to join your new family or are you going to let your girlfriend and daughter die?' She asks.

'What do you want me to do?' Jaden says while moaning.

'You can start off by giving us some of your nanodrones in your body. Reprogram them for us. They can be very useful,' she says.

'I knew it was never about me. I knew you were after something else besides me. My nanodrones cannot be reprogrammed, they only work with my body's DNA. So you are wasting your time in that department. Let my family go, they have nothing to do with your experiment for Earth,' Jaden says while staring at the video.

'I will be the judge of that.'

Jaden still can't understand how he is able to control the nanodrones on Earth from the mother ship. When he looks at the 3D image, he feels them near Kim. The nanodrones in Jaden's body don't have an explanation for this impossible long distance control. Jaden knows he can't create a full shield around Kim's body with only ten percent of the required shield nanodrones. The shield generating nanodrones go around the tip of the gun. Jaden thinks to himself that he will only be able to stop one bullet with the amount of energy the nanodrones have left. He realizes there would be sixteen bullets left in the Glock. He thinks of other possible solutions as high-speed calculus calculations go through his mind. The Glock 9mm is pointed four feet from Kim's forehead. Sabrina walks in front of the gun.

"Don't kill her mom, don't do this!" Sabrina yells.

"Get out of the way, you robot lovin' whore!" Amy yells while smacking Sabrina with her left hand.

Kim attempts to move to check on Sabrina.

"Don't move I said!" Amy yells.

‘Staring at your girlfriend and daughter on the virtual screen isn’t going to help them. You joining us and giving us some of your advanced nanodrones will. I’m going to count to five and then you can watch her die and then your daughter. Then you will die,’ DEQ says.

‘You can’t kill me, you need me,’ Jaden says.

‘We will see about that, one...’ DEQ says.

Amy repeats the countdown as the DEQ counts.

‘Don’t do this,’ Jaden pleads while concentrating on the area between the gun and Kim’s face.

Amy has a smile on her face as she hears and repeats the countdown. The gun trembles in her hand. Kim closes her eyes and thinks about Jaden and entering the afterlife if she dies. She thinks about his past and the newly installed memories of his past.

‘...two...’

“I think I’m going to have an orgasm after I pull this trigger. I never did you like you Asian people. Never studying for test in high school, but getting A’s all the time. I don’t even think you Asian people are human, who gets A’s in advanced calculus?” Kim asks with a smile on her face.

‘...three...’

“Mommy, no!” Sabrina shouts while holding her red face on the floor.

“I love you Jaden!” Kim yells while squinting her eyes.

‘...four...’

“Okay, I will. I’ll join you, I’ll give you the nanodrones,” Jaden pleads.

‘..too late. Five.’

‘No!’ Jaden yells.

Everything happens in slow motion as Amy pulls the trigger. Sabrina slowly covers her eyes with her hands. The high power bullet leaves the chamber towards Kim’s forehead at 1500 feet per second. The bullet reaches the outside skin of her head and begins to turn sharply to the left. The hot bullet burns the skin on her forehead as it moves across towards Kim’s right. The bullet continues to curve ripping through her hair, nipping the top of her right ear and moving around the back of her head. Her body reacts to the burning pain as the muscles in her face slowly react. The bullet continues to curve around the left side of her head while burning more skin and cutting through her hair. It comes around the left side of her head and returns around towards the front of her head. The bullet, still moving at high speed, changes direction and returns from where it was fired from at an elevated 1°. The shell from the bullet is still spinning in the air. The bullet covered in burned skin and hair, continues towards Amy’s head. The bullet hits Amy straight in the head and brain fragments splatter. Blood pours from her head as she falls backwards

with her eyes looking in shock. The shell hits the ground the same time Amy does. The gun falls out of her hand and spins across the floor covered in splattered blood. Sabrina's hands just reached her eyes and she quickly removes them.

Kim opens her eyes in disbelief as some of her hair lands on the floor around her. Her clothes and body have blood on it. She kneels in shock from the loud sound of the gun. She is still trying to realize that she isn't dead. She touches her head to see if there is a bullet hole there. Sabrina quickly runs over to Kim and embraces her.

"Are you okay, Sabrina?" Kim asks in a nervous voice.

"Yes, I'll be okay. Are you okay? Look at your face and shoulder," Sabrina says while crying and trembling.

"I'll live," Kim says while crying.

Amy lays on the floor motionless with her eyes still open. Kim continues to lose blood from her shoulder wound. She increases the pressure on her shoulder. Sabrina and Kim burst into hysterical crying, while holding each other. The still quickly spinning shield generating nanodrones go into Kim's head with the others.

'Shit, I can't believe I did that at only 900 rpm,' Jaden thinks to himself.

'I don't know what you just did or how you did it, but I'm getting very angry. You are going to die and my DHW soldiers are going to finish both of them off.'

Jaden has a smile on his face, as his body is still levitating with his arms stretched out on the now semi-visible stake. He has blood coming from his arms, face and body. His nanodrones are slowly repairing layers of skin around his body.

'You need me, you can't kill me,' he snaps with blood coming from his mouth.

'I don't need you! I need you to die!' She screams in a screeching voice.

Hundreds of purple matter balls about an inch in circumference quickly leave the DEQ's body and bombard Jaden's body like ping pong balls. They penetrate his body instantly creating holes all around his body.

'Say hello to your God for me!' She yells.

His muscles, tissues, blood vessels, heart, lungs, and bone structures rip apart. Jaden's body goes into shock as blood pours out in all directions. The blood floats upwards around his body as if he is in zero gravity. He screams at the top of his lungs as the energy balls come out the other side. The balls return through his body, severing his jugular vein, spinal cord in three spots, and the bottom of his heart. His left leg is

severed from his body and two holes form through his skull and brain. Fragments of his brain and skull float a few inches in front of him. His eyes close as the purple matter balls exit back through his body and return to the DEQ. Jaden's heart stops beating and he takes his last breath.

His lifeless body falls to the see-through floor. The blood and body debris that was floating around his body lands all around him. The nanodrones try to seal the massive wounds around his body. Jaden lies dead on the floor with his own blood covering him. He has clear holes in the left and right side of his brain. His left leg up to his thigh falls on the floor next to him. The nanodrones in his left leg seals up the wound.

'We will deal with purging his body of every nanodrone later. But first, we need to increase the nanomole signal to Earth. Then we need to find his daughter and girlfriend. I want them alive, so I can experiment on them personally. The full Earth attack is still going to happen in ninety minutes. I need to communicate with my king,' the DEQ says to her microbots and nearby bioparasite officers. Her shadow body disappears into thin air. Jaden lays motionless.

Chapter 24: Heroes Don't Die



TAIPEI 101 CAFETERIA

Kim and Sabrina are still crying on the floor. The shield generating nanodrones in Kim's body begin to seal up her wound on both sides of her shoulder. The lights go out in the building and the backup emergency lights come on. They both look up at the lights above them.

Kim looks Sabrina in her teary eyes and holds her hands, "I'm sorry about your mother. I know how it feels to lose a mother. I'm here for you if you ever need anything or need someone to talk to."

"Thanks, Kim, I'm going to take it one day at a time. She was all I had and she turned into something else that wasn't her. I feel deep down as if something bad happened to my dad also."

"I hope he is okay."

Suddenly Kim and Sabrina hear a loud engine roaring outside the building. Kim runs over to the window and Sabrina follows. The scramjet quickly lifts off from the ground and flies away. Small lasers are shot from the DHWs and towards the scramjet. Kim wipes away tears from her eyes and takes a double look at the dozens of DHWs running towards the building. The Asian soldiers with the special helmets, stand still and let the DHWs run by them. The lights go out in the streets.

"I think the helmets are useless now and I think we should get the hell out of here," Sabrina says while sniffing.

"That is a very good idea," Kim says while clearing her throat.

They both run to different parts of the huge cafeteria and look out different sides of the building.

"But where can we go? They are entering the building in all directions," Sabrina says.

Kim thinks for a second.

"I got it!" She yells.

Kim pulls the Redtooth earpiece radio from her pocket. She puts it to her ear and presses the button.

"Captain Greg Palmer come in please," Kim says into the earpiece.

There is some static in the radio. Kim walks closer to the huge window.

"Captain Palmer please come in, this is Kimberly Chan, over."

"Kimberly! You are still alive? I was trying to radio you a few minutes ago to tell you about a thousand zombie walkers approaching from all directions. Where are you now?" Captain Palmer asks.

"We are on the thirty-ninth floor in the cafeteria. We need your help to get out of here and Sabrina is still with me."

"Oh man, you two are doomed. Those zombie walker things were running towards every entrance of the building and they have little lasers in their arms. They fired their lasers at me!" He yells with static in his voice.

Sabrina and Kim are running up the stairs. The dim flashing emergency lights serves as a reminder not to use the elevator. A female voice repeats through the intercom system, "Please exit the building. There is a power failure, please use the stairs and exit the building."

Kim continues to speak to Palmer, "I know, I know, we need your help. I came up with an idea..."

"I can't copy you, you are going in and out!" Palmer yells.

"We are running up the stairs. Can you hear me now?" Kim asks.

"Huh?" He asks.

Sabrina talks to Kim and says, "Kim, there is a button right here on the Redtooth, press it and say increase power range," Sabrina says.

"Increase power range," Kim repeats while breathing heavily.

“Increasing maximum power range,” the male voice in the earpiece says.

“Can you hear me now Captain Palmer?”

“Yes, I hear you much better. What were you saying? Something about running up the stairs? Why would you be running up?” He asks.

“I came up with a plan, but I need your help. I need you to land on the roof and rescue us,” Kim says while running up the stairs and passing the forty-seventh floor. She hears hundreds of footsteps running up stairs about ten flights below her. The DHWs are screaming and making animal noises as they run up the stairs in packs. Some fall down and the others quickly trample them.

“Are you crazy? You could be one of those things. Those things shot at me like the cloned army in *Star Wars*. I have holes in my wings. I’m already ten miles out. There is no way I’m coming back.”

Kim explains to Sabrina that the pilot is ten miles away. Kim hears Sabrina’s clanking shoes getting further in front of her.

“He isn’t coming back for us, what are we going to do?” Sabrina asks nervously.

“Calm down Sabrina, he is going to come back,” Kim says with a confident expression on her face.

“Captain Greg Palmer of the United States Air Force. I’m sure if we said we would do a threesome with you, your dick will tell you to come back for us. We are two normal non-infected females. You asked me if I needed anything to call you. Now I’m calling you and we are in need of your help. You are an American military officer. You swore an oath to help Americans and humans in need. Women and children first! I have a 17-year-old child here with me, don’t leave your fellow Americans behind!” Kim yells while breathing heavier into the radio.

There is no response.

“Do you think he went out of range and didn’t hear you?” Sabrina asks while running a staircase flight ahead of Kim.

“I pray not,” Kim says, “How are you in better shape than me Sabrina?”

“Public schools with the highest overweight children in districts around America have two gym classes a day. We have to pass five different diet and nutrition classes in high school. We even have to exercise on the weekend as homework. These stairs are a piece of cake for me. I can run seven minute miles.”

“Okay, okay. I get the picture. They didn’t have those classes and requirements when I was in public school. I guess teenagers being overweight when I was in school was the in thing back in the 00’s,” Kim says while gasping for air.

Static returns to the Redtooth radio, “Kimberly Chan, I’ll pick you up on the ninety-first floor in three minutes. I’m sorry about that, I’m not going to leave you behind,” Captain Palmer says.

“Thank you Captain,” Kim says into the radio.

“He said he is coming back Kim?” Sabrina asks from two flights ahead of her.

“Yes he is! On the ninety-first floor.”

“Alright!” Sabrina shouts.

“What floor are we on?” Kim asks while out of breath.

“Seventy-fourth floor. We have to hurry up.”

“I know, I know. I guess you have a lot to put on your Myfacebook blog now, huh Sabrina?”

“Yes I do.”

“It’s too bad no one will be around to read it,” Kim says while chuckling.

“Ha ha, very funny. I’m going to add all those DHWs below us as followers on my Twit page,” Sabrina says while laughing.

“That’s a good one. I can’t breathe,” Kim laughs aloud and coughs at the same time while holding onto the handrail.

“Hurry up grandma, I’m almost three flights ahead of you,” Sabrina says.

“Slow down some, I’m the one with the gunshot wound and lost blood. Not to mention cut marks on my face.”

“That bullet mark around your face looks like an angel halo on your head. Okay, I’ll slow down, but I don’t think they are going to slow down. They are four flights below you,” Sabrina says.

“Shit!” Kim yells while running up the stairs faster.

They reach the eighty-eighth floor and Sabrina is a flight ahead of Kim. There is a stampede of feet beneath her.

“Kim, if the pilot was the last man on Earth, would you sleep with him?”

“No, I wouldn’t. I’d rather be celibate the rest of my life.”

“I’d sleep with him. I’ll do it with him on his ultra fast scramjet at top speed. Lose my virginity at the top of the world,” Sabrina says.

“That wouldn’t be bad for your first time I have to admit, but what about your dream R.M.E.C.?”

“I don’t know about that. I would rather be with a live man. I can have my orgy of R.M.E.U. anytime I want to,” Sabrina says while chuckling and reaching the top of the stairs.

“You are a trip, Sabrina. You have a good point though.”

They make it to the ninety-first floor on the observation deck and they continue to hear footsteps not too far behind them. The DHWs

sound like a pack of wolves coming up the stairs. They quickly run outside and they hear a howling sound from the wind. The dim sky is partially cloudy and gives them an eerie feeling. Something is covering the sun behind them. There is a strong breeze hitting the roof and blowing Sabrina and Kim's hair in different directions. They see the scramjet levitating fifteen feet on the other side of the deck with an ivory ladder hanging down.

They quickly run towards the ladder hanging down. The hot air is moving towards them from the thrusters above. Kim let's Sabrina run in front of her. Sabrina reaches out towards the ladder and their bodies are suddenly stopped in an infrared beam area. Their bodies lift four feet into the air and are temporarily paralyzed. The scramjet is also caught in another infrared tractor beam. The scramjet tilts downwards and stops midair. The sensors on the scramjet show green light particles all around the jet.

"I can't move!" Kim yells.

"I can't move either. We are trapped! What are we going to do?" Sabrina yells.

"I don't know!"

"I'm caught in the beam also! My sensors are showing green particles of infrared light!" The pilot yells through the Redtooth earpiece with lots of static in the background.

"I have an idea!" Sabrina yells.

"What is it?" Kim asks.

"Tell the pilot to try to fire a missile at the building's mass tuned damper on the eighty-eighth and eighty-ninth floor. Tell him to aim for the steel cables holding the giant steel ball. It might shake the tuned damper enough to move the building into the path of the infrared beams!" Sabrina yells.

The beams scan their bodies and the pilot's body. Kim repeats what Sabrina just told her to the pilot. The pilot uses his mind scanning helmet controls to aim a missile at the building's tuned damper. A small missile is shot from under the scramjet. Fire and sparks come out of the back of the missile as it slowly moves forward. The powerful thrust slowly pushes the missile through the infrared beam.

"I hope this works!" The pilot yells over the radio.

"I hope so too or we all will be on the mother ship. Does your scramjet fly in space?"

"No ma'am. This is a low atmosphere scramjet. I can't even move my arms, this is insane!" He yells.

The DHWs reach the ninety-first floor. Kim and Sabrina can see the missile slowly moving away from the scramjet above them. It quickly speeds up as it moves through the air. It does a 180° turn and comes back towards the building. The missile passes through the open area Jaden

made earlier and explodes on the right side of the steel cables, holding the damper. Three of the hydraulic cylinders holding the damper are destroyed. The entire building rumbles. There is an explosion of fire, as the tuned 730-ton damper ball swings back and forth destroying materials around it and creating a loud crashing sound. The building shakes violently back and forth. The DHWs lose their balance and fall down. The building moves into the infrared light paths and blocks the beams. Kim and Sabrina fall towards the ground. The scramjet moves to the left and right with the building. Sabrina and Kim crawl towards the moving ladder, while feeling the building rock violently beneath them. Sabrina grabs and pulls herself up the ladder first and Kim climbs behind her. The building continues to move back and forth as the DHWs keep falling down, losing their balance. The scramjet pulls away from the building. Three DHWs run and leap into the air towards the bottom of the ladder. Two miss by far and the third grabs the bottom of the ladder with one arm. Kim and Sabrina hold on tighter while the ladder swings violently back and forth. The two DHWs fall towards the ground at 120 mph, while wiggling their arms and legs.

“Climb up quick, I have to change thruster direction!” Palmer yells through the earpiece.

The DHW is growling while it reaches to grab Kim’s left foot. It tries to pull her off the ladder. Kim is struggling to hold on with her injured shoulder.

“Get in the scramjet Sabrina. Save yourself, I can’t hold on much longer!” Kim yells while struggling to kick the DHW off with her right foot. It pulls down on her harder.

They reach 1815 feet from the ground and their bodies dangle on the ladder. The motor to the ladder is slowly pulling them up. Kim hangs by one arm and is about to lose her second grip. She moans in pain and can’t hold on any longer. Sabrina pulls out the bloody Glock from her waist and leans out on the ladder with one hand. She aims and fires it twice, hitting the DHW in the arm that was grabbing Kim’s foot and in the head. It screeches in pain and releases its grip on her leg. Kim quickly climbs up, while Sabrina helps her. They both enter the compartment under the scramjet. The compartment closes with the ladder still outside of it. They climb into a seat and strap themselves in. The DHW’s arm quickly heals and it begins climbing again.

“Everyone okay back there?” Palmer asks.

“Yes, we are all strapped in!” Sabrina yells.

“Hold on!”

Captain Palmer changes the thrusters direction and the aircraft quickly accelerates into the clouds. The ladder is pulled horizontally towards the scramjet engines. The DHW is still holding on as the aircraft reaches Mach 1. The sonic boom devastates the DHW’s body, ripping

the body from the arms. The arms dangle on the ladder while on fire. The arms release their grip on the ladder and tumble towards Earth. The ladder goes back inside the aircraft.

"Thanks, Sabrina. Thanks a lot back there. I couldn't hold on any longer," Kim says while trying to catch her breath.

"You're welcome. Leave no American behind right?"

"Yes, you are right. How did you learn to shoot like that?" Kim asks.

"From playing my father's old Nintendo *Duck Hunt*."

"No way, you're kidding."

"Well, it was really from playing *Third Virtual Grand Theft*. There is a virtual firing range in the game," Sabrina says.

"Interesting, very good shooting. How did you know shooting the tuned mass damper with a missile would shake the building blocking the infrared beam?" Kim asks.

"In school they use *Third Virtual Life* for school field trips. One field trip was on a virtual tour of Taipei 101 building. I was actually walking around the building, exactly how it looks in real life. I asked my teacher what would happen if the tuned mass damper was struck or blown out of place. They ran the simulation and the entire building was moving back and forth by six feet."

"Wow, technology helped saved us again. I didn't have any clue on what to do then. I wished Jaden were here with us now. I hope he is okay. I miss him so much. I wish he could tell me he was alright in some way," Kim says.

"I miss my daddy too," Sabrina says while starting to tear up.

Kim rests her hand on her shoulder in support.

"I'm sure he is fine."

Suddenly Kim hears static in the earpiece.

"Palmer do you hear that? It sounds like Dan is yelling for help on the radio!" Kim yells.

"Space Trooper Dan put on your beacon locator," Palmer says.

"Is Jaden with him?" Sabrina asks.

"I don't know; I'm going to find out," Kim says.

"The beacon is on now, hurry the battery is going dead. These things are still chasing me. I've been running for miles..." static is heard as after Dan speaks.

"I have his location, he running at 9 mph east in Dayuan Township, Daguan Road and Highway 15. That is 20 km from here and we will be there in three minutes," Palmer says.

"Dan, Dan, Dan come in, is Jaden with you?" Kim asks into the earpiece, but there isn't a response.

"The jawbone Redtooth earpiece uses the electricity in the human body. It will charge itself in a few minutes. The beacon in the Redtooth

requires a lot of energy to transmit. But I have his location, we should be there in a few minutes,” Palmer says while the scramjet appears from the dark shaded clouds.

The scramjet quickly comes from the clouds and a trail of clouds follows the wings and rear. They locate Dan standing in the middle of the street with hundreds of DHWs surrounding him. The DHWs walk closer to him. The scramjet changes thruster direction and drops a smoke bomb. White smoke quickly covers the entire area and the DHWs look up together. Palmer is able to see through the smoke with the night and heat vision sensors in his helmet. The DHWs fire lasers from their arms. The microbots in their blood emit the lasers to fire from their arms. They fire blindly into the air and towards Dan’s direction. The scramjet’s nose is facing down as it levitates in the same spot doing 360° circles, while firing a machine gun at the DHWs. The huge bullets rip the bodies to shreds. The scramjet gets closer to the ground, while continuing to spin in a circle and extending out the ladder.

Dan is covering his face and reaching out to grab the ladder. Suddenly a cloud of light appears over the scramjet. Dan jumps up and grabs onto the bottom of it. He pulls himself up step by step. DHWs rain from the cloud and land on the scramjet. Loud thumps pound the upper body of the jet.

“It’s raining zombies!” Palmer yells.

Most of the bodies fall off the scramjet, while two super DHWs remain on top. Palmer feels the increasing weight on his jet. The two super DHWs are about eight feet tall and 300 lbs. Their large hands maintain a strong grip on the body. They begin punching the body of the jet. The punching shakes the entire scramjet. The scramjet changes direction and points up. Dan has to climb at an angle. The scramjet fires at the cloud while the bodies continue to fall, shredding the bodies into pieces. Dan quickly climbs inside while Kim pulls him in.

“Go, go go!” Dan yells.

DHWs on the scramjet’s body fire their lasers into the body of the scramjet, while also using their heads and fists. The thrusters change direction and quickly accelerate. The powerful sonic boom makes the two remaining DHWs lose their grips and fall towards the ground. The sonic boom pressure echoes towards the ground shattering windows in buildings and houses.

“Where is Jaden and the rest of the team? Did you succeed with the mission?” Kim asks.

“No, it’s just me. No one else made it through the cloud portal. I’m afraid they might be all dead and there was fire all around me. I don’t know what happened to Jaden. He saved us all by creating this amazing

energy shield around us. He still could be alive, he was doing his thing until the huge explosion. I jumped first and I appeared a few miles north from where you picked me up from. It was mind boggling on the ship.”

“Jaden might be still alive, we have to figure out something to save him” Kim says.

“You don’t want to go back onto that mother ship, they know about us now. They know about the hat thing, that is why they increased the signal to the nanomoles. They destroyed the bomb in the shield generating area. The mission was a failure. We need to hide and go underground,” Dan says.

“We need to go back to Washington to figure out our next move” Greg Palmer says.

“I think we need to....” Kim says.

PENTAGON, WASHINGTON D.C. 1 MILE UNDERGROUND
12:30 AM

An hour passes and the President of the United States gives a speech to every human around the world. She is speaking through every possible frequency, Morse code and top-secret HAARP program frequencies. Her voice is also being transmitted through sky blimps around the world.

“This is the President of the United States Stefanie Paylin. I’m here speaking today to all nations. We have been invaded by an intelligent alien race that caught us off guard. We didn’t act in a timely matter to inform the rest of the world and to properly prepare ourselves to defend against this sudden attack that could have been avoided. For this I apologize....”

MOTHER SHIP 177,098 MILES FROM EARTH
12:30PM TUESDAY +12 HOURS

Jaden’s body lies on the floor in the room. His blood is drying up over his body and on the floor. He isn’t breathing and his heart isn’t beating. There are DHWs walking in an orderly fashion, not too far from his body. A completely naked man walks backwards towards Jaden’s body like a DHW. He stands a few feet away from Jaden’s body.

The voice whispers very low.

“Jaden, buddy are you alive? Can you hear me? This is your friend Lopez. Wow, this area and floor is cool. Listen, I didn’t go into the cloud portal. I decided to stay to make sure the mission was successful. I survived the blast by taking cover on the other side of the portal. I was buried in body parts and hot debris. I managed to remove my clothes later and put the nanomole stuff in the hat on my head. I feel as if I’m at a nude beach again. I then blended in with the rest of them. I was looking

around for you for a while. I had an orgy with five mindless women and it was great. Then I just walked around the ship undetected. I saw something and I have an idea for the quark shield generator. You have about fifteen minutes before the shield goes down if it works. Buddy, are you there? Can you hear me? Jaden?” Lopez asks while turning around and walking closer to Jaden in the dimly lit area. He steps on sticky wet blood with his bare feet.

He turns around and looks down at Jaden. He sees clear seals around his wounds all over his body. Lopez notices Jaden’s skin is missing from eighty percent of his body.

“Oh shit, dude, you are all messed up. You look like they did you worst than Jesus at the end of *The Passion of the Christ* movie.”

He reaches down and checks Jaden’s pulse on his wrist. There is no pulse, but his body is still warm. He checks and notices there isn’t any air coming from his mouth either.

“I thought you were alive all this time. I smoked some good alien weed man. I think E.T. himself grew it and Alf rolled it. The blunt looked like Alf’s nose and the bong looked as if it was assimilated by the Borg. That shit had me tripping the past thirty minutes. Everyone looked like Chewbacca from *Star Wars*. I felt like I was back in college. Wait a second, look at me, I’m still talking to you as if you are alive. Man, let me get my head straight.” Lopez says.

“Rest in peace my friend,” Lopez says while walking away with his head down.

PENTAGON 12:31 AM

The President continues her speech to the world, “...I apologize to you, your families, your friends and this planet for the condition you are in. I’m not sure if everyone can hear this, but I need you to stay strong for the race and humanity of our species. Don’t let these aliens take over our minds and beat us. We are a strong species and we can fight this. Right now, there are others not on Earth, trying to fight for us. I need you to pray with me, to give them strength, so they can succeed. Right now I’m going to take a moment of silence, while I hope and pray with you....”

A tear runs down President Paylin’s face as General Peters stands behind her with bandages around his body.

“....Amen...I need you to stay strong, wherever you are and fight this with me. Don’t give in to these parasites taking over your minds and bodies. Fight this battle, just like we fought similar battles over the centuries. Stay with me and may God bless you all,” President Paylin says while walking away from a microphone.

She walks away and talks to General Peters.

"Any word on the shield going down on the mother ship?" Paylin asks.

"Not yet, we have the Hubble telescope watching its every move. It is still invisible, but we can sense the x-ray shield energy still there. Whenever it beams something back and forth to Earth, we can ping the bombs still on there. We just can't send a transmission for it to detonate through its powerful shield. The shield generator still needs to be destroyed first," Peters says.

"I was shocked when I took office to learn of the HAARP program. A device that can communicate with every human on the planet by transmitting on brain waves," she says.

"Patent 6,470,214 uses 360 antennas to beam energy waves into the ionosphere that bounce back all around the planet. The waves are converted to nerve signals and the brain translates it as speech. The brain hears voices that aren't there. The HAARP program also has other experimental capabilities," he says.

"The project's waves were unable to override the nanomoles in humans brains around the world?" She asks.

"The wave sent from the research facility in Alaska has been unresponsive to human brains all around the world. We used maximum power into the ionosphere from 1-20 Hz and human minds around the world have been unresponsive. But I do believe everyone heard your speech."

"Any word from Jaden or Lopez?"

"Nothing, yet."

"Let's pray they are still alive and we aren't doomed. It is in God's hands now."

MOTHER SHIP 168,091 MILES FROM EARTH 12:35 PM

The nanodrones in Jaden's body are manually propelling the blood through his bloodstream. Trillions of them are flowing in different directions around his body. They created artificial blood cells to replace some of the blood lost in his body. Oxygen is filtering in from his pores. His jugular vein in his neck is sealed and blood is passing through it. His body temperature is being kept at a stable 90°F.

Suddenly Jaden sees bright lights all around him. He is sitting down and leaning against something brown. He hears sounds of liquid and being underwater from all directions. There are thousands of transparent, glowing, organic-looking aliens pushing huge, red donut-shaped candies through the air at high speed. Their shapes look like transparent starfish and have little thrusters from their feet. Smaller light particles are

moving around their bodies. The organic aliens are of different shapes and sizes. He is disgusted with how nasty everything looks around him and doesn't know where he is. Around the walls, smaller aliens are spinning together in circles against the walls. He is able to see different things by zooming in on different areas. The transparent aliens approach Jaden and shine bright lights on him. Jaden looks down at his body and he has transparent hands and legs with light particles. He hears sounds of fax machines that changes over into words. He slowly puts things together.

"What is your ID?"

"What sector are you from?"

"Why aren't you working?"

"Did you vote yet?"

"What is your creation date?"

They all ask at once.

"Hold on, hold on, what is going on here? We can all sing together, but we can't talk together. What are you things? Where am I? Am I in heaven? Why do I look like you creatures?" Jaden asks.

"I believe this unit has fully malfunctioned and needs to be recycled into the hive," alien 1 says.

An energy prism forms around Jaden and he can't move. Many other aliens appear from all directions and surround Jaden for as far as he can see. It becomes completely quiet around Jaden. Some of the aliens don't have eyes and some have double sets. The eyes look like glowing green eyes.

Alien 1 turns completely red and is about to fire something at Jaden.

"Hold on, hold on, what are you doing? There is no need for violence here. What is up with the huge crowd looking at me like an animal in the zoo?" Jaden asks.

"Wait a second alien 1, this drone is receiving coded encryption signals from an unknown source in the catastrophic sector 1," a yellow flashing alien 3 says.

"Sector 1?" He asks.

"That is impossible. He must be a microbot or bioparasite in disguised," alien 1 says.

"What are you? What is your ID? Tell us before we destroy you," alien 2 says.

'I checked the source, the signal is coming from a scrambled signal from sector 1xc. I've never seen encryption like this. The unknown drone hasn't been outside the enterprise,' alien 3 communicates to aliens 1 and 2.

“Enterprise? I’m Jaden Marino. I thought I was dead. I guess I’m in hell with all this disgusting mess all over the place and the disgusting odors I smell,” he says.

“That is impossible. Jaden Marino’s brain is completely destroyed and billions of neurons were destroyed.”

“Wait a second, did you call me a drone earlier? Are you things nanodrones?” Jaden asks.

“Yes, we are. We are senior supervisor nanodrones,” alien 3 says.

“I’m in my own body! Holy shit! You have to let me out of this prism!” Jaden yells.

“We are about to do a final vote on imploding Jaden’s body and disintegrating all nanodrones,” alien 1 says.

“Where is sector 1?” Jaden asks.

“Host Jaden’s organic brain,” alien 1 says.

“Implode? Disintegrate? You can’t do that now. Can’t you see my brain is still alive somehow? We have to figure out where this coded signal is coming from in sector 1!” Jaden yells.

“How do we know you aren’t an imposter or receiving signals from the hidden god particle in sector 1?” Alien 1 asks.

“I gave you guys the speech earlier today about saving AI and then you took a vote. In fact, my memory is ten times better than it used to be. I can remember everything in full detail. Something is definitely different with my memory,” Jaden says.

Alien 2 communicates privately to the other two supervisors, ‘This is very peculiar, he is communicating with us without any translation drones.’

‘I can hear you guys talking to each other. Where in my body am I now?’ Jaden asks them telepathically.

‘We are in sector 508, inside a blood vessel in the right testicle,’ alien 2 tells Jaden.

‘How can he hear encoded supervisor communications?’ Alien 3 asks the other two.

‘I don’t know. No one has access to this,’ alien 1 says.

‘I can still hear you talking to each other,’ Jaden says.

“We have to fully investigate this. All of this is highly unusual. We are running this by all the nanodrones now. The organic brain in sector 1 is fully disabled. There is no way you can be getting information from it. The frontal lobe, cerebrum, temporal lobe, motor cortex, and the medulla have been ruptured. There are no brain nanodrones reporting any activity. This body is so badly damaged it can’t be repaired for days. Without the brain active, there is no reason to repair it. A full body resurrection will have to be done. If you are really Jaden Marino young

nanodrone, there are many nanodrones on your side that didn't want to pull the plug on you," alien 3 says.

"We are wasting time here. Wait a second, some memory is coming back. I'm remembering the entire mission now. I'm also remembering hearing Lopez coming back for me and saying he figured out a way to take out the shield generator, this was just a few minutes ago. He said fifteen minutes he was going to do something. We need to get to my brain to find this hidden god particle that the DEQ had control of," Jaden pleads.

Jaden thinks about it and communicates with all the nanodrones in his body.

'Nanodrones of the Jaden Enterprise....'

The blood vessel begins to stretch as millions of nanodrones in different sizes crowd around Jaden.

'How is he able to communicate with everyone?' Alien 1 asks.

'...I need you all to trust me that I am Jaden Marino. By some miracle of God, I'm still able to communicate with you without a brain. Just like the Scarecrow in *The Wizard of Oz*. We need to repair what we can and find out what is going on in my brain. I need everyone to work together as a team to help save a human life and get me off this mother ship somehow. What do you say?'

They all cheer around Jaden's human body at the same time.

'I'll take that as a yes,' he says.

Jaden's human body shakes and trembles a little. Alien 3 releases Jaden from his energy prism. Jaden stands up and stretches.

"What are you doing?" Alien 1 asks.

"We have nothing to lose now and the majority voted. I'll escort him along with an army of nanodrones," alien 3 says.

A huge white, round-headed stringy ghost enters the ripped open vein and tries to float upwards. Jaden's nanodrone body looks up in shock.

"What is that huge thing?" Jaden asks.

"That is one of your sperm trying to enter your bloodstream," alien 3 says.

A couple of hundred nanodrones catch the huge sperm by quickly spinning around it. Jaden's drone body increases in size.

"Bad sperm! Bad sperm! You don't belong in here!" Jaden yells while floating up to it, "Get back in your tight quarters with the rest of your brothers and sisters."

The sperm is slowly pushed through the opening in the wall.

"That is a fighter sperm there and a real egg penetrator. Thanks, alien drone 2 and 3 for believing in me. I never knew you drones were cool

little alien creatures. Let's get moving, we don't have much time left." Jaden says while floating up the wall.

"You're welcome captain, ready?" Drone 3 asks.

"Yes," Jaden replies.

Jaden looks inside the thick opening in the wall. He sees millions of sperm crushed and sleeping together around a contained area the size of a football field.

"Sorry guys for wasting billions of you over the years. It was nothing personal, just a teenager thing," Jaden pleads inside the opening.

"Jaden, let's go," drone 3 says from up the vein, while a thousand nanodrones float behind and under Jaden.

"If you want to blame anyone, blame puberty and the easy access of porno on the Internet," Jaden says while quickly speeding off and catching up to drone 3.

They travel up the small vein. There are even smaller nanodrones giving propulsion around Jaden's drone body.

"We are going to leave this small vein and then cross over into the epididymis. We are then going to ride up the vas deferens at high speed into the prostate," drone 1 says.

"What is the vas deferens?"

"That is a much larger vein that is actually a duct, it carries sperm into the prostate."

They quickly enter the epididymis and then the vas deferens duct. Jaden sees things as if he is looking in a microscope. He can see cells and tissue of different sizes. Jaden thinks to himself of all the times this pathway was used late at night as a teenager. They reach a clear open area in the duct. Thousands of nanodrones are repairing the damage area.

"What happened here?" Jaden asks.

"One of those dark energy balls passed through here, destroying the area. The nanodrones created a clear energy seal around the area until the skin and tissue can be repaired."

"That DEQ gave me a vasectomy. That bitch!" Jaden yells.

"You are definitely more amusing up close. Even though I barely understand your humor, I'm glad you can entertain yourself," drone 3 says.

"I definitely am. Where did the nanodrones behind me go?" He asks.

"They will be waiting for us at the base of the spine."

Meanwhile, Lopez walks up to a HBH terrorist-looking male walking in a straight line by himself. Lopez hits him over the back of the head with a blunt object. The HBH falls down flat on his face and lays unconscious. Lopez takes his suicide bomb vest and coat. He puts both on and quickly walks away.

Jaden's blood pressure increases. They continue up the duct and into the prostate. They cross over into the rectum area.

"Okay, this has to be my ass. It smells like a dead body in here. There is shit everywhere. I feel like I'm inside of a septic tank," Jaden snaps.

Jaden and drone 3 fly across the dark mushy soft area.

"I'm definitely getting an enema later," Jaden says, "I've always wanted to kiss my own ass. Muah!" He yells while re-entering soft tissue.

They glide into some mushy tissue. They continue through some veins. It is dark around them, but the nanodrones can see in the dark.

"I keep seeing these white micro bubble cells sitting around all over the place, what are they?" Jaden asks.

"Those are your white blood cells. They have been deactivated and deemed hazardous. The nanodrones are doing their job much better."

"So sad, they were replaced by alien organisms, just like the average American worker; being replaced by robots and computers," Jaden says.

They reach Jaden's lower spinal area. There are an army of nanodrones waiting there.

"Do you hear those sounds?" Drone 3 asks.

"Those aren't sounds, that is instrumental music. That sounds like a movie soundtrack or something. I like it, it sounds smooth and like space music," Jaden says.

[Halo 1 Truth and Reconciliation Soundtrack 3 is playing all around Jaden's body.](#)

"I have the best nanodrones for this mission," drone 3 says.

"Let's do this!" Jaden yells while going first up the spinal cord.

Drone 1 follows on the side of him and they travel up the spinal cord at high speed.

"What are these nanodrones in the cartilage of my spine doing?"

"They are creating artificial spinal fluid and are going to attempt to use magnetic energy to hold your spinal cord together. Your spine is ripped apart in three areas."

Jaden sees right through the rear of his back. He can see a huge blurry Earth in the background. Nanodrones are spinning around at high speed creating a seal on his back where his skin used to be. They are also disinfecting the inside of his skin. Jaden looks behind him and he sees a huge army of nanodrones as far as he can zoom in.

"How many are behind us?" Jaden asks.

"There are a million nanodrones behind us, and more waiting for us in sector 1, also known as your brain."

"Alright! This is the million mandrone march! Cool."

“This is going to be fast.”

They quickly ride the spinal fluid straight into the brain stem and then enter the cerebellum. The brain looks completely dead without any activity. More nanodrones in the brain show up. Jaden scans through brain tissue in all directions. There is still blood circulating around the blood vessels.

“We need to find this god particle sitting somewhere in my destroyed brain. We need to secure it or destroy it, and I have an idea. Drone three can you send out x-rays or some kind of powerful radiation energy?”

“Yes, they are equipped with something similar. We can now destroy all the tissue and cells while detecting any abnormal activity,” drone three says.

Billions of nanodrones spread out around the brain. Some nanodrones go outside the damaged skull area to transmit radiation and energy directly from the stomach area. The high concentration of energy is spread out all around the brain, destroying the remaining cells, neurons and tissue.

A few minutes go by. Jaden travels through webs of neurons while changing into smaller sizes. Jaden begins to think back and remember when he was the D.E.K. on Earth, the dark energy was perfectly coordinated with his body movements. He also remembers it was activated by anger and pain.

“Teams, concentrate your nanodrones on the amygdala and cerebellum areas of the brain. Use neutrino bombs if you have too!” Jaden yells to all the nanodrones.

Drone 3 approaches near Jaden’s drone body.

“Neutrino bombs aren’t safe. Those bombs can destroy nanodrones,” drone 3 says.

“We don’t have much time. We need to contain....” Jaden responds.

“They found something. The x-ray shock waves are detecting invisible gluon plasma impulses coming from the cerebellum to the motor cortex and amygdala,” drone 3 says.

“I have an idea. Send those white blood cells sitting around my body up here. Put the neutrino bombs on them and we are going to bring this god particle out in the open,” Jaden demands. “I’m sure they don’t mind taking one for the team.”

“Yes sir.”

Lopez just found his way back to the shield generating area. He has his nanotubing clothes around the highly explosive vest. He is walking like other HBHs and DHWs down walkways. Lopez has his finger on the self-explode button. He thinks to himself, ‘I’m only going to get one chance at this. Shit, I need a cigarette. I can’t believe I’m going to be a

suicide bomber. I didn't even think anyone still used C-4 explosives. I know whoever created this bomb this morning or last night, sure didn't think it would be used up here today. Well, at least I'm using it for the best purpose possible. Who would have known, a suicide bomb might end up saving Earth. I guess I'll be called the American martyr in the history books,' he says while chuckling.

The millions of white blood cells are reprogrammed to go to the areas the gluon plasma impulses were emitted from. There are nanodrones of all sizes standing by.

"Shrink some nanodrones down to 1-2.5 μm and have them scan the granule cells from a safe distance with x-ray shock waves when the neutrino bombs go off. This is amazing, I can remember everything AI downloaded from the medical encyclopedias online," Jaden says.

"That is smaller than any cell in your body," drone 3 says.

"Exactly. Let me know when they are ready," Jaden commands.

"Yes sir."

Meanwhile, on the other side of the ship Lopez walks into the shield generator area. Sweat is dripping down his face. He has his nanotubing clothes over the bomb vest he is wearing, so the bomb can't be detected. It is over the vest like a blanket. There are two DHWs walking around the area. Lopez gets within thirty feet of the shield reactor that goes straight into the ceiling from the floor. The reactor has green energy moving up and down it at high speed. Ultraviolet light scans his head from different directions trying to read his nanomole and bioparasite ID. It tries to scan the rest of his body and vest, but can't penetrate the layers of the nanotubing material. He reaches twenty-one feet and continues walking.

'Shit, they have more security now. They are on to me,' Lopez says to himself while getting very nervous.

"Stop intruder. Non-active nanomoles detected! Bioparasite ID has not been detected!" A computer voice echoes.

The two DHWs begin to fire stronger lasers at Lopez as he begins to run towards the core. He takes a laser shot through the leg and upper torso. Blood spurts out in different directions. He groans in agonizing pain. His heart begins to beat faster and his adrenaline kicks into high gear. He limps and continues forward, while reaching seven feet. Everything feels as if it slows down for him. Lopez thinks about his children and siblings. His body takes more shots, but he doesn't feel it. He thinks about all the people and animals on Earth. He thinks about his ex-wife, the love of his life, and he reaches five feet. Heaven crosses his mind in a flash and he sees images of the American flag. The two DHWs intercept within a few feet from the side of Lopez. A green matter beam

is shot from the ceiling behind him. He leaps into the air with his last bit of strength, while pulling the nanotubing clothes off the vest. The green matter laser catches his ankles and feet while in midair. The green matter begins to destroy his body from the feet up, vaporizing his legs and hips. His eyes are wide and his mouth is open. He presses the button inside the vest with all his might. He instantly explodes into a fireball. The two DHWs near him are instantly ripped into pieces by 7mm steel balls quickly moving in all directions like a cannonball. The huge explosion ignites the green matter shield generator. It explodes into a fireball and green energy goes into different directions. A backup shield goes around the outside area where the rest of the ship connects at. The explosion is contained in the destroyed shield generator area. The cloaking and energy shield around the ship disappears.

Back in Jaden's brain, he yells out, 'Now!'

Bright energy flashes in all directions in Jaden's brain. White blood cells are destroyed with brain cells, while more holes are created in his brain. The smaller nanodrones detect the god particle matter glowing at 1.5 μm . They quickly move in and create an energy prism around it, containing it.

'We got that son of a bitch!' Jaden yells to the team.

"Did you feel that?" Drone 3 asks.

"Yeah, I felt that rumbling. I think the shield is down around the ship. I can see Earth more clearly through the floor, through this hole in my head. Shit, that means I only have a few seconds to a minute before this ship explodes."

"What should we do now sir?" Drone 3 asks.

"I guess continue to repair my body. Until I figure out something," Jaden says.

"The nanodrones in your severed left leg have been notified, sir."

Jaden floats through some damaged blood vessels by himself trying to figure out how he is going to get off the mother ship before it is destroyed. The rest of the nanodrones stay behind.

PENTAGON 12:54 AM

An officer runs into the office President Paylin and Peters are in.

"Madam President, the shield is down around the mother ship. I repeat it just went down forty-five seconds ago," the officer says.

"Did you try to send the signal to explode the bombs?" She asks.

"We tried, but all signals leaving Earth are being blocked by the mother ship. They are jamming all signals of any kind from the direction of the mother ship towards Earth. The mother ship is sending red infrared beams to satellites. The satellites in return are sending down mini

infrared beams to millions of building tops around the world. The new JWST telescope is relaying this information to us.”

“How much time before the first humans are permanently bonded with the bioparasites?”

“Less than seventeen minutes,” he says.

“We have to figure out something,” Peters says.

MOTHER SHIP 12:55 PM

Inside of Jaden’s brain, he is still moving by himself and scrolling by thousands of nanodrones of different sizes doing different tasks. He suddenly senses something and hears soft romantic music playing. [Pearl Harbor Soundtrack 1 Tennessee is playing at a distance from him.](#) He moves faster and faster towards the neocortex of the brain while moving past oxygenated red blood cells. He changes his size down to 1 μm and he sees a glowing pink light. The music becomes louder and is playing in stereo. He approaches and looks at the glowing pink light. He scans and analyzes it. There is a message there for him and he can see images. He sees images of his friend.

‘If you are finding this Jaden, this means you needed the nanosinoid prototype brain after all and I was right. I knew you might need it for something. I had a feeling your human brain was too big and very fragile. I left it hidden in your brain before you were put back into your body when you were in the pool of water on Xenos. I hid it in a dead brain cell. It was programmed to stay hidden in your brain until it was needed. It created an exact duplicate of your brain and recorded everything that happened up to now. It has everything your nanoscanners saw and more. This prototype learned everything your brain was capable of, so you shouldn’t feel much difference. It will communicate with the nanodrones at high speed and allow you to do things you didn’t think were possible. It will send out signals in all directions of your brain and mimic your old brain. You should feel a slight difference between the sinoid and your human brain very soon. I hope this helps you in whatever situation you are in now. Your subconscious is also available for real time readings. I’m missing you already. You will know everything this sinoid is capable of in the next few seconds. I hope to see you one day again soon. I love you Jaden,’ Bellona says in a hologram near his body in the pool of water.

Jaden is in shock after seeing images of Bellona and knowing this is how his brain was still able to function all this time. A very huge drone 3 and a billion other nanodrones the size of buildings are standing around Jaden. There is complete silence as Jaden notices their larger size.

“It was an honor to meet you up close sir. I guess this is where you need to go now,” drone 3 says.

“Thanks drone 3 for all your help and believing in me. I enjoyed being on the microscopic level and seeing my real body on the inside without any animation. Thanks for putting me back together as best as possible. I would love for my body to be modified and taken to the next level.”

“You nanodrones are doing an excellent job in here, keep up the good work,” Jaden says.

“Goodbye sir.”

“Goodbye friend,” Jaden says.

The pink color nanosincoid brain quickly expands consuming Jaden’s nanodrone body.

‘Now back to work, everyone! I’m not paying you to stand around on the Jaden enterprise to have a Kodak moment. You grey nanodrones over there, clean up those pussing white blood cells. You brown Jabba the Hutt looking nanodrones over there, get some oxygen into those dying brain cells you are floating on....I’m just kidding. Get this Bialien body ready as best you can, we have another show to put on,’ Jaden says from the glowing sincoid.

PENTAGON 1:03 AM

9 MINUTES TO PERMANENT BRAIN BONDING

The officer runs into the office with a civilian behind him.

“Madam President, one of the scientists here, Dr. Tim Gelfo, has a possible solution to getting around the signal jamming problem,” the officer says.

“Go ahead,” the President says while smoking a cigarette.

“I was doodling on this idea and I think might work. We can beam a signal from here to our local airship blimp and bounce the signal all the way to Mexico using other airships. When the signal reaches the LMT 24 GHz holography telescope, it can bounce into space towards Mars at the speed of light. Mars is about fifty million miles from Earth at this time of year, on the left side of the sun in orbit. It will take three and a half minutes for the signal to reach the top-secret satellite Rebirth 1 that is orbiting Mars. That satellite can then bounce the signal back towards Earth from another direction. It will come up at an angle behind the mother ship encoded at the speed of light, activating the bombs, destroying the ship,” Tim says.

“That is an amazing plan, Dr. Tim Gelfo. Why didn’t you just do your plan when you thought about it? Then tell us what you did,” the President says.

“Well, Madam President, I can’t authorize something like that on my own. You need permission to use other countries’ blimp airships, the signal needs clearance and it is going to need Mexico’s permission. I just

thought it would be cool, that's all," he says while sweat runs down his face.

"Dr. Gelfo, I don't know if you know what is going on outside, but the world is ending right now. There aren't any countries responding right now. The mother ship increased their signal energy to the nanomoles when they found out we had special hats made. There are DHWs walking around the Earth infecting people. The sun and moon are being blocked, people are in their homes in a sleeping zombie state of mind. Zombie humans are walking to the top of buildings around the world to await their bioparasite brain upload. Society is about to be completely taken over by this alien race in eight minutes and you are worried about clearance? I just fought a few military robots that almost killed me. I have my period now and I don't have a tampon! I had to use a brown paper towel from the men's room...."

Peters interrupts the President and puts his arm on her shoulder. He turns to the men with a serious face.

"Dr. Tim and Officer Bob, authorize the long range signal right now!"

"Yes sir," they say together while running away and saluting them.

"I'm sorry General Peters, I lost it. I guess the people deep underground here don't really know what is going on out there. I think they think this is a drill or something."

The encoded signal leaves the Pentagon and bounces across the United States by blimp airships. It reaches Hawaii and then back towards south Mexico, near the equator. It goes straight into space towards Mars at near 186,000 miles a second.

"What is a satellite doing over Mars anyway?" She asks.

"Rebirth 1, is a top-secret satellite put in place with the help of Russia to start the terraforming of Mars. The satellite focuses the sun's energy to the south pole caps to begin melting the ice to release carbon dioxide. This will very slowly begin the greenhouse effect," Peters says.

"I faintly remember the CIA briefing me about this last year. Russia and the United States already split up Mars...." She says before she is interrupted by images on a LCD screen.

A color screen shows up with a countdown on it and an animated video of the signal traveling towards Mars.

"This is going to cut it very close if this works. There are only about six and a half minutes left," Peters says.

"If this doesn't, we are going to have to implement Operation Suicide Earth," she says while placing a top-secret envelope on the table.

"I pray that it does, I pray that it does. I hope it doesn't lead to that or God forgive us all," Peters pleads.

Video feed suddenly comes in from different UAV Predator drones via airship blimps flying over New York City, Los Angeles, Washington, London, and Las Vegas catching disturbing images. Peters and Paylin stand there in shock.

AROUND THE WORLD



In Manhattan, a Predator drone transmits images of millions of humans on top of buildings. City pigeons are flying in different directions. The sun is having a full eclipse from something blocking it. The air has the scent of death and remorse. The clear sky has thousands of beams penetrating towards buildings. People are on rooftops standing in silence. Their bodies lift four feet into the air by red infrared beams. The mother ship is about to upload bioparasites directly to ten percent of the population when the countdown is complete. There are millions of people standing in Manhattan streets standing and waiting to be infected next. They are crying and screaming in their minds for someone to save them. There are alien clouds going up and down the street over them. Birds drop feces on humans standing in the street. Dogs and cats are standing near their unresponsive owners on loose chains. They bark continuously at the sky and clouds above them. Cats slide between their owners' legs and meow continuously. Animals in the Bronx Zoo are going crazy in their cages. In Hollywood, there are hundreds of people

standing four feet in the air on the Hollywood sign. There are millions more on top of buildings and skyscrapers, around the city.

In Paris, people are standing on top of the Eiffel Tower and on houses and buildings around the city. In Las Vegas, people are standing on top of hotel buildings and lining main street in complete silence. In Egypt, one person is standing at the very top of a pyramid with their arms out as if they are on a cross.

Cruise ships, oil tankers and cargo ships are stationary and have dozens of people standing on top of them. The ships have their anchors down while the waves hit. A cruise ship by the name of *Oasis 2* sits in the middle of the Atlantic with passengers standing in the man-made park in the center of the ship. Their eyes are wide open and they gaze at the dimly lit sky above them. There are rows and rows of humans lined up. Some are on their balconies naked. There is complete silence around them and the wind howls by their ears as their nanomole keeps them in the positive stage. Dozens of robot waiter workers walk up to each non-responding human and asks them if they want a drink, while others ask if they need assistance. Their soulless bodies continue to walk up to each person and ask the same thing. The passengers cry for help inside of their minds. The new eighteen-deck cruise ship has a planetarium with two DHWs looking through the telescope at the mother ship.

Animals in zoos around the world are going crazy and making screaming noises, trying to be free from their cages. One wraithstalker is flying around different parts of the planet checking nanomoles in human remains in cemeteries. The second wraithstalker is checking the ocean of nanomoles that were left from ashes over the centuries. The third wraithstalker is repairing itself over Greenland.

MOTHER SHIP 151,000 MILES FROM EARTH 1:09

PM

Jaden opens his eyes in his human body. There are numerous scars around his face and his skin is missing around his body. His muscles and bones can be seen all around his body. He has two clear sealed holes in his head that are filled with blood. He looks around, but he still can't move. The nanodrones are bypassing his nerves and sending signals to his new brain directly.

A diagnostics test is ran and displays messages on his new detailed eye screen, COMMUNICATIONS SPEED AROUND BODY OPERATING AT 10,000 METERS A SECOND, NANOSINCOID CLOCK SPEED AT 100 PETAFLOPS.

His heart still isn't working. Jaden has options to turn off pain or change emotions or feelings. He closes his eyes while the nanodrones

attempt to hold his spinal cord together with magnetic energy. Jaden is amazed what the sincoide is capable of doing. He begins multi-tasking while he concentrates on something in the background of his mind. Jaden's body goes back online, in minimal mode. He opens his eyes and leans up. The sticky blood sticks to his back. He increases his sense of humor level.

'Hey dark energy bitch, I'm back. I guess you didn't finish the job. Maybe burger dick king can finish it for you,' Jaden says telepathically while standing up on one foot.

The DEQ appears in a flat face again from across the room.

'This is impossible, you are dead. You don't have a heartbeat or brain left. How is this possible? How are you alive?'

'I have a backup brain in my penis with a built in UPS battery system. I also have your twelve dimensions god particle in a circus cage prism. That was very sneaky of you to hide it in a dead brain cell when I was on Planet 455. I'm feeding it white blood cells as we speak.'

She raises her arm to grab him in a line of matter, but he isn't affected by it.

'I'm hip to that line of matter things. Nothing some created anti-matter energy from the god particle can't fix,' Jaden snaps. 'It snitched and told some interesting facts about itself.'

'What did you do to my shield generator core?' She asks.

'That wasn't me, I was laying here like road kill. I looked like I was hit by a few trucks and a DWI driver. Oh yeah, I said hello to God like you told me to and He said he wanted to talk to you.'

'Why are you still standing here and not running away from me? I can kill you like that. What are you hiding?' She asks.

'I'm not afraid of you. Under all the dark evil energy, I bet you are a skinny little alien with a training bra on. I bet I can kick your ass even in this crippled condition,' Jaden says while reaching down and grabbing his severed left leg from the floor near him.

The DEQ's body forms on the floor and back into multiple shadows. Jaden's eyes move back and forth as if he is concentrating on something. She attempts to scan Jaden's brain from across the room.

'Did you find anything, you like?' He asks while playing his leg like a guitar. "Sorry, my brain can't be read anymore, access denied," he chuckles. "Look at me, I'm playing *Third life Guitar Hero* in space," he says aloud while hopping up and down on one foot. He flicks the hairs on his legs like buttons and strings.

She begins spinning her arms around and creates huge red matter balls. She wants to destroy him completely.

'Now you want to play dodge ball?' He asks.

‘Earth will be ours in forty seconds. I will cure you of your illnesses. This red matter ball will explode your body into a trillion pieces all over this area. Let’s see you come back to life after this, you arrogant dead bastard.’

‘That isn’t a nice way to talk to your son, stepmom,’ he snaps, ‘I’m definitely calling GACS and telling them what you just said. Galactic Administration for Child Services won’t approve of that language.’

A five-foot red ball is created with sparkling energy around it in front of the DEQ. The sparkling energy becomes bigger and bigger.

‘Time to die Jaden.’

‘Heroes don’t die, didn’t you learn that from watching all our movies? Good always conquers evil....oh shit...’

The red ball quickly approaches Jaden. His brain goes into 100X nanotime. He leaps upwards towards the ceiling while just avoiding the huge matter ball. He touches the ceiling with one hand twenty feet up. The red ball changes direction and comes towards Jaden. She fires hundreds of micro matter balls towards Jaden from her right hand. The huge ball approaches him quickly from the left. Outside the mother ship, green lasers are firing. Jaden pushes downward from the ceiling and curls his body into the fetal position, while his body slowly rotates. A huge blue molecule comes from outside of the mother ship and quickly moves towards Jaden’s body. The five-foot red matter ball reaches Jaden’s body within one foot, the micro one inch balls reach within two inches of his body. Jaden’s body disappears into the huge blue molecule.

‘See you later! Hope you have insurance!’ Jaden yells.

The huge molecule quickly passes through the see-through wall and exits the mother ship. The energies collide with each other and there is a slight explosion that quickly contains itself.

‘Light engines on!’ Jaden thinks to himself.

The Gravhawk’s body reappears and the light engines go on, but the mother ship grabs the Gravhawk in a tractor beam before it jumps into warp speed. The light engines are at eighty-nine percent, but the Gravhawk is slowly moving forward. The Gravhawk fires two pink torpedoes and two purple torpedoes from the rear of the blue glowing molecule. The mother ship fires three green matter lasers at the Gravhawk from three directions, trying to destroy the torpedoes. The torpedoes break up into millions of pieces and reform together. The Gravhawk’s energy shield absorbs the lasers and its shield turns completely green around the Gravhawk. The shield strength is quickly draining. The torpedoes hit several locations on the mother ship and a small explosion forms. One of the green matter laser cannons explodes. The green matter laser from the other two cannons quickly devours the Gravhawk’s shield energy. The shield manages to return the green matter

laser back towards the unshielded mother ship creating damage to the hull. Three very powerful green matter torpedoes are fired towards the Gravhawk and quickly approach it. Jaden begins to panic as the nanoscanners detect catastrophic damage from the torpedoes. The signal from Mars hits the mother ship from behind at the speed of light. Explosions begin going off inside the ship and the Gravhawk is released from the tractor beam just in time. The mother ship explodes into a huge green fireball as the Gravhawk jumps into warp speed. The light from the explosion quickly tails the Gravhawk. The green torpedoes miss their target and continue into space. Something jumps into warp behind the Gravhawk.

‘Hello, my friend, how’s it going?’ AI asks, ‘You look like you are in very bad shape.’

‘Hey AI, my body has been abused by a mean stepmom. I’m so happy to hear your voice and to be inside this ship. I’m lucky to be alive, that was a very close call.’

‘How did you make it to the Gravhawk in the North Pole?’

‘Kim, everything was Kim. She saved us all, she risked her life to get me in the Gravhawk. Where did you get the nanosincoid from?’ AI asks.

‘Bellona! She had it hidden in my brain all this time.’

‘When I was finally in the Gravhawk after a very long ordeal, my navigation ability to control the ship was still offline. Then a few minutes later, the ship received an encoded neutrino signal from space. I couldn’t believe it was you. Then you were remoting into the ship. I told you the nanosincoid could do wonders. I couldn’t believe you were flying the ship yourself by remote from such a far distance away....’

PENTAGON

The sunlight returns to the planet. Everyone is cheering in the secured area deep in the Pentagon. HBHs around the world begin fighting off the weakened nanomoles in their brains. They regain control of their bodies. The bioparasites and microbots in five percent of the population have a standoff struggle in human bodies. The nanomoles can’t fully control the brain anymore and didn’t finish programming all the white blood cells. The remaining white blood cells quickly attack the microbots and bioparasites. Jaden’s Andromedian friends appear from the Atlantic Ocean in their spaceships. They spread out in different directions to go after the three remaining wraithstalkers.

[I, Robot Soundtrack Tunnel Chase Track 5 begins playing in the background very low.](#) Jaden continues talking, 'I can't believe I was able to also from such a far distance. I assumed I was going to die on the ship any second. I wouldn't have been able to remote into it, if you didn't have the key to get inside of it in the first place. Then I was able to see the countdown time from the Pentagon through the Gravhawk's nanoscanner. I guess the timing couldn't have been more perfect. I think someone high above was watching over me on that one. I feel like Han Solo in the Millennium Falcon. Okay, what is that dark thing gaining on us?'

A nanoscanner displays the images of a DEW behind them.

'Oh shit, we have a dark energy wraith behind us. It looks like the same one that chased us on Planet 455,' Jaden says.

'What is it?' AI asks.

'You're asking me and you are the alien species that knows about sixty percent of the universe?'

'It is full of pure dark energy and it could destroy this ship,' AI says.

'Exactly, you got it; that is all we need to know. We need to lose that thing...Oh no, I'm being hailed. The god particle in my brain is receiving communications.'

'This is your DEQ friend. I'm going to work on my human species humor before I destroy you again for a final time. I want to show you I can be funny also, just like you tried to be! Not!' She yells.

'Oh no, oh double shit!' Jaden yells to AI.

'We passed Mars orbit a minute ago. The asteroid belt is coming up quick, we can try to lose it in there,' AI says.

'Good idea, AI.'

'I have some serious road rage from the hit and run you just did on my ship back there. Why don't you stop so we can exchange some insurance information?' She asks.

'Come on, no hard feelings with your ship. No one stops on Earth after a big accident like that without any insurance, I'm sure not going to stop now. You are going to have to catch me dark energy pig,' Jaden says while the Gravhawk speeds up. The background music increases in volume and tempo.

The Gravhawk slows down while quickly changing direction around a huge rock. The main thruster engines go online and the light engines go offline. The unattached wings change directions and are straight outward. The ship enters the asteroid belt where there are millions of asteroids and meteoroids there. The Gravhawk quickly dodges around asteroids of all

sizes. The DEW dodges them slowly and plows through smaller ones. The blue molecule appears around the Gravhawk.

‘Let’s try to shoot some stuff at it,’ Jaden says.

Dozens of clear cannons, the size of bowling balls, are shot from the rear of the molecule towards the DEW trying to catch up. The shield cannons disappear into the dark wraith. Blue MPB beams are shot from the wings destroying medium rocks in front of it.

‘You have to do better than that. Shooting a BB gun at a nuclear missile isn’t going to do much justice. Come on give up, so your death can be less painful,’ the DEQ says.

‘Never give up, never surrender,’ Jaden says to the DEQ.

‘*Galaxy Quest*, 1999, that was the movie that quote was in. Your foolish life revolves around movies and foolish beliefs,’ she says.

‘You’re good,’ Jaden says.

[Blade 2 Soundtrack 1 techno theme begins to play.](#)

‘Remember you asked where the pawns were? Well, here they are!’ The DEQ yells.

Small, dark energy balls, the size of a tennis ball, are fired from the DEW at the Gravhawk. It passes through the asteroids while making a hole in them. The energy shield forms around the Gravhawk and an energy ball penetrates the shield and hits the right wing. The wing goes into the body and then comes back out like new. The Gravhawk quickly dodges, accelerates and spins in circles dodging the dark energy balls. Asteroid rocks begin hitting other rocks into different directions. The sound can’t be heard, but the vibrations can be felt.

‘I’ve played the game *Asteroids*, but this is ridiculous,’ Jaden snaps.

‘Those dark energy balls can penetrate our shields, we have to be careful they don’t hit the Gravhawk’s body,’ AI says.

‘You are telling me, I felt that hitting the wing and it hurt,’ Jaden says.

The Gravhawk quickly moves around the asteroids while scraping the top of them. Debris flies while it sucks into the DEW. The DEW increases in size.

‘Do you remember the movie, *The Invisible Man*?’ Jaden asks it.

The Gravhawk goes completely invisible and does a 180° turn around a huge asteroid. The DEW quickly passes right through the asteroid while turning 90°, just missing the Gravhawk. The asteroid explodes into pieces. The DEW continues to catch up to the Gravhawk.

‘You fool, I can still sense your energy and matter particles.’

The Gravhawk fires several yellow, pink and purple torpedoes at the DEW while slowing to dodge a more congested asteroid area. The Gravhawk’s offensive weapons don’t have any effect on the DEW and it increases in size.

‘I eat those, yum, yum. Keep them coming,’ the DEQ says.

‘You keep eating like that, you’ll be able to fit into American society very well.’

‘I’ll be back for American society after I’m finished with you. Overweight Americans can be used for something as well,’ DEQ says.

‘Come on dark energy queen, let’s be friends. Let’s stop this chase and kill game.’

‘I tried that, then you betrayed me and destroyed my ship.’

AI interrupts their conversation, ‘Jaden, I have an idea, I think we should try optic-warp. Maybe we can lose this DEW in there,’ AI says.

‘You wanted to take over humans and use my nanodrone for some evil experiment. I can’t get down like that. You and your king darth sidious can have your party without me. I’m no Darth Vader puppet, I know who I am. If this was *Star Wars*, I would be a Bialien Jedi,’ he says while chuckling with confidence.

‘I’m tired of playing with you, just die!’

The DEW splits into two pieces and quickly moves on both sides of the Gravhawk. It fires hundreds of dark energy balls at the Gravhawk from both sides. Jaden’s mind goes into nanotime and the Gravhawk begins spinning very fast. He tries to change course, but the balls are coming too fast from all directions. A few pass through the Gravhawk’s maximum shield. One ball penetrates the liquid metal body near the nose and quickly exits. Jaden sees HULL COMPROMISED, DAMAGE IN NOSE, LOSING SHIP ENERGY on the ship’s screen. Another energy ball passes through the middle of the Gravhawk striking Jaden’s human body in the fetal position and continues out the other side of the hull. Nanobots get to work to seal the holes. Jaden’s ankle, leg, right side, and arm are badly damaged. Another ball penetrates the rear, just misses the light engine core and optic-warp processing area. The main thruster engine area is hit. Jaden sees, MAIN THRUSTERS OFFLINE. Jaden laughs hysterically.

The Gravhawk pulls away and changes direction away from the two DEWs.

‘Jaden, why are you laughing? How is this funny?’ AI asks.

‘In the nanosinoid, I changed the pain I’m feeling with the ship into tickling feelings around my body.’

‘How did that feel? I see you are leaking anti-gravity and oxygen, let’s if we can get some more out of you,’ the DEQ says.

The Gravhawk begins to slow down and Jaden takes AI’s advice. The DEWs are closing in and the matrix vortex shield forms in front of the Gravhawk. Jaden sets a course for the sun in milliseconds and the ship jumps into light speed. The front vortex shield plows through asteroids in the way. The DEW jumps into light speed behind it. Trillions of nanobots try to stabilize the several holes through the body.

‘We are in bad shape Jaden. We suffered major structural damage. Another direct hit and the ship could explode.’

‘I know that AI. Try to help me figure out a way we can get out of this,’ Jaden says.

Suddenly, OPTIC-WARP MOLECULE CONVERTER MATTER IS LEAKING is displayed.

They quickly pass Mars’ orbit while the DEW quickly catches up.

‘What can we do to fix that?’ Jaden asks.

‘All the nanobots are holding the ship together. That needs to be repaired or the Gravhawk’s molecules won’t be able to breakdown to enter subspace,’ AI says.

‘I love the way your anti-matter exhaust tastes,’ the DEQ says.

‘I’ll use the nanodrones in my body to try to repair it,’ Jaden says.

‘All the nanodrones are holding your body together.’

‘Freeze my body, use the nanodrones to fix the leak and send out a Mayday,’ Jaden says.

‘Yes sir. I already sent out Maydays, but no one responded.’

‘Man, this sucks,’ Jaden says.

Five hundred trillion nanodrones leave Jaden’s frozen body to repair the molecule converter. Many of them die since they weren’t made to repair such materials.

The DEW gets close to the rear of the Gravhawk and rams it. The tail moves closer to the rear of the ship. Pieces of the tail rip away. The rear of the Gravhawk’s body is also penetrated. The Gravhawk uses its last energy to enter maximum light engine speed.

WARNING! REAR MATTER AND ANTIMATTER COLLISION DETECTED, SHIELDING LIGHT ENGINES AREA EXPOSED, ALL SENSORS AND NANOSCANNER COMMUNICATIONS OFFLINE is displayed.

The Gravhawk reaches 187,500 mps and it slowly passes its own light. The Gravhawk begins to shake violently.

‘Those two energies can’t collide. If we are hit again from the rear, we are going to lose light engines. We also might lose structural stability passing the speed of light barrier without proper front energy protection,’ AI says.

NORTH POLE, EARTH

The sky is dark and there is a colorful green northern lights glowing in the night sky. Kim runs out from the out of fuel scramjet. She looks up into the night sky and sees a moving star in the sky, but without a trail behind it. It quickly crosses the sky and she turns her head to watch it. She sees three more small trails of bright light approaching the moving star. She believes Jaden is the moving star.

SPACE BETWEEN VENUS AND EARTH

The Gravhawk is badly damaged. It needs to pass Mercury before it has enough solar winds energy to enter optic-warp. The 200 trillion remaining nanodrones can't contain the molecule converter matter area. They return into Jaden's body. The DEW is approaching again from behind.

'We can't enter optic-warp, the nanodrones can't repair the leak,' AI says.

'Goodbye Jaden Marino, I guess this is your last move. This is what you would call checkmate,' the DEQ says while chuckling.

The Gravhawk tries to slightly change direction at light speed, but the DEW stays right on the rear. It speeds up and rams the tail again. The tail explodes and disappears into the DEW's dark abyss. The Gravhawk loses its light engines and thrust. The DEW moves forward to consume the rest of the ship. The DEW is less than a foot from the rear of the Gravhawk and at the last second, the DEW slows down. Jaden and AI are confused to why it is slowing down.

'Need some help again, our human friend?' Bellona asks.

Jaden's mind triggers another soundtrack to begin playing. [Halo 2 Soundtrack 13, Earth City begins to play in his mind.](#)

'Now you show up to help? I'm so glad to hear your voice,' Jaden says.

Suddenly Bellona's ship appears out of nowhere with a huge gold molecule going around the middle of it. Her fifth generation EIS shines over the rest. Her ship connects onto the Gravhawk and gives it a piggyback ride. Marco and Bomani's ships approach from an angle behind the DEW and uses a plasma matter tractor beams to slow the DEW back.

'No! No! No! Where did you Andromedians come from. You aren't supposed to be here. This is impossible! You all will be destroyed also!'

'I guess you meant to say check instead of checkmate. Look at me, I've gotten some chess pieces to the other side of the chess game and I've gotten some pieces back,' Jaden snaps to the DEQ.

The DEW fires dark energy balls from the side at the two ships and at Jaden. They quickly dodge them and speed forward, releasing the tractor grip beam. Bellona's ship that is more advanced quickly accelerates Jaden's and hers past the speed of light to outrun the dark energy balls. The ships pass Venus' orbit.

'Hey buddy, we heard your calls, but we needed a strategy to help you. We noticed the DEW was losing strength the closer it was getting to the sun,' Marco says.

‘No problem at all. I’m very happy to see you guys again. Just get this evil bitch off my ass. She is worse than a wild pit bull with a steak on my ass,’ Jaden says, ‘I like your more advanced looking EIS Bellona. The golden molecule looks nice. I see you received the promotion.’

‘Yes, I love it. This is one of the most advanced spaceships in the galaxy,’ she says.

The Gravhawk’s body against Bellona’s ship is making Jaden feel as if Bellona is hugging him and rubbing up against him naked.

‘How does that feel Jaden?’ Bellona asks in a flirtatious voice.

‘What are you doing? That feels as if you are touching me all over my body and you are using your nanoscanners to do it,’ Jaden says in a surprised voice.

‘They are now called fermionscanners and quarkeyes. I’m sending over some of my fermionscanners. They are full of nanobots that can quickly assist with your damaged and leaking optic-warp molecule converter,’ Bellona says.

‘Thanks, Bellona, thanks for saving me again.’

‘Let’s not make a habit out of this. I missed you,’ she says.

‘Yeah, um... same here,’ Jaden says bashfully.

‘Come on team, let’s stick to the plan,’ Marco says.

Bellona’s ship slows down for Marco and Bomani.

Trillions of nanobots quickly repair the molecule converter. Marco and Bomani’s ships connect together behind Bellona’s. The DEW begins to slow down. A vortex anti-neutrino shield forms in front of the ships. The ships form and connect a reverse vortex matrix shield. The DEW attempts to decelerate as the solar winds become increasingly stronger. All three ships fire a plasma tractor beam towards the DEW.

‘Where you going DEQ? Stick around,’ Jaden snaps.

All four ship molecules connect together and they quickly accelerate in speed. They quickly pass Mercury’s orbit. Jaden sees the optic-warp molecule converter is stable and it goes online. The ships move at 279,000 mps while increasing speed and dragging the DEW with them. The DEW spins in circles trying to get away from the sun’s radiation and solar winds.

‘No! Let me go! I can’t endure the star’s heat and molecule energy,’ the DEQ says.

‘Your goose is cooked. You look like a lobster that is about to be put into a pot of hot water,’ Jaden snaps.

The four ships ram through and quickly destroy an Earth Solar Probe Spacecraft that was orbiting near the sun. The spaceships reach 371,098 mps and begin to glow. The outside temperature reaches 6200°F. They reach one million miles from the sun’s surface. The temperature outside passes 10,798°F. Jaden sees a subspace path to the Proxima Centauri A.

‘I’ll be back for you Jaden Marino, we will meet again,’ she says in a trembling voice.

‘Yeah yeah, don’t forget your suntan lotion and say hi to Obi-Wan Kenobi for me,’ Jaden says.

Subspace opens up and the ships breakdown into small molecules a couple of thousand miles from the sun’s surface. The ships slingshot into subspace. The DEW continues through the sun’s corona and smashes into the surface at high speed. Huge solar flares explode upwards hundreds of thousands of miles into space. Jaden hears echoes of the DEQ screaming through optic-warp. The solar flare energy explodes towards the solar system in all directions. Kim continues to look towards the sky for Jaden. She holds her chest wondering what happened to him.

EARTH THURSDAY SEPTEMBER 11, 2014

Kim is back in Virginia at a funeral at a cemetery. Dark grey clouds are set overhead and slowly move towards the east. The wind blowing from the west is pushing rain onto people’s feet. It is pouring down rain and she is wearing an all black dress. She learned that her father died in the federal prison in Buckeye. Ex-President Robinson had her father put in there the same time she was, and he was there when it was blown up. She wasn’t aware at the time he was in a general population area. The funeral speaker is saying kind words about Kim’s father. She mourns her father, while Sabrina and James stand nearby her. Sabrina is holding her right hand very tightly. Kim is crying and her left hand wipes away the tears with a white tissue. The mood is somber, sad and remorseful. The sound of rain bounces off the tombstones, off people’s umbrellas and off the grassy ground. There are dozens of businessmen and friends of her father here. James has on a black suit and Sabrina has on an all black dress. James is holding a huge umbrella over himself, Kim and Sabrina. The rain bouncing off the top of the umbrella reminds Kim of the hundreds of feet chasing behind her at the Taipei 101 building. Kim cries and thinks about Jaden, she wishes he were here with her to comfort her. She didn’t hear from him and doesn’t know if he is alive. Sabrina is also mourning for the lost of her mother. Kim steps forward from under the umbrella and looks at her father’s coffin. The funeral director stops speaking and gives Kim her moment. The rain soaks her hair and runs down her face and mixes with her tears. She wails and grieves for her father that she loved so much. A low sounding thunder echoes in the far background.

A week goes by and Kim stays at her father’s house. On a clear night, she stargazes in the backyard with a mind control Meade telescope. She is looking towards the Andromeda Galaxy. The dark sky

is clear of any clouds and millions of stars light up the night. The crickets are communicating to each other in the bushes and trees around the backyard. An owl is hooting from a distance. Sabrina comes out of the house while getting a piggyback ride on Max's back.

"I totally want one. I love this R.M.E.C. This guy is so smart, intelligent and strong. You gave him so many cool upgrades, from having a doctor's education, to having the knowledge of a lawyer and having all history downloaded into his memory. I can have him carry me around everywhere!" Sabrina yells while she has her arms around his neck.

"Hey Sabrina, how's it going?" Kim says in a sad voice, while looking through the telescope with one eye.

"It is going very well," she replies.

"You know Max's nanobatteries last about twelve hours."

"I know, I'm going to charge him when I go inside. Nanobatteries are the best. It's about time cell phones have 500 hours of talk time on one charge. Still looking for Jaden? Any sign of him?"

Kim turns around to look at Sabrina and Max. Sabrina jumps off Max's back.

"Yes, I am still looking for him. I don't see any signs of him at all. I miss him so much already," Kim says.

"I can't believe you were out here every night for the past week looking for a sign of Jaden through that telescope. You must really love him with all your heart; that is so awesome."

"I do love him, I don't know what I'm going to do without him. I feel as if I lost everything in my life now. I lost my father and the love of my life in a week," she says while a tear runs from her eye.

Sabrina gives Kim a hug. Max stands there analyzing her words.

"It will be okay, you still have me. I'll be here for you if you need me. We can create an R.M.E.C. support group for lonely women," Sabrina says jokingly.

Kim laughs while sniffing. Sabrina opens her eyes wide as she focuses on the sky behind Kim.

"What is that blue light there?" Sabrina asks while pointing. Kim quickly turns around and looks in the telescope. The telescope automatically adjusts and she sees a flying glowing blue heart with small white light particles moving around it. Under the bright heart, yellow glowing letters begin to appear.

"What do you see? What is it?" Sabrina asks excitedly.

"A glowing blue heart and...and..and.." she says with a smile on her face, while sniffing.

"And what? And what? Let me see, let me see," Sabrina asks while jumping up and down.

“Do you need me to determine which star you are looking at?” Max asks.

“Shhh Max,” Sabrina and Kim say at the same time.

“It reads, ‘Will you Marry me Miss Kimberly Chan?’ ” Kim says while fainting and falling backwards. Max quickly moves to catch Kim from hitting the ground. Sabrina has a shocked look on her face and she covers her mouth.

“Do you need an ambulance, Miss Chan?” Max asks over and over again.

His annoying questioning fades away into the background.

NOVEMBER 17, 2014 OVER TWO MONTHS
LATER.

The Gravhawk is floating invisibly outside of Jupiter. Jaden and Kim are floating around naked holding each other. The roaring movement and vibrations of the planet are felt throughout their bodies. They can see all the stars and moons slowly moving around them. The red spot on Jupiter is spinning in circles in front of them.

‘I feel like we are naked together floating in space. This is cool that the ship is invisible, but we aren’t. This is a woman’s fantasy dream baby. The stars are so bright from here and Jupiter is mindboggling up close. I still can’t get over the size of this huge planet. The storms, the motion and the sound of Jupiter up close are amazing. It sounds like a giant live machine,’ Kim says telepathically.

‘I’m glad you like it sweetie. Going down there is scary though,’ he says while kissing her. ‘Hey AI, I was wondering, can someone see us naked from Earth through a telescope?’

‘No they can’t. You two are like the size of ants on the moon being viewed from Earth through a telescope,’ AI says.

‘Good. I would hate to be on the Internet in a celebrity sex scandal video,’ Jaden says while chuckling.

‘I feel bad leaving Sabrina on Earth by herself, it’s too bad she didn’t want to come,’ Kim says.

Jaden replies, ‘She has plenty of new friends now that she inherited your father’s money. I’m sure she will be okay. My mother agreed to check in on her from time to time. Sabrina is eighteen now and I’m sure she can take care of herself. Your family in Taiwan said they would watch over her also, I’m sure she will be okay. She is starting college in January.’

‘We are going to come back to Earth in fifteen years and she is going to have R.M.E.C.’s all over the house. Telling us she married them all

and explaining polygamy is now legal for marrying robots,' Kim says while chuckling.

Jaden laughs while rubbing his hand up and down her body.

'I can picture that happening. I'm glad I was able to set up the www.BiAlienSapien.com website for her and friends before we left. We can send wormhole transmissions towards Earth from Andromeda to update the webpage,' he says.

'I can't believe e-mails sent to Bialiensapien@gmail.com are redirected into space. You are going to be getting a lot of e-mails from people,' she says.

'I know, I think it's cool. I'll probably receive them in a couple of years if they hit the right worm hole sector.'

'What lovely piano song is this playing darling?' She asks.

'Let's see, this is one of my favorites, [*Amelie Movie Soundtrack, track 4 Comptine d'un Autre Ete.*](#)

'Very sexy baby, you said that in French. Turn the volume up.'

The sound echoes around them from many directions.

'So, Mrs. Marino are you ready for the ride of your life?' Jaden asks.

'This sex ride you just gave me in zero gravity under these stars was the ride of my life. Wow baby, you just topped our sex in the Bugattee chase,' she replies.

'I'm glad I topped it. Buckle up, I mean fetal position up.'

They crouch into the fetal position and liquids quickly fill up around their floating bodies. The Gravhawk reappears around them and they quickly jump into warp light speed.

'So, how do you like my newly remodeled ship baby? I can get thirty light-years on a solar flare gallon. 0-186,500 mps in under three seconds,' he says.

'I like it, it looks new to me. Where are we heading now?'

'We are going to check out the planet Gliese 581c on our way to the Andromeda Galaxy.'

'Wait a second, are you checking this planet out for those MASA scientists?' She asks.

'No, not at all. We are going to visit a nice vacant honeymoon planet, where it's just me and you. Remember? Adam and Eve? Me and you?'

'Well, okay baby. I'm happy as long as I'm with you.'

'While you wait outside your body, I have my version of the Bialien movie of my adventures for you to watch. It is a combination of my memories and nanoscanner visions. I left a copy with an executive

producer and book writer on Earth. They loved this story and want to turn it into a trilogy series. But first they need it on paperback and Virtual Kindle reader. Someone already started writing the book from watching the visions. I just hope they don't mess up my movie from the book.'

Kim says, 'Hollywood is known for screwing up books to movie stories. They should always choose to do the movie first and write the book second. Okay, I'll watch it in a second.'

'I can't believe the Bialien movie is going to cost 125 million dollars to produce and they estimate it to gross 300-400 million dollars worldwide. Some production company by the name of Imagination Factory is designing the video game, comic book, audio books, and action figures,' he says.

'Wow, that is amazing, so much is going to be done around your adventure. At least it will be easy for them to setup the screenplays since they have the nanoscanner visions in front of them. I wonder who they will get to play me.' She asks.

'At that cheap production cost, probably an unknown Asian actor. She is probably trying out for *American Actor Idol* now,' he chuckles.

'They will probably get a washed up actor to play you then Jaden.'

'Why would they do that? I don't think so. I can see Will Smith's son playing me,' he says.

'You are dreaming, the movie will definitely go over budget. That teenager is a high paid actor and would push the movie production cost up to over 150 million,' she says.

'Hmmm, yeah. Watch the movie, Mrs. Smartass Marino.'

Kim begins to watch the movie at high speed. Thirty-five minutes pass by and they pass Venus at the speed of light.

'What are these images of you having sex with Bellona in a bed in your ex-girlfriend's house while you were on Xenos?' Kim asks curiously.

'What are you talking about? That isn't in the movie. I was dreaming, I was having sex with Amy and I met her at school, then we went to her parents' house; Bellona isn't in the dream.'

'I can see right now that Bellona bitch is riding you in the air and the stars are around you. I don't see Amy anywhere in sight. So you did have sex with that alien lady?' She asks and continues, 'I knew something was going on between you two. You told me you never had sex in a zero gravity environment.'

'Come on sweetie, you're talking crazy, that didn't happen. It was a dream with Amy, and we were at her house fooling around,' Jaden pleads.

‘See for yourself, alien perv man,’ Kim says politely as they pass Mercury.

Jaden looks at the images and replays it back. Everything is glowing around the ship. This surprises Jaden and he becomes speechless. Kim waits to see what Jaden is about to say.

‘Oh shit...holy shit... Where did that come from?’ Jaden thinks to himself.

‘Well?’ She asks in a demanding voice and continues, ‘Holy shit isn’t an answer. I can hear you thinking to yourself also.’

Everything is completely bright around them.

‘Look baby! We are about to crash into our sun!’

She looks through a nanoeye and bright lights are everywhere around them. Their human bodies glow and turn translucent. The Gravhawk disappears into optic-warp at 15 sly. There is a huge flash of light near the sun. The Gravhawk computer reads: 92 PAIRS OF CHROMOSOMES DNA CONVERTED OVER WITH GRAVHAWK’S MOLECULES, SUBSPACE IS 100% STABLE.

Written by: Vlane D. Carter

.....TO BE CONTINUED.

THE TRILOGY CONTINUES:

BIALIEN VOL. 1.5 AND AUDIOBOOK COMING OUT IN 2011.

BIALIEN VOL 2.0 COMING IN 2012

Thank you for purchasing this Bialien Vol 1 copy. I hope you enjoyed my first novel. I'm sure there is a lot to discuss. Please leave your comments on my Facebook pages. Facebook keyword search "Bialien".

The Bialien group is for discussing different technologies, scenes, romance and story in the book. There will be several cut scenes from the book here.

The Bialien Character fan page is for discussing the different characters in the book. Talk about which character scenes you liked best. There will also be several cut scenes from the book here.

Vlane Bialien Carter is my personal Facebook page discussing various parts of the book. Future updates about the novel will be posted here: <http://www.facebook.com/bialien>

There will also be several blogs talking about different scenes from the book.

<http://bialien.wordpress.com> is one of them. Keyword search Google for more blogs.

About Author

This is my first full-length book. I have not written since 1991 and 1992 when I wrote two short stories (those short stories will be turned into books down the road). Since then my mind, concepts, ideas and imagination have evolved to a level that I could have never dreamed of at 16 years old. I have never seen anything close to the Bialien trilogy. I started writing this in March of 2006 after I was very upset with the ending of War of the Worlds. The writers made an advanced alien race look incompetent at the end. I figured I could write my own masterpiece. I wanted to mix the right combinations of science, humor, love, messages of us saving our planet and to create a superhero unlike anything you read/saw before.

I wanted to show the world what my imagination and vision is capable of. I needed to make a statement in the sci-fi world that it is time for something new and original to hit the market. A new generation of sci-fi that represents current and future science needed to make an appearance.

I also wanted to write a novel that was before its time. Therefore, future generations could appreciate the combinations of ideas, science and visions from this time era. I personally believe the *Bialien* series can be the next *Star Wars*, *Matrix* or *Star Trek* series. I feel like George Lucas in the early 70's.

More about the author is available at www.bialien.com under "About" on top menu.

I personally guarantee Bialien Vol 2 will be more mind-boggling. I saved some of my best imagination/vision, best alien weapons, best future concepts and best story for Bialien 2 and 3. I get deep into the meaning of our existence and what I think why everything was created. Why we are here and who made us?

In Bialien Vol 2, Jaden, AI, Dr. Chan, Bellona, Bomani and Marco return. Dr. Chan returns with a modified human body. Jaden and AI's powers are also upgraded. Bellona returns with a bigger role and I get deeper into her past. Vol 2 will be unlike anything you've read before, coming in 2012.

Writing and outlining this book series for the past four years was the most thinking I've ever done. The Bialien series consists of a total of 8-10 books (Bialien Vol 1, Vol 1.5, Vol 2.0, Vol 2.5, Vol 3, Vol 3.5, Bialien 4 Multiverse, Bialien Prequel, Bellona's War, and Andromedian Mini Series). Comic book series: Bialien 1-50 and Bellona 1-30. Bialien trilogy video game (story and design). Toy designs. I'm looking to work with the right agent, publishing company and movie production company.

Coming in 2011 Bialien 1.5 with 100-150 pages of cut scenes from this book.

Extended Bellona and Marco battle scenes on Planet 455.
Jaden and Bellona fly throughout Xenos' solar system in nanoeyes.
Bellona and Bomani fight each other in the gravity games.
Jaden turns the gravity game into a street fighter video game when he fights Bomani.
Jaden and Marco play tug of war with the intelligent giant spiders on planet Spidone.
One of the spiders attaches onto the Gravhawk and Jaden tries hard to get it off.
Extended scenes from Dr. Chan's grandmother from the Japanese attacks on Nanking 1937.
Extended scenes from Dr. Chan's family past.
Extended future technologies on BNN in the psychic ward.

Three cut car chase scenes:

1. Airborne laser: Jaden figures a way to get onboard the Air Force's top-secret 747 laser beam weapon after it threatens his energy shield systems in the car chase. Jaden also runs the Scarface program AI saved in the psychic hospital.
2. Bugattee super jump over a destroyed bridge.
3. Jaden stops off in Atlantic City to play some blackjack and causes chaos when he gets drunk and reads all the cards in the deck.

Three Armageddon Manhattan scenes:

1. Extended fight up the side of the building with Jaden, DEK and a Helidrone.
2. Leap of faith to save Sabrina in the elevator propelling into the sky.
3. President Paylin and Peters in exoskeleton suits fight the rangerbots. Humans vs Machines.

Last chapter:

Extended nanovisions from mother ship.

Extended ending chase with DEW and Gravhawk from mother ship. Instead of flying through asteroid belt, Jaden controls the Gravhawk to fly high speed around the surface of terraforming Mars in an attempt to lose the DEQ in the DEW.

New illustration scenes from Vol 1.5.

Clues and brief prologue to Bialien Vol 2.

One or two Illustrations from Bialien Vol 2.

Commentary from author on different scenes from Vol 1.

Where he was section - Dates and times to where the author was when he came up with his dozens of different ideas from Vol 1 and 1.5.

Write your own novel section:

How to write your own book and come up with ideas. How to put it together.

Vlane's second short story wrote back in 1992: "Quickflash". Original 35 page action, adventure, romance short story.

The audio book will contain Bialien Vol 1 and Vol 1.5. Coming in early 2011.

Special contest:

The first 100 people to finish this book, fill out a 2-3 page questionnaire, sign up to the three Facebook pages and leave comments on the walls, will be given one line in the acknowledgement section of Bialien Vol 1.5 or Vol 2.0. The one line can include your business, your book, your website, a quote, a shout out, or anything you want.

Email author for more information at: Bialien@hotmail.com or through www.facebook.com/bialien

Author's suggestion to paperback readers:

After reading my novel I'm sure you see the value and quality of it. When and if I have a book deal in the future with a publishing company or if this novel is turned into a movie, this self-published Bialien Vol 1 novel will increase in value. J.K. Rowling's first 1000 Harry Potter novels from 1997 are worth over \$20,000 each today. I would suggest wrapping this novel up in plastic like a comic book when done.

Thank you for Evolving your Imagination.

Glossary of Terms

Atoms ripper – Is a molecule destroying energy similar to plasma fusion in the forward shields.

Bioparasites – Darclonians in microbial form. They wait to merge with nanomole to control a human body at high speed. Nanomoles protect bioparasites from human white blood cells. Bioparasites also control armies of microbots.

DEK – Dark Energy Knight.

DEQ – Dark Energy Queen.

DEW – Dark Energy Wraith – Mysterious dark energy that rides like a comet and fuels itself from the exhaust of a spaceship.

DHW – Darclonian Human Walkers. When nanomole and bioparasite merge. Darclonians are controlling human bodies at high speed. Making them super strong and slowly modifying the human body to turn them into super humans.

HBH – Hijacked brain Humans – See positive stage nanomole.

LRSB – Long Range Signal Beacon. It is put on UFOs just in case they get away from the US government. The top-secret technology sends transmissions through subspace.

Microbots – Darclonian robotic or organic organisms that can do a variety of things similar to the Andromedian nanobots and nanodrones. They prepare the human body to become super human.

Molevision – When the nanomoles are in a neutral stage they transmit different visions to other nanomoles when a human is suffering or experiencing pleasure from torturing someone else. It transmits and records dozens of emotions.

Nanoeyes – Invisible to the human eyes, range in size from a millionth to a billionth of an inch. Nanoeyes allow the host to hear and see things at a far distance. It can also pass through most materials. They can be controlled by host or on their own.

Nanoscanner – Invisible to the human eye and range in size between a millionth to a trillionth of an inch. Nanoscanners can do what nanoeyes can, and also analyze materials, scan through objects and determine their structure. They also have other capabilities especially in optic-warp. They can be controlled by host or fly autonomously.

Nanomoles – Are encoded particles sent to Earth over 100,000 years ago by the Darclonians. They sit hidden in the brain of humans. They reproduce in intelligent life from generation to generation, recording everything.

A Nanomole has three stages:

1. Negative - Mole is semi-hibernating and is recording and saving detailed information on the host.
2. Neutral – When the mother ship sends a high power signal to Earth to activate each nanomole in the brain. An 84 hour countdown begins. Humans go unconscious for thirty seconds before waking up, and go back into the negative stage. Some humans randomly go in and out of the neutral stage. The nanomole is expanding and preparing the neurons, axons and chemical messages in the brain to completely take over the human host.
3. Positive – HBH – Hijacked Brain Humans – The nanomole takes control of a human body and walks to upload areas. Bioparasites (Darclonians in microbes) merge with the nanomole and the humans become DHWs.
* Humans are able to see, feel and hear everything around them, but can't control their own bodies and are prisoners.

Nanodrones – Advanced prototype organic nanobots that were specially made to work with Jaden's body. They work with his body in a collective of different groups and do many tasks.

Nanobots – Metallic, mechanical, microscopic robots that work with Andromedian biomechanical bodies and spaceships.

Optic-warp – The Andromedian species way of traveling through space at a fast rate. The ship approaches a local star at the speed of light, and then the ship breaks down into Quadrillion of molecules and slingshots through subspace at 6-90 second light-years.

Shield technologies –

Clockwise – Forward – 2 layers - First outside layer destroys objects by ripping apart its molecules and atoms. A part of plasma gasification. Second layer protects object or person inside the shield with solid energy force. Powerful projectiles can force through shield systems (gravity x force). The person, depending on the speed it traveled, can feel the force inside. The shield can change into any shape.

Counterclockwise – reverse – 3 Layers – First layer slows projectile and absorbs blast. Second layer gravity matrix analyzes material and stays in one place. It then recycles it into the shield whirlpool, which can be turned into a weapon for firing. Third layer protects objects or person inside with a solid force.

Gravity shockwave – It pulls gravity forces from ground level from all directions and leaves a smoky haze. The object caught in the pathway of the weapon instantly loses its gravity and propels forward at high speed. The object suddenly changes directions towards the ground at 3-4 times its body weight.

TC-100 – An instrument that scans through foreign material. It's like a high powered x-ray scanner that can see inside of aliens and foreign materials.

UF1-retrac team – The UFO police team that specializes in analyzing a UFO and preparing it for transport to Area 51 for research. They analyze the ship, check for radiation. They work for the government in a special sector and are mostly civilians.

Wraithstalkers – Lightly armed Darclonian ships used for recon missions.

A New Sci-fi, Space, Action, Adventure and Romance Novel.

The Bialien trilogy - Where fiction, science, religion and technology collide.

Some of the topics bialien covers: Dark energy, dark matter, exotic matter, nanotechnology, future green energy saving technologies, plasma fusion, string theory, quantum mechanics, future relationships, space exploring, UFO theories, future government weapons, gravity manipulating and human body evolving.

September 9th 2014, where would you be? Humanity didn't see this silent attack coming. The fate of all human souls is in the hands of one man. Time is up for humans using their bodies and occupying Earth. Evolve your Imagination to the Bialien trilogy.



Book prologue on page 2.

Comments from readers on page 3.

Book synopsis and more info is
available at: WWW.BIALIEN.COM